

The Sex Offenses and their Treatments

The Problem—The Solution—Commentary

Victor T. Cheney



The Sex Offenses and their Treatments

**The Problem—
The Solution—Commentary**

Victor T. Cheney

2004

Contents

Front Matter	8
Title Page	8
Publisher Details	8
 Volume I – The Problem	 9
I. Background on Sexuality and Crime	10
II. The Sexual Century in Review	15
III. The Hazards of Sex	21
A. Crime	22
B. Disease	22
C. Aggression	23
D. Jealousy	23
E. Lost Spirituality	24
IV. The Seriousness of the Crime	25
Table 1. Sellin and Wolfgang Seriousness of Crimes Results	26
Table 2. National Survey of Crime Severity Results (1985)	27
Table 3. Uniform Crime Reports Offense Categories	28
V. Propensity, Periodicity, Progression, Prediction, and Prevention	33
VI. Description of the Sex Offenses	46
A. Lust Murder	47
B. Necrophilia	51
C. Cannibalism	56
D. Rape-Murder	57
E. Sadism	58
F. Masochism	59
G. Rape	64
H. Pedophilia	80
I. Homosexuality	90

J. Incest	124
K. Abortion	126
L. Fetishism	135
M. Pyromania	140
N. Mysophilia	142
O. Prostitution	143
P. Bestiality and Zooerasty	148
Q. Scoptophilia	150
R. Exhibitionism and Voyeurism	150
S. Pornophilia	152
T. Partialism	160
U. Transvestism	161
V. Adultery	162
W. Fornication	166
X. Frottage	167
Y. Oral-Genital Sex	167
Z. Masturbation	171
AA. Sodomy	176
BB. Stalking	177
CC. Sexual Slavery	179
DD. Domestic Violence	181
EE. Fondling	182
VII. Other Sex-Related Problems	183
A. Lycanthropy	184
B. Vampirism	194
C. Satanism	198
D. Whitago	201
E. Amok or Amuck	201
F. Symphorophilia (Greek symphoro, “disaster,” plus philia)	201
G. Erotomania	203
H. Erotophobia	204
I. Othello Delusion	204
J. Infanticide	205
K. Gilles de la Tourette’s Syndrome	206
L. Prison Sex	206
M. Munchausen’s Syndrome	209
N. Jealousy	209
O. Interracial Sex	212
P. Gender Identity Disorders	227
Q. Osphresiolagnia	231
R. Sexual Harassment	232

S. Apotemnophilia	235
T. Sexual Addiction	235
U. Mate Swapping	237
V. Concubinage	239
W. Polygamy	247
X. Cohabitation	248
Y. Satyriasis	249
Z. Promiscuity	250
AA. Priapism	251
BB. Triolism	253
CC. Gigolos	253
DD. Hubris	253
EE. Saliromania	254
FF. Gerontosexuality	254
GG. Klismaphilia	254
HH. Nudism	255
II. Erotolalia (Obscene Phone Calls)	255
JJ. Koro	256
KK. Couvade Syndrome	256
LL. Paraphiliac Coercive Disorder (PCD)	256
MM. Autassassinophilia	256
NN. Sexual Trauma	257
OO. Computer-Driven Sexual Exploitation	258
PP. Cybersex	259
QQ. Autonepiophilia	259
RR. Self-Injury	260
SS. Thrill Seeking	262
TT. Stripping	263
UU. Bareback Sex	265
VV. Hookups	266
WW. Groupies	266
XX. Erotic Tourism	267
YY. Hate Crimes	268
ZZ. Other Paraphilias	272
VIII. What Do We Know?	278
IX. Comments on the Offenses	280
X. Famous Sex Criminals of History	284
A. Background	284
B. Sex Criminals	285

X. Comments	305
VOLUME II – The Solution	308
I. Background	309
II. Punishment	318
III. Capital Punishment	323
IV. Prison	329
V. Probation	343
VI. Parole	345
VII. Fines	347
VIII. Educational Treatments	348
A. Sex Education	349
B. Megan’s Law	352
IX. Prison Furlough	354
X. Three Models of Adolescent Sex Offender Treatment	355
XI. Psychotherapy	360
A. Evaluation	361
B. Behavioral Therapies	369
C. Psychoanalysis	375
D. Other Sorts of Psychotherapy	383
E. Comments on Psychotherapies	389
XII. Religious Treatments	399
XIII. The Legal Solution	410
XIV. Civil Commitment	412
XV. Psychic Considerations	414
XVI. Biologic Treatments	416
A. Chemotherapy	417

B. Anti-Androgens	418
C. Anaphrodisiacs	428
D. Opiates	431
E. Barbiturates, Tranquilizers, and Alcohol	431
F. Anxiolytics	432
G. Serotonergic Drugs	432
H. Anti-Convulsant Drugs	433
I. Comments on Drugs	434
J. Androgens	437
K. Diet	445
L. Electroconvulsive Therapy	450
M. Psychosurgery	453
N. Other Treatments	455
XVII. Castration	458
Table 4—Anabolic Steroids	459
 VOLUME III – Commentary	 463
I. A Survey of the Literature	464
A. Hammurabi	464
B. Moses	465
C. Dionysus	465
D. Juvenal	465
E. Suetonius Tranquillus, Gaius	465
F. Rishi Vatsyayana	466
G. Don Juan	466
H. S.A.D. Tissot	466
I. Giacomo Girolama Casanova	466
J. Cesare Bonesana	467
K. Compt Donatien Alphonse Francois de Sade	467
L. Leopold von Sacher-Masoch	467
M. Jeremy Bentham	467
N. Cesare Lombroso	468
O. Freiherer (Baron) Richard Von Krafft-Ebing	468
P. Sigmund Freud	468
Q. Henry Havelock Ellis	469
R. Grigory Efimovitch Rasputin	470
S. Theodore Hendrik van de Velde	470
T. Dr. F. E. Daniel	470
U. Dr. Magnus Hirschfield	471

V. Dr. Alfred C. Kinsey	471
W. Dr. Benjamin Karpman	471
X. Johan Bremer	471
Y. Dr. George K. Sturup	471
Z. Menachem Amir	472
AA. Shere Hite	472
BB. A. Nicholas Groth	472
CC. William B. Masters and Virginia E. Johnson	472
DD. Reay Tannahill	472
EE. Nigel Davies	472
FF. Michel Foucault	472
GG. Dr. John Money	473
II. The Law	474
III. The Cruel and Unusual Punishment Question	480
IV. Cruel and Unusual Case Law Questions from West Florida's Digest (2d 1986)	485
V. Denial	489
Denial References	499
Footnotes	501
About the Author	502
Back Cover	503

Front Matter

Title Page

The Sex Offenses and their Treatments
The Problem—The Solution—
Commentary
by
Victor T. Cheney

1663 Liberty Drive, Suite 200
Bloomington, Indiana 47403
(800) 839-8640
www.authorhouse.com

Publisher Details

2004 Victor T. Cheney
First published by AuthorHouse 08/25/04
ISBN: 1-4184-2951-1 (e)
ISBN: 1-4184-2950-3 (sc)
Library of Congress Control Number: 2004106069
Printed in the United States of America
Bloomington, Indiana

Volume I – The Problem

I. Background on Sexuality and Crime

There are many things in this world that we can properly classify as important, but there are only five items that we must classify as essential to survival. Survival is the bottom line and the first purpose of all human activity. These five essentials are air, food, water, sleep, and sex. This book is written about the last item in its more aberrant manifestations. As television host Dick Cavett said when he introduced Masters and Johnson, the famous sex researchers, on his program June 7, 1979: “After all the attention given to sex all these years, you would think there’s not much left to be said.” But there is much to be said, and scientific studies are still proving that much of what we “knew” about sex was wrong. There is also much that we still do not know. Pubic hair, for example, we all have it, so it must be important for something; yet, does anyone really know what its purpose is? Our young people know far more about their automobiles than they do about their own reproductive systems. We are just beginning to come to grips with an understanding of the immense power of our own sex drive, which is so essential to the survival of our species. The pleasure of sexual intercourse is the bait that lures us into the pain and expense of the birthing, feeding, clothing, and rearing of children. It is also the forbidden fruit of the tree of knowledge in some, but not all, interpretations of the story of the biblical Garden of Eden (Genesis 2:16–17).

Plato (c. 300 BC) depicts the nature of male sexuality when he states, “... in men the nature of the genital organ is disobedient and self-willed, like a creature that is deaf to reason, and it attempts to dominate all because of its frenzied lusts.”¹ Our bodies are at constant risk for temptation, sin, and disease. Even the strongest men are repeatedly overcome by the power of the sexual urges; their bodies are often uncontrollable and a source of betrayal when the sight of a woman, a dream, or a sex object elicits a spontaneous erection.

The ancient wisdom about good and evil has been told to us many times in the Bible and in the Talmud for thousands of years. Since the Garden of Eden, when the serpent tempted Eve and Eve led Adam to Sin (Genesis 3), we have learned there was something sexual about evil. God cleansed the earth via the great flood because men became sinful (Genesis 6, 7). Two of God’s Ten Commandments deal specifically with sexual sinning (Exodus 20:14, 17), and the Talmud nicely explains why God created

¹ Plato, Tames, trans. R. G. Bury (Cambridge: Harvard University Press), 91.

this impulse, as well as the impulse for goodness. God made the evil impulse for the preservation of the human race.² The Koran (17:37) also commands that you shall not commit adultery, for it is foul and indecent.

The New Testament provides an answer to sexual sinning in the words of Christ Himself in Matthew: "... if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away; it is better to lose one of your members than for your whole body to go into hell" (Matthew 5:27–30, the New Revised Standard Version), and "... there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven" (Matthew 19:12). The Talmud provides us with additional details so we can recognize eunuchs and their pictures down through the ages: "He has no beard, his hair is soft, his skin is smooth, his urine is not excreted in an arch ... and the semen is thin like water. If a man has no beard or pubic hair by twenty years of age, one must assume that he is a congenital eunuch" (Tosefta Yebamoth, 10:6). Eunuch attendants are frequently pictured with the high and mighty on ancient wall carvings because they were the most trustworthy servants in most old cultures.

Sex is one of the driving forces of human existence. God made sex exquisitely thrilling to ensure the continuation of our species. We hunger for it in mind and body. Sex is a very big business in countries like ours where money is so important. In 1995, we had approximately 3,000 sex clubs employing some 250,000 dancers and pulling in at least \$3 billion a year. The combination of "babes" and booze is an unbeatable moneymaker. The biblical story of the dancer who was given the head of John the Baptist on a platter (Matthew 14:6–11 and Mark 6:22–28) is another illustration of the power of the attraction. The sex clubs often increase crime and spread disease and are strongly opposed by the decent people and their churches, but the clubs continue to expand. Some misguided people even call sex clubs "a necessary evil" to provide a source of relief to the sexual tension of healthy men.

In the sexual behavior of all of the higher vertebrates, there is a very complex chain of relationships with feedback mechanisms of several kinds. This elaborate series of highly labile physiological mechanisms is developed in each individual as a result of genetic influences involving several types of genes. It is not surprising that sexual behavior should be extremely variable. Chromosomal differences are reflected in hundreds of variations in body types, including the genital abnormalities found in people born with Klinefelter and Turner syndromes. In the human race, these physical contributions affect behavioral patterns, which are influenced and modified by social and psychological factors to a greater degree than the lower classes of creatures; therefore, our sexual behavior varies more among human individuals. The strength of the sex drive, from relatively low to very powerful, has a much greater range than most of us are aware of. Some people think about sex all the time. Sexual thoughts may be concentrated on individuals of the opposite sex, but may also be directed toward individuals of the same sex. The Soriono people of Eastern Bolivia are said to hardly ever

² Abraham Cohen, Talmud (1949), (New York: E. P. Dutton, 1995 reprint), 92, 93.

engage in homosexual practices, while among the Arunda tribes of Central Australia, almost all of the men practice homosexuality to some extent.

Sexuality is one of the primary driving forces of human behavior. Much has been written, studied, and discussed about the more favorable expectations for love and to create a family, but there is also much that is evil and not so well known. We are still trying to sort some of these out, trying to determine which are natural, normal, and good, and which are really unnatural, harmful, and bad. Sex for procreation and love is considered good (or at least necessary); sexual murder, maiming, and rape are bad. But what about the great penumbra of other sexual behaviors outside of the clearly good and clearly bad? There are many different opinions on homosexuality, abortion, pornography, and masturbation. Who is right? These must be sorted out with clarity. Population growth has already reached the midnight hour of decision in many countries. These countries are unable to feed their huge, teeming populations. New and deadly epidemics of sexually transmitted diseases are out of control in most of the world. Sex crimes proliferate. We are not coming to grips with these problems effectively enough. The tough solutions necessary are not being heard and employed.

Human sexuality is often tangled hormonally and impacts our lives on the most basic levels. The big objectives, the fundamental purposes of our being, are connected with our sexuality. The big questions: Why am I here? Is it to serve God, country, family, or tribe by rearing children? What do I want to do? Do I want to enjoy life? Gain fame or fortune? Have a good time? Sex is often considered in these kinds of deliberations. Other big, unresolved questions come to mind as we investigate the sex criminals: Why do they behave as they do? Is their behavior motivated chiefly by biological or sociological influences? Are sexual habits formed by nature or nurture? Here we are presently at a state of knowledge that is roughly analogous to our knowledge of the weather. We know most of the factors that influence the weather, but our success rate in predicting the weather in any given area a day hence is far from perfect—only slightly better than guessing, perhaps 65 percent.

The three recognized realms of the human personality are the body, the mind, and the spirit. The body's hormones compose the primary causative agents of behavior, especially criminal sexual behavior. We often hear, however, that the primary causes of deviant behavior are in the mind or the spirit. Explanations like: "He thought he could get away with it," "He learned it from his friends," "The devil made him do it," or "He's crazy," are the most prevalent. In actuality, the endocrine system is the primary ruling factor in sexual behaviors. The sex drive is akin to the body's other needs—eating, breathing, sleeping, etc.—except that the sex drive is more complex. Deviance in the sex criminal is powered by the same influences, but to a different degree or direction than that of the normal population. In the male, the locus of the drive is in the gonads and their powerful hormones. The main hormone is testosterone, and it acts on the brain and other organs through the bloodstream causing, in some men, an everpresent demand for the release of sexual tension.

The quality of life in America has dramatically decreased more than in many of the other developed nations because of increasing crime. Our politicians and criminologists have tended to act on the belief that criminals are primarily products of a destructive environment. Criminologists in other countries tend to perceive the more biological differences reflected in criminals. To me, it is apparent that we, in our country, are on the wrong track. Several studies of identical twins who were separated in early childhood and reared separately in completely different environments have clearly shown that up to 61 percent of their aggression characteristics were innate. We must reorder our thinking and our policies in order that we may take advantage of some of the tried and true medical treatments for the hormonal imbalances that motivate criminals.

Our nation has been in the grip of an enormous crime wave. According to the Uniform Crime Reports of the FBI, the chance a person had of being the victim of a major violent crime nearly tripled between 1960 and 1980. It took only five years in the 1980s to triple again. The risk continues to grow exponentially. It is no minor coincidence that during this same period we also had a “sexual revolution,” the development of the deadly AIDS virus, and the legalizing of homosexual behavior, abortion, and pornography. The incidence, seriousness, and types of the sex crimes escalated along with other violent crimes, and no one seemed to see the relationship of cause and effect. Very few of the academics studying these problems examined biological influences as a possible explanation. Even fewer were willing to recognize the hormonal factors involved in violent crimes, and almost none of them would state flatly that testosterone, the hormone of lust and aggression, was a root cause.

As the levels and intensity of crime continues to grow, crime in general and violent crime in particular has become the main concern of the average American citizen—especially those living in the largest cities. More and more prison cells have been built, but prisons still cannot keep up with the increased number of convicts. Demands for keeping violent prisoners locked up for longer periods continue to grow. “Three strikes and you’re out” became the political slogan for those who wanted to permanently immure violent offenders. In 1994, some states added fifty more death penalty crimes, cranked up endless crime prevention programs, added thousands of policemen to our forces, and spent vast sums of money (\$30 billion in President Clinton’s anti-crime bill of August 1994 alone) in all but futile attempts to stem the tide.

Edwards and Hensley³ point out “sexual victimization has grown in professional and public perceptions to become one of the most serious social problems of industrialized society. Concern for protecting communities while managing sex offenders has evoked both reactive and proactive legislative responses ...” The emotional nature of this problem has limited the rational discourse, and a “new penology” has emerged with laws concerning additional “civil commitment” and community notification after

³ W. Edwards and C. Hensley, “Contextualizing Sex Offender Management Legislation and Policy: Evaluating the Problem of Latent Consequences in Community Notification Laws,” *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 45, no. 1 (2001): 85.

the offender has completed serving his sentence. These laws have been found to have serious adverse effects and are under considerable discussion at the present time.

II. The Sexual Century in Review

In order for us to understand and put into historical context the information contained in the following pages, it is helpful to have some idea of what has happened in the past. A brief outline of some of the more important events that have shaped human spiritual, mental, and physical aspects of sexual development is provided here.

At the turn of the century in 1900, there were no radios and no televisions. There were only ten miles of paved roads, 8,000 automobiles, and few electric lights. One's universe was bound by walking distances unless one used horses. Every month, more than a million readers turned to the Ladies' Home Journal magazine for a glimpse of what was happening in other people's lives.¹ Prior to 1900, a woman in public, with her bustles and corsets, carried about 27 pounds of clothing. If she went swimming, her bathing suit had to extend to within three inches of her knees. Entertainment in the city was provided by vaudeville, penny arcades, baseball stadiums, dance halls, bars, and peep shows, which were beginning to become more carnal. But there was also a war on vice going on, led by Anthony Comstock and his New York Society for the Suppression of Vice. Prior to 1900, Comstock had arrested 2,385 people and destroyed 73,608 pounds of books, 877,412 obscene pictures, 8,495 obscene negatives, 98,563 articles about immoral uses of rubber, and 6,436 decks of indecent playing cards. Comstock had been instrumental in getting politicians to pass a bill intensifying the punishment of those who used the mail to send obscene material. The United States was one great society for the suppression of vice. The life expectancy for an average man in 1901 was 48.23 years and 51.08 years for the average woman.² By 1997, it was 73.6 years for the average man and 79.4 years for a woman in the United States.³ The U.S. population in 1900 was 76 million. The population in 1910 was 92 million. By 1910, there were 458,377 automobiles registered in the United States. The number of divorces in 1900 was 55,751, and in 1910, 83,045 couples divorced.

In the 1909 Webster's Dictionary, the word homosexuality first appeared and was defined as "morbid sexual passion for one of the same sex." In 1906, a major change in attitudes and methodology appeared with the work of the German sexologist Ivan Block, who coined the term Sexualwissenschaft, or "sexual science." Bloch is important because he saw in history a foundation for understanding human sexuality.

¹ J. R. Petersen, "Playboy's History of the Sexual Revolution," *Playboy* 43, no. 12 (December 1996): 66-84.

² *Encyclopedia Americana*.

³ *Time Almanac* 2000, 797.

There was considerable furor over houses of prostitution and “white slavery” from 1906 to 1910. The FBI was enlarged to monitor the international traffic, and in 1909, Congressman James Mann sponsored the White Slave Act, or Mann Act, to limit the slave traffic between countries and states. In 1901, Dr. Prince Morrow began a study of venereal disease and reported that 75 percent of men in New York City had at one time or another been infected with gonorrhea and 5 to 18 percent had syphilis. Other doctors put the overall venereal infection rate at 35 percent. At the turn of the century, Havelock Ellis was the first modern sexologist to challenge religious beliefs and other current medical technology with a number of case histories, which provided a landmark view of the role sex played in American life at that time. He refused to label masturbation a disease, stating it was a natural function.⁴ Other writers of the time on sexual subjects linked repression to character. Historian Bryan Strong wrote, “If a man was pure, he was also frugal, hardworking, temperate and governed by habit ... If he was impure, he was also a spendthrift, disposed to speculation and whiskey drinking, and ruled by his impulses.” In 1905, Sigmund Freud published his *Three Essays on the Theory of Human Sexuality* claiming that sexual instincts require gratification and that abstinence was unnatural.

The invention and proliferation of the movies in the first two decades of the twentieth century made use of characters who then entertained through sight and sound together. The population of the United States rose to 105 million in 1920, and the number of automobiles registered was about 6.8 million. The gross national product in 1919 was \$84 billion, up from \$35.3 billion in 1910. Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria was assassinated in 1914. The assassination touched off World War I, but America, separated from Europe by an ocean, remained uninvolved in the war until after the sinking of the *Lusitania* by a German submarine on May 7, 1915. On April 2, 1917, President Woodrow Wilson, after a diplomatic controversy with Germany, ignored his election promises and called on Congress to declare war against Germany. On a single day, 10 million American men registered for the draft. The war provoked a puritan crisis, and the Secretary of War ordered the closing of all bawdy houses within five miles of every naval base and banned the sale of alcohol on military installations. A hygienic form of sex education was instituted in all of the training camps to warn the recruits of the dangers of venereal diseases (VD). Even so, when the young soldiers got to France, prostitutes in the brothels of Paris infected many.

In 1938, Dr. Alfred C. Kinsey, professor of biology at Indiana University, became acutely aware of how little was known about the biology of sexual behavior, and he began his famous studies. Kinsey published *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male* in 1948, raising an enormous amount of publicity and controversy. World War II, from 1941 to 1945, incited the “war aphrodisia” that had been noted in World War I. This is the live-for-the-moment mentality that swept over men and women alike during wars, greatly increasing sexual activity. At least 650,000 wartime babies were born out of

⁴ Peterson, “Playboy’s History of the Sexual Revolution”

wedlock in the United States. Obviously, the end of the war would have more impact on the number of cases. American servicemen took 50,000 British war brides. Black soldiers were often stationed in Britain and Italy. Interracial sex sparked riots between black and white troops in Manchester, Newberry, and Launceston. By 1950, when the U.S. population reached 151 million, 16.4 million men had served in the military. In 1950, only 3.1 million American homes had television sets. By 1955, the number was 32 million.

On August 20, 1953, the long-awaited second volume of the Kinsey Report was released on sexual behavior in the human female, and sex again became front-page news. During the first few weeks of publication, 200,000 copies were sold. Kinsey discovered that date of birth was the single most important indicator of sexual behavior. Women born before 1900 were morally circumspect; those born after 1900 seemed like a different breed. Statistics showed 86 percent of unmarried women born before 1900 were still virgins at the age of twenty-five, while 65 percent of women in 1953 were virgins at twenty-five.

Kinsey's 1948 book had reported "37% of the total male population has had at least some overt homosexual experience between adolescence and old age." The September 1950 issue of *Coronet* magazine said that homosexuality was the "new moral menace of our youth." Senator Clyde Hoey looked into homosexuals in the government and identified 4,954 deviants, mostly in the military. Hoey believed that these people could be easy targets for espionage agents, who could use the threat of exposure to extort confidential information. During the war, the Pentagon had tried unsuccessfully to weed out homosexuals. In 1952, ex-GI George Jorgensen underwent the first public sex-change operation, going to Denmark a man and returning as Christine Jorgensen, a woman.

The government produced statistics that showed sex crimes other than prostitution were escalating from 46 per 100,000 in 1953 to 54 per 100,000 in 1955. Protecting white girls from black sexuality had been a major concern for centuries, and when the Supreme Court made the decision in favor of school integration, many white parents feared having their young daughters sit next to black boys. Our government likewise soon repealed the laws against interracial marriage.

The 1950s brought Marilyn Monroe, Brigitte Bardot, Elvis Presley, Liberace, and Hugh Hefner. Books like *Lady Chatterley's Lover* and *Lolita* were widely circulated at this time. By 1958, mail-order porn was a \$500 million-a-year business.

The first female contraceptive pill was marketed under the name "Enovid" in the United States in 1960. Many believe that sexual liberalization would never have taken place without the pill.⁵ The pill enabled women for the first time in history to prevent undesired pregnancies with an unprecedented degree of reliability, and its introduction was followed by two decades of the so-called "Sexual Revolution" with the increased commercialization of pornography and sexography on an even broader scale. Sex ed-

⁵ V. Sigusch, "The Neosexual Revolution," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 27, no. 4 (1998): 331-359.

ucation was introduced into the public schools as the state legalized increasing forms of perversion, contributing to the decriminalization of behavior in many spheres of sex and marriage. The 1968 Vatican II pronouncement against the pill led to a steep decline in U.S. attendance at mass. Adolescents and young adults increased their sexual activity.⁶ The beat generation of hippies with their decadent Woodstock jazz festivals, drug use, and “free love” became prominent in the late 1960s.

The December 1965 issue of *Playboy* became the first national magazine to advocate legal abortion. The Playboy Foundation funded early test cases in both abortion and gay rights. The 1973 Supreme Court decision in *Roe v. Wade* legalized abortion, and the walls came tumbling down. Prior to that time, as many as 5,000 women had died during illegal abortions in a year. Twenty-five years later, polls showed that at least 23 percent of the population was still against allowing abortion, and a fight continued against the laws. Some of the people even thought abortionists should be punished by death.⁷ By 2001, 40 million babies had been aborted.

Dr. Alex Comfort published his earthmoving *Joy of Sex* in 1972. Since then, it has sold, in all its various editions, 8 million copies. Some writers apparently believed that this book was one of the main influences in increasing sexual behavior and thus the AIDS plague and the herpes epidemic.

Gay and lesbian psychiatrists in the American Psychiatric Association (APA) worked for years to raise awareness for gay concerns. At the December 1973 meeting, APA’s board decided to depathologize homosexuality.⁸ The 1968 *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, second edition, (DSM-II) had classified homosexuality as an illness, but in the DSM-III, the diagnosis was renamed “ego dystonic homosexuality.” The 1994 DSM-IV does not contain any reference to homosexuality. It was no longer a disease category according to the APA. It was okay to be gay according to the APA.

Sigusch classified the last decade of the twentieth century as the “neosexual revolution,” referring to the large-scale recoding and reassessment of the sexual sphere. Monogamy, reproduction, virginity, marital fidelity, abstinence, and asceticism became viewed as cultural waste products—characteristics of the old repression that was to be combated. “Emancipation” would go hand in hand with growth, but at the same time, sex would become the source and scene of oppression, inequality, violence, abuse, and deadly infection.⁹ The homosexuals, lesbians, fetishists, cross-dressers, sadomasochists, and bisexuals came out of their closets in increasing numbers flaunting their perversions and organizing effective advocacy groups.

In 1980, the handsome, twenty-eight-year-old airline steward Gaetan Dugas, later known as the AIDS “patient zero,” brought the AIDS virus out of Africa and infected

⁶ Ibid.

⁷ K. Cook, “A Passion to Punish: Abortion Opponents who Favor the Death Penalty,” *Justice Quarterly* 15 no. 2 (1998): 329–346.

⁸ “Gay is Okay with APA—Forum Honors Landmark 1973 Events,” *JAMA* (August 12, 1998): 497.

⁹ Sigusch, “Neosexual Revolution,” 331–357.

countless gay lovers.¹⁰ By October 2, 1985, the morning that Rock Hudson, the famous movie star, died of the disease, the name of the disease was familiar to almost every household in the Western world—AIDS (Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome). On the day the world learned of Rock's death, some 12,000 Americans were already dead or dying of the disease, and thousands more were infected. Bisexuals brought the AIDS virus out of the gay community and spread it to women; the women transmitted it to innocent babies. By the end of 1997, an estimated 30.6 million were infected worldwide, and about 40 percent were women, more than half of whom were aged fifteen to twenty-four.¹¹ Madonna's book *Sex*, at \$49.95 a copy, celebrated homosexuality, sadomasochism, and exhibitionism. The book sold 150,000 copies the first day it was released in October 1992.

On August 17, 1998, television network cameras surrounded Bill Clinton, President of the United States, after four hours of testifying before the Office of Independent Counsel and a grand jury, and while sitting in the Map Room of the White House. He confessed he had a "relationship" with Monica Lewinsky and had misled people, including even his wife. As Sigusch suggested, marital fidelity had worn thin over the past few years. Infidelity and adultery were headlined across the nation at the very highest level of government; this incident drew more time on TV than any other story except the war in Kosovo.

The U.S. News & World Report, in its last issue of the century, summed up the sexual century by pointing out that "the birth control pill did not trigger America's sexual revolution. In fact, it's inaccurate to speak of a revolution at all. Rule changes in the mating game around the time of the doughboys' return from World War I started what was really a sexual EVOLUTION: Between 1920 and 1950, the percentage of U.S. women engaging in premarital intercourse more than doubled."¹²

The January 1, 2000 Newsweek magazine went even further in their prediction of what would happen in the future. "In the next century, you're going to have better sex than you've ever had before. You won't have a single sexual fantasy that will go unfulfilled ... All the communication technologies we've ever invented—the telephone, movies, the Internet—have eventually been used in the service of lust. Tomorrow's advanced technologies will be no different ... Virtual sex is risk-free, with no chance of AIDS or pregnancy. Fidelity and monogamy will have to be completely redefined. Is it cheating if you have virtual sex with another person? ... Perhaps instead of sex, we'll tap directly into our brain's pleasure centers and find emotional intimacy by virtually experiencing each other's dreams." I wonder what the future will hold for the terrifying sexual misuses of the new technologies. The 2001 Durex survey showed that Americans have sex more times per year (an average of 124 times) than any other country, and

¹⁰ R. Shilts, *And the Band Played On* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1987).

¹¹ "HIV Epidemic Could Number 40 Million by Year 2000," *The Lancet* 350 (December 1997): 1683.

¹² U.S. News & World Report (December 27, 1999): 52.

the average age at first sex is younger (age sixteen). American men also average more partners (eighteen) than any other country.¹³

¹³ “Sex Survey: The Untold Story,” Northwest Florida Daily News (December 17, 2001): C1.

III. The Hazards of Sex

In the fifth century before Christ, the Greek Sophists recognized that there were three main types of the sexual appetite. They called them *epithumia*, *eros*, and *mania*. *Epithumia* is sexual desire of more or less manageable strength. *Eros* is more urgent, passionate, pleasure-directed life instinct, which underlies libido. *Mania* is a highly excited state of energy that often makes the world seem made for the individual experiencing it. Socrates explained that *epithumia* doubled in *eros*, and *eros* doubled in *mania*, so we have known for a very long time that our human sexual urges can be very powerful and potentially dangerous. In the sexual psychopath laws of the 1990s, we recognized some men's "utter lack of power to control their sexual impulses," and this became the basis of many civil commitment laws, which kept sex offenders locked up even after they had served the sentences for their crimes.

I do not wish to mitigate all that is good about sex, for "God created humankind in his image, in the image of God he created them; male and female he created them. God blessed them, and God said to them, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it ...'" (Genesis 1:27–28), and this has been good for the past 50,000 years or so. But, in recent years, we have become more aware that there are many hazards connected with our sexuality, and I believe that we must somehow come to grips with this reality. Some of us have developed excessive levels of testosterone (T), which has resulted in many serious problems. T gives us sexual desire, excitement, pleasure, physical strength, and violence at even minor provocations. T also causes us to abuse women, children, and those weaker than we are. In ancient times, it caused the Nephilim to mate with the daughters of men and their descendants to become wicked, so that the earth became corrupt in God's sight, and He destroyed it with the flood (Genesis 6).

Today, sex is a principle focus for many of our thoughts, words, and deeds. Much about sex appears each day in our newspapers, magazines, and books. The Library of Congress has more books on sex than on any other subject. We hear about sex on our radios, and we see it on our televisions and in movies. Sex sells, excites, titillates, and often leads us into trouble. It is more than a coincidence that the United States is also the most violent nation in the industrialized world with over 1.7 million people in prison and more than 3 million people on probation and parole.

Sex can be compared to guns and explosives. Guns in the hands of our police and soldiers defend us from criminals and enemies of our country, but in the hands of criminals, they take our property, lives, and money. Explosives in the hands of the miners and workmen allow wealth to be extracted from the rocky depths of the earth

and open tunnels through mountains, but in the hands of the depraved, they slaughter innocent people and destroy property. Unfortunately, parents rarely warn their children early enough about sex and guns, and the result is thousands of unwanted pregnancies, venereal diseases, accidental injuries, and deaths.

A. Crime

At least thirty-five of the 100-odd sexual deviancies that I enumerate in the later chapter on the sex offenses are also crimes in the legal sense. But there is also a universe of crimes, which are caused directly or indirectly by our sexuality, that are rarely associated with the sex urge. Dr. Banay wrote: “The fact is that, from a psychomedical viewpoint, there are few crimes that do not spring from some degree of sexual dynamism, since nearly all behavior contains elements of underlying sexual factors.”¹ Stekel’s work, pioneered some forty years ago, depicted the sexual fundamentals of compulsive theft, fire setting, and other offenses.² A young man stole a car to take his girl for a ride out of town, or to a party; stole jewelry for a woman; stole money to buy a prostitute or other good times.

Sex and booze often go together. Drunk driving after a party or strip joint visit causes untold accidents and deaths each year. Tens of thousands of tickets, incarcerations to sleep it off, and police records on an otherwise clean slate all involve the sex hormones and neurotransmitters, and nearly all of us would be better off without these troubles.

Crime figures began to stop their almost continuous climb in 1995, and some types of crimes even became less prevalent. President Clinton patted himself on the back for this—crediting his policies of additional police forces. Some criminologists credited the previous policies of getting tougher and keeping prisoners in prison longer. Billions of dollars had been spent for several years in building more prisons and hiring more police, but there were others who pointed out that the crime rate was still way too high and was even continuing to increase in some categories of crime. In Florida, with the nation’s third highest overall crime rate, criminals committed 12,942 forcible sex offenses, 41,142 robberies, and 94,777 aggravated assaults in 1996. How can we be comfortable with these numbers?

B. Disease

Those of whom are best endowed—including the beautiful, young woman; the handsome, athletic, young man; the man with large genitals; the woman with large breasts;

¹ Ralph S. Banay, “Unconscious Sexual Motivation of Crime,” *Journal of Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* III, no. 11 (November 1969): 91.

² W. Stekel, *Frigidity in Women*, vol. 1 (New York: Grove Press, 1962).

and the homosexual with a greater sexual appetite—are generally the most at risk for the hazard of sexual diseases. There are many examples of diseases from sex. John Holmes, who was endowed with a 15-inch penis and made dozens of pornographic movies, became a drug addict, thief, and murderer, and died of AIDS at the age of thirty-six. More than 50 million persons in the United States have genital herpes.³

Other examples are the “great pox,” which decimated European cities in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries; the near-annihilation of Native American populations from the Europeans who brought venereal diseases to the defenseless inhabitants in “opening up” America; and the loss of half of the inhabitants of the Hawaiian Islands in 1820 from sexual and other diseases brought by the white Europeans to the native population. Older individuals often succumb to the strain of sex: France’s emperor Napoleon III suffered a stroke while engaged in copulation, and Nelson Rockefeller died during the act.

C. Aggression

Substantial research suggests that testosterone (T) plays a role in aggressive behavior in men, and research indicates that women with high T levels are more sexually active, competitive, masculine, rambunctious, and drink more alcohol than women with lower T levels. T levels correlate with aggressive dominance in prison and other criminal behavior.⁴

D. Jealousy

At least half of all spur-of-the-moment murders and assaults are motivated by sexual jealousy. We also see it in most of the lower animals, with the males fighting to acquire and hold the females. We have seen it in the development of the Trojan Wars. We see it almost daily in our newspapers. The Northwest Florida Daily News on February 16, 1998 told of two cases in Florida. A Jacksonville man was charged with two counts of murder on February 15 in the shootings of his wife and her boyfriend, whose nude bodies were found by neighbors. On February 14, in North Lauderdale, Helen Cummings was rummaging around in her husband’s car when she found pictures of him with another woman. She then walked into her bedroom and shot Tyler Cummings five times in the chest with a .357 magnum revolver.

³ L. Corey and H. H. Handsfield, “Genital Herpes and Public Health Addressing a Global Problem,” *JAMA* 283, no. 6 (February 9, 2000): 791–794.

⁴ J. M. Dabbs and M. F. Hargrove, “Age, Testosterone and Behavior Among Female Prison Inmates,” *Psychosomatic Medicine* 59 (September/October 1997): 477–480.

E. Lost Spirituality

The Bible instructs us in this matter in several places. In 2 Timothy, chapter 3, Paul exhorted Timothy to avoid the people who in the “last days” will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, arrogant, unholy, implacable, profligate, brutish, reckless, swollen with conceit, or lovers of pleasure. Some of them will make their way into households and capture women, be overwhelmed by their sins, and swayed by all kinds of desires. We see these traits very frequently today in our huge criminal population and in those who are sexually addicted or preoccupied. We may well be sliding into the “last days,” but I believe that we have sufficient time to alter our behavior by castrating the worst among us before the “last day” comes upon us.

IV. The Seriousness of the Crime

“If criminology is to be credible as a science, it must solve some of our crime problems” (Dr. C. R. Jeffery, Florida State University professor). Ideally, the most serious of our crime problems should be solved first, but what are the most serious crimes? Questions immediately arise. Who is to say which crimes are the most serious? The most serious to whom? Any crime might well appear to be the most serious to any given victim. The most serious crime is the one that happened to him or her, regardless of what someone else might think. We need to find out what the greatest number of people viscerally feel are the most shockingly evil, hated, abominable, and wicked of all the multitudes of crimes. There is still considerable variation on this subject among the experts.

The most legitimate purpose of having a government is to protect the people from their aggressors. To best do this, those in charge in the government should clearly know the rank of each crime in the order of its seriousness. Ideally, they should concentrate on solutions to the worst problems first. Scholars have made many attempts since the early nineteenth century to devise a system to measure the degree of seriousness of various offenses. Many of these systems determined the length of prison terms authorized by the law. Several difficulties associated with multiple systems include:

1. The statutory punishments prescribed by the law for any given crime vary widely from jurisdiction to jurisdiction.
2. The descriptions for similar crimes vary.
3. Morals and mores vary widely from location to location and from time to time.
4. Each title for a crime in the legal system covers a considerable variety of illegal conduct.

The criminal statutes generally provide for more severe penalties for offenses committed against a person than offenses against property. Judicial sentences also mete out more punishment for violent crimes against a person than against property. Judges have also shown considerable variations on the punishment awarded for similar crimes. Another yardstick, which has been used to measure the seriousness of crimes, is the amount of money spent on the various types of crime. The Econometrics Studies by the Hoover Institute made the following calculations for 1979: The average larceny cost the public \$747.00, the average robbery costs \$1,234.00, and a crime against a person

costs \$15,973.00.¹ One of the most prestigious studies of the seriousness of crimes is by Sellin and Wolfgang.² Their rank order was based primarily on the extent of the injury. Below is a partial list of their results.

Table 1. Sellin and Wolfgang Seriousness of Crimes Results

Element	Score Value
Victim killed	26
Forcible sex (intimidation by weapon)	12
Forcible sex (no weapon)	10
Victim hospitalized	10
Victim treated at hospital and discharged	4
Intimidation in connection with theft, etc. by weapon	4
Intimidation, physical or verbal only	2
Stolen, damaged property, or both. Value:	
Over \$80,000	
\$30,000 to \$80,000	
\$9,001 to \$30,000	
\$2,001 to \$9,000	
\$251 to \$2,000	
\$10 to \$250	
Under \$10	
Theft of motor vehicle (recovered undamaged)	2
Minor injury to victim	1
Forcible entry to premises	1

Note the non-linearity of the assigned score values. Life statistics frequently show a logarithmic or exponential progression rather than linear as with more mechanical statistics.

Criminologist Don C. B. Gibbons investigated the reactions of San Francisco area adults to twenty acts ranging from second-degree murder to drunk driving, and sociol-

¹ LEAA Newsletter (October 1979): 16.

² T. Sellin and M. Wolfgang, *The Measurement of Delinquency* (New York: John Wiley and Son, 1964).

ogist Kenneth J. Hodge repeated the study at the University of Florida³ with excellent correlation (Spearman's rank-order coefficient—rho equals .9534). The U.S. Department of Justice, however, published their National Survey of Crime Severity in 1985 with marked variation of seriousness for some of the same crimes. The results were as follows:

Table 2. National Survey of Crime Severity Results (1985)

Crime	San Francisco Adults	University of Florida	National Severity Index
Murder	1	3	35.6
Robbery	2	1	21.0
Burglary	3	2	9.7
Manslaughter	4	5	19.5
Rape	5	4	25.8
Embezzlement	6	6	6.2
Price Rigging	7	7	9.7
Child Molesting	8	8	25.2
Assault	9	14	10.4
Narcotics	10	10	20.6
Auto Theft	11	11	10.8
Bad Checks	12	13	3.6
Misrepresenting Advertising	13	9	1.9
Draft Evasion	14	12	no data
Exhibitionism	15	15	4.7
Homosexuality	16	18	1.3
Tax Evasion	17	17	6.1
Marijuana	18	18	10.5
Statutory Rape	19	19	1.6
Drunk Driving	20	20	no data

There was a span of some seven years between these studies, which accounts for some of the variations. The National Survey of Crime Severity was by far the largest with some 50,000 respondents, and it also utilized a different methodology.

Another system of grading the seriousness of crime has been used by the FBI since early 1970 and is found in the Uniform Crime Reports, the annual publication of crime

³ L. Ott, W. Mendenhall, and R. Larson, *Statistics: A Tool for the Social Sciences* (Boston: Duxbury Press, 1978).

statistics. This system contains twenty-six offense categories in a general descending order of seriousness as follows.

Table 3. Uniform Crime Reports Offense Categories

1.	Criminal homicide
	a. Murder and non-negligent manslaughter
	b. Manslaughter by negligence
2.	Forcible rape
3.	Robbery
4.	Aggravated assault
5.	Burglary—breaking and entering
6.	Larceny—theft
7.	Auto theft
8.	Other assaults
9.	Arson
10.	Forgery and counterfeiting
11.	Embezzlement and fraud
12.	Buying, receiving, possessing stolen property
13.	Weapons: carrying, possessing, etc.
14.	Prostitution
15.	Sex offenses (except rape and prostitution)
16.	Narcotics
17.	Liquor laws
18.	Drunkenness
19.	Disorderly conduct
20.	Vagrancy
21.	Gambling
22.	Driving while intoxicated
23.	Violations of driving laws
24.	Parking violations
25.	Other traffic violations
26.	All other offenses

Most of the systems of rating the seriousness of crime consistently place murder and rape among the most serious of crimes, but are ambivalent about the grading of the

seriousness of the other sex crimes. In 1965, the Institute for Sex Research found it unprofitable to categorize the sex offenses according to a scale of seriousness because of disagreement among both the public and professionals about what offense is more serious than another.⁴ For example, one person may hold that an offense involving force is ipso facto more serious than one involving a voluntary relationship, yet the next person may feel that the seduction of a child is more serious than the rape of an adult, and a third person may claim that incest is the most pathological of all. One measure of seriousness might be the effect upon the victim, but in many cases we cannot be sure of the effect even years later. The same offense does not produce a uniform effect with all individuals. What to one person is an inconsequential, dim, childhood memory may to another be an unforgettable, life-molding trauma.

One of the problems of coming to grips with the relative seriousness of sex crimes stems from the insufficient range of descriptive language in the legal categories, which the criminal justice system deals with. Serious sex crimes are often unjustly bargained down to nonsexual offenses.⁵ The term sexual pervert commonly recurs in the legal literature, but not all sex offenders are considered sexually perverse. A young man indulging in sex with a girl who happens to be just below the legal age of consent is not some kind of depraved monster.⁶ He is only doing what comes naturally. "What constitutes a sex crime is dictated by the prevailing social attitude of a particular culture ... the mores of one country may be entirely different from those of another."⁷ "A sex crime is any criminal act in which some type of sexual satisfaction is the motivating force for the crime."⁸ "At least 85 percent of the male population could be convicted as sex offenders if law enforcement was strict. But the public, not knowing of the near-universality of illegal sexual activity, heaps the penalty for the whole group on one who happens to be apprehended."⁹

The sexual customs, culture, and laws that govern the sexual behavior of American men today are still strongly influenced by religion. Judeo-Christian religious and secular laws derive from the Law of Moses originally set down about 1491 BC. St. Thomas Aquinas (1225–1274) was one of the greatest Christian writers who did much to establish our present laws on sexual morality. St. Thomas's idea was that any deviation from the conjugal male superior coital position was unnatural and, therefore, more sinful. Accordingly, he ranked homosexuality, sodomy, fellatio, coitus interruptus, and bestiality as more serious sins than rape, incest, and adultery.¹⁰ A 1978 Gallup Poll

⁴ P. Gebhard, J. Gagnon, W. Pomeroy, and C. Christenson, *Sex Offenders: An Analysis of Types* (New York: Harper & Row, 1965), 712.

⁵ H. M. Hoberman, *The Sexual Predator* (Kingston, NJ: Civic Research Institute, Inc., 1999), 9–11.

⁶ Ploscowe, 1947.

⁷ B. Karpman, *The Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 9th printing (Julian Press, 1954), 607.

⁸ G. Thompson, *California Report* (1950).

⁹ A. Kinsey, W. Pomeroy, and C. Martin, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male* (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders, 1948).

¹⁰ St. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica* vol. II/II q. 154, a. 11.

found that 94 percent of the U.S. population believes in God and that 65 million adults believe that the Bible is inerrant.¹¹

Several other factors also have an impact on our consideration of the seriousness of the sex crimes: they are usually repetitive in nature and frequently have a regular cyclic pattern, they will frequently fold over to other sex crimes besides those which become known, they often are perpetrated by criminals who are involved with other crimes besides the sex crimes, and they receive more attention from the public and are more severely penalized. Abel et al. (1983) collected a sample of 411 sex offenders and found that these offenders had actually attempted 238,711 sex crimes and completed 218,900. Over a period of twelve years following his deviant arousal, each offender had committed an average of forty-four crimes a year. Weinrott and Saylor replicated these observations with ninety-nine sex offenders and found that they had committed over 8,000 sex crimes and 19,518 non-sex offenses in the twelve-month period preceding incarceration—50.6 percent of Abel’s rapists had perpetrated pedophilia, and Weinrott found 32 percent had; 16.8 percent of Abel’s convicted child molesters had also raped, and 12 percent of Weinrott’s had in one year’s time; and 29.1 percent of Abel’s rapists had exposed themselves compared to Weinrott’s 33 percent.¹²

Large amounts of information have been printed in our periodicals and books on the Ted Bundys and Green River Killers of our era. A large part of our criminal justice system is devoted to them: The McNaughton¹³ child molestation case occupied more court time and cost more than any other previous case on record. Several severe punishments have been meted out to child molesters consisting of multiple, consecutive life sentences.

An excessive, imbalanced sex drive is at the root of several other types of crime, which are never listed in the crime statistics as sex crimes. Kleptomania (shoplifting) and pyromania (arson) are among those that have been shown to have sexual motivations.¹⁴ Spousal abuse, assaults, and murders of unfaithful spouses and lovers are caused by sexual imbalance and dysfunction, but it never appears as such in the records. These “domestic” crimes are the most dangerous to the police authorities, and it has been clearly shown by tightly controlled experiments¹⁵ that police action does not deter repetition. Robbing, stealing, forging checks, and committing fraud to obtain money or notoriety are never listed as sex crimes, but libido and self-esteem are certainly involved. Without the emotional roller coaster of high testosterone levels, they never would have happened. Why is it that there is not more recognition of the contribution of the sex urge to more and worse crimes than any other motivation? Our

¹¹ Christianity Today (December 21, 1979).

¹² M. Weinrott and M. Saylor, “Self-Report of Crimes Committed by Sex Offenders,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* (September 1991).

¹³ Ronald M. Holmes, *Sex Crimes* (Newbury Park: Sage Publications, 1991), Chapter 6.

¹⁴ John Money, *Lovemaps* (New York: Irvington Publishers, Inc., 1986), 55.

¹⁵ J. Hirschel, I. Hutchenson, and C. Dean, “The Failure of Arrest to Deter Spouse Abuse,” *Research in Crime and Delinquency* 28, no. 1 (1992): 7–33.

learned psychologists and sociologists are fascinated with dozens of other contributing factors, and we have spent hundreds of billions of dollars trying to correct those causes, but they have almost entirely overlooked the sex hormone drive. Perhaps their evil influence is overlooked because these hormones are thought to engender admirable behaviors through masculine, protective impulses. We shall see.

My contention that the sex crimes include the worst crimes known to man was reechoed by Professor Barbara Hudson of the British University of Northumbria in her presentation to the American Society of Criminology's annual meeting held at Boston, Massachusetts, on 16 November 1995. She said that "... the worst case, of course, is the sex offender" during her talk on race, crime, and justice in the risk society. One has only to read some of the Marquis de Sade book *The 120 Days of Sodom* written in 1785 while Sade was a prisoner in the Bastille. This book describes about 600 cases of horrendous sadistic, necrophilic, and lust murder behavior in the filthiest, detailed language. A quick scan can reveal the depth of evil that the sex urge of men can generate.

Special laws requiring community notification of the presence of sex offenders released from incarceration is another indication of the seriousness with which the public regards their crimes. Earl Shriner passed the first of these in Washington State in 1990 as a result of the brutal sexual assault on a seven-year-old boy by a then recently released sex offender. By 1996, twenty states had enacted similar laws, twelve other states allowed public access to sex offender information, and eight more states were considering similar legislation. In June 1996, President Clinton signed a similar national law known as Megan's Law. Attending his public signing of this bill was the mother of Megan Kanka. Megan was a seven-year-old girl who had been sexually assaulted and murdered in Hamilton, New Jersey, by a released sex offender who had moved in across the street from the Kanka home.

Oddly enough, a majority of professional sex offender treatment providers did not approve of the Megan's Law idea, and they published several articles in this vein in literature (including the *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* for June 1996 and *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment*, April 1996). Perhaps they felt the Megan's Laws reflected the public lack of confidence in their ability to prevent sex offender recidivation—which, indeed, it did.

All crime is potentially defined as deviant, but all deviance is certainly not a crime. Social and legal codifications of deviance vary over time. The "deviantizing" of behavior that was previously not considered overly deviant, or perhaps even "normal," is essentially a political process (Schur, 1980; Pfohl, 1994) that may be triggered by sudden increases in political power among certain types of people.¹⁶

¹⁶ Kenneth Mentor and Dorne, "The Association Between Right-Wing Authoritarianism and the Perceived Seriousness of Deviant Acts: A Research Note," *Deviant Behavior: An Interdisciplinary Journal* 19, no. 1 (1998): 73.

Another factor that tends to increase the seriousness of the sex crimes with the passing of time is the relentless increase in the world's population and the concurrent resulting increase in the numbers of people with sexual perversions. Even though most of these perversions remain at a very low percentage of the population, their numbers increase with the overall population. Many perverts have a history of being less than 0.01 percent of the population, but their numbers will grow to about 30,000 as the U.S. population grows to 300,000,000. Many of the people in these tiny minorities are highly motivated by the discrimination they feel against them to become activists and organizers of political pressures for their protection. Some of them are quite intelligent and vocal. The World Wide Web computer network has facilitated rapid, anonymous search and communication facilities so these people can get with others with similar interests and gain strength in uniting. This all adds up to a serious undermining of the moral strength of our nation as time goes on. We need to do something stronger to meet this growing threat. Castration of the worst offenders fills the bill.

V. Propensity, Periodicity, Progression, Prediction, and Prevention

Many people have a certain propensity—a natural inclination or leaning—to commit a sex crime. With women and eunuchs, this propensity is usually quite low, but in healthy men, it can become an overpowering urge because sex is essential to racial survival and highly reinforcing with immediate gratification and ecstasy in orgasm. This is the greatest pleasure known to most human beings. Orgasm is a state of pure bliss triggered by body play, mainly genital stimulation, and indicated by the most pleasurable moaning or screaming. Orgasm is an emotional and physical release that results in a feeling of utter contentment and relaxation. Men are hard-wired by their hormones and nervous system to seek the ecstasy of sex over and over, usually by sexual intercourse—coitus, copulation, mating, and love—but sometimes by deviant means, which I shall describe in the following chapters.

Some races are more inclined than others. The black race is highest, the white race next highest, and the yellow race has the lowest propensity to commit sex crimes. The average testosterone levels follow a similar pattern: highest in the black race and lowest in the yellow race. A 1996 study showed that among American high school students, only 28 percent of blacks were virgins, while 50 percent of whites and 73 percent of Asian-Americans were. Several other studies have shown similar tendencies among the races. Within each race there are certain ethnic groups that are more inclined than others toward sexual violence. In the black race, the tallest African tribal stock is more inclined than the shorter tribes. In the white race, Hispanics and Mediterranean peoples are generally higher than Nordic or Anglo. In the yellow race, Chinese and Koreans are lower than the Japanese in aggression and violence. So, we can readily see that only half of the male human race has a propensity for the violent sex crimes, and of that half, only about 50 percent have what may be classified as a high propensity.

Twenty to twenty-five percent, then, of the world male population should be viewed as strongly, naturally inclined to commit this type of crime. This percentage is further reduced by the age constraints: Very little sex crime occurs before puberty (around age ten, but can be as late as age seventeen), and after about age thirty-five, the propensity gradually declines with age. Various diseases can reduce propensity for sex crimes also—both the mental and the physical pathologies can have this effect—so

we end up with only 10 or 15 percent of our population with a high proclivity for committing the violent sex crimes. Certain somatic types also should be mentioned as having a higher propensity for these crimes: the hairy, macho, muscular, mesomorphic-type man may be distinguished as having a greater propensity than the thin, asthenic, ectomorphic type or the fat, endomorphic type of body build. Although there are complex biological and social factors involved behind the sex crimes, genetics also plays a role, contributing at least 30 percent of the propensity in the mesomorphic males, aged fifteen to thirty-five, in certain families.

Periodicity is the quality, state, or fact of being regularly recurrent, and it is a well-known feature of the sex crimes often used by the investigators who specialize in this kind of crime in anticipating the next attack. In establishing the *modus operandi* of any given rapist or lust murderer, a pattern of more-or-less regular frequency is usually discernable. Ted Bundy and several others followed this pattern. Investigators frequently recognize the criminal's repetitious behavior pattern without really knowing why or how it is caused. On the other hand, physicians, psychiatrists, and psychologists have known of the cyclic variations of many bodily functions, but have only rarely associated these variations with behavior.

Landau and Fridman reviewed the history of the study of the seasonality of criminal behavior and wrote that it:

... is considered to be a classical topic in criminological research. One hundred fifty years ago, the Belgian statistician Adolph Quetelet (1842) stated the following: "The seasons, in their course, exercise a very marked influence: thus, during summer the greatest number of crimes against persons are committed and the fewest against property; the contrary takes place during the winter." More than a century later, Sutherland (1947) restated this "thermic law of criminality": Statistical studies show very uniformly that crimes against property reach a maximum in winter months, and crimes against the person and against morals, in the summer months.¹

In Landau and Fridman, not all of the studies reviewed showed the same season timing, but there were others that did: Michael and Zumpe (1983) investigated annual rhythms in violent crimes committed during two to three consecutive years (in the period of 1975 to 1979) in sixteen different locations in the United States. They reported that assaults and rapes peaked in the summer (between July and August) and robbery did so in the winter (between November and December). Field (1993) analyzed monthly crime data of England and Wales over a period of ten years. He reported that although personal crime (including violence against the person and sexual offenses) "peaked in summer, robbery and burglary peaked in the winter ... " The conclusion of Cohn (1990) is that although most violent crimes against the person (e.g., assaults,

¹ Simha F. Landau and Daniel Fridman, "The Seasonality of Violent Crime: The Case of Robbery and Homicide in Israel," *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency* 30, no. 2 (1993): 163, 164.

collective violence, domestic violence, and rape) increase with heat, the relationship between heat and homicide is uncertain.

Dr. Richard Livingston, a psychiatrist at the University of Arkansas, reviewed data on 585 boys born between 1948 and 1970 who were referred to the psychiatric clinic for behavior or learning problems. Overall, boys born in May, June, or July displayed more than twice the risk of developing dyslexia as boys born in any other months ... Births in these three months accounted for 40 percent of all instances of dyslexia. Livingston stated, "I suspect different types of early brain insults can cause dyslexia."²

The sex urge and all of its manifestations (the 105 named paraphilias, crimes, and perversions in the next chapter, as well as the numerous normative expressions) have frequently shown a cyclic characteristic. There is a regular ninety-minute cycle of the luteinizing hormone release in men, which causes the gonadal sex hormones to be released into the blood supply and hence to the brain. Generally this goes unnoticed. During sleep, however, this cycle manifests itself in periodic erections and sexual dreams. Unbidden, without consciously willing it to happen, we are more sexual during the cyclic hormonal peaks.

The paraphiliac has learned that a certain type of release, usually masturbation, would best satisfy his cyclic sex urge. After a time, however, this fails to suffice, and he looks around and happens to find something else. The child next door, exciting pictures in a magazine, perhaps a dog or horse—whatever he happens to notice at this particular time when his hormones peak. These objects or animals can become an erotic stimulus.

Just as we learned to eat different foods to satisfy our hunger, we learned different ways to satisfy our cyclic sex urge. The cycles cannot be denied or wished away. They are the stuff of life itself, essential to the survival of the species. No more than we can stop our cycles of breathing, sleeping, urinating, or defecating, we have to feel them repeatedly—over and over, sooner or later. The implications of the patterns of cyclic crimes (those that exhibit some degree of consistency) are that they can be more predictable. We can observe the behavior and learn its pattern and predict when a lust murderer or serial rapist will try to strike again, and be more watchful at those times. We have it within our capability today to identify these people early in their criminal career by their patterns of behavior. If we had the proper enabling laws, we could castrate these people and prevent their repetition of the horrendous crimes even before they had progressed to the most obscene levels of murder or rape. Some men have a very strong drive, while others hardly are aware they have any hunger for sex. Those that have the high sex drive, in turn, do not desire sex constantly at the same level all the time. Immediately after satisfying the lust (and sometimes for days or weeks or even months), men do not even think about it. Should external sexual stimuli arrive at the same time as the hormones peak, the cumulative effects can be overpowering to the criminal, whose conscience does not control him.

² Richard Livingston, "Dyslexia Risk Linked to Summer Births," *Science News* (May 1, 1993): 277.

The periodicity of violence and the sex crimes has been known from ancient times. Men knew that animals and humans had sexual cycles. They came into “heat” at regular frequencies, and they ovulated, copulated, and menstruated in cycles, which was thought to be controlled by the phases of the moon and the seasons, just as the ocean tides are around the world. More recently, it has been discovered that we all have internal “clocks” in the hypothalamus that cycle through regular periods. Women have their monthly periods, and men’s sex hormones rise and fall in regular cycles each day and also every ninety minutes day and night, but also in a seasonal manner: “In the spring young men lightly turn to thoughts of love.” Sex crimes like rape peak in the spring of the year, and murders peak in the summer. “... The general observation that one effect of the steroid hormones is to perform a frequency modulation of the oscillatory system ... This generalization appears to be true for ... optimal driving frequency of the hippocampal theta rhythm.”³ Scientists often refer to the “photo-periodicity” of animals. When the length of days increases in summer, there is an increase in the sexual ability and hormone melatonin produced by the pineal gland in the middle of the brain. In humans, the pineal gland is usually rudimentary, so length of day has only a moderate effect on sexual ability. There is also a correlative link between the human sleep-wake cycle and body temperature rhythm. One rhythm is modulated by the other.⁴

Progression, or the escalation of the seriousness and violence of sex crimes, has long been argued, and opinions still vary widely. If we knew more of how violent sex offenders’ behavior progressed, perhaps we could predict future behavior and take some steps to prevent future serious crimes. Stermac and Hall (1989) studied fifty sex offenders at the Clark Institute of Psychiatry in Toronto, Ontario, and found that sixteen offenders did show a pattern of increasing severity of offenses, sixteen did not increase the intensity of their offenses, and eighteen of them were first-time offenders and could not be rated on their scales of increasing intensity of crimes. The researchers concluded that those whose crimes escalated from less severe to more severe were younger than the others (mean age 24.8 years) and reflected a significantly greater number who had psychiatric histories (93.5 percent) than the others in the study.⁵ In the United States, a generalized progression has occurred in the intensity, frequency, and variety of the sex crimes since our “sexual revolution” (1960s through the 1980s). The public has heard more examples of lust murder, necrophilia, cannibalism, and pedophilia with ever-increasing frequency and gorier details. Names of lust murderers like Ted Bundy and Jeffery Dahmer have now become familiar to most of the adult population. The statistics of rape and child molestation convictions have continued

³ L. P. Morin, “A Concept of Physiological Time: Rhythms in Behavior and Reproductive Physiology,” *Annals of the New York Academy of Science* 474 (1986): 340.

⁴ C. A. Czeisler, E. D. Weitzman, M. C. Moore-Ede, J. C. Zimmerman, and R. S. Knauer, “Human Sleep: Its Duration and Organization Depend on Its Circadian Phase,” *Science* 210 (1980): 1264–1267.

⁵ L. Stermac and K. Hall, “Escalation in Offending: Fact or Fiction?” *Annals of Sex Research* 2, no. 2 (1989): 153–162.

to increase almost on a linear scale. Date rape, spousal rape, sexual harassment, and most recently “stalking” have been added to the statutes in most states as preventative efforts and as awareness increases.

Elliott, who used self-reported data from the National Youth Survey (NYS), found much clearer evidence of progression.⁶ In this 1976 survey, the same 1,725 youths, ages eleven to seventeen, were interviewed nine times over the sixteen years and were ages twenty-seven to thirty-three when last interviewed in 1993.⁷ Elliott observed that:

The picture of serious violent careers that emerges from this analysis of self-reported violence differs in several respects from that derived from official record studies. The prevalence of serious violent offenders is substantially higher; onset occurs much earlier; the demographic correlates are substantially weaker; evidence for escalation in frequency, seriousness, and variety of offenses over the career is much stronger; evidence for the sequencing of serious forms of violent behavior is stronger; and the continuity of serious violent offending from the juvenile into the adult years is similar for males and for females.

It is possible to establish the sequence of the types of serious violent behavior used in this analysis. Aggravated assault precedes robbery in 85 percent of cases and rape in 92 percent. Robbery precedes rape in 72 percent of cases. Thus, the typical sequence is from aggravated assault to robbery to rape.

The overlap of these behaviors within a serious violent career is quite high. Three-quarters of those with a rape or robbery also have an aggravated assault in their repertoire. Only 30 percent of those with an aggravated assault, however, also have a rape or a robbery. The most frequent form of serious violent behavior is an aggravated assault; 88 percent of all serious offenders report this offense. About one-third have a robbery in their repertoire and 15 percent a rape.

The sequences established here suggest a clear escalation in the seriousness of criminal behavior over time in a criminal career. The cumulative ever-prevalence (to age twenty-seven) of serious violent offenders in the National Youth Survey sample is 30 percent, 42 percent for males and 16 percent for females. By age eighteen, nearly 40 percent of black males have become involved in serious violent offending, compared with 30 percent of white males; at age twenty-seven these rates are 48 percent and 38 percent respectively. More than half of all black males who would become involved in serious violent behavior by age twenty-four had initiated their involvement by age fifteen; half of whites had initiated by age sixteen. When these ever-prevalent rates are compared with the age-specific rates presented earlier, it appears that over 60 percent

⁶ “The National Youth Survey,” National Institute of Mental Health (1993).

⁷ D. S. Elliott, “Serious Violent Offenders: Onset, Developmental Course, and Termination—The American Society of Criminology 1993 Presidential Address,” *Criminology* 30 (1994): 1–21.

of all males who will ever be involved (by age twenty-seven) in serious violent offending are actively involved by age seventeen.

Progression has also been observed by FBI Special Agent Robert R. Hazelwood and his colleagues in serial rapists and has been reported in several areas⁸⁹¹⁰ as well as in lectures at the Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences and other organizations. Serial rapists often begin as voyeurs peeping in women's windows and then progress to rape.

Formerly, there was little evidence of progression, and it was generally believed that a man tended to become fixated on a certain type of sexual act and stick with it for life. This was deemed to be especially true of the sex offender, who was thought to learn one type of crime and become obsessed with that one deviance to the exclusion of all others. The public and police have been badly misled in this, perhaps because it was easier to understand, to explain, and to examine a single-track notion. Peepers stayed peepers; rapists, pedophiles, fetishists, and homosexuals were just that—they didn't switch around. The police would often apprehend peepers and let them go because they were on the lookout for rapists to the exclusion of other types of offending behavior. Several times it developed that these peepers were in fact also the rapists for whom the police were searching. Peepers can also be fetishists who can also be burglars who break in and steal women's panties and who also rape women.

Progression is a tricky trait to explain because it follows irregular paths. The peeper does not always become a burglar who becomes a rapist, but there is a general trend toward increasingly exciting behavior for the individual. It is a lot like the drug addict who starts out smoking pot and then goes on to sniffing glue, then to cocaine, heroin, or amphetamines. Similar neurotransmitters, hormones, and CNS components are involved in both the drug addict and the compulsive sex offender, and the synergistic effect of alcohol and drugs on the sex crimes is well established. The FBI learned from a study of serial rapists that 25 percent of offenders increased the frequency and amount of injury to their victims as time went on. There is a startling geometric progression that operates in the proliferation of the sex crimes, which makes it imperative that early intervention be as effective as possible: The average sexually aggressive adolescent offender may be expected to abuse 380 victims during his lifetime, and there is a strong tendency for each youthful victim, in turn, to become an offender in later life.¹¹

There is good evidence that difficult infants are more prone to be overactive and physically aggressive from preschool through sixth grade, at least according to Profes-

⁸ R. Hazelwood and J. Warren, "The Serial Rapist: His Characteristics and Victims (Part I)," FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin (1989a, January): 11–17.

⁹ R. Hazelwood and J. Warren, "The Serial Rapist: His Characteristics and Victims (Part II)," FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin (1989b, February): 11–17.

¹⁰ R. Hazelwood, R. Reboussin, and J. Warren, "Serial Rape: Correlates of Increased Aggression and the Relationship of Offender Pleasure to Victim Resistance," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 4 (1989): 65–78.

¹¹ H. F. Knopp, *The Youthful Sex Offender: The Rationale and Goals of Early Intervention and Treatment* (Syracuse, NY: Safer Society Press, 1985).

sor Diana Guerin of California State University at Fullerton.¹² According to her article, parents usually do the wrong thing in trying to force such children to obey by openly conflicting with them over their behavior. This teaches the child that they must use force as their parents did to get their desires satisfied.

Many crimes that are labeled “B and E” (breaking and entering) by the police are actually rape attempts, which were somehow diverted or foiled or only partially successful intrusions. It is understandable to use this mislabeling in the criminal justice system, but it entirely obscures the sexual component of these crimes on the record books. The unfortunate result is that we will probably never know the full extent of the crimes that are sexually motivated and therefore preventable through the castration treatment.

Just as the drug addict shows a regular pattern in the use of his drug, the sex criminal tends to repeat and increase the frequency, degree, and seriousness of his crimes. Drug “kicks” and sexual pleasure are similar in that they employ some of the same neural pathways and neurotransmitters and are very strong behavioral reinforcers. They often habituate the individual who is susceptible into recurrent, episodic sex crimes. Lust murderers like Ted Bundy frequently return to the dead body of their victim, which they have hidden, for as long as a month after the murder. Knowledge of this characteristic may become important from an investigative standpoint. We should not compartmentalize our thinking to a single simple typology. Similarly, with the treatment phase, we must recognize that a single sex criminal may have many facets to his sex urge. Albert Fish was not only a pedophile, he was a sadist, masochist, and lust murderer as well. The sex offender is often a very complex individual with his sex drive liable to manifest itself in many different and bizarre ways. It is very disturbing for many of us who have studied these types of men for years to realize that our sex offender classification system is probably oversimplified and therefore misleading.

Prediction. Given the endless varieties of human nature and societal variables, prediction of dangerousness has always been a risky venture. We are today much better equipped than formerly to render such judgments utilizing the knowledge outlined above under the headings of propensity, progression, and periodicity. Elliott (1994:16) theorizes that there are three primary predictors of an onset of serious violent offending: peer normlessness (weight .41), attitudes toward deviance (.31), and delinquent peers (.28).

The word prediction rhymes with the word addiction, and, in fact, the study of addiction reinforces the ability to make predictions. We know that a person who is addicted to drugs, alcohol, sex, gambling, or food will automatically seek more of his particular weakness as time goes on. As he has imbibed in the past, he will imbibe in the future. Knowing this, we should be enabled to take the powerful preventive measure that I am advocating to stop the destructive behavior in the addiction. Prevention is

¹² “Parents Beware: Fussy Babies May Become Tougher Teens,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 16, 1994): 1B.

the highest kind of control—the best kind. It saves much more for society, as well as for the individual. Corrections and punishments after the crime is committed are much more expensive, time consuming, painful, and ineffective. We can prevent sexual crimes with castration, which will also prevent many other types of crimes. Criminally pathological sexual addiction is heralded by behaviors, which are typically:

Obsessive and compulsive (out of control).

Desperate and irresponsible.

Preceded by excessive fantasies.

Accompanied by denial and dissociation.

Associated with avoidance due to shame, fear, and despair.

Controlling that which will achieve the sex aim of the addict.

Risk taking.

Showing narcissism and deception.

Living a double life.

Tolerating abusive relationships.

Endangering one's professional and family life.¹³

Our very worst criminals—serial killers, lust murderers, necrophiliacs, serial rapists, fixated pedophiliacs, and most of the other paraphiliacs—all show the characteristics of addiction so their behavior is highly predictable. They will continue their heinous behavior until they are relieved of the hormonal fuel that drives their engines of destruction by the simple relief-giving operation of castration. But our religious, psychiatric, legal, medical, academic, and radical activists, etc., all argue against it. It will be a long time coming in this country. We argued for thirty years about the dangers of cigarette smoking in a similar manner. Fifty thousand people a year died of the effects of cigarette smoke, and many others became sick with lung diseases and heart trouble from the same cause. We continue to argue about tobacco- and marijuana-smoking dangers to the health, even today when it is perfectly obvious that it is deadly. We have been badly misled in a similar manner over the castration treatment. Its advantages far outweigh its disadvantages in most cases.

Animal abuse has been found to be predictive of violent behavior against humans. Saint Francis of Assisi (1182–1226) noted a disturbing correlation between animal maltreatment and human violence. “If you have men who will exclude any of God’s creatures from the shelter of compassion and pity,” he declared, “you will have men who will deal likewise with their fellow man.” Some of the studies that have documented this trait are as follows:

Walker showed that 9 percent of families in Bucks County, Pennsylvania,, had been reported to both the child protective and animal protection organizations.¹⁴

¹³ Julius P. Lundy, “Behavior Patterns that Comprise Sexual Addiction as Identified by Mental Health Professionals,” *Journal of Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity* 1, no. 1 (1994): 50.

¹⁴ J. R. Walker, *A Study on the Relationship of Child Abuse and Pet Abuse* (Philadelphia: Unpublished professional project, University of Pennsylvania School of Social Work, 1980).

Hutton found 82 percent of families who were investigated for cruelty to animals were also known to social services as having “children at risk.”¹⁵

Deviney, Dickert, and Lockwood found 88 percent of families reported for child physical abuse also had abused or neglected their animals.¹⁶

Tingle, Barnard, Robbins, Newman, and Hutchinson reported that 48 percent of convicted rapists and 30 percent of convicted pedophiles, who were questioned, admitted cruelty to animals in their childhood or adolescence.¹⁷

Ressler, Burgess, and Douglas found 36 percent of incarcerated sexual homicide perpetrators had committed acts of animal cruelty in their childhood, and 46 percent in their adolescence.¹⁸

Quinlisk surveyed women in domestic violence prevention centers throughout Wisconsin and found that in 80 percent of the homes with pets, the batterers had also been violent against the animals.¹⁹

Ascione reported finding that 71 percent of the women in Utah who were seeking safe house shelter had observed their male partners threatening to hurt, or actually hurting or killing, one or more pets.²⁰

Prediction becomes extremely important in the criminal justice system when sex offenders have served their time and are scheduled to be released from incarceration. Sex offenders released from incarceration vary widely in their probability of re-offense and the degree of harm they inflict if they re-offend. Furr²¹ reviewed the literature on prediction techniques with particular reference to five methods:

The **statistical index recidivism scale**, which is routinely applied to federal offenders in Canada. No research has been done on its usefulness with sex offenders, however.

The **level of supervisory inventory**, which was developed to measure the level of supervision an inmate will need on an early release program.

¹⁵ J. S. Hutton, *Animal Abuse as a Diagnostic Approach in Social Work: A Pilot Study* (Philadelphia: A paper presented at the International Conference on the Human/Companion Animal Bond, 1981).

¹⁶ E. Deviney, J. Dickert, and R. Lockwood, “The Care of Pets Within Child Abusing Families,” *International Journal for the Study of Animal Problems* 4 (1983): 321–329.

¹⁷ D. Tingle, G. W. Barnard, G. Robbins, G. Newman, and D. Hutchinson, “Childhood and Adolescent Characteristics of Pedophiles and Rapists,” *International Journal of Law and Psychiatry* 9 (1986): 103–116.

¹⁸ R. K. Ressler, A. W. Burgess, and J. E. Douglas, *Sexual Homicide: Patterns and Motives* (Lexington, MA: Lexington Books, 1988).

¹⁹ A. Quinlisk, 1994/1995 Survey Results (La Crosse, WI: Domestic Violence Project, 1995).

²⁰ J. R. Ascione, “Domestic Violence and Cruelty to Animals,” *Latham Letter* XVII, no. 1 (1996): 1–16.

²¹ K. D. Furr, “Prediction of Sexual or Violent Recidivism Among Sexual Offenders: A Comparison of Prediction Instruments,” *Annals of Sex Research* 6, no. 4 (1993): 272.

The **risk checklist for child molesters** designed to predict a specific type of future offense by an offender who had already committed the same type of offense in the past based on historical information from the files.

The **psychopathy checklist (revised)** also requires adequate historical information on the offender and requires a specially trained professional to administer it.

The **statistical prediction of a violent recidivism instrument** also utilizes comprehensive files and trained raters.

Furr concluded that “sexual offending or violence after release from incarceration cannot be predicted with a very high degree of accuracy among offenders as a whole.” And, “while these instruments show promise as tools for predicting violent or sexual re-offending among sex offenders, further research is needed before they should be applied generally to sex offenders.”

Professor Gottfredson of Rutgers University has studied the prediction of future criminality for over twenty-two years and has written at least eight studies on the subject. In his article, he concludes that:

The prediction of offenders’ behaviors is difficult, and we don’t do it very well. Particularly

disappointing, however, is that the theoretical advances provided by recent attention to parameters of the criminal career ... improve only marginally on the behavioral prediction problem ... Attempts to modify the criminal career through incapacitation must rely heavily on such predictions and on similar data.²²

As Gottfredson pointed out, there are at least four types of errors being made with the present prediction methods: the “false negatives” (predicting failure in a person who in fact succeeds in avoiding future crime), “false positives” (predicting success in a person who in fact will fail), and two types of correct predictions. In Gottfredson’s 1994 report of 6,300 California prisoners who were traced over a twenty-year period, the false positives resulted in 30,000 re-arrests. Included in these were 184 homicides, 144 rapes, 2,084 assaults, 655 auto thefts, 2,756 burglaries, 2,800 thefts, and 2,293 robberies. The false negatives accounted for the “lifetime” confinement of 1,413 inmates who were kept in prisons; many of these were later believed to have been unlikely to commit more crimes—another very expensive mistake resulting from inadequate prediction capability. The cost of housing, feeding, hospitalizing, and guarding these men has continued to rise over the years.

Quinsey et al. tend to echo the Gottfredsons:

²² Don M. Gottfredson and Stephen D. Gottfredson, “Behavioral Predictions and the Problem of Incapacitation,” *Criminology* 32, no. 3 (1994): 441–474.

Unfortunately, past research has been nearly unanimous in concluding that clinicians have no expertise in predicting dangerousness, whether for sex offenders or any other group (Monahan, 1981; Quinsey and Ambtman, 1979; Quinsey and Maguire, 1986).²³

In 1988, planning began on a large federal project to gather the data that would allow scientists to predict and prevent crime. It was called the “Project on Human Development in Chicago Neighborhoods” and used a creative new design. Data collection actually began in 1994. The project is expected to continue for eight years and provide data on twenty-four years, from birth to age twenty-four. Data is and will be collected on 11,000 individuals in nine different age groups. Individual, family, and community data in seventy different communities is also to be included. Health and biomedical factors, such as hormone levels, are expected to be among the data gathered. One of the overall objectives of this project was to develop new methods of prevention of crime by calculating which children are most likely to become serious and persistent delinquents in the community. In the 1960s, diversion programs such as “outward bound” or social service placements rather than jail were tried. In the 1980s and 1990s, the pendulum swung back to the traditional approach of incapacitation. Neither method stemmed the annual increase in violent behavior. And neither approach provided the information about the origins of criminal behavior.²⁴

Unfortunately, recent experience raises doubts about the ability of the criminal justice system either to deliver justice or reduce violence on a consistent basis ... In seeking to reduce violence and its consequences, the emphasis should be on prevention rather than amelioration. Primary prevention—measures that prevent violent events from happening in the first place and does so across a large population—should be the primary focus.²⁵

Even as recently as January 2000, prediction (risk assessment) of the chances of recidivism by sex offenders was still very chancy. “Predicting whether sexual offenders are going to recidivate is difficult ... The predictive accuracy of the typical clinical judgment is only slightly above chance levels.”²⁶ Serin, Mailloux, and Malcolm showed that recidivism rates were higher for men with psychopathy and that rapists had higher rates than pedophiles. Prediction accuracy was aided by this information.²⁷

²³ Vernon L. Quinsey, Marnie E. Rice, and Grant T. Harris, “Actuarial Prediction of Sexual Recidivism,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 10, no. 1 (1995): 85.

²⁴ “National Institute of Justice Research Report,” *Breaking the Cycle: Predicting and Preventing Crime* (1994): 57.

²⁵ “National Institute of Justice Research in Action,” *Reducing Violent Crimes and Intentional Injuries* (October 1995).

²⁶ R. Karl Hanson, Ph.D., “Risk Assessment,” *Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers*, First in a Series of Informational Packages (January 2000): 1.

²⁷ R. C. Serin, D. L. Mailloux, and B. P. Malcolm, “Psychopathy, Sexual Arousal, and Recidivism Among Sex Offenders,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 16, no. 3 (2001): 234–246.

We have a different situation, however, with the prediction of future recidivism with the castration treatment. The average recidivism rates with this treatment have fallen between 1.9 and 2.44 percent over a long period of time, so we can safely predict that castrated men, released a year after the surgery, are at least 97 percent certain of not returning to sex crimes. In most cases, their confinement time can be considerably reduced with much money saved. This possibility is impressive enough, but we can do even better. We can offer the castration treatment to men who show a high propensity to commit sex crimes even though they have never been arrested or convicted of such a crime. This should be our ultimate goal. The state of the art of predicting sex crimes will soon be practical.

Prevention. Sex offenses tend to have the features of propensity, periodicity, progression, and prediction in some measure because of their hormonal etiology. They include the most heinous crimes known; but they are not being prevented as well as they could be with our capabilities today. The ancient wisdom is very appropriate today. An ounce of prevention is worth more than a pound of cure.

Prevention of crime is certainly the highest goal of the government and its legal apparatus. The way to prevent the emergence of another Ted Bundy, John Wayne Gacy, Jeffrey Dahmer, or Henry Lee Lucas is now clear to us: We must first recognize all of the components of the offender's deviant behavior—his physical, mental, and spiritual makeup. Then we must take all of the steps which have proven effective in each realm: castration in the bodily realm, teaching him recognition of his deviant cycle in the mental realm, and strengthening his belief in the Greater Power in the spiritual realm.

We can no longer afford the luxury of a simple-minded, single-track approach. For the repeat offenders—regardless of their age—we must incarcerate them and treat them in all the realms of their personality. The consequences of failure to cover them all should be all too apparent to us in the twenty-first century with the ever-worsening national violence statistics. Unless we employ the strong measures that I am advocating, we are certain to suffer from more and more of these crimes. We can be certain, for example, that the youths who were sentenced as juveniles for the 19 April 1989 rape and assault of the jogger in New York's Central Park will again rape and maim when they are released into their old haunts. It is very likely that someone will die at their hands in the future.

Building on what we have learned in the past few years, the state of the prediction art should improve in the case of our worst sex offenders to the point that it becomes manifestly practical to include some of the younger (down to age fifteen) violent cases in our clientele for the castration treatment. Those who have repeatedly committed violent acts against animals are good candidates. We know that we can prevent their destructive behavior in the future by this simple, inexpensive, quick, and reliable method.

A brief word of caution concerning the use of the castration treatment is in order at this point. Occasionally, perhaps 3 percent of the time, castrated males maintain sexual

desire and erectile functions for long periods after surgery so the operation should be performed while they are incarcerated, and they should be closely monitored for a year or more to prevent a relapse of these few who may still be dangerous. There are enough phallometric tests available to ascertain quite accurately the type and amount of libido remaining in each individual before they are released into the general population.

VI. Description of the Sex Offenses

Under the rather innocuous label of “sex offenses,” there exists a Pandora’s Box of horrors, which I have arranged in my own hierarchy of descending seriousness. I have made use of the aforementioned rating scales and scores to some extent, but because my list is longer than any that I have been able to find in the existing literature, it is necessarily different. The legal descriptions alone do not go far enough to adequately define the full range of sexual conduct that may be subject to criminal sanctions, so I have added several categories from the scientific terminology.

One of the terms, which will appear with several of its derivatives, is the word paraphilia (from the Greek para meaning “beyond, amiss, altered,” plus philia meaning “love”). This word is a medically impartial synonym for the morally judgmental term perversion. “Paraphiliac behavior stands apart from the normal sex life; normal sexuality cannot be a substitute for the craved perversions, which alone can gratify some highly specific need. The paraphiliac experiences the highest degree of gratification during his socially prohibited behavior because the need is so compelling. Often the only purpose of the perverse act is relief from tension, not positive satisfaction.”¹ Paraphilias are unacceptable or illegal forms of sexual activity, which run counter to the accepted social behavior and are characterized by the absence of a normal biological aim such as procreation. “These are people whose desires behave in every way like sexual ones, but who at the same time entirely disregard the sexual organs or their normal use; people of this kind are known as ‘perverts.’” Abnormal sex is another term, which encompasses all criminalized or disvalued sexual behavior with the exceptions of fornication and adultery.²

The American Psychiatric Association lists the paraphilias under Sexual Disorders in their Diagnostic Criteria from DSM III-R of 1987 and gives the following criteria for gauging the severity of manifestations of a specific paraphilia: “Mild: The person is markedly distressed by the recurrent paraphiliac urges, but has never acted on them. Moderate: The person has occasionally acted on the paraphiliac urge. Severe: The person has repeatedly acted on the paraphiliac urge.” In 1980, the biomedical term paraphilia was adopted and the legal term perversion was dropped.

Dr. John Money has compiled a list of fifty-two paraphilias and in his 1988 book, *Gay, Straight, and In-Between*, defines these paraphilias. Paraphilia is defined as a condition occurring in men and women of being compulsively responsive to and for

¹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 120, 121.

² S. Freud, *An Outline of Psychoanalysis* (1940): Ch. 2.

optimal initiation and maintenance of sexuoerotic arousal and the facilitation or attainment of orgasm; obligatively fixated; and dependent on an unusual, personally or socially, unacceptable stimulus either perceived directly or in the imagery or ideation of fantasy (from Greek para-, “beyond, amiss, and by implication altered,” plus philia, “love”). Kinky sex (p. 133): “The stratagem of a paraphilia converts tragedy to triumph and aversion into addiction. It does so by merging lust with a performance or ritual that not only negates love, but also evokes negative sanctions. After the merger, that which was once forbidden or repugnant becomes additively sought after, despite the dangers, risks, and reprisals” (p. 144). “Paraphilia is conventionally classified as a disorder of sex. More accurately, it is a disorder of love, and of falling in love, which is also known as limerence” (p. 149). “Many paraphiliacs, when they carry out their paraphiliac ritual, undergo an altered state of consciousness, termed a paraphiliac fugue state, or a paraphiliac attack. It is akin to the Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde phenomenon of dual personality” (p. 184). “Without prevention, society will remain entrapped in an epidemic of paraphilia, the spread of which increases and is measured generation by generation, not month by month, or year by year. Each generation produces more paraphiliac children than did the generations before it” (p. 185).

I will try to sort out the multitude of offensive behaviors in order that we may have a better understanding of the huge variations that have some sort of sexuality in their makeup. This has proven to be an endless task because of the changing mores and additional information on some of these that sexual science has uncovered. These descriptions are of sex offenses that range in seriousness, from the most benign offenses to the most heinous crimes. Indeed, some people will not even classify some of these behaviors as offenses and then only in special circumstances. These presentations also vary greatly in length because of the available information. Some are very common, reflected in news items almost daily, and others have very little information available about them. Arranging these offenses into a graded series facilitates reviewing the array. This may be of use to students and experts in analyzing an individual’s behavior to predict his or her danger as a criminal. There is often a tendency in offenders to proceed from the relatively minor offenses to the more serious, and it is not uncommon for an individual to have more than one paraphilia.

A. Lust Murder

Lust murder is sometimes called “passion killing,” “dactolagnomania,” or “serial killing.” The perpetrator of this sex offense needs the powerful stimulus to his central nervous system that violent mutilation and murder of his victim provides as a condition for maximum potency. His crime is characterized by periodic (average of three times a month) outbreaks of paroxysmal sexual hunger expressed in cutting, stabbing, or otherwise mutilating the genitalia, breasts, or buttocks of his victim; often he will have a super orgasm when he gets his victim’s blood on him or sees her eyes pop out as

he strangles her. Frequently, he has no intercourse and has normal behavior until the next paroxysm. One type of lust murderer is called the “vampire” because he achieves sexual stimulation from drinking his victim’s blood. Stephen Kaplan estimates 300 exist today in America.³ Fritz Haarman killed several dozen boys in England in the 1900s by biting their necks and drinking their blood.⁴ Drinking blood is especially prohibited in the Bible (Leviticus 17:10–14). Another type is called the “cannibal” because he eats the flesh of his victim for part of his sexual stimulation. Anthropophagy is another term for sexual satisfaction from eating the flesh of a victim or drinking the victim’s blood. Animal and fowl studies have shown a sharp increase in cannibalism when their habitat becomes overpopulated. About 140 different species show cannibalistic tendencies under various conditions. Some of the more recent writers are claiming that there is more of this type of serial killers at work today than ever before. They believe that as many as 25 percent of the 20,000 annual reported homicides can be linked directly to serial killers. Norris calls the perpetrators recreational or lust killers.⁵ FBI agent William Hagmaier, who specialized in investigating serial murders, told the crowded Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences audience in Nashville, Tennessee, on March 8, 1991, that “there are about thirty or forty of these killers out there now” (freely moving around at large). Holmes and Burger estimated the number at 350; others have estimated their number at over 200 at large worldwide.⁶

The lust murderer is the most heinous of criminals in the entire lexicon of crime. His acts stir the most visceral fear, hatred, and loathing in the majority of the populace, and he is among the most difficult of criminals to apprehend. He frequently makes the best efforts of the criminal justice system look ineffectual and foolish by repeating his horrid mutilations over and over. London’s famous Jack the Ripper, the U.S. Green River killer, and others have never been caught by the police. Others, like Albert Fish, the Boston Strangler, John Gacy, and Theodore Bundy, were set free or escaped from prison at least once before they were executed or permanently imprisoned.

Why are our best experts so inept when dealing with this most heinous of criminals? Is it because science has failed to adequately explain this kind of behavior? Certainly, if we could thoroughly understand the motivations of these dangerous criminals, we would be able to control their behavior much better. Is it because the learned scientists of mind are too embarrassed by their ignorance of the chemistry of the brain and behavior? Or are they simply reluctant to delve into these distasteful and secret machinations? Perhaps the amazing truth will come through a further examination of some of these other chambers of horrors. Is it incomprehensible that the power of the same drive that enables men to heroic acts of love also powers their most heinous acts? It is exactly here that we must come to grips with the darkest evil of our human nature.

³ True Tales of the Unknown: Untitled (Bantam, 1989).

⁴ Psychology Today (November 1989), Feature Article.

⁵ J. Norris, Serial Killers: The Growing Menace (New York: Doubleday, 1988), 15.

⁶ R. M. Holmes and D. E. Burger, Serial Murder (Newbury Park: Sage Publications, 1988), 19.

When we learn the awful truth, we will be better prepared to change our attitude toward the one treatment that has the power to cleanse this dark house.

Egger and Lester have both noticed that at some point in their criminal careers, the serial murderers themselves often search for help in overcoming their insatiable passion for killing.⁷⁸ Some of them have expressed concern about their loss of control, their violent impulses, or their dysfunctional families and even have decided that they want to be caught. For example, in 1984, Robert Long, in the Tampa Bay area, allowed one of his victims to escape after he had killed ten women. She went to the police after her sexual assault, and they were able to find and arrest Long using the victim's guidance. If we knew of this tendency in serial killers and had the castration treatment ready in position in our armamentarium, we could actually prevent a large percentage of these crimes before they are continued ad infinitum.

It is my belief that one of the reasons that we are so inept in understanding and controlling this awful behavior—which is certain to increase in prevalence along with the proliferation of sadomasochistic videos and “snuff” films depicting actual mutilation and murder in sexual settings—is that we are poorly informed about the sexual details of these crimes. This certainly was the case with my own personal observations of the Ted Bundy Chi-Omega sorority murders at Florida State University in 1978. My criminology professors simply did not know that Bundy had bit the nipple off the breast of one of the coeds and ate it. They did not know that he had shoved a can of hairspray up the vagina of one of them so far that it was no longer visible. These experts in crime could not know that this was a sex crime without knowing these details. They could only analyze Bundy's motivation from their own study and experience, so they were 80 to 90 percent incomplete and erroneous.

Dr. John Money, the foremost sexologist in the world at the present time, has come as close as anyone to understanding these people under his classification “erotophonophilia,” which he defines as a paraphilia of the sacrificial/expiatory type in which sexuoerotic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and contingent on stage managing and carrying out the murder of an unsuspecting sexual partner (from Greek Eros, “love,” plus phone, “to murder,” plus philia). The erotophonophile's orgasm coincides with the expiration of the partner.⁹

“The sacrificial/expiatory stratagem requires reparation or atonement for the sin of lust by way of penance and sacrifice. The extreme sacrifice is lust murder: erotophonophilia when the partner is sacrificed, and autassassinophilia when a person stage manages the sacrifice of self. Excluding death, there are varying degrees, from major to minor, of sadomasochistic sacrifice and penance for the sin of lust” (see Money, p. 136).

⁷ S. A. Egger, “A Working Definition of Serial Murder and the Reduction of Linkage Blindness,” *Journal of Police Science and Administration* 12 (1984): 348–357.

⁸ D. Lester, *Serial Killers—The Unsatiated Passion* (Philadelphia: The Charles Press, 1995), 95, 108.

⁹ Dr. John Money, *Gay, Straight, and In-Between* (1988), 198

Many other books and articles have expanded on the sexual aspects of the serial murders of our day: Holmes in his 1991 book,¹⁰ Holmes and Holmes in their 1996 book,¹¹ Holmes in his 1997 article,¹² Berlin et al.¹³ include rape and sadistic assaults along with lust murder as forms of sexual aggression, and Ross¹⁴ shows that lowering testosterone levels can treat lust murder.

Dr. Patrick Carnes has provided us with another concept, which I believe is useful in helping us understand the power of the urges that compel the lust murderer to become a serial killer: sexual addiction. In his 1983 book, *Out of the Shadow—Understanding Sexual Addiction*, he outlines several steps or levels of addiction that could convincingly explain a progression to the utter horror of the reader about this phenomenon of bizarre sexual murder.

In July 1991, thirty-three-year-old Jeffrey Dahmer of Milwaukee, Wisconsin, confessed to killing seventeen young men, having sex with their bodies, cutting them up, and eating them. In April 1992, fifty-six-year-old Andrei R. Chikatilo of Rostov-on-Don, Russia, confessed to slaying and cannibalizing fifty-three young women and children over a long period of time. The murders began in 1978 when such crimes were considered a capitalist phenomenon and seldom heard of in the Soviet Union. As a result, Rostov citizens were not warned for more than five years while they were being killed by the dozens. This reveals the dire consequences of our misguided public policies, which seek to cover up the gory details, which would show a sexual impetus to these horrid crimes. More victims and protection of the murderer result. Other lust murderers mentioned by Holmes and Holmes are Douglas Clark, Otis Toole, Angelo Buono, and Carol Bundy.¹⁵

Ousey studied the 1990 homicide rates in 125 U.S. cities and found a disproportionate representation of blacks in homicide offending statistics. The white, average, homicide offending rate was 8.63 per 100,000 persons, while the black rate was more than five times greater, 47.62 per 100,000 persons. The usual macrosocial theories about poverty, unemployment, and income inequalities did not hold up in explaining the stark reality of the wide variance in homicide rate. The higher known testosterone

¹⁰ R. M. Holmes, *Sex Crimes* (Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications, 1991), 67–71.

¹¹ R. M. Holmes and S. Holmes, *Profiling Violent Crimes: An Investigative Tool*, 2nd ed. (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications, 1996).

¹² R. M. Holmes, "Sequential Predation: Elements of Serial Fatal Victimization," *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity: The Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 4, no. 1 (1997): 33, 40.

¹³ F. Berlin, G. Lehne, M. Main, W. Hunt, K. Thomas, and J. Fuhrmanek, "The Eroticized Violent Crime: A Psychiatric Perspective," *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity: The Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 4, no. 1 (1997): 9.

¹⁴ M. Ross, "Reflections from Death Row," *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity: The Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 4, no. 1 (1997): 3.

¹⁵ Stephen Holmes and Ronald Holmes, *Sex Crimes*, 2nd ed. (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications, 2002), 163.

levels in blacks could well explain the difference, as they tend to be 5 percent higher than that of whites.¹⁶

Keppel and Walter studied sexual murderers and found that typically they were in their early twenties, emotionally immature, preoccupied with projecting a macho image, often bodybuilders with tattoo displays, arrogant, condescending, generally unmarried, often compulsive, and interested in bondage, domination, and piquerism. In the study, Keppel and Walter pointed out that 42 percent of the prisoners serving sentences for homicide in 1995 in the Michigan Department of Corrections had committed sexually related murders.¹⁷

Ron Langevin studied the psychosexual characteristics of thirty-three sex killers (International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology, August 2003, p. 366) and found that 63.64 percent failed the neuropsychological tests, more than double the number in any group.

My personal belief is that these crimes demonstrate an atavistic throwback to the lives of our early caveman ancestors when the hormonal drives for food, violence, excitement, and sex were more overtly displayed. John Powlaches testified in the murder trial of Edward Zakrezewski that killing was “a rush. It’s sort of like riding a huge roller coaster. It doesn’t compare to anything.”¹⁸

I believe that some day we will be able to identify the DNA that has been passed down through the ages to produce the bloodlust phenomenon shown in lust murder. We may even be seeing some signs of its resurgence in the population. Certainly, if one looks in the video stores, he will find great displays of horror movies, full of blood, gore, and sex. What will be the results of millions of our youths receiving these dramatic, vivid portrayals on the TV screen in their own room or the family room? Let us hope that we do not see the acting out of similar actions as so many of our “experts” have predicted.

B. Necrophilia

Necrophilia is a “fascination with the dead; specifically obsession with erotic attraction toward and stimulation by corpses typically evidenced by overt acts (as copulation with a corpse)” (Webster’s Dictionary). “This horrible kind of sexual indulgence is so monstrous that the presumption of a psychopathic state is, under all circumstances, justified; and Maschka’s recommendation, that the mental condition of the perpetrator

¹⁶ G. Ousey, “Homicide, Structural Factors, and the Racial Invariance Assumption,” *Criminology* 37, no. 2 (1999): 405–425.

¹⁷ R. D. Keppel and R. Walter, “Profiling Killers: A Revised Classification Model for Understanding Sexual Murder,” *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 43, no. 4 (1999): 417–437.

¹⁸ M. Furman, “Gruesome Testimony Continues in Zakrezewski Sentencing Phase,” *The Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 28, 1996): 1a.

should always be investigated, is well-founded. In any case, an abnormal and decidedly perverse sensuality is required to overcome the natural repugnance which man has for a corpse and permit a feeling of pleasure to be experienced in sexual congress with a cadaver. Unfortunately, in the majority of cases reported, the mental condition was not examined; so that the question whether necrophilia is compatible with mental soundness must remain open.”¹⁹

Necrophilia is one of the paraphilias that the American Psychiatric Association classified under the heading of Psychosexual Disorders in their DSM III. This manual commented that “the essential feature of this subclass is that unusual or bizarre imagery or acts tend to be insistently and involuntarily repetitive and generally involve ... repetitive sexual activity with nonconsenting partners. In other classifications these disorders are referred to as sexual deviations. The term paraphilia is preferable because it correctly emphasizes that the deviation (para) is in that to which the individual is attracted (philia).” “Erich Wulffen includes under necrophilia, necro-sadism, associated with lust murder, in which the sex impulse is gratified only by corpses.”²⁰ The necrophilic either kills a woman and has intercourse with the body (necrochlesis or necrocoitus) or otherwise violates or procures corpses for sex purposes, which he rapes (necro-stuprum) or mutilates or even eats (necrophagy). Kronfeld defines necrophilia as a ‘perverse desire to prefer sexual intercourse with corpses rather than with human beings.’ Moll considers necrophilia or vampirism, as ‘sexual desire for corpses, a phenomenon often attributed to sadism.’ Bloch believes that ‘sexual violation of corpses has a sadomasochistic foundation,’ that ‘decomposition, stench, coldness play a part’ (quoted by Brill, 1941).”²¹

Sexual attraction to dead bodies is a rare condition with terrifying overtones often expressed in the world’s literature on werewolves, vampires, grave robbing, cannibalism, and other ghoulish activities thought by some to be totally fictional. This is not so, and the human imagination cannot exceed the actual acts that have been recorded. Those necrophiles who have advanced to the horrifying state of necrophagy obviously are not totally sane, but the other end of the spectrum, merely becoming aroused by helpless (dead) objects, is another story.²² “The necrophile of fiction obtains his victims by magical means or by grave robbing. The latter method is still reported, but many times authorities assume that a robbed grave represents an attempt to steal jewelry and adornments. The necrophilic aspect of grave robbing may be far more important than we actually know. Most frequently, however, the necrophile obtains access to the dead in morgues and funeral homes where he seeks employment. He may pass unnoticed in the community and live a secluded, lonely life because his victims cannot

¹⁹ R. V. Krafft-Ebing. *Psychopathia Sexualis*, First Scarborough Books Edition of 1978 (New York: Briar Cliff Manor, 1965), 408, 409.

²⁰ *Enzyklopaedie der Modernen Kriminalistik* (Berlin: 1910), 492.

²¹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 13.

²² James L. Mathis, *Clear Thinking About Sexual Deviations* (Chicago: Nelson-Hall Co., 1972), 201.

report him.”²³ Most professionals view necrophilia as the most deviant of all sexual aberrations.

“Generally speaking, necrophilia is not so rare as people believe. According to Herodotus, it was a widespread practice already in ancient Egypt. According to Ploss-Bartels, it is still a racial custom among the Kikambas in Africa; and in some parts of Germany it was the custom, till a few decades ago, that upon the death of a bride the bridegroom spent a night with her ... this leads one to believe that Stekel is right when he says: ‘We must assume that there was a phase in human development when these impulses were frequent phenomena. The cases that recur in our civilized age must be regarded as atavistic relics Our folk-tales contain many cannibalistic and necrophile scenes—the sublimation of ancient events. The legend of the vampire has never been entirely absent from the popular consciousness. The various religions still contain relics of the blood sacrifice, so that we must not be surprised if sadism also draws within its sphere these acts, which are inexplicable to a civilized being.’ Now and then the world hears of a ‘Jack the Ripper’ and is shocked that ‘such things can be.’ The analyst and the nerve specialist, however, know countless people who are ‘like that,’ but are fortunately stranded in the realm of fancy. ‘Between the realm of fancy and reality,’ writes Stekel, ‘lies the vast empire of the parapathies. A small screw becomes loose—and all the civilized inhibitions go to the devil.’”²⁴

McNally has assembled a number of examples of necrophilia from history, literature, and entertainment media. The tyrant Periandes lived with the dead body of his beloved Melissa for a year. Herod (King of Judea 40–4 BC) had sex for seven years intermittently with the corpse of his dead wife Marianne and died of the painful Fournier’s disease (gangrene of the genitals) as a result of his actions. Charlemagne could not bear to part with the body of his dead Saxon Mistress. Queen Juana of Castile kept the corpse of her husband, Philip the Handsome, at her side from 1506 to 1509. The Etruscan Locumon kept their dead buried in holes within their palace walls, so as to be able to keep an eye on them. Medes, Parthians, and Iberians fed their dead to wild beasts. Scythians and Bretons ate their dead. Even today New Guinea’s Fore tribesmen regularly eat selected portions of their dead relatives. Bushmen, who have the praying mantis as their totem, consider that once a girl attains puberty, she becomes identified with the mantis, and her look must be avoided, since it is thought to have become lethal. The actual actions of the praying mantis provide clues to this curious notion of sexual excitement with the dead. Adoration of the beloved dead is fostered in the Christian world, where one can find Saint Anthony, who died in the fifth century, under glass in full view; countless other saints are similarly on display throughout the world.

²³ J. L. McCary, *McCary’s Human Sexuality* (New York: D. Van Nostrand Co., 1978), 349.

²⁴ M. Hirshfeld, *Sexual Anomalies and Perversions*, (London: Encyclopaedic Press, 1966 reprint), 519, 520, 531.

Historically, it does appear that certain general types of social deviants are repeatedly referred to in specific eras, almost as if the designations give us some clues as to what the given historical societies feared most. For example, the witches and warlocks popular during the Middle Ages gave way to the werewolves of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. The werewolves were in turn replaced by the vampire craze of the eighteenth century. The eighteenth-century vampires were replaced by the sadists and necrophiles of the nineteenth century and by the psychopaths of the twentieth century. But the so-called vampires and werewolves of yesterday have by no means disappeared from society. Today they are merely referred to by modern terminologies.²⁵

The Encyclopedia of Psychology records that forty-seven case histories of necrophilia have been described in the literature. Many other cases could be added to this list, however, because the term necrophilia was not used before the middle of the last century. The worst of these from the viewpoint of sheer numbers of victims were that of Gilles de Rais (1404–1440), handsome Marshal of France and murderer of an estimated 200 boys, and Countess Elizabeth Bathory (1560–1614) of Transylvania, beautiful, highly born murderess of 650 girls and young women, according to a servant's testimony at her trial in Bytca, Czechoslovakia, January 2, 1611²⁶. Then there is the case of Sergeant Bertrand (1822–1855), a soldier in the French army who exhumed several human bodies and cut the abdomens and dismembered them, and also had coitus with the females or masturbated (Masters, pp. 118–123). Vacher, the Ripper, (1869–1901) is another example. He killed eleven girls and boys and had sexual intercourse with their bodies.²⁷ From December 1, 1887 to September 10, 1889, the bodies of ten women, whose throats and abdomens had been cut open, were found in various lonely quarters of London. In some instances, their genital areas had been cut off. “Jack the Ripper,” as the murderer was called, was never discovered, but it is evident that his crimes had many characteristics of the necrophilic. Francois Bertrand, the “Vampire of Montparnasse,” was accused of desecrating graves and mutilating putrid corpses for sexual gratification. Other necrophiles were Ed Stein, who robbed graves in the 1950s in Wisconsin; Douglas Clark, the Hollywood Strip killer; and John Christie, who killed at least eight women and sexually abused them after death.

In the world of literature, there have been many novels with necrophilia themes. Among these are: De Sade's *Juliette* (1797); Emily Bronte's *Jane Eyre* (1847); Clemence Houseman's *The Werewolf* (1896); Bram Stoker's *The Lady of the Shroud* (1909); George Sylvester Viereck's *The House of the Vampire* (1912); Guy Endore's *The Werewolf of Paris* (1933); Sidney Horler's *The Vampire* (1935); Eugene Ascher *To Kill a Corpse* (1955); Simon Raven's *Doctors Wear Scarlet* (1960); Jeff Rice's *The*

²⁵ R. McNally, *Dracula Was a Woman* (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1983), 145, 147, 150–152, 165.

²⁶ R. E. L. Masters, *Perverse Crimes in History Evolving Concepts of Sadism, Lust Murder, and Necrophilia from Ancient to Modern Times* (New York: The Julian Press, Inc., 1963), 12–31.

²⁷ Masters, *Perverse Crimes in History*, 88–90.

Night Stalker (1973); Asa Drake's *Crimson Kisses* (1981); and many more.²⁸ The short stories with similar themes are too numerous to mention.

The combination of the titillation inherent in sex and the morbid fascination that many people have with death, graves, and murder has not been lost on filmdom's moguls. They have produced many films that used necrophilia in whole or in part of them. Hollywood's erotic shocker in 1960 was Hitchcock's *Psycho* with its famous shower scene as an example. In 1979, the public was deluged with several R-rated horror films with necrophilic content, which made the rounds of the drive-in theaters. Some of these were *Cemetery Girls*, *Grave Desires*, *Corpse Grinders*, *Frightmare*, and *Dracula's Saga*.²⁹

In the 1950s, E. C. Comics started featuring horrible creatures such as vampires and werewolves in their comic books and magazines, and in the 1970s, Marvel Comics came up with a couple of series called *The Tomb of Dracula* and *Dracula Lives*.³⁰ The publishers of *Penthouse* and *Playboy* magazines have also recognized the economic advantages of publishing necrophilic themes as demonstrated in the January and April 1986 issues of *Playboy* with articles titled "The Last Closet" and "The Lady in Black," with nude photographs of a beautiful female undertaker. Even the songwriters have used the theme.

An article in *The Sun* told how a mortician, Alan Chabasse, fifty-two, of Nantes, France, had cut up corpses and sold the body parts to wealthy cannibals. Police said the cannibals were part of a growing underground trend in which people paid up to \$1,000 for a human arm or leg, and then roasted it like a delicacy. "It's part of a crazy back-to-nature movement," said a detective. "These wealthy people want to simplify their lives by imitating pre-historic man—and that includes cannibalism."³¹

I shudder to think that perhaps this necrophilous entertainment is providing fantasy material, which may induce borderline deviates to begin acting out this disgusting paraphilia. Indeed, there are already far more cases involving unrecognized necrophilia than the public realizes. Every few weeks, news items that have been motivated by it appear in the daily press. The Northwest Florida Daily News of February 7, 1988, carried an article headlined "Graves Robbed; Bones Scattered" that told of two mausoleums broken into in Tallahassee, Florida. The bones had been removed from the caskets and strewn around. The July 8, 1988 Pensacola[Florida] News Journal carried an article about a Jacksonville funeral parlor where forty-one unembalmed and unrefrigerated human bodies were found and ten others were unaccounted for. Another case, about a beheaded woman whose body was found in the Tennessee River, appeared in the July 11, 1988 Pensacola[Florida] News Journal. A slash on the abdomen and the missing head are indications that the murder could have been motivated by

²⁸ McNally, *Dracula Was a Woman*, 224–227.

²⁹ *Ibid.*, 186.

³⁰ *Ibid.*, 170–171.

³¹ V. Kristol, "Undertaker Arrested for Selling 'Cuts' of Corpses to Wealthy Cannibals," *The Sun* (June 3, 1997): 29.

necrophilia. “As a man thinketh in his heart so is he ... A man does not come to the pothouse or the gaol by the tyranny of fate or circumstance, but by the pathway of groveling thoughts and base desires. Nor does a pure-minded man fall suddenly into crime by stress of any mere external force; the criminal thought has long been secretly fostered in the heart, and the hour of opportunity revealed its gathering power.”³²

The sex urge is responsible for some very strange and troubling behavior in mankind, and necrophilia is among the most repulsive. As the great criminologist Cesare Beccaria wrote in 1764 of the sex crimes, they “derive their force and direction from two causes: the variable laws of men, and that very strong attraction that draws one sex toward the other. This attraction is similar in many respects to the force of gravity which moves the universe; for this, like the other, diminishes with distance; as one regulates all the movements of the heavenly bodies; the other, while its period lasts, regulates most of those of the spirit.”

We have now learned about one of the most horrible deviations of the human sex drive. Probably now, armed with this knowledge, we will notice other cases which were motivated by necrophilia lurking behind the headlines. What will be done about it? Very little, I trust. But perhaps you can agree that we need to do something—to find a treatment that will arrest the performance of the most gruesome phases of this paraphilia. There does exist a treatment that has the potential to do this, but we shrink from employing it when we learn that it involves castration.

Ivan Bloch has described another similar type of sexual deviation, which he calls “symbolic necrophilia wherein a prostitute or other woman must clothe herself in a shroud, lie in a coffin, or on a bed of death, and pretend to be dead whilst the necrophilic satisfies himself sexually by various acts.” According to one explanation, necrophilia is associated with sadism, and defenselessness of the corpse is an important factor. Another authority has it that it is the result of an attempt to keep sexual impulses under control by endowing them with extreme disgust.³³

C. Cannibalism

The Greek term, which is frequently used, is anthropophagy, meaning “the eating of one’s own kind.” The word cannibal is derived from a Spanish form of Carib, a West Indies tribe who were famous cannibals. Strangely, cannibalism is mentioned several times in the Old Testament: in Leviticus 26:29, Deuteronomy 28:53–57, 2 Kings 6:28–29, Jeremiah 19:9, and Lamentations 2:20 and 4:10.

Richard von Krafft-Ebing, the famous “father of sexology,” wrote of several cases in his various 1880s editions of his book, *Psychopathia Sexualis*. Krafft-Ebing usually attributed his cannibal cases to lust murder and sadism, which were the equivalent of

³² J. L. Allen, *As a Man Thinketh*, (Dolphin Booklets, 1893).

³³ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 606.

coitus to the killers.³⁴ Karpman agreed with him that cannibalism is “one of the more extreme reactions that is essentially sadistic.” John Money writes: “In lust murder, the translocated phylism could conceivably be killing for food.”³⁵

Sometimes the body’s yearning for sex becomes mixed with the hunger for food. The body’s hunger for sexual activity becomes mixed with its hunger for something to eat. This mixture can produce cannibalism in some individuals. True, it is rare, but it does happen to a few men in the chance occurrence of a certain combination of circumstances. Some of the men who were convicted sadistic murders have admitted that the sight of a tender woman’s flesh had made them feel hungry enough to eat it. Albert Fish murdered Grace Budd, twelve, a pretty, New York City schoolgirl, then cut her up and feasted on her body in a stew for nine days in 1934.³⁶ About 2 am, January 15, 1978, Ted Bundy, thirty-two, attacked three of the Chi Omega sorority girls at Florida State University in Tallahassee, and bit the nipple from the right breast of Lisa Levy, tore the flesh of her left buttock with his teeth, and extensively ripped and slashed her vagina and rectum.³⁷ Bundy later confessed to her murder and that of thirty other women over a period of several years.

Cannibalism is not necessarily an old, far-off phenomenon. It happens today in our time and place as my newspaper reported December 21, 2000: “Nathaniel Bar-Jonah, 44, raped and butchered Zachary Ramsay, 10, then made stew and pot pies which he ate and fed to neighbors in Cascade County, Montana.” One therapist in a hospital where he was interred in 1980 wrote that his sexual fantasies “outline methods of torture extending to dissection and cannibalism; he expresses a curiosity about the taste of human flesh.” Another case was reported in my January 9, 2003 newspaper: “Joey Cala, 41, murdered his mom and ate some of her heart.”

At about the same time in history that Christ was on earth, our ancestors in Celtic Britain venerated preserved human heads. They were headhunters. They were cannibals and their high priests—the Druids—endorsed the custom of human sacrifice for many centuries. Julius Caesar briefly mentions them in his Gallic War.

D. Rape-Murder

The rape-murder criminal usually kills his victim to prevent discovery, accidentally, in a panic, or to destroy evidence. “The factor of aggressive sexual reaction to inner fears plays a greater part in directing the actions of rape-murderers than has been recognized. The rapist who murders the object of his sexual impulse is motivated by the fear of social consequences of his act and, to an even greater degree, by fear of the

³⁴ R. V. Krafft-Ebing, *Psychopathia Sexualis*, trans. Franklin S. Klaft (Stein and Day, Inc., 1978), 58–74.

³⁵ Money, *Lovemaps*, 89.

³⁶ “Cannibal Madman Killed and Ate 15 Kids!” *Weekly World News* (June 26, 1990): 33.

³⁷ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 347.

strength of his own sexual aggression. The murder is the response to the pressure of guilty feelings and is not a true lust murder since the killing is not a sadistic aspect of the sexual act ... Mental disease is frequent in such cases.”³⁸

The rape-murderer runs the lust murderer and necrophiliac a close third in the heinousness of his crime. The three types are seldom clearly differentiated in the courts and media and so they are likely to be indistinguishable to the average individual. Even some of the professionals are likely to be confused, because these crimes share many of the same features of sex, violence, and repetition. Ted Bundy exemplifies the lust murderer while Robert Frederick Carr, III, who probably raped fifteen and killed four women, typifies the rape-murderer. The bestseller *Carr: 5 Years of Rape and Murder* created a sensation at the bookstores in November 1979 when it was first released. Susan Brownmiller estimated in her famous 1975 book, *Against Our Will*, that there are perhaps 400 rape-murders per year in the United States. Gleuck has estimated that about 3 percent of all rape victims were murdered. Between 1976 and 1994, the murders with known circumstances were 317,925; 1.5 percent involved rape or other sex offenses.³⁹

The 1985 National Survey of Crime Severity placed rape-murder second, with a score of 52.8 in seriousness, only to the mass murderer who had killed twenty people by planting a bomb in a public place, which was scored at a severity of 72.1. Much study has been devoted to whether the victim would be better off to submit to a rapist or to resist with all of her power. The general consensus varies with the times, cases, and individuals. The media’s coverage of sexually motivated homicides, coupled with officials’ use of the phrase “raped and killed,” implies that rape and murder are intertwined. The fear of murder often comes with being raped.

E. Sadism

The sadist achieves sexual satisfaction through inflicting pain, suffering, or degradation on other people. Sadism is the desire to hurt another person for sexual release or satisfaction. I have rated it fifth in seriousness because it always involves suffering and sometimes results in death. The infliction of pain is an end in itself. The sadist is not impelled by a desire to be cruel; his objective is to arouse certain emotions. Sadistic crimes include murder, attempted murder, bodily injuries, whipping, cutting, slashing, and damage to property. Sadistic acts are often done repetitively as a ritual.⁴⁰ Tyrannism is a term for specifically sexual sadism.

The roots of active algolagnia or “algophilia” can be readily demonstrated in the normal individual. The sexuality of most men shows an admixture of

³⁸ Ibid.

³⁹ Bureau of Justice Statistics, U.S. Department of Justice, *Sex Offenses and Offenders* (January 1997), 3.

⁴⁰ W. N. East, *Medical Aspects of Crime* (Philadelphia: P. Blakiston’s Son and Co., Inc., 1946).

aggression, or a desire to subdue, the biological significance of which lies in the necessity for overcoming the resistance of the sexual object by actions other than mere courting. Sadism would then correspond to an aggressive component part of the sexual instinct which has become independent and exaggerated and has been brought to the foreground by displacement.⁴¹

The term sadism comes from the name of the French Marquis de Sade (1740–1814), famous pervert and author of five pornographic novels, which comprise an encyclopedia of sexual perversions of the eighteenth century. Larry Singleton, who cut off both forearms of fifteen-year-old Mary Vincent with an axe in northern California September 28, 1978, is a just one example of a sadist among many. The 1973 Playboy survey showed that 4.8 percent of males and 2.1 percent of females had obtained sexual pleasure from inflicting pain on other people. Among the respondents who were under age thirty-five, the percentages were 6.2 percent and 2.9 percent. This was taken to mean that there might be an increasing tendency in younger men and possibly an increasing incidence of this aberration in the population as time goes on.⁴² Roy Hazelwood, Director of the FBI's Behavioral Science Unit, Quantico, Virginia, informed the ACJS (Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences) meeting, March 6, 1991, in Nashville, Tennessee, that all the sexual sadists that they had studied believed that women were all bitches or whores, believed in a supreme being, were upper-middle-class, and were guilt-ridden, and three out of seven had a stern religious upbringing.

The sadist who finds pleasure in pain and punishment frequently is eloquent enough to express himself in terms that the rest of us can understand. "Torture is foreplay, rape is romance, snuff is climax," wrote University of Michigan linguistics student Jake Baker in a story he put on the Usenet computer network in December 1994.⁴³ FBI agents under a federal statute that prohibits interstate transmission of a threat to kidnap or injure arrested Baker on February 16, 1995. He faced expulsion from his college and a possible sentence of five years. Lesbian sadism has been named "sapphosadism," and sexual gratification from the mutilation of female breasts has been given the term mazoperosis.

F. Masochism

The masochist seeks to be humiliated, dominated, enslaved, bound, hurt, or degraded by his sexual partner to increase sexual pleasure or meet dysfunctional emotional needs. It is often referred to as B and D (bondage and dominance) by those who are involved in those practices. Vincilagnia is another term for sexual arousal from bondage. Masochism is the complement to sadism; it is the need for suffering and

⁴¹ S. Freud, *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (1901), Chapter 8.

⁴² M. Hunt, *Sexual Behavior in the 1970s* (1973).

⁴³ "Snuff Porn on the Net," *Time* (February 20, 1995): 69.

punishment as sexual experience. Carried to its extreme, manslaughter or suicide sometimes results.⁴⁴ “Masochism is the seeking of that which would normally be painful, for sexual reasons. It is linked to the desire to be humiliated.”⁴⁵ In Morton Hunt’s 1974 sampling, 2.5 percent of the males and 4.6 percent of the females who were surveyed reported experiencing pleasure from having pain inflicted on them by their sexual partner. Recently it has been shown that some people can enjoy a real high, similar to that experienced from the injection of opiate drugs, from suffering. These feelings of pleasure appear to be due to the “endorphins” (endogenous morphine), which act on the pleasure centers of the brain in order to ameliorate the experience of pain. This may provide a biological explanation to add to the various psychological explanations for masochistic behavior.

The term masochist comes directly from the name of an Austrian novelist, Leopold Baron von Sacher-Masoch (1836–1905), whose *Venus in Furs* (1888) gave a detailed description of the pleasure of pain. Frequently, sadism is turned into masochism as a result of a deep religious sense of guilt and is often found in martyrs who seek to eradicate the “sinful lusts of the flesh” by self-flagellation. By itself, masochism seldom results in crime, but sometimes appears in convicted offenders.⁴⁶ Masters and Johnson point out that “the masochist who desires ‘heavy’ pain or bondage may have great difficulty in finding a cooperative partner. For this reason, some masochists resort to inflicting pain on themselves in bizarre ways, including burning themselves, hanging themselves (causing several dozen U.S. deaths annually), or searching out the services of a prostitute who will provide the necessary stimulation.”⁴⁷ “... Many masochists are men who occupy high status positions (such as executives, politicians, judges, and bankers), and some experts theorize that private acts of submissiveness and degradation provide the masochists with an escape valve from their rigidly controlled public lives. Seeking sexual pain or humiliation may also be a way of atoning for sexual pleasure for a person who was raised to believe that sex is sinful and evil.”

Dr. Alfred C. Kinsey, the famous sex researcher, threw a rope over an exposed pipe in the ceiling of his basement office in Wylie Hall, University of Indiana at Bloomington one evening in August 1954. He tied a knot around his scrotum and wrapped the other end of the rope around his hand. Then he climbed onto a chair and jumped off. Shortly after this incident, he took to bed, suffering from traumatic orchitis believed to be due to an infectious process resulting from lowered resistance of the injured tissues to bacteria. Kinsey died August 25, 1956, from an embolism caused by a bruise on one of his legs. The world’s foremost expert on sexual behavior at the time would sometimes insert a pipe cleaner or swizzle stick into his urethra, tie a rope around his scrotum, and then tug hard on the rope while the Kinsey Institute photographer was photographing

⁴⁴ Roshe. (1950).

⁴⁵ Allen. (1940).

⁴⁶ East, *Medical Aspects of Crime*

⁴⁷ W. Masters, V. Johnson, and R. Kolodny, *Masters and Johnson on Sex and Human Loving* (Boston: Little, Brown and Co., 1986), 384.

him.⁴⁸ About one-third of patients who have been diagnosed as masochistic have also performed sadistic acts in which they inflicted pain on another person. Such patients are described as having a sadomasochistic disorder.

The term sadomasochism (abbreviated S & M, S-M, SM, or S/M) is widely used to suggest the combination of the two contrasting phases of this paraphilia. Another term is algolagnia, the finding of sexual pleasure in inflicting or suffering pain. It is said that neither phenomenon is ever found in its pure state. S & M has also been defined as “exchanges involving eroticized mental, emotional, or physical pain.”⁴⁹ Sigmund Freud wrote: “He who experiences pleasure by causing pain to others in sexual relations is also capable of experiencing pain in sexual relations as pleasure. A sadist is simultaneously a masochist.” Freud also wrote an essay “A Child Is Being Beaten,” which sheds some further insight into the psychology of S & M as involving the desire for punishment for moral and emotional restitution for sins performed, imagined, or experienced. S & M is strongly condemned even in our own presently permissive years. It is one sexual deviation that remained frightening, abhorrent, and intolerable to the far left as well as the far right. Today, however, there are indications that it is on the increase in our society, especially among young people, judging from the proliferation of S & M pornography (about 5 percent of all pornographic magazines deal with S & M), advertising for partners, and the stores selling devices of torment, which we can find in our major cities. Cooperative Motivational Research is the name of an S & M club, which publishes S & M advertisements in its journal.

The Eulenspiegel Society was the first known group to publicly foster S & M meetings and activities; it was founded in New York City in 1971. By 1990, the National Leather Association—an umbrella organization for S & M groups and clubs—reported “an international network of well over 400 leather/SM/fetish organizations.”⁵⁰ Another S & M group is the Society of Janus in San Francisco. A 539-page book titled *Different Loving* by Gloria G. Brame, William P. Brame, and Jon Jacobs was published by Villard Books of New York in 1993. This book thoroughly explored S & M activities in the United States up to 1993. The 1994 film *Exit to Eden* had an S & M scene in it.

Masochism is a form of mental illness in its more extreme manifestations. The endorphin rush caused by the searing pain of branding, piercing, and tattooing body parts (infibulation) may sometimes be the main goal. Others are adopting another form of “body art”—branding. Strips of surgical steel heated to 1,100 degrees Fahrenheit are pressed into the skin to produce scars in a variety of shapes. Branding has caught on in the West Coast, and salons have set up shops in the East. Two years ago, Primal Urge,

⁴⁸ J. H. Jones, “Annals of Sexology: Dr. Yes,” *The New Yorker* (August 25 and September 1, 1997): 113.

⁴⁹ C. G. Scott, *Erotic Power: An Exploration of Dominance and Submission* (New York: Citadel Press, 1991), IX.

⁵⁰ G. Nelson, *Living on Leather V* (Portland, TX: National Leather Association, 1990).

a branding salon in New Hope, Pennsylvania, performed only two or three brandings each month. Now Primal Urge brands a customer nearly every business day.⁵¹

Newsweek's first edition in 1998 carried an article claiming that the mainstreaming of S & M has turned us in America "into a jaded culture of kink." "New York is the Sodom of the S & M craze" where restaurants like Planet Kinkywood have an S & M theme with all the requisite tools and private cells. The menu "includes Verbal Abuse and Spanking at just \$20 a pop." San Francisco is the Gomorrah where every Wednesday night Bondage-A-Go-Go is featured at the Trocadero Transfer club with flogging and electric shock as the "introductory course" for "SandM 101." "Aren't they jaded? Is there no shame anymore?" In Woody Allen's movie *Deconstructing Harry*, he casually instructs a hooker, "Tie me up, beat me, then give me a —." Governor Pataki of New York registered a complaint against the increasingly corrupting influence of kink when a woman's studies conference at one of the state universities conducted a seminar on "Safe, Sane and Consensual S & M: An Alternate Way of Loving." This was reminiscent of the Brames' *Different Loving* book on S & M.⁵² The National Inquirer issue of February 19, 2001, featured an eight-page article on a special investigation of Hollywood's Secret Sex Club with garish photographs of celebrities in a New York club called The Vault. The hosts at this club said they had hosted many famous personalities over the years for all sorts of perversions, including "gays, vampires, goths, tickle torturers, people who like to wear diapers, military fetishists—even people who like to crawl around on all fours, like dogs!" My own feeling is that the popularizing of sadomasochism bodes the greatest possible evil for the twenty-first century. To me, it is reminiscent of the Roman coliseum where martyrs were fed to wild beasts, gladiators fought to the death, and the people and their rulers cheered excitedly at this grisly spectacle. The Roman Empire didn't last very long after the people began getting their kicks from this sort of thing.

Two other books dealing with S & M practices were published in 1996 and reviewed in considerable detail in *The Journal of Sex Research*.⁵³ *Alternate Sources* by Trevor Jacques was designed to be a "single, global resource directory for all the alternate sexes and sexualities," and listed forty-three categories with 4,075 organizations worldwide. *Bound to be Free: The SM Experience* by Charles Moser and J. J. Madeson had the "mission of explaining and demystifying the world of sadomasochism" (p. 11). A 1998 article confirmed what many of us had suspected for a long time: that S & M is increasing in the United States in prevalence, visibility, openness, and intensity.⁵⁴ In the mid-80s, the S & M scene in New York City was less open; people met at parties, but there were far fewer establishments catering to this sexual deviance, and they were not advertised in periodicals as they are now. The establishments that did exist were

⁵¹ R. Bierck, "The Agony and the Ecstasy," *U.S. News & World Report* (May 5, 1997): 10.

⁵² R. Marin, "Lick Me, Flog Me, Buy Me!" *Newsweek* (January 5, 1998): 85.

⁵³ *The Journal of Sex Research* 35, no. 1 (1998): 115–117.

⁵⁴ "Nurse Wolf: For a Dominatrix Who Sees Herself as a Healer, Can a Dungeon be a Clinic?" *The New Yorker* (June 15, 1998): 50–63.

not so well equipped, and many of the mistresses in them were psychotic. The television series *Roots*, showing the dynamics of the master-slave relationship and the details of domination and submission—the whips, handcuffs, shouted orders, pleading—had a profound impact on inspiring some of the viewers who were inclined toward S & M.

The psychological roots of sadomasochism are not clear at the time of this writing, but there is considerable conjecture that they have a great deal to do with feelings of guilt. The masochist derives a morbid sexual pleasure from suffering as atonement for his extremes of guilt. It gives him a penitential release from the weight of his shame, yet it is flawed. His release is so ecstatic that there is uncertainty as to whether he seeks the pleasure more than the pain. A spanking may provide him a momentary catharsis, but self-hatred will return as before because he knows that he commits acts that are thoroughly condemned on all sides. His obsessive act of contrition then hatches fresh remorse in an inescapable circular quest for yet another absolution. He has so converted pain into pleasure that there is no real atonement. He goes round and round converting guilt to pain to pleasure to guilt again. The sought-for cycle of sin-retribution-forgiveness is denied because the real cause of guilt is not being straightforwardly addressed.

Although sadomasochistic sex play can be done with the bare hands, usually various implements such as canes, belts, whips, handcuffs, ropes, chains, gags, and blindfolds are employed. The dominant partner typically ties the submissive partner and whips, paddles, pricks, cuts, burns, or humiliates him or her. Both get sexual pleasure from these tortures.⁵⁵

DSM-IV points out that “sexual masochism is usually chronic, and the person tends to repeat the same masochistic act. Some individuals with sexual masochism desire may engage in masochistic acts for many years without increasing the potential injuriousness of their acts. Others, however, increase the severity of the masochistic acts over time or during periods of stress, which may eventually result in injury or even death.”⁵⁶

On April 9, 1996, Christopher Murray strangled Robert Levy with a belt in West Palm Beach, Florida. On April 30, 1997, Murray pleaded guilty to second-degree murder and was sentenced to seven years in prison. Circuit Judge Edward Garrison had heard hours of testimony about Levy’s obsessive suicide impulses, his masterful powers of manipulation, and his insatiable hunger for the most extreme brutal forms of sexual degradation. Levy had paid Murray, a male prostitute, \$2,000 for the killing in a highly detailed plan. “He wanted to be tied up; he wanted to be taped, stabbed, and urinated on. He had this fantasy of someone tying him up and doing exactly what he wanted.”⁵⁷

⁵⁵ L. Gosselin, *Prisons In Canada* (Montreal: Black Rose Books, 1982).

⁵⁶ American Psychiatric Association, *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, 4th ed. (Washington, DC: Author, 1994), 529.

⁵⁷ “Man Receives Light Sentence for Hired Masochistic Death,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (May 3, 1997).

Several articles on S & M appeared in 1999. *Psychology Today* published an article that claimed that one of every ten people that read their words had experimented with sadomasochism and that it was no longer considered a pathology.⁵⁸ The *Journal of Sex Research* reported on a study of 164 male sadomasochists showing that they were socially well adjusted and that their odd behavior was mainly a facilitative aspect of their sexual lives. Sixty-one percent of the study members had leading positions at work, with gays primarily in white-collar occupations. The heterosexual participants had fewer sessions than the gay and bisexual participants. Gay men were fonder of leather outfits, anal intercourse, rimming, dildos, and uniform scenes. Gays also used alcohol and poppers (amyl nitrate) more than the heterosexuals.⁵⁹

Alison, Santtila, Sandnabba, and Nordling studied 162 men and twenty-two women who were members of sadomasochistically oriented clubs and found that there were significant differences between the heterosexuals and the gay male subjects in terms of their involvement in the hypermasculinity and humiliation regions. As expected, the gay male subjects were more likely to engage in larger numbers of the behaviors in the hypermasculinity region compared to the heterosexual male subjects. In their study group, results showed that for the gay male group the administration and reception of pain was more intense.⁶⁰

G. Rape

The rapist obtains carnal knowledge of a woman forcibly, unlawfully, and usually against her will. Penetration, however slight, is a necessary element of the crime, but ejaculation is not. In sixteen states, the penalty was once death or life imprisonment. Four hundred fifty-five men were executed for rape in the United States between 1930 and 1976; 405 were black. But the death penalty was suspended in 1977 over the *Furman v. Georgia* case. Under biblical law, rape was a capital crime (Deuteronomy 22:25–27). It was still punished in 1996 by death in China. Today, the average time actually served in prison in America is only about five years. Rape rated a very high figure of 25.8 on the National Bureau of Justice Statistics 1984 Severity of Crime Survey whether or not the victim required hospitalization. Many people still consider rape the most serious of all major crimes against the person, short of homicide.

The problem of proof in rape cases is always serious because there are few crimes in which false charges are more easily made. New York requires corroboration as a

⁵⁸ "The Pleasure of the Pain—Why Some People Need S & M," *Psychology Today* (September/October 1999): 60–64.

⁵⁹ "Sexual Behavior and Social Adaptation Among Sadomasochistically-oriented Males," *The Journal of Sex Research* (August 1999): 273–282.

⁶⁰ L. Alison, P. Santtila, N. K. Sandnabba, and M. Nordling, "Sadomasochistically Oriented Behavior: Diversity in Practice and Meaning," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 30, no. 1 (February 2001): 1–12.

consequence of this.⁶¹ “Over the past several decades the enormous cost of rape, both to victims and society, has become increasingly burdensome. The costs include a network of medical and psychological services to aid recovery, and the investigation, trial, and incarceration of offenders.”⁶²

Victims suffer greatly from “rape trauma syndrome,” the initial phase of which includes physical reactions of generalized pain, vaginal discharge or itching, urogenital problems, sleep disturbances, and eating disturbances. Emotional reactions include fear of death or personal injury, panic attacks, terror, nervousness, rage, uncontrollable crying, humiliation, degradation, guilt, shame, anger, and embarrassment. Recovery can take months, years, and even decades. The symptoms of rape trauma are included in DSM-IV as an example of post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD, 309.81). Becker and Kaplan reported in studies that showed that 97 percent of rape victims met the criteria for PTSD at initial assessment, and 46 percent continued to meet the criteria at two-month follow-up.⁶³ PTSD is also experienced as a result of military combat, torture, severe automobile accidents, earthquakes, and floods. Depression is frequently found in rape victims. Kilpatrick et al. found that 19.2 percent had attempted suicide compared to 2.2 percent of nonvictims.⁶⁴

Arata (1999) studied the effects of rape on the victims and reported that the majority of women experienced a decrease in their symptoms over time, but some rape victims go on to experience chronic distress. Those whose distress became chronic were most likely to blame themselves for the rape, including seeing themselves as having deserved the rape, being a bad person, or not being able to take care of themselves. The self-blaming woman also tended to see the world as an unsafe place, believe there are many disturbed individuals around, and believe no one is ever available to help when it is needed. Arata’s study also showed a strong connection between child sexual abuse and later difficulty coping with rape self-blame. Furthermore, these rape victims were more likely to avoid normal activities, eat and/or smoke a lot, take prescription drugs to relax, sleep, and cry a lot.⁶⁵

As a general rule, in the Latin nations and also in the English-speaking nations, there appears to be a strong tendency to overlook the sexual basis of rape. The Nordic countries, on the other hand, generally attribute sexual causation. To me, it is strange and incongruous that American writers on the subject should not consider rape a sex

⁶¹ M. Ploscowe, *Organized Crime and Law Enforcement*, vol. I and II (New York: Grosby Press, 1951).

⁶² “Human Sexual Aggression: Current Perspectives,” *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences* 528 (August 12, 1988): 1.

⁶³ J. Becker and M. Kaplan, “Rape Victims: Issues, Theories, and Treatment,” *Annual Review of Sex Research* II (1991): 267–292.

⁶⁴ D. G. Kilpatrick, C. L. Best, L. J. Veronen, L. A. Villeponteaux, and G. A. Ruff, “Mental Health Correlates of Criminal Victimization: A Random Community Survey” *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology* 53 (1985): 866–873.

⁶⁵ C. Arata, “Coping with Rape, The Roles of Prior Sexual Abuse and Attributions of Blame,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 14, no. 1 (1999): 62–78.

crime. Dr. Dorothy J. Hicks wrote in *Modern Medicine* of February 15, 1977, “Rape is not a sex act. It is a violent crime that has nothing to do with sex except that the sex organs are involved. Rape is an attempt to humiliate a victim who happens to be vulnerable and handy at the time.” Germaine Greer in *The Female Eunuch* wrote: “It is a vain delusion that rape is an expression of uncontrollable desire or some kind of compulsive response to an overwhelming attraction ... The act is one of murderous aggression, spawned in self-loathing and enacted upon the hated other.”⁶⁶ Nancy Gager and Cathleen Shurr wrote in *Sexual Assault: Confronting Rape in America*, “Rape is not an isolated phenomenon of ‘sick’ males, but rather an inevitable part of the entire social matrix which denigrates women ...”⁶⁷ Susan Brownmiller wrote in *Against Our Will*, “It is nothing more or less than a conscious process of intimidation by which all men keep all women in a state of fear.”⁶⁸ Sexual violation has a special urgency (Susan Estrich, *Real Rape*, Harvard, 1987). Guttmacher wrote, “Rape is fundamentally an act of aggression and its sexual component is primarily sadistic.”⁶⁹ Yet other writers familiar with the hormones will say: “Rape is an act of aggression, without question. It is also (contrary to current political thinking) a sexual act.”⁷⁰

Rape is a deceptively simple four-letter word that covers a wide spectrum of events. As might be expected, there is a great variability in the typology of rapists. They range in seriousness, nature, motivation, and frequency from the serial sadistic rape—mutilation—murderer with dozens of victims down to the single-case date rapist, which happened by the rarest set of circumstances. The public has been confused for many years by dozens of different pictures of different types of rapists in the news. It is helpful to rank-order rapists in some sort of a system, but at the same time one must realize that there will be almost as many differences as there are individual rapists. Groth classifies them into three broad categories with the sadistic rapist the most dangerous but least common (about 5 percent of all rapes).⁷¹ The sadistic rape is characterized by ritually inflicted pain. The second category is the power rape, comprising 40 percent of all rapes. “In these assaults, it is not the offender’s desire to harm his victim, but to possess her sexually.” The third category is characterized by physical brutality and includes about 55 percent of all reported rapes. In any given case there may be elements of two or more of these categories to a different extent.

Special Agent Hazelwood, of the FBI’s National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime, built on Groth’s classification of rapists with a fourfold hierarchy of rapists, and another classification of serial rapists as increasers and non-increasers. The increasers increased the amount of force used in their rapes over time with more serious injuries

⁶⁶ G. Greer, *The Female Eunuch* (1980), 265.

⁶⁷ C. Shurr, *Sexual Assault: Confronting Rape in America* (1976), 280.

⁶⁸ S. Brown-Miller, *Against Our Will* (Toronto: Bantam Books, 1986), 5.

⁶⁹ Guttmacher, (1951), 50

⁷⁰ T. Crenshaw, *The Alchemy of Love and Lust* (New York: G. P. Putnam’s Sons, 1996), 149.

⁷¹ N. Groth, *Men Who Rape: The Psychology of the Offender* (New York: Plenum Press, 1979), 25.

and greater frequency (a mean of nineteen days between rapes) compared to the non-increasers. In Hazelwood's classification:

1. The power-reassurance rapist is characteristically motivated by doubts about his masculinity and sexual adequacy and seeks to reassure himself through rape.
2. The power-assertive rapist "regards rape as an expression of his virility, mastery, and dominance."
3. The anger-retaliatory rapist rapes as an expression of hostility and rage.
4. The anger-excitation rapist experiences excitement and pleasure in response to his victim's suffering. As Hazelwood and Burgess explained: "the underlying purpose of the assault[becomes clearer], thereby allowing the officer better insight into the type of person he is seeking."⁷²

In 1994, two respected researchers of violence had the courage to stand up against the prevalent feminist views of rape causation and the finicky American Psychological Association, which demands rigorous scholarly screening, and agreed to be the publishers. After many years of study, Tedeschi and Felson wrote, "The most prevalent motivation for the use of sexual coercion is to force sexual compliance and gain sexual satisfaction."⁷³ They then cited the results of several studies that supported this viewpoint. A 1995 report showed that more young people believe rape is due to biological factors than believe that male dominance is the primary factor.⁷⁴ Morneau and Rockwell wrote: "Certainly a raped and beaten woman does not feel that she has been involved in a sexual experience. It is, however, important that the police investigator remember that the act was sex to the rapist. It was what he harbored in his mind as a sexual encounter, one in which he felt he would experience a maximum sexual enjoyment—an experience that would make him feel good."⁷⁵ Amir's 1971 study reinforced the idea that the primary motive for rape is sex. Karpman wrote, "In some men only the resistance of the woman makes them potent. This is probably the mechanism of rape."⁷⁶ Karpman also quoted Hirning,⁷⁷ "There is no specific personality type or sexual psychopathology peculiar to forcible rape; many psychopathic individuals are in

⁷² R. Hazelwood and A. Burgess, *Practical Aspects of Rape Investigation: A Multidisciplinary Approach* (New York: Elsevier, 1987).

⁷³ J. Tedeschi and R. Felson, *Aggression and Coercive Actions: A Social-Interactionist Perspective* (American Psychological Association, 1994).

⁷⁴ G. Cowan and R. Campbell, "Rape Causal Attitudes Among Adolescents," *Journal of Sex Research* 32, no. 2 (1995): 145–153.

⁷⁵ R. Morneau and R. Rockwell, *Sex, Motivation, and the Criminal Offender* (Springfield IL: Charles C. Thomas Publisher, 1980).

⁷⁶ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*

⁷⁷ C. Hirning, *The Sex Offender in Custody: Handbook of Correctional Psychology*, eds. R. M. Lindner and R. V. Seliger (Philosophical Library, 1947).

this category.” Mosher took the opposite approach and showed with considerable data that the most macho men had the greatest proclivity to commit the crime of rape.⁷⁸

There are probably a hundred postulated reasons for the crime of rape, but most of them have failed to produce effective solutions toward stopping rape. We spend billions of dollars every year on rape prevention, treatment of offenders, treatment of victims, and facilities of all kinds. But the rate of rape continues to be excessively high. Some of the postulated reasons for rape depict some small, fleeting part of the motivation, but the underlying hormonal causes are largely ignored in such explanations as: desire to dominate women, power-assertive demonstration, expression of virility, self-loathing, hatred of women, desire to denigrate a woman, desire to humiliate a victim, “sick” males, murderous aggression, intimidation, keep all women in a state of fear, sadistic rape, anger, retaliatory for slighting, power reassurance, physical brutality, aggressive instinct, prove his masculinity, machismo, produce sexual compliance, or gain sexual satisfaction.

Berlin et al. pointed out that rape is frequently associated with substance abuse.⁷⁹ Intoxication can predispose toward rape, either by reducing sexual inhibitions and impairing social judgment or by reducing contact with reality ... Intoxication with alcohol, marijuana, or cocaine tends to be disinhibiting and judgment impairing ... PCP, amphetamines, and certain hallucinogens may induce a psychosis-like state in which a person loses contact with reality. Both PCP and amphetamines can induce psychoses whose effects are evident long after injections ... Some of the most lurid cases of rape and sadistic sexual activities, including lust murder, have occurred during PCP-induced psychotic states.

There may be many different reasons for the crime of rape due to the extreme variability of men and human interactions, but it must be emphasized that it is nearly always primarily a sex crime. Some of the factors that demonstrate the sex urge as the principle cause of rape are:

1. It is legally classified and defined as a sex crime. Federal and state laws define it as “the sexual intercourse with a female forcibly and against her will.” Intercourse means coitus, the sex act of a man and a woman, and can hardly be more descriptive and still remain within the bounds of decorum, which a respect for the law dictates.
2. Penetration of the female by the penis of the male is essential to the definition of rape. This is impossible with an unwilling female without the erection of the penis. To achieve an erection, there must be male sex hormones present in the

⁷⁸ D. Mosher, “Macho Men, Machismo and Sexuality,” *Annual Review of Sex Research* II (1991): 199–247.

⁷⁹ F. Berlin, G. Lehne, M. Malin, W. Hunt, K. Thomas, and J. Furhmanek, “The Eroticised Violent Crime: A Psychiatric Perspective with Six Clinical Examples,” *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity, A Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 4, no. 1 (1997): 19.

blood, and the brain must also receive stimuli experienced as sexual being. Nerves at the lower end of the spinal column act under signals from the brain to contract the muscles at the base of the penis and prevent the blood from draining out through the veins. Engorgement continues as long as there is proper stimulation, but ceases abruptly as soon as inappropriate impulses from the brain are received. Fear, guilt, anxiety, and hatred usually generate these inappropriate stimuli and make it impossible to maintain the erection. The emotions which feminist authors hypothesize as causing rape are inimical to the achievement of the necessary erection.

3. Orgasm was the objective of most rapes that come to the courts. The primary prosecutorial evidence that a woman has been raped is the presence of semen in or on the female. The enzymic acid phosphatase in the semen fluoresces brightly under black light illumination for easy detection. Semen usually becomes the primary forensic clue in rape convictions. Semen convicts more rapists than any other single piece of evidence because the blood type, DNA, and other identifying characteristics of the donor can be recorded from it. The production of semen is the very essence of sex.
4. Rape is a sex crime: 1) the peak age group (fourteen to twenty-five years) for sexual activity correlates with 60 percent of all convicted rapists. 2) The rate of rape increases in spring, the season for mating in most animals. Havelock Ellis noted peak months for rape in France were May, June, and July. Gustave A. Schaffenberg (1913) found sex offenses in Germany reached a maximum in June or July and fell to a minimum in winter. Similar trends are annually documented by the FBI Uniform Crime Reports. 3) As the so-called “sexual revolution” has progressed, so has the incidence of rapes. Rapes known to law enforcement personnel increased from a yearly average of 3.7 per 100,000 population in 1933 to 24.3 in 1973. Reported cases totaled about 50,000 cases in 1976, 94,500 in 1989, and 302,091 in 1996 in the United States with estimates of the numbers of unreported cases ranging from two to ten times these numbers. 4) Stürup found that castrated men do not rape. His recidivism rate among castrated rapists was zero.⁸⁰

Some of the error in attributing the causes of rape to some source other than sex stems from the data accumulated by psychiatrists, psychologists, sociologists, social workers, administrators, and police—many of whom are women who only dimly understand the nature of the male sex urge. When questioned by these people, the rapist will admit to almost any other reason besides sexual lust because of his personal embarrassment and insecurities. These other circuitous explanations seem more justified

⁸⁰ G. Stürup, “Treatment of Sexual Offenders in Herstedvester, Denmark: The Rapists,” *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica* suppl. 204, vol. 44 (1968).

than the more reprehensible sexual lust on its own. There is something shameful about sex that makes most Americans want to hide it. We were brought up on biblical teachings about the abhorrent and reprehensible sexual sins, which are certain to shame the perpetrator. These attitudes have been preached, lectured, and told to us by parents and teachers from our earliest childhood. We have been scolded, we have had hands slapped, and we have gone without supper for sexual misdeeds in our early lives. Most rapists find it far easier to deny the shameful desire for sex and to admit to the macho “he-man” feelings of anger, hate, jealousy, dominance, etc. They do not even like to admit the concupiscence even to themselves. Furthermore, they may not even be aware of these salacious sexual itches that are so subliminal that they may not even surface to the level of the realm of conscious thought. The perpetrator, himself, is often unable to accurately describe the real reason that he committed such an abominable act.

The police rate of clearing the crime of rape by successful arrest and prosecution has been inexcusably poor for a long, long time. In 1977, the Battelle Law and Justice Center estimated that 3 percent of rape reports resulted in conviction. In Florida, in 1986, only about 20 percent of all reported rapes resulted in a conviction, and 30 percent of these were given lighter sentences than the sentencing guidelines called for.⁸¹ In 1995, law enforcement agencies reported that about a third of all reported forcible rapes were cleared by an arrest—an estimated 34,650 arrests out of 97,460 rapes reported to police nationwide.⁸² Prison does little or nothing to improve the rapist’s behavior. In fact, rapists learn how to evade arrest and prosecution in discussions with other imprisoned rapists. We are obviously on the wrong track in understanding the reasons and remedies for this very serious crime. Sensational news items of “successfully treated” rapists again repeating their crime within a few months of being released continue to demonstrate this point. In some jurisdictions, up to 65 percent of rapists who have been incarcerated are arrested for rape again.

Reginald Muldrew, forty-seven, nicknamed the “Pillowcase Rapist” for the way he threw pillowcases over his victims’ heads to prevent them from identifying him, is an example. He had been linked with as many as 200 sex crimes in the Los Angeles, California, area from 1976 through 1978. He was sentenced to twenty-five years in prison. Muldrew was released after serving only sixteen years and a year later broke into a woman’s house, put a pillow over her face, and fled with her purse.

Violence has always been one successful method of getting what is wanted. Whatever works, wins out. This is an inexorable law of evolution. When the caveman wanted a woman, he knocked one on the head and dragged her away to his cave. Not because he hated, despised, or was jealous of her, but simply because that was the way to obtain a woman. The thin veneer of thousands of years of civilization has been completely inadequate to change the millions of years of ingrained behavior. There is still the instinctive male tendency to take by force what he wants. Violent, aggressive copulation,

⁸¹ C. Corres, *Gender Bias*.

⁸² Bureau of Justice Statistics, *Sex Offenses and Offenders*, 1.

meeting all of the descriptive elements of rape, is the norm in some primitive human cultures, in several animal species, and in a few bird species.

The past 5,000 years of recorded history are replete with references to women as chattel. They were usually the personal property of their husbands, fathers, or masters. Women were much like slaves, bondsmen, or cattle—albeit very independent-minded ones. Their low status made them vulnerable to dominant acts against their person such as rape. I find it regrettable that the very influential women's movement writers should be so misled in the primary causes of this crime. Promulgation of some of these beliefs has made it more difficult to come to grips with a better solution. The concept of forcible intercourse that a rapist has is inimical to the concept of sex that women have. Women want to be held, comforted, caressed, and loved—valued as special—so women rationalize that it is not sex that motivates a man to rape; it must be hatred, loathing, or sheer aggressive expression. Sudden, forcible intercourse is not sex to women. Women cannot understand that for some men, aggression is a part of sex: successful and direct—it gets the job done.

Barbara Ehrenreich wrote an article for *Time* magazine about a forthcoming book entitled *A Natural History of Rape* by Randy Thornhill and Craig Palmer. The article debunked their theory that rape represents another seed-spreading technique. "Sure it's nasty, brutish and short on foreplay. But it gets the job done," she wrote.⁸³ In the January 2000 issue of *The Sciences*, the authors of the book were quoted as saying that they just want to correct the feminist fallacy that "rape is not about sex." Another review of the Thornhill book called it "an intellectual masterpiece ... courageous, compassionate, and scholarly analysis of rape."⁸⁴

Women's rights advocates lobbied strongly during the 1977 Oregon legislative session and secured the passage of a law that allows a wife to charge her own husband with rape. This law was tested in the Rideout case, and, although the husband was acquitted in December 1978, the law was allowed to stand. By April 30, 1988, all fifty states had similar laws that made it a crime for a man to rape his wife. Under these laws, the husband was treated like any other man who forced a woman to have sex. But some, about twenty states, later made some allowances, which made wife rape a lesser crime than other rapes. The ancient custom as explained by St. Paul states: "The wife does not rule over her own body, but the husband does ..." (1 Corinthians 7:4). And by Moses " ... Your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you" (Genesis 3:16). The prevalence of marital rape is estimated to be between 7 percent and 14 percent, and the women are just as likely to suffer psychological problems as those raped by strangers.⁸⁵

⁸³ B. Ehrenreich, "How 'Natural' is Rape?" *Time* (January 31, 2000).

⁸⁴ R. Thornhill and C. T. Palmer, *A Natural History of Rape: Biological Bases of Sexual Coercion* (Cambridge, MA: Massachusetts Institute of Technology, (2000).

⁸⁵ Candice Monson, Gary Byrd, and Jennifer Langhinrichsen-Rohling, "To Have and Hold—Perceptions of Marital Rape," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* (September 1996): 410.

A still more recently recognized type of rape is called “date rape.” This was the subject of a MacNeil/Lehrer special program on television July 25, 1986. A woman goes out on a date with a man who then takes excessive advantage of her trust and forces himself on her to a degree greater than she had intended to allow. This is actually much more common than the rape in which the rapist lurks in the shadows and then leaps out to drag the woman into the woods. Date rape has become especially common among college students, and several cases have appeared in the news. In court, the woman will often admit to indulging in heavy petting, but then testify that she was forced to have sex. Sometimes there is only a very fine line of demarcation between the two conditions. Although the incidence of college rape is high (with some 28 percent of the nation’s female college students having reported being raped), there has been very little reported in the Uniform Crime Report (UCR). This may help clarify the wide discrepancy in the trends reported in the UCR and the National Crime Survey (NCS). The Florida Department of Health launched a statewide public information program focusing on date rape in 2001.⁸⁶

Neil Malamuth ran a survey at the University of California in Los Angeles in 1985 asking the male students: “If you could be assured that no one would know and that you could in no way be punished, how likely, if at all, would you be to commit such acts as forcing a female to do something she didn’t want to do?” and “rape?” The headlines screamed the shocking answers: 35 percent admitted some likelihood of rape.⁸⁷

Another type of rape is called “statutory rape.” It is an act of sexual intercourse performed upon a person who is under the “age of consent” (this is age sixteen in twenty-eight states, age seventeen in six states, age eighteen in fifteen states, and age thirteen in one state) and not the spouse of the perpetrator.⁸⁸ Victims may be either male or female. This type of rape was once a capital felony with penalties ranging from death or life in prison down to ten years in prison. But by 1997, Louisiana was the only state where death was a punishment for rape of a child under the age of twelve. Consent for the act is not a defense, nor is a genuine belief, based on reasonable grounds, that the child is past the age of consent. In many of these cases, the term rape is often euphemized to some less inflammatory term such as carnal knowledge. In Florida, if the victim is under eleven, the crime is referred to as “sexual battery” of a minor, and it carries a mandatory sentence of life in prison. The laws on this crime do not require the penetration of the female by the penis of the male, but it may be adjudged rape if a finger or some other object is inserted into the vagina or anus. The sexual abuse of a child was rated very high on the National Survey of Crime Severity with a value of severity of 25.2, while statutory rape of females was rated at a low 1.6. Data on the incidence has continued to rise. By 1994, three-fourths of females who had sex before

⁸⁶ “State Launching Date Rape Program,” Northwest Florida Daily News (March 13, 2001): C1.

⁸⁷ “Playboy’s History of the Sexual Revolution 1980–1989: The Great Repression,” Playboy (April 1999): 140.

⁸⁸ Bowling, 1950.

fourteen say they were coerced. Men over the age of twenty impregnated two-thirds of teenage mothers.

After many years of ever-increasing penalties, statutory rape became so common that it was the usual origin of teenage mothers. Sexual education for teens does not work. According to a study by the Alan Guttmacher Institute, 39 percent of fifteen-year-old mothers say the fathers of their babies are twenty years old or older. Among the babies of seventeen-year-old mothers, 55 percent of the fathers are adults. "Today, 65% of teenage mothers are unmarried, up from 48% in 1980. These teens and their children are at high risk of poverty, school failure and welfare dependency."⁸⁹

Another study by the Alan Guttmacher Institute found that about 7 percent of sexually active girls ages fifteen to seventeen had partners who were at least six years older than they were. But these girls accounted for 19 percent of the teen pregnancies. The earlier study had suggested that men were taking advantage of younger, more vulnerable partners, and this had sparked a call to crack down on statutory rape predatory men. The increased percentage of pregnancies with older men was also explained by the finding that older men use condoms less, and girls are more confident in older partners' ability to provide for them and their children. Older men are more likely to be employed and better educated than teen dads.⁹⁰ Young women are usually more attractive to men than older women.

In Florida, the law states that no one under the age of sixteen can consent to have sex with anyone. Girls sixteen and older can consent to have sex, but the partner cannot be older than twenty-three. If the male is over twenty-three, he could face fifteen years in jail and also be labeled a sexual predator for life. The male who pleads innocence because he thought the girl was older than sixteen is out of luck. Ignorance is not a defense despite the fact that many teen girls dress and look older than they really are.

The sad reality of the feelings of many of these young mothers is expressed in Nancy Curtis' poem "Teenage Lament."

... My material for a prom formal—
never made—as it sits amid the
remnants of the fabrics left over
from my maternity tops.
My medals from band and choir,
forsaken in the clutter of a jewelry box.
My friends passing by my window,
Laughing over the gossip column
in the school paper.
And giggling over who will be the first
to experience

⁸⁹ J. Shapiro and A. Wright, "Sins of the Fathers," *Time* (August 14, 1995): 51.

⁹⁰ "Teen Pregnancy Rate Rises with Age of Partner," *Northwest Florida Daily News* (August 13, 1999): A3.

The new morality—and freedom!
For cleaning—what a drag!
For him—always arguing.
For ironing—senseless hours.
For dishes—useless.
For cooking—a bore.
For sex—a hang-up.
Oh, God, if you are there,
please let someone take this crying
baby off my hands.
And let my feet dance one more.
I am so old. And I was never young.

Several high-profile cases of statutory rape were featured in the news media in August 1995, which shed more light on the details of this crime. One such case was that of the U.S. representative from Chicago. Mel Reynolds had been elected to Congress in 1992 as the image of a young, black educator and former Rhodes Scholar who portrayed high-minded politics triumphant over racial division. Despite this, he had pulled up to sixteen-year-old Beverly Heard as she walked outside her high school in 1992. He took her to dinner and then masturbated in the car while driving her home. A week later, they had sex for the first time. Then, between June and November, he paid her for sex two or three times a week, as much as \$100 a time.⁹¹ This U.S. representative was charged with criminal sexual assault and faced a maximum of eighty-six years in prison.

In another case, thirty-nine-year-old Assistant Pastor Danny Drake, of the Christian Center of Jacksonville, Florida, was convicted of seducing a fifteen-year-old girl in the church on New Year's Eve in 1992. Drake pleaded guilty and served a year in jail. The church, however, was given a \$925,000 fine because the church fathers knew about the sexual activities of Drake and did nothing to stop them.⁹²

Rape has been one of the leading concerns of the influential feminist movement for more than three decades. Several important political actions resulted: The Violence Against Women Act (VAWA) of 1994, with its “stop” (services, training, officers, and prosecutors) provisions, has been established; rape crisis centers have been established in every major city in the country for treating, counseling, and aiding rape victims; special facilities have been established in all police forces for prosecuting rapists; and some areas have set up special organizations such as Families Enraged About Rape (FEAR) and Sexual Assault Nurse Examiner (SANE) to fight back against one of the worst of all violent crimes. The average cost of the SANE program is about \$2,074.00 per victim, which amounts to about \$12 million per year for the 100 programs in

⁹¹ “Lawmaker’s Accuser Finally Takes the Stand—She Testifies about Sexual Escapades,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 8, 1995): A.

⁹² “Teen Seduced by Pastor Gets \$925,000,” Pensacola News Journal (August 12, 1995): 4C.

use in 1999.⁹³ In spite of all of these most ardent and dedicated organizations and individuals, rapes have continued to become more numerous and more brutal. Prison terms have failed to stem the tide of this heinous crime. Society needs to recognize the power of the sexual component and learn to treat this crime for what it really is—a crime motivated by biochemical imbalance of the hormones. We must provide effective medical treatment to the perpetrators to remedy this.

Truly efficacious methods for stopping rape are crucial to public safety. Rape is a violent crime that no one should ever have to endure.

Dr. John Money coined the word *biastophilia*.

Biastophilia: A paraphilia of the sacrificial/expiatory type in which sexuoerotic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and contingent on the surprise attack and continued violent assault of a nonconsenting, terrified, and struggling stranger (from Greek *biastes*, “rape or forced violation,” plus *philia*). Acquiescence on the part of the partner induces a fresh round of threat and violence from the *biastophile*.⁹⁴

“The stratagem of marauding and predation requires that the partner in lust be kidnapped, abducted, coerced, or violently assaulted, as no decent person would consent to be defiled by lust. The extreme example of this stratagem is rapistic violence and assault or *raptophilia* (from Latin *rapere*, “to seize,” plus *philia*)” (pp. 182-183). “The proposal to add paraphiliac rape (to DSM III) had to be scuttled because of a perceptively intelligent move on the part of radical feminists in psychiatry and psychology who objected to the possibility of an illness or insanity defense for accused *raptophiles*. They objected to the possibility of meaningless, ineffective psychological treatment instead of the more effective death penalty—they do not differentiate paraphiliac rape from date rape and spouse rape” (p. 139).

Doctor Money is the world’s foremost sexologist and more frequently right in his writings than most of the others. He is quoted as saying: “This business about rape being an act of violence rather than a sexual act is a joke. You might as well say someone having an epileptic fit has a social (not a biological) problem.”⁹⁵

Another form of rape is gang rape—also called multiple rapes. This type is exemplified by a case that appeared in the newspaper *Pensacola News Journal* on July 24, 1991:

A thirty-three-year-old woman told investigators she was held for thirty-four hours and repeatedly raped after she was forced to accompany two men to a boardinghouse at knifepoint about 11 **pm**, Friday, July 19, 1991. She said she was held in one room and raped by a group of men sixteen to

⁹³ Courtney Anrens, Rebecca Campbell, Sharon Wasco, Gloria Aponte, Lori Grubstein, and William Davidson, “Sexual Assault Nurse Examiner (SANE) Programs,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 15, no. 9 (2000): 921–943.

⁹⁴ Money, Gay, Straight, and In-Between, 191.

⁹⁵ *Glamour* (June 1992): 108.

fifty-five years old. She escaped at 9:30 **am** Sunday when an unidentified woman helped her open a window. The woman directed her toward State Road 46 where a motorist driving into Sanford, Florida, picked up the victim. The victim returned with sheriff's investigators Monday and helped identify four suspects who were charged with sexual battery by multiple perpetrators and held without bail in the county jail ... Conviction could carry prison life terms.

Another form of rape is prison rape. Relatively little information has been compiled in statistical form about these rapes because the victims are incarcerated, and reporting a rape can be extremely dangerous for them. Most men are too ashamed to even want to report being raped by another man. The increase in the number of prisoners has led to prison overcrowding in recent years, so it is usually impractical to segregate prisoners by age, size, or type of offense. The result is a frequent mixing of rapists and vulnerable young men in the same cell. The October 2003 issue of *Popular Science* (p. 72) reported that one in ten inmates in a survey had been the victim of a sexual assault. Many repeatedly.

Male-on-male rape is very poorly reported in general. The FBI does not even have a category for reporting this crime, and most of the states still do not. In twenty-one states, rape is defined legally only as the forcible penetration of a woman by a man. Most states use the euphemisms "sexual misconduct," "unlawful sexual intercourse," "sexual battery," or "criminal sexual conduct." In 1994, the Bureau of Justice Statistics reported that 15,000 men reported they had been victims of rape or attempted rape, but the actual number of male-on-male rapes is unknown.⁹⁶ The 1995 Sexual Offences Act changed the definition of rape such that vaginal or anal penetration of a person of either gender is now considered rape. In the United States, between 5 and 10 percent of total rapes reported to treatment centers are against men. Research has shown that sexual assault on men is a frightening, dehumanizing experience that leaves them feeling debased and makes them vulnerable to emotional disorders and substance abuse in later life.⁹⁷

Other types of rape that have been named are: *anonraptus* (rapists who attack only elderly women) and *anthropophagolagnia* (rape with cannibalism).

Prior to 1992, the Bureau of Justice Statistics estimated that there were a total of 133,000 rapes and attempted rapes each year in this country. After better, more specific questions were employed in 1992, the government more than doubled its estimates to 310,000. In its report of August 16, 1995, the Justice Department's Bureau of Justice Statistics figures recorded 170,000 rapes and 140,000 attempted rapes per year with a

⁹⁶ N. Asika, "Male Rape Victims Hide in Shame," *Staten Island Advance* (September 15, 1997).

⁹⁷ M. King and E. Wollett, "Sexually Assaulted Males: 115 Men Consulting a Counseling Service," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26, no. 6 (1997): 579-588.

possible total of all types of sexual assault of 500,000.⁹⁸ The Justice Department report of November 1998 estimated a total of 465,000 rapes a year. The American Medical Association's data reported in the Ann Landers newspaper column, of February 28, 1997, that over 700,000 women are sexually assaulted each year and that sexual assault continues to represent the most rapidly growing violent crime in America.

Mary Koss concluded that "the 14% rape prevalence released by the National Victims Center (1992) appears to be the middle ground."⁹⁹ Despite the assessment problems and wide range of estimates, experts believe that the United States has the second highest incidence rate of forcible rape of any industrialized country. Even when we take into account the inaccuracy from unreported attacks (a problem in all countries), we find that the rate in the United States is thirteen times that of England, four times that of West Germany, five to ten times that of France, and twenty times that of Japan.¹⁰⁰ In 1998, South Africa had the highest incidence of rape in the world with a rate of 104.1 per 100,000 people; in the United States, the rate was 34.4 per 100,000.¹⁰¹

When statistics for both rape and attempted rape of adult women are combined, the acquaintance becomes the most prevalent type of rapist. Fourteen percent of the 930 women were victims of rape or attempted rape by acquaintances; 12 percent by dates; 11 percent by strangers; 8 percent by husbands or ex-husbands; 6 percent by friends; 3 percent by boyfriends; 3 percent by relatives other than husbands; and 2 percent by friends of the family (p. 51). Sexual victimization among college women is about three times greater than among women in the general population.

For a long time, the studies have shown that disproportionately high percentages of rapes are committed by members of the black race. Amir found that 82.5 percent of those arrested for rape in Philadelphia were black, as were 80.5 percent of the victims.¹⁰² Russell showed that the FBI's Uniform Crime Reports generally indicated the race of criminals as being 48 percent blacks, 51 percent whites, and 1 percent other.¹⁰³ The 1969 National Commission on the Causes and Prevention of Violence reported 60 percent involved black offenders and black victims; 30 percent involved white offenders and white victims; 11 percent involved black offenders and white victims; and 0.3 percent involved white offenders and black victims. The black population is thought to comprise about 12.5 percent of our total population, and the Asian population about 3.8 percent. The percentage of rapes in the Asian population is so small that it is seldom

⁹⁸ "Revision Accounts for Increase in Rapes," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 17, 1995): 2A.

⁹⁹ M. Koss, "Detecting the Scope of Rape: A Review of Prevalence Research Methods," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 8, no. 2 (1993): 198-222.

¹⁰⁰ J. Allison and L. Wrightsman, *Rape the Misunderstood Crime* (Newbury Park: Sage Publications, 1993), 9.

¹⁰¹ "An Epidemic of Rape: Outrage Fuels a Protest Movement in South Africa," *Time* (November 1, 1999): 59.

¹⁰² M. Amir, *Patterns in Forcible Rape* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1971).

¹⁰³ D. Russell, *Sexual Exploitation: Rape, Child Sexual Abuse and Workplace Harassment* (Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 1971).

reported despite the fact that many share much of the same poverty, poor education, poor housing, and other disadvantageous conditions that are frequently blamed for the black's high rates of violent crimes. Black males have an average of about 10 to 20 percent higher testosterone levels than white males, while Asian males have about 3 percent less than white males. Rape is a hormonally activated crime, and the variations in the hormonal level among rapists and non-rapist men also demonstrate this fact.

On April 18, 1997, Colonel Paul Johnston, the judge at the court martial of Staff Sergeant Delmar Simpson, drill master at the Aberdeen Proving Ground who was accused of raping six female recruits, ruled that physical force was not needed to define rape in the case. The judge ruled that drill sergeants have so much power over trainees that they do not have to use a weapon or threaten force to be found guilty of the crime of rape. Judge Johnston further stated women need not resist or object either. Simpson, thirty-two, was found guilty and sentenced to twenty-five years, received a dishonorable discharge, and forfeited all military pay and allowances.

The U.S. Department of Justice reported that in 1992 an estimated 21,655 rapists nationwide were convicted, and eight in ten had pleaded guilty. Over two-thirds of convicted rapists received prison sentences with the average term imposed being just under fourteen years. Only about 2 percent of convicted rapists received life sentences. On any given day about 34,000 offenders, convicted of rape or sexual assault, were under the care, custody, or control of corrections agencies. About 60 percent of these were under conditional supervision in the community. Since 1980, the average annual growth in the number of prisoners has been about 7.6 percent. The number of prisoners sentenced for violent sexual assault, other than rape, increased by an annual average of nearly 15 percent—faster than any other category of violent crime, and faster than all other categories except drug trafficking.¹⁰⁴ Under Florida law, an adult who commits sexual battery against a child who is less than twelve years old can be executed if the child's sexual organs are injured.

Schewe and O'Donohue reported that about 9 percent of the male population commits acts that meet the legal definition of rape or attempted rape. Only about 10 percent of all rapes are reported to police, and only 50 percent of these result in arrest. Of those that are arrested, 66 percent are prosecuted, and 85 percent of these currently result in conviction.¹⁰⁵ In a study of 561 offenders, rapists reported a lifetime average of seven incidents, but it is known that some rapists rape far more than others.¹⁰⁶

Weiss and Zverina also found that only a small fraction of rapes and attempted rapes were reported to police. Reports were made only 3.4 percent of the time. Part of the explanation for this low figure could be reflected in cases of husbands and partners

¹⁰⁴ Bureau of Justice Statistics, *Sex Offenses and Offenders*.

¹⁰⁵ P. Schewe and William O'Donohue, "Psychometrics of the Rape Conformity Assessment and Other Measures: Implications for Rape Prevention," *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 10, no. 2 (1998): 98, 99.

¹⁰⁶ K. English, S. Pullen, and L. Jones, "Managing Adult Sex Offenders in the Community, Research in Brief," *National Institute of Justice* (January 1997): 2.

as perpetrators among the women in their study. Weiss and Zverina observed that this served to prevent the reporting of these crimes for social reasons with the family.¹⁰⁷

The most frequent explanations given for these horrendous crimes by psychologists, sociologists, and liberals involve the power, dominance, and control that the perpetrator feels when he commits these crimes. I submit that these terms, along with similar ones used (anger-excitation, anger-retaliatory, physical brutality, power reassurance, power assertive, murderous aggression, and sexual coercion) are synonyms for the euphoric rush that is activated by the sex hormones. The sex hormones (testosterone mainly) excite certain neurotransmitters and hormones in the brain and body (mainly dopamine, but also adrenaline, vasopressin, and nitrous oxide), which produce the rush that is described as “power and control.” We are really talking about the same thing in different terms. In Stürup’s study, none of the rapists who were castrated have recidivated.¹⁰⁸ Castration reduces the testosterone, which enables lust and penile erection. Most men who are castrated not only lose their desire to rape, but also the ability to achieve the erection necessary for penetration.

November 25, 1999, was International Day Against Violence Against Women. It was marked by various activities worldwide to raise awareness of sexual, emotional, and physical abuse of women. South Africa launched its “Take a Stand” movement, the Womankind Worldwide held a forum in London, and The Lancet published an article on rape in war.¹⁰⁹ Rape has always been common in wars but this aspect of the history of conflict has not been accorded a high profile—probably because rape in war has been considered insignificant compared to the death, destruction, and wounding from military weapons. This may be changing because in 1996, the International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia cited sexual assault as a crime against humanity. And in 1998, the International Tribunal for Rwanda found rape to be an act of genocide. As many as 5,000 babies were born to rape victims after the 1994 genocide. Many of these children have been abandoned and killed.

The Yugoslav tribunal at The Hague, Netherlands, opened their rape trial on March 20, 2000. This was the first time an international court tackled the wartime rape problem. During the 1992 to 1995 Bosnian war, an estimated 20,000 to 50,000 mostly Muslim women and girls were raped by Bosnian Serb soldiers. On April 4, 2000, one of the victims, in the seventh grade at the time, told how she was raped countless times in Serb rape camps in the town of Foca, southeast of Sarajevo.¹¹⁰¹¹¹ In February 2001,

¹⁰⁷ P. Weiss and J. Zverina, “Experiences with Sexual Aggression Within the General Population in the Czech Republic,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 3 (1999): 269.

¹⁰⁸ Stürup, “Treatment of Sexual Offenders in Herstedvester, Denmark”

¹⁰⁹ S. Ramsay, “Breaking the Silence Surrounding Rape,” *The Lancet* 354 (December 11, 1999): 2018.

¹¹⁰ “Landmark Rape Case Opens Today in Netherlands,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 20, 2000): A-8.

¹¹¹ “Witness Testifies She Was Raped by Serbs,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (April 5, 2000): 6A.

three former Bosnian Serb soldiers were convicted of running mass rape camps during the Bosnia War and sentenced to twelve to twenty-eight years imprisonment.

H. Pedophilia

Sometimes spelled paedophilia (from the Greek paidos, child), pedophilia is a paraphilia in which perverts use young children as favorite sexual objects. Other terms frequently used for this behavior include pederasty and child molesting. Legal terms used in different jurisdictions are carnal abuse and impairing the morals of a minor. The popular images of a dirty, old man or a weird-looking stranger in a trench coat grabbing kids in the schoolyard are stereotypes, which have been shown to be erroneous. The Kinsey data (Gebhard et al., 1965)¹¹² flatly disproves these old ideas and shows the average age of child molesters among a wide range to be thirty-five. Many of these men are clean-cut in appearance and apparently are caring citizens. The 1963 Pennsylvania Dangerous Sex Offender study showed that only 4.6 percent of convicted pedophiles were over age sixty, while 23 percent were in the twenty-to-twenty-four age group. In women, pedophilia is rarely detected or prosecuted.¹¹³ The average predator can assault an estimated 140 kids before being caught. Those with male targets average 281.7 acts each (Abel et al., 1987). All states had a statute governing child abuse by 1966, and the Child Abuse Treatment Act of 1974 established procedures for the definition, investigation, and intervention.

The public at large views pedophilia as more obscene, despicable, and outrageous than any other crime. "Adults who sexually abuse children are considered to be among the most serious deviants in our society."¹¹⁴ The pedophile is a predator who victimizes innocent, defenseless, trusting children, and pedophiles are being reported more often to law enforcement. Arrests of child molesters have increased considerably in the past few years. The sexual abuse of children cannot be tolerated, and more and more severe penalties are being imposed for this evil behavior.

The mysoped is an aggressive and sadistic child abuser who equates his sexual arousal with fatal violence. The mysoped usually stalks his victim and takes the child by force rather than seduction. Sadism is an integral part of the mysoped's actions, which often involves the death of the child and sometimes includes cannibalism as it did in the case of Nathaniel Bar Jonah in Great Falls, Montana, in the year 2000.

The incidence of child sexual molestation is estimated to be about twenty times that of rape, amounting to approximately one-third of all adults exploited as children.

¹¹² P. H. Gebhard, J. H. Gagnon, W. B. Pomeroy, and C. V. Christenson, *Sex Offenders: An Analysis of Types* (New York: Warner-Hoeber, 1965).

¹¹³ K. Freud and M. Kuban, "The Basis of the Abused Abuser Theory of Pedophilia: A Further Elaboration on an Earlier Study," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 23, no. 5 (1994): 554.

¹¹⁴ R. Holmes, and S. Holmes, *Current Perspectives on Sex Crimes* (Thousand Oaks: Sage Publications, 2002), 162

Becker and Reilly reported that between 30 and 45 percent of the women sampled reported being sexually abused during their youth.¹¹⁵ The number of incidents in the United States ranges from an estimated 500,000 to 5,000,000 a year. The U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics estimated that state prisons held 43,552 inmates in 1992 who raped or sexually assaulted children under age eighteen. More than half of the victims were age twelve or younger.

Some mental health experts divide pedophiles into two groups: the regressed and the fixated. The regressed pedophile chooses to molest children only when an adult partner is not available. The fixated pedophile, on the other hand, focuses his attention solely on children. He may prefer either girls or boys, but generally confines his activities to a certain age group whether they be infants (nepiophilia), young children, or teenagers (ephebophilia or hebophilia).¹¹⁶ Most pedophiles are thought to target pre-teen boys since they are usually the most easily accessed and most easily persuaded to engage in sex acts. The issue of whether such child molesters are homosexual or not is usually considered academic because the emphasized aspect of the attraction is to children. The fixated pedophile usually has a much larger number of victims, is readily assessed through penile tumescence monitoring while viewing erotic material involving children,¹¹⁷ and is much more difficult to correct.¹¹⁸ Sex therapists seldom talk about a “cure” and strive for “relapse prevention” as the best they can hope for.¹¹⁹ Some researchers have taken issue with the regressed-versus-fixated dichotomy and substituted a continuum of variations in types of pedophiles. About one-third of convicted homosexual pedophiles are re-convicted while only about one-sixth of heterosexuals are.

Kear-Colwell and Boer¹²⁰ have pointed out that present treatments for pedophiles are not as effective as they should be, largely because confrontation during treatment by therapists and staff are counterproductive. It is not surprising that men with pedophilic problems are highly defensive and have difficulty in assessment and treatment. Current treatments require the pedophile to disclose his past history of child molestation, but openness in disclosure of large numbers of his victims leads to further time in prison. The pedophile, therefore, must restrict what he reveals in order to avoid further censure and punishment. At least thirteen states have enacted civil commitment laws, which keep the pedophile locked up after he has completed his original sentence.

¹¹⁵ J. Becker, and D. Reilly, “Preventing Sexual Abuse and Assault,” *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 11, no. 4 (1999): 268.

¹¹⁶ Money, Gay, Straight, and In-Between, 213.

¹¹⁷ K. Hanson, B. Cox, and C. Woszczyna, “Assessing Treatment Outcome for Sexual Offenders,” *Annals of Sex Research* 4, no. 4 (1991): 187.

¹¹⁸ S. Ingersoll and S. Patton, *Treating Perpetrators of Sexual Abuse* (Lexington, MA: Lexington Books, 1990), 91.

¹¹⁹ R. Laws, *Relapse Prevention with Sex Offenders* (New York: Guilford Press, 1989), 321.

¹²⁰ Jon Kear-Colwell and Douglas Boer, “The Treatment of Pedophiles: Clinical Experience and the Implications of Recent Research,” *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 44, no. 5 (2000): 593–605.

The long-term effects of child abuse on the victims have been proven to be substantial. The National Institute of Justice reported in 1992 that the effects of child abuse boost American violent crime perpetration by 40 percent and the overall crime volume by 70 percent.¹²¹ Prolonged, unwanted sexual assaults produce long-term impairment of mental health. Many of the victims drop out of school, have significantly decreased self-esteem, have serious suicidal feelings,¹²² and tend to become victimizers of children in later life.¹²³ As many as 40 million Americans have experienced sexual abuse as children ranging from fondling to intercourse. As many as 10 million of these may be suffering from psychological problems, guilt, sexual difficulties, and a tendency to abuse their own children.¹²⁴

West reported that men accused of sex offenses against children often have been sexually abused themselves when they were young. Clinicians are seriously concerned that sexual molestation of children may cause the children to become molesters themselves. While some studies show that the majority of abused boys do not become offenders, there is a statistical association between either early sexual or physical maltreatment and subsequent offending, both sexual and nonsexual. Physical abuse, but not sexual abuse, was significantly linked with adult crimes of sexual violence. Scientific evidence fails to support some of the assumptions underlying the present severe penalty policies. The studies reported by West found relatively low re-conviction rates among child molesters: 13 percent over four to five years in a meta-analysis of sixty-one published surveys, 19 percent after twenty-four years in another English survey.¹²⁵

Researcher Parker Rossman estimated that there were 1.5 million American men over the age of twenty-one who are involved in sexual relations with boys. There are several organizations of these people: NAMBLA (North American Man-Boy Love Association), the Rene Guyon Society in Los Angeles, The Childhood Sensuality Circle in San Diego, the Boston-Boise Committee, and a group called PIE. These groups have attempted to secure the legalization of pedophilia between men and young boys. They have taken advantage of the more favorable recognition of homosexuality that the Gay Liberation Movement and "Rainbow Coalition" have achieved. Also, the historical precedence of ancient Greece has been cited as supporting such behavior. The Clinton administration was curiously silent on this serious problem, and the National Commission on Child Abuse has strongly criticized them.

Author A. Birkin in his book *J. M. Barrie and the Lost Boys: The Love Story that Gave Birth to Peter Pan* (published by Clarkson Potter, New York, 1979) tells how the

¹²¹ C. S. Widom, *The Cycle of Violence* (Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Justice, 1992).

¹²² C. Bagley, "The Long-Term Psychological Effects of Child Sexual Abuse," *Annals of Sex Research* 4, no. 1 (1991): 25-48.

¹²³ N. A. Groth, "Sexual Trauma in the Life Histories of Rapists and Child Molesters," *Victimology: An International Journal* 4, no. 1 (1979): 10-16.

¹²⁴ *Psychology Today* (February 1987).

¹²⁵ D. J. West, "Boys and Sexual Abuse: An English Opinion," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 27, no. 6 (1998): 539-559.

famous author of *Peter Pan*, *The Boy Who Never Grew Up* was a pedophile. Barrie's sexual age never grew up with his chronological age. His adoration of the young Davies brothers ultimately ruined them.

A study conducted between 1966 and 1968 at a special prison in England, set aside for the segregation of data on sex offenders from other data, clearly indicates that in the prison environment, sex offenders are at the bottom of the hierarchy.¹²⁶ Child molesters, in turn, are considered the lowest form of life by other sex offenders and are treated very negatively. A large percentage of sex offender prisoners were, themselves, sexually abused as children. This may account for some of the hatred observed against child molesters. Even in the closely supervised conditions existing in prison, pedophiles are frequently assaulted, raped, and murdered by other prisoners. Their suicide rate is also higher than that of the general public. One of the most brutal prison riots in U.S. history occurred between February 14 and 16, 1980, at the New Mexico State Penitentiary near Santa Fe, New Mexico. In this riot, the violence was directed primarily against "baby rapers" and "rats" rather than against the prison guards or administrators. Several of the pedophilic inmates were murdered in a most gruesome manner.¹²⁷

The reactions of the criminal justice system against child molesters reached new heights of intensity in the 1980s. Extremely heavy penalties were imposed on molesters, and their constitutional rights to confront the witnesses against them were denied, due to the age of the witnesses, usually two- or three-year-old children. In 1987, Frank Fuster Ascalone, thirty-six, was sentenced to six life sentences plus 110 years in prison for lewd assaults on fifteen children through his babysitting service. In May 1988, Roger Lee Jones, forty-three, of Sarasota, Florida, was the first child molester in history to be placed on the FBI's Ten Most Wanted List.¹²⁸ Several cases were publicized despite a lack of solid evidence to support statements made by children or parents. In a study by the American Child Psychiatric Academy, as many as 36 percent of the allegations were proved to be unfounded. In 1993 in Florida, sexual battery on a child younger than twelve called for a mandatory term of life in prison without parole for at least twenty-five years. The extremely heavy penalties being imposed are a reflection of widespread conviction that sexual assaults on children are among the most serious of our crimes, and rightly so.

One jarring molestation case began in 1984 when Mrs. Judy Ann Johnson, forty-two, complained against seven members of the McMartin Preschool in Los Angeles, California. Mrs. Johnson alleged that her two-and-a-half-year-old son had his ears, nipples, and tongue stapled, his eyes pierced with scissors, had seen a baby's head chopped off, and had been made to drink blood at the preschool. She also complained that a female school board member had molested her son. The publicity in this case was

¹²⁶ P. Priestley, *Victorian Prison Lives: English Prison Biography 1830-1914* (London: London Methuen, 1980).

¹²⁷ *Newsweek* (February 18, 1980): 66.

¹²⁸ *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal*. (March 6, 1989).

so sensational that the original prosecutor resigned and contracted with screenwriter Abby Mann to make a movie about the case and share the profits. His successor as prosecutor of the McMartin case, Lael Rubin, “negligently” failed to inform the defense attorney of the ridiculous allegations made by Mrs. Johnson, indicating instead that she was mentally disturbed and not a credible witness. The furor in the case had been exacerbated by Mrs. Johnson calling dozens of other McMartin school parents with her stories and by the police circulating a letter to a hundred parents asking them to question their children. The resulting paranoia brought 200 accusations against the teachers. In December 1986, Mrs. Johnson committed suicide and was declared mentally ill, and the case against the teachers collapsed. Three of the teachers have filed multimillion-dollar lawsuits against the county child-abuse diagnostic center, former District Attorney Philbosian, and a local television station. The case became the longest criminal trial in U.S. history when it exceeded the two-year and three-day hillside strangler trial of Angelo Buono on April 29, 1989. The McMartin trial lasted twenty-eight months and cost an estimated \$16 million.

Another protracted legal case brought the scourge of child molestation home to the parents of the lovely Farmville, North Carolina, community when testimony began in August 1991. Robert F. Kelly Jr., forty-four, was convicted April 22, 1992 of ninety-nine charges of sexually abusing children under his care at his Little Rascals Day Care Center in Edenton. He was found guilty of four counts of rape, forty-six counts of taking indecent liberties, thirty-six counts of first-degree sexual offense, and thirteen crimes against nature. “I’m innocent. I’ll go to prison and fight it from there,” Kelly said as he was led to a deputy’s car en route to prison. In addition to being the longest criminal trial in North Carolina history, it set a record for the longest jury deliberation. Expenses, including court-appointed defense lawyers, counseling for children and their parents, and court costs, have topped \$1.2 million. The charges carried a maximum penalty of forty life terms plus 560 years in prison. Kelly spent six years behind bars, and charges were dropped in 1997.

One of the far-reaching effects of pedophilia is its impact on the religious beliefs of a large share of the population. It has been widely reported that at least 2 percent of Roman Catholic priests are fixated pedophiles.¹²⁹ Nearly thirty priests in France were convicted of pedophilia between 1990 and 2000.¹³⁰

On June 2, 1998, a Roman Catholic bishop resigned his post after admitting to abusing five boys in three different Florida churches earlier in his career as a priest. He was the first U.S. Catholic bishop to resign for such conduct. Bishop Joseph Keith Symons, sixty-five, of Palm Beach Gardens, Florida, admitted that he had kept an “ugly, dirty little secret” for over forty years and that he had “prayed each day for these persons and their families.” After his resignation, he left his diocese for an undisclosed

¹²⁹ A. Sipe, *A Secret World: Sexuality and the Search for Celibacy* (New York: Bruner/Mazel, 1990), 161–175.

¹³⁰ Northwest Florida Daily News (September 8, 2001): A-11.

location where he would be evaluated and treated. Such treatment—mandated and organized by the church—can extend up to a year for pedophilia.¹³¹

Cimbolic, Wise, Rossetti, and Safer reported that 50 percent of Catholics surveyed said their commitment to the church had been weakened by reports of Catholic clergy sexually abusing children and that this had caused more losses for the church than any other issue. Also, Catholics believe their church was not doing enough to solve the problem.¹³² The church's existing code of canon law says that any priest who has a sexual relationship with someone under the age of eighteen "must be punished with just punishments, not excluding expulsion from the clerical state." Extensive findings from January 5 to April 25, 2002 indicated that this was rarely enforced.

The U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops, which met in Dallas, Texas, June 13–15, 2002, voted 339 to thirteen for the "Charter for the Protection of Children and Young People," with seventeen articles increasing the penalties for priests who sexually abuse young people and reporting them to the civil authorities. The media response was mixed, and many people who had been molested spoke out against it in spite of many of them receiving huge sums of money from the church to keep them quiet. The Roman Catholic Church was not the only denomination to find sexual problems: A South Carolina Baptist minister was sentenced to sixty years in prison for sexually abusing twenty-three children; a New Hampshire Assemblies of God youth pastor was charged with child molestation; and a California Lutheran senior pastor was in jail for molesting two brothers, ages nine and eleven.

Evidently, belief in the Bible and a life devoted to daily prayer are not enough to keep pastors free from the sin of pedophilia. Nor is it apparent that celibacy, as practiced by the Catholic priests at fault because marriage of a plethora of protestant pastors has not prevented them from molesting children. We must return to the castration treatment as advised by Jesus in Matthew 19:12 if we are to stop pedophilic religious leaders from molesting children.

The great distance in social status between the pedophile and the priest serves to accentuate the shock and horror of the faithful laity. The stark contrast between the shining white, holy figure dressed in rich vestments of the priest—attended by organ music, angelic choirs, and dramatic pageantry in ornate cathedrals, churches, and monasteries—and the figure of the priest as a child molester forcing himself by authority and superior strength on a boy is too much. It is an ultimate revulsion and, perforce, induces many to leave their church. Millions have removed themselves, and many churches are closing all across the country. Crime increases in many who suffer the loss of their religious faith, and we frequently see this result in our crime statistics. This must not be allowed to continue. There are several very efficient tests by which the

¹³¹ "Bishop Resigns After Admitting to Molestation Charges," Northwest Florida Daily News (June 3, 1998): 6B.

¹³² P. Cimbolic, R. A. Wise, S. Rossetti, and M. Safer, "Development of a Combined Objective Ephebophile Scale," *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity* 6, no. 3 (1999): 254.

fixated pedophile can be detected. Our priesthood must be tested and the pedophiles defrocked or allowed castration.

Several theories have been used to attempt to explain why men molest children. Araj and Finkelhor reviewed four categories: emotional congruence, sexual arousal, blockage, and disinhibition. Emotional congruence refers to power perpetrators can feel in sexually abusing children. The authors conclude that empirical support for this theory is inconclusive. The sexual arousal theory states that sexual feelings toward children are strengthened by repetition, and an impressive array of experimental research does support this theory. The blockage theory suggests that men turn to children when they can't engage in sexual relations with adults. The researchers found that the evidence supporting this notion is weak. Disinhibition refers to the effects of alcohol and other drugs. Thirty to forty percent of pedophiles reported use of alcohol, but little evidence supports the idea that pedophiles suffer from disorders of weak impulse.¹³³

Since about 1985, on the biological level, a body of information has been assembled that suggests there are brain and endocrine differences in pedophiles. Langevin demonstrated through CT brain scans that the temporal and anterior horns of pedophiles' brains were dilated.¹³⁴ The asymmetry and smaller brain areas on the left frontal and temporal areas in pedophiles is in agreement with the left temporal dilation and suggests a distortion of the cortex in this area.¹³⁵ Langevin noted less dense tissue in the left frontal temporal area.¹³⁶

Langevin also reported that the endocrine system of pedophiles differs from that of androphiles and controls. Pedophiles show abnormalities in the hypothalamic-pituitary-gonadal axis with abnormal levels of testosterone, luteinizing hormone, and follicle-stimulating hormone, as well as hypersecretion of luteinizing hormone compared to controls.¹³⁷

The ability of adults immediately to recall childhood sexual abuse was more deeply considered in 1993 with the sensational accusation of the nation's second highest-ranking Roman Catholic, Cardinal Joseph Bernardin. A thirty-four-year-old man claimed that the cardinal had sodomized him at age sixteen. TV personalities Oprah Winfrey, Natalie Jackson, and Roseanne Barr all reported recovered memories of childhood sexual abuse by their parents in the 1990s. The increase showed more such cases reported between 1993 and 1998 than had been reported in the previous fifty years, according to Dr. Ian Gotlib, Director of Psychology at Northwestern

¹³³ S. Araj and D. Finkelhor, "Explanations of Pedophilia: Review of Empirical Research," *Bulletin of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law* 13 (1985): 17-37.

¹³⁴ R. Langevin, G. Wortzman, P. Wright, and L. Handy, "Studies of Brain Damage and Dysfunction in Sex Offenders," *Annals of Sex Research* 2 (1989): 163-179.

¹³⁵ P. Wright, J. Nobrega, and R. Langevin, "Brain Density and Symmetry in Pedophilic and Sexually Aggressive Offenders," *Annals of Sex Research* 3, no. 3 (1990).

¹³⁶ R. Langevin, "A Comparison of Neuroendocrine and Genetic Factors in Homosexuality and Pedophilia," *Annals of Sex Research* 6, no. 1 (1993): 74.

¹³⁷ *Ibid.*

University.¹³⁸ “No exact numbers exist, but at least 300 lawsuits involving formerly repressed memories—mainly sexual abuse—have been filed.”¹³⁹ Some experts who oppose hypnosis and other techniques argue that these therapies are likely to create memories of nonexistent events. On the other hand, researchers have shown that memories of actual events can be repressed if the memories are too painful. Such repression is a natural survival technique in which the brain dissociates exceptionally harmful information until it can be safely dealt with.

Americans are at fever pitch over child sexual abuse these days. We haven’t done very well at preventing it, but we’re frantic to root it out and stomp it to death no matter where it lurks—or doesn’t. Woody Allen is accused, day-care teachers are jailed, and women go on TV to describe their latest memories of childhood victimization. Ellie Nesler, forty, pulled out a gun in a Jamestown, California, courtroom and shot the man accused of abusing her son and three other boys. When she was arraigned on murder charges, dozens of demonstrators showed up waving “FREE ELLIE” bumper stickers. Sometimes, amid all the noise, real child abusers are identified and convicted. But all too often, critics charge, the evidence is flimsy, and the pursuit is maniacal.¹⁴⁰

On September 2, 1998, police in the United States and eleven other countries raided the homes of suspected pedophiles, arresting more than 100 people in one of the largest efforts ever to break an Internet child pornography ring. The British National Crime Squad coordinated the pre-dawn raids as part of a five-month investigation into the Wonderland Club, which exchanged pornographic pictures of children, as young as two, on the Internet. Police found a database with more than 100,000 pornographic photographs of naked boys and girls. The raids took place in communities on three continents—Australia, Austria, Belgium, Britain, Finland, France, Germany, Italy, Norway, Portugal, Sweden, and the United States.¹⁴¹

“As many of you know, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) was founded and is now directed by my mother, Pamela Freyd. I will speak about a pattern of behavior my parents have exhibited toward me in my childhood and continuing into the present: a pattern of boundary violation, a pattern of invasion and control, a pattern of inappropriate and unwanted sexualization, a pattern of family and relationship dysfunction, and a pattern of intimidation and manipulation.”¹⁴² In the above quote and in several other major articles—*Science News* (September 18, 1993), *Time* (November 29, 1993), *US News and World Report* (November 29, 1993)—arguments

¹³⁸ “Long-Repressed Memories of Abuse Hard to Prove, Disprove, Experts Say,” *Pensacola News Journal* (November 14, 1993): 2A.

¹³⁹ B. Bower, “Sudden Recall—Adult Memories of Child Abuse Spark a Heated Debate,” *Science News*, 144 (1993): 184.

¹⁴⁰ “Rush to Judgement,” *Newsweek* (April 19, 1993): 54.

¹⁴¹ “Police Target Dozens of Pedophiles in Raids,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (September 3, 1998): 8B.

¹⁴² “Personal Perspectives on the Delayed Memory Debate,” *Family Violence and Sexual Assault Bulletin* 9, no. 3 (1993): 28.

go back and forth with unprecedented fury before the public. The emotions evoked by child sexual molestation reached new heights.

Yet another milestone child molestation case was settled on November 19, 1993, when a jury acquitted a former Sunday school male teacher of charges that he raped, sodomized, and tortured nine young children. After seven months of graphic testimony, the Superior Court jury in San Diego, California, sided with Dale Akiki. The thirty-six-year-old Akiki had been charged with thirty-five counts in what was the longest trial in the history of the county. The youngsters were three and four years old at the time of their alleged abuse in 1988 and 1989. The verdict had broad implications for sexual abuse cases where the memories of very young children are called into question. Akiki's supporters argued that parents and therapists had brainwashed the children through months of suggestive questioning. "These therapists really took a psychological rubber hose to these kids," defense lawyer Kathleen Coyne told the jurors.¹⁴³ Christ's guidance concerning child molestation is repeated three times in His own words as reported by the Apostles Matthew (18:3–10), Mark (9:42–48), and Luke (17:2). In Mark's version Christ said:

If any of you put a stumbling block before one of these little ones who believe in me, it would be better for you if a great millstone were hung around your neck and you were thrown into the sea. If your hand causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life maimed than to have two hands and go to hell, to the unquenchable fire. And if your foot causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life lame than to have two feet and to be thrown into hell. And if your eye causes you to stumble, tear it out; it is better to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than to have two eyes and be thrown into hell, where the worm never dies, and the fire is never quenched.

Lloyd deMause spent much of his twenty-year scholarly life examining primary historical sources that reveal the extent of child abuse down the pages of history. He states that:

Adequate parenting is a late historical achievement, and most countries in the world continue to severely abuse most children even today. Even in America, about half of all children are sexually molested, and the rates are even higher in non-Western nations. The traumatic effects of this widespread abuse are the source of the periodic wars and social violence that have been the hallmark of mankind until now.¹⁴⁴

¹⁴³ "Jurors Find Former Sunday School Teacher Innocent of Molesting Children," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (November 20, 1993): 8A.

¹⁴⁴ L. deMause, "The History of Child Abuse," *Journal of Sexual Addiction* 1, no. 1 (1994): 77

The 1988 National Incidence Study of Missing, Abducted, Runaway, or Throwaway Children (NISMA¹⁴⁵) estimated that each year, 446,700 children ran away from households and 12,800 children ran away from juvenile facilities. It is estimated that from 25 to 80 percent of all runaways are sexually abused. Runaways, particularly chronic runaways, are at higher risk for their physical and sexual victimization, as well as substance abuse, sexually transmitted diseases, unintended pregnancies, violence, and suicide.¹⁴⁵

Still other indications of the seriousness of the problem of pedophiles preying on children were the presidential signing of Megan's Law on May 17, 1996, and the First World Congress Against Commercial Exploitation of Children on August 28, 1996. Megan's Law was named for seven-year-old Megan Kanka who was raped and murdered by a convicted pedophile who had been released from prison before moving in across the street from her home. The law provided that states must notify a community when a released sex offender moves into the neighborhood. As of August 21, 2000, there were approximately 320,000 sex offenders registered in the fifty states. After about eight years of experience with public notification of released sex offenders, the State of Washington found that there was very little impact on the likelihood that a convicted sex offender would strike again. In the period of time before the state's Megan Law, 22 percent of sex offenders went out and did it again. Since the law went into effect, the number discouragingly hardly budged—it was 19 percent.

The World Congress of 130 countries targeted the multibillion-dollar child pornography industry management in Stockholm, Sweden, in 1996, and drafted a new agenda calling for tougher criminal penalties against child prostitution and pornography. The Swedish prime minister told the opening session of the five-day conference that child abuse was the “most brutal, the most savage and disgusting category of crime,” and was increasing around the world. In the United States, the cost of incarcerating pedophiles was more than two billion dollars in 1990 alone.¹⁴⁶

In July 2000, the naked body of an eight-year-old girl, Sarah Payne, was found in a South England field two weeks after she disappeared. Britain's best-selling Sunday newspaper, the News of the World, decided this “proved police monitoring of these perverts is not enough” and launched a campaign to “name and shame” all of the country's 110,000 known child sex offenders in a new “Sarah's Law”—the equivalent of Megan's Law in the United States. For three weeks, the tabloid published the names, addresses, and photos of eighty convicted child sex offenders. Across Britain, outbreaks of vigilantism erupted, during which homes and cars were vandalized and innocent families mistakenly identified and forced to move. Houses were stoned in Portsmouth, cars were burned, and marchers carried “Don't House Them Hang Them” signs. Pediatrician Dr.

¹⁴⁵ Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention Program, “Notice of the Fiscal Year 1998 Missing and Exploited Children's Program,” part III, Federal Register 3, no. 33 (February 19, 1998): Notices, 8538-8539.

¹⁴⁶ J. M. W. Bradford, “The Treatment of Sexual Deviation Using a Pharmacological Approach,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 3 (2000): 248.

Yvette Cloete fled her home after her windows and front door were spray painted with the word paedo—an abbreviation of the British spelling of pedophile. The vigilantes did not recognize the difference between the words pediatrician (a doctor who is committed to helping children) and paedophile (a person who sexually molests children).¹⁴⁷

Graupner¹⁴⁸ researched the criminal laws around the world and found that the “age of consent” for sexual relations with children varied widely from age twelve in two countries to twenty-one in one country with the majority (90 percent) being below the age of eighteen.

The Juvenile Justice Bulletin of January 2001 reported that after a steady increase in substantiated cases over fifteen years (1977 to 1992), national data showed that substantiated cases of child sexual abuse have been decreasing since about 1992. The peak recorded 149,800 cases in 1992, dwindling to 103,600 cases in 1998, a decline of 31 percent. For most states, the decline was gradual rather than abrupt and occurred over several years.

I. Homosexuality

Homosexuality is sexuality between adults of the same gender. The word comes from the Greek word homo, meaning “same,” rather than the Latin word homo, meaning “man.” Other words people use include: pervert, sodomite, invert, Uranian, fag, faggot, homo, queer, fairy, pansy, buttercup, lily, painted Willie, queen, bugger, corn holer, and gay. This last term had been used to describe homosexuals in France but isn’t anymore because the French word gai, in addition to meaning “merry” and “carefree,” also had connotations of carelessness and moral laxness. Homosexuals in America generally prefer the use of the term gay to any of the others. Female homosexuals are called lesbians, and their sex acts mostly come under the term tribadism.

In addition to being endowed with sexual desires directed wholly or in part toward members of the same sex, male homosexuals frequently possess a large penis, hairless chest, soft skin, broad hips, breasts, and a fine head of hair. Besides these physical traits, there are sometimes feminine social characteristics such as passivity, effeminateness, and lack of perseverance, but these are by no means universal. The old belief that a homosexual man could be recognized by his mincing walk or limp wrist has been eroded away in recent years by the emergence of virtually every physical, ethnic, and socioeconomic type of homosexual person imaginable.

Up to 1973, the American Psychiatric and Psychological Associations had classified homosexuality as a mental disorder, but then they changed the classification to “char-

¹⁴⁷ Malcolm Dean, “Tabloid Campaign Forces UK to Reconsider Sex-Offense Laws,” *The Lancet* 356 (August 26, 2000): 745.

¹⁴⁸ Helmut Graupner, “Sexual Consent: The Criminal Laws in Europe and Overseas,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 29, no. 5 (2000): 415–461. Herr Graupner is president of the Austrian lesbian and gay rights organization Rechtskommittee LAMBDA (RKL).

acter disorder” and then, after heavy pressure from homosexual activists led by Robert Spitzer, PhD, a Columbia University psychology professor, deleted it entirely from the DSM III diagnostic criteria (Ronald Bayer, *Homosexuality and American Psychiatry*). In 1974, the American Psychiatric Association dropped its definition of homosexuality as a “sexual deviation.” The World Health Organization deleted homosexuality from its international classification of diseases in 1993, and the United Nations held that a total ban on homosexual behavior violates the right to privacy in 1994.¹⁴⁹

Today, there are still several genetic, hormonal, psychodynamic, and other explanations for the existence of homosexuality. There is a long history of discussions on whether homosexuality is primarily caused by biological factors or sociological ones. Since about 1970, a significant body of evidence has been collected to support a hormonal theory of etiology. Masters and Johnson cautiously observed that “... We must maintain an intellectually open stance acknowledging that at least in some instances ... hormonal predispositions may interact with social and environmental factors to lead toward a homosexual orientation.”¹⁵⁰

Ellis and Ames reviewed the literature and concluded that complex combinations of genetic, hormonal, neurological, and environmental factors, operating principally between the second and fifth month of fetal life, while the brain was being formed, determined what the ultimate sexual orientation of the individual would be.¹⁵¹ Dr. Richard Pillard, psychiatrist and researcher at Boston University, became interested to see if homosexuality ran in families because he was gay himself and several others in his family also were. He found that gay men had significantly more gay brothers than straight men did. J. Michael Bailey, a psychologist at Northeastern University, found that 52 percent of identical twins of gay men were gay and 22 percent of gay men’s fraternal twins were gay. The February 2002 *Archives of Sexual Behavior* published an article that showed that each additional older brother increased the odds of homosexuality by about 33 percent. By 2001, the genes for male homosexuality had been located. Many sociologists still maintain, however, that homosexuality is mostly a learned behavior and that “practice makes pervert,” or that homosexual men had dominant mothers and weak fathers, or that they had some traumatic sexual experiences with women, which made them fear getting involved with women.

An article by Cornell University medical researchers, published in the May 1979 issue of *New England Journal of Medicine*, pointed to the living proof of the hormonal contribution to homosexuality in truly hermaphroditic persons born with both male and female sex organs who are attracted to both sexes. This occurs about once in 14,000 births, but pseudohermaphrodites with lesser degrees of male and female characteristics occur about once in every 200 births.

¹⁴⁹ Graupner, “Sexual Consent,” 426.

¹⁵⁰ W. Masters and V. Johnson, *Homosexuality in Perspective* (Boston: Little, Brown and Co, 1979), 411.

¹⁵¹ L. Ellis and A. Ames, “Neurohormonal Functioning and Sexual Orientation,” *Psychological Bulletin* 101, no. 2 (1987): 233–258.

Dr. John Money lists seven varieties of hermaphroditism as follows: 1) Female pseudohermaphrodites with hyperadrenocorticism who usually have almost normal female external genitals but with slight to medium enlargement of the clitoris. 2) Female pseudohermaphrodites with phallus, normal ovaries, and normal Muellerian structures who have a penis-like clitoris with a urethra serving as an auxiliary urinary outlet. 3) True hermaphrodites with both ovarian and testicular tissue with either one or two ovitestis or one ovary and one testis with diverse degrees of ambiguity of genitalia. 4) Male pseudohermaphrodites with well-differentiated Muellerian organs. The penis may be fully formed with urethra, or it may be hypospadiac; one or both testes may be cryptorchid, or one testis may be atrophic. Pubertal development is almost always masculine, sometimes rather eunuchoid. 5) Simulant females with feminizing testes in whom the external genital appearance is completely female. The vagina is a blind pouch, however, and menses do not occur. 6) Cryptorchid hypospadiac males with feminizing testes are similar to the above type except that phallus is larger and pubertal development is more completely female. 7) Cryptorchid hypospadiac males have not historically been classified as hermaphrodites unless the hypospadias is extreme, the scrotum bifid, and the testes undescended. The phallus may be only slightly larger than a clitoris. As with many of other type of hermaphrodites, plural incidence within a family may occur.¹⁵²

The Kinsey Institute for Sex Research at Bloomington, Indiana, has defined anyone who has had six or more same-sex experiences as a homosexual. On that basis, they found that some 10 percent of U.S. males qualify as homosexual. In 1988, it was estimated that there were 11 million of these deviants in the United States. Gay leaders have estimated that only about 1 percent of them are “out of the closet,” and the remainder are known only to themselves and perhaps a few trusted friends.¹⁵³ Homosexual women, called “lesbians,” or, if they have an obviously mannish appearance, “dykes,” are thought to account for about 5 percent of American women. In one report, 38 percent of the lesbians tested had a higher level of testosterone in the blood than did heterosexual women.¹⁵⁴

By mid-1993, it had become difficult for the average American to tell fact from fiction concerning the prevalence of homosexuality. We had been astonished enough in 1964 to learn of Kinsey’s 10 percent figure—this figure almost reached 12.5 percent of the black population. Homosexuals used this figure to cast themselves in the role of another oppressed minority, a minority that should have the same civil rights as those granted the black people. By 1992, homosexuals were successful in getting about half of the states to repeal their anti-sodomy statutes, and by mid-1993, eight states had passed civil rights laws protecting gays from discrimination in housing, jobs, and medical care.

¹⁵² J. Money, *Venuses Penuses* (Prometheus Books, 1989), 135–136.

¹⁵³ “How Gay Is Gay? Homosexuality in America,” *Time* (April 23, 1979): 72.

¹⁵⁴ *Psychology Today* (February 1978): 106.

Suddenly, several studies emerged that showed that only 1 to 3 percent of the population claimed to be exclusively homosexual. Surveys in Canada, Britain, France, and by the Guttmacher Institute in the United States found that only 1 percent of the total male population was practicing an exclusively homosexual lifestyle, although some 6 percent had at least one homosexual experience. The U.S. Census Bureau reported a 2 to 3 percent maximum figure for the male population, and if statistics for females were included, only 1.5 percent of the total U.S. population was homosexual. The 1964 Kinsey 10 percent figure was found to be flawed for the general population because it had been drawn mostly from the prison inmate population. Despite these figures, the *Time Almanac* 2000, page 363, said: "There may well be more openly gay men and women in America now than in any other country at any other time in history. The sexual revolution, gay visibility in the media, and the reckonings forced by AIDS—there are a number of reasons for this emergence." In the year 2000, there were about two dozen gay TV characters prominently featured in several prime-time shows.

The front pages of many of the nation's newspapers on August 30, 1991, announced another discovery of a possible biological cause of homosexuality. Neuroscientist Simon LeVay of the Salk Institute for Biological Studies in San Diego, California, found that a segment of the hypothalamus no larger than a grain of sand, called the Interstitial Nuclei of the Anterior Hypothalamus (INAH 3), is only half as large in homosexual men as it is in heterosexual men. Dr. LeVay, who admitted that he was gay himself on national television in January 1992, had obtained brain tissue from forty-one people who had died. Nineteen were from homosexual men who had died of AIDS, sixteen were from presumed heterosexual men (six of whom had also died of AIDS), and six were from presumed heterosexual women. "The significance is that it indicates that we can study this aspect of human nature—sexual orientation—at a biological level with biological tools rather than leaving it to psychiatrists," said LeVay. Neurologist Dennis Landis, of Case Western Reserve University in Cleveland, Ohio, also was quoted as saying that this "would begin to suggest why male homosexuality is present in most human populations, despite cultural constraints. It suggests that it's a biological phenomenon."

Intersexuality has long been observed in animals and birds. In cattle, it is called "freemartinism." Twins in cattle may consist of a male and an intersexual calf known as a freemartin. In the freemartin, the external genitalia may be female or rudimentary male with small testicles, and its behavior may be primarily that of the typical female. A February 2002 *Archives of Sexual Behavior* study of sheep found 6 to 10 percent of range-bred rams preferred same-sex partners, and female Japanese macaques in some groups preferred same-sex partners. A similar phenomenon has been observed in birds. There is one case on record of a chicken that had reputedly been the mother of many offspring before she suffered tuberculosis, which destroyed her ovaries. The chicken

underwent gender reversal and eventually became a fertile rooster who fathered two chickens.¹⁵⁵

Another portion of the brain that has been linked to sexual orientation is the area of the anterior commissure, with heterosexual men having a smaller anterior commissure than those who are not heterosexual.¹⁵⁶

Sandra Whittelton of the McMaster University in Hamilton, Ontario, Canada, has found that more homosexual women are left-handed than heterosexual women. Others have made the same observation among men. Since hand preference may be determined in part by the influence of sex hormones on the brain during gestation, Whittelton believes these early hormonal influences could also play a role in sexual orientation. Animal studies also provide good evidence for a biological basis of sexual orientation. Roger Gorski, a neuroendocrinologist at UCLA, California, has been able to produce male rodents that demonstrate female behavior resulting from careful manipulation of hormone levels in newborn rats.

Dr. June Reinisch of the Kinsey Institute for Research in Sex, Gender, and Reproduction at Indiana University, Terre Haute, Indiana, has also studied hemispheric laterality and its relationship to understanding sexual differentiation in the human brain. She convincingly demonstrates that mothers who were exposed to diethylstilbestrol, a synthetic estrogen, during gestation produced babies with reduced laterality and lowered spatial ability.¹⁵⁷ Dr. Reinisch also mentions several other researchers who have made similar findings that tend to support the concept of biological causes of homosexuality.¹⁵⁸¹⁵⁹¹⁶⁰ Dr. John Money is another scientist who acknowledges the prenatal hormonal etiology of homosexuality, but he also emphasizes the importance of the social and psychological causes. Still more light was shed on the hormonal causes of gender dichotomies by Sharpe and Skakkebaek, who found a correlation between disorders of the development of the male reproductive tract and exposure to prenatal estrogen.¹⁶¹ They pointed out that the increases in reproductive tract disorders in the past fifty years have coincided with changes in human exposure to estrogen. Sharpe and Skakkebaek list these as: endogenous, synthetic, plants, other dietary sources, and

¹⁵⁵ Encyclopedia Britannica (1968), 20:291c.

¹⁵⁶ L. Allen and R. A. Gorski, "Sexual Orientation and the Size of the Anterior Commissure in the Human Brain," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences USA* 89 (1992): 7199-7202.

¹⁵⁷ J. Reinisch and S. Sanders, "Effects of Prenatal Exposure to Diethylstilbestrol (DES) on Hemispheric Laterality and Spatial Ability in Human Males," *Hormones and Behavior* 26, no.1 (1992): 62-75.

¹⁵⁸ M. Hines, P. Alsum, R. Gorski, and R. Goy, "Prenatal Exposure to Estrogen Masculinizes and Defeminizes Behavior in the Guinea Pig," abstract, *Social Neuroscience* 8 (1982): 196.

¹⁵⁹ P. Kester, R. Green, S. J. Finch, and K. Williams, "Prenatal Female Hormone Administration and Psychosexual Development in Human Males," *Psychoneuroendocrinology* 5 (1980): 269-285.

¹⁶⁰ R. J. Stillman, "In Utero Exposure to Diethylstilbestrol: Adverse Effects on Reproductive Tract and Reproductive Performance in Male and Female Offspring," *American Journal Obstet. Gynecol* 142 (1982): 905-921.

¹⁶¹ R. Sharpe and N. Skakkebaek, "Are Oestrogen Involved in Falling Sperm Counts and Disorders of the Male Reproductive Tract?" *The Lancet* 341 (1993): 1392-1395.

environmental estrogenic chemicals. It is quite possible that these same gender benders could also have had an influence on increasing the population of male homosexuals, transsexuals, and transvestites. Under endogenous sources of estrogen, Sharpe and Skakkebaek list a low-fiber diet as possibly increasing the recycling of unexcreted estrogen in pregnant women as well as obesity, which can increase bioavailable estrogen by decreasing secretion of SHBG by the liver. Synthetic hormones come from oral contraceptives, which can also get into the drinking water supply, and anabolic estrogen use in livestock. Plant sources include soya. Other dietary sources include cow's milk and dairy products. Environmental chemicals include dichlorodiphenyl trichloromethane, polychlorinated biphenyl, gas engine combustion products, polluted rainwater, drugs passed on through, and breast milk. Five medical professors responded to the Sharpe and Skakkebaek "a sea of estrogen" article five weeks later, with commentary about additional possible sources of estrogens besides those listed in the original article. These included antiestrogenic compounds in the environment, as well as additional diseases and syndromes that would expose the fetus to estrogens: alcoholism, Alzheimer's disease, schizophrenia, and Klinefelter, Turner, and Prader-Wili syndromes.¹⁶² The negative public health consequences of exogenous estrogen could be enormous and plainly merits more study.

Another study, released at the height of the gays in the military controversy, was published July 16, 1993, in the *Science* journal and provided new evidence that male homosexuality can be inherited. Dean Hamer of the National Cancer Institute in Washington said, "This is the strongest evidence to date that there is an important genetic component to sexual orientation." Hamer found the same pattern variations in the X chromosome in thirty-three sets out of forty sets of homosexual brothers, but he emphasized that his study did not conclusively prove that this gene causes homosexuality. Many factors may be involved, he said. "There also could be another gene on some other chromosome. Or it could be that there was some other physical or biochemical factor involved. Or there could be some other non-biological factors related to life experiences or environment or upbringing." One magazine article told of DNA transplant experiments with male fruit flies published in that week's *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* by Odenwald and Zhang that demonstrated that one particular gene produced homosexual behavior.¹⁶³ Still another published scientific study outlined the genetics of sexual determination.¹⁶⁴

Three convincing articles appeared in early 1998 that further defined the biological correlations of homosexuality. Blanchard reviewed nearly sixty years of research indi-

¹⁶² *The Lancet* (July 10, 1993): 123-126.

¹⁶³ "Search for a Gay Gene," *Time* (June 12, 1995): 60.

¹⁶⁴ "Sharing the Genes that Divide the Sexes for Mammals," *Science* 269 (September 29, 1995): 1824-1825. Also, E. M. Miller, "Homosexuality, Birth Order, and Evolution," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 29, no.1 (2000): 1.

cating that birth order is one cause of male homosexuality.¹⁶⁵ LaLumiere et al. showed it was the last born of a series of boys, not girls, that was most likely to become homosexual and even extended the hypothesis that similar life circumstances could help explain the sexual preferences of child molesters and rapists.¹⁶⁶ Wegesin explained that “high concentrations of androgens are required during the period of sexual differentiation in the brain to masculinize the neural substrates relevant to sexual orientation and neurocognitive function.”¹⁶⁷ “Without the masculinizing effects of androgenic hormones, a female-typed neural substrate predominates.” Blanchard published additional articles in the September 2001 and May 2002 issues of *Hormones and Behavior* journal that explained in more detail the impacts of family birth order on the development of male homosexuality.

Still, more evidence of a biological basis for homosexuality was published March 30, 2000 in the *Nature* journal. A study of finger lengths of homosexual men and lesbian women in the San Francisco area showed that the men’s and women’s index fingers were shorter than their ring fingers. Another study in the December 2002 journal *Hormones and Behavior* showed that this pattern was different in homosexual men and women than heterosexuals. The scientists concluded that higher testosterone produces this and many of the other sex differences including lesbianism in women.¹⁶⁸

Members of the gay community said the new study could help change the homosexuality perception. “It may help people look at this as a genetic issue, that it is natural and it involves no sort of choice at all,” said George Neighbors of the Federation of Parents and Friends of Lesbians and Gays in Washington. “If you believe in God or nature, that’s what homosexuality develops from.” But he said the finding could also pose a threat to homosexuals. Neighbors said some gays fear that if a biological basis for homosexuality is found, there may be some people who view it as an opportunity to medically change the sexual orientation. “Is this going to lead people to look for a cure for homosexuality or lead people to manipulate the gene so that it doesn’t exist anymore?” he asked.¹⁶⁹

Another consideration arises: If there is a genetic propensity for homosexuality, is it likely that it will increase in the population? The answer appears to be yes, since there does seem to be an increase in its prevalence at the present time and also an increase in the whole population. Homosexual genes may be linked to increased sexual drive,

¹⁶⁵ R. Blanchard, “Birth Order and Sibling Sex Ratio in Homosexual Versus Heterosexual Males and Females,” *Annual Review of Sex Research* VIII (1997): 27–67.

¹⁶⁶ M. LaLumiere, G. Harris, V. Quinsey, and M. Rice, “Sexual Deviance and Number of Older Brothers Among Sexual Offenders,” *Sexual Abuse* 10, no. 1 (1998): 5–15.

¹⁶⁷ D. Wegesin, “A Neuropsychologic Profile of Homosexual and Heterosexual Men and Women,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 27, no. 1 (1998): 91–108.

¹⁶⁸ “Study Puts Finger on Gay Traits,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 30, 2000): B1.

¹⁶⁹ *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (July 16, 1993): 4A.

perfectionistic performance, perceived personable attractiveness, and cohesiveness as a group—qualities that would aid in heterosexual reproduction.¹⁷⁰

The scientific evidence that homosexuality is primarily a biological phenomenon has resulted in openly gay behavior and acceptance, increases in the behavior, and progression to more outrageous (formerly suppressed) behavior. After all, so the reasoning goes, if this behavior is innate—inherent in their hormones and brain—why should it be prosecuted? Many gays feel that their homosexual behavior should be condoned for this reason. If they are programmed for constant gay sex, it is comparable to a goat butting or a dog biting or a snake striking: It is a natural behavior; you can't blame them for it. They should have rights, civil rights, duly recognized in the law of the land to this natural behavior.

Opposed to this view is the realization that this behavior spreads disease, lowers morality, often avalanches to greater promiscuity, and frequently leads to more serious crimes. The measurable damage to public health quality even now is a national calamity, making the castration treatment a viable option. Voluminous scientific evidence has shown that homosexuality is biologically caused, so a biological solution is in order. The recent evidence of real genetic contributions confirms that the only way to stop its spread is by biological means. The exponential proliferation of homosexuals assures increasing deaths among millions of innocent people. If we really want to stop the AIDS plague and all of the other diseases, such as hepatitis, then we must first consider orchiectomy as a way to stop the unremitting spread of them.

Homosexuals are sometimes classified as active or passive, and anal or oral types. About half of the male homosexuals will generally practice anal intercourse while half practice oral intercourse. Many of these are not anally or orally fixated and will change around on occasion. In any given encounter, the active homosexual is the aggressor, and the passive one will be the receiver of the advances and actions of the active. Often the active is the older person and the passive the younger. When the passive partner is a boy, he is called a “catamite” or “Ganymede,” and the sexual engagement is called “pederasty.” Anal intercourse is called “sodomy” (also “buggery” and “back door”) when performed by a male. The word sodomy is derived from the name of the ancient city of Sodom, which was destroyed, along with the adjacent city of Gomorrah, by the Lord in a rain of sulfur and fire due to the practice of sodomy among other wickednesses sometime prior to 1657 BC (Genesis 19:5–24, Jude 1:4–7). Fellatio is oral stimulation of the penis. Other sex acts indulged in by homosexual men are: masturbation, inter-femoral coitus (inserting the penis between the legs of the partner), and anilingus (anal stimulation by the tongue ... also called “rimming”). In homosexual women, cunnilingus (clitoral stimulation by tongue), tribadism (mutual rubbing together of the vulva), and masturbation by hand or with an artificial penis (called a dildo or consolateur) are the most common sex acts. “Fisting” or “brachioprocticism” (inserting the fist into the rectum or vagina) is another act sometimes employed by homosexuals.

¹⁷⁰ Vivienne Cass, “Homosexuality,” *Encyclopedia of Reproduction* 2 (1998): 643.

Homosexual behavior, particularly sodomy, has been prosecuted nearly everywhere through the ages. It is forbidden by the Bible (Leviticus 18:22, Romans 1:27, 1 Corinthians 6:9–10, and 1 Timothy 1:9–10) and was punished by death for both participants in Old Testament times (Leviticus 20:13) in several different cultures. It is still a death penalty crime in Saudi Arabia. Philo of Alexandria, who died about AD 50 wrote, “Like a bad farmer, the homosexual lets the fertile land lie fallow ... one must proceed ruthlessly against these men ... the effeminate man ... should be killed without hesitation and should not be allowed to live a day ... since he shames himself, his house, his fatherland and the whole human race ... because he pursues unnatural pleasure and for his part works toward the dissolution and depopulation of the cities ... when he destroys his seed” (Philo, “On the Individual Laws” 3, 37–42). Likewise, the Jewish Sibylline Oracles (c. 800 BC) state: “Nor do they hold unholy intercourse with boys, as do the Phoenicians, Egyptians, and Latins ... transgressing the holy law of the immortal God which He ordained. For which cause the Eternal shall impose on all men retribution ... and woes ... pestilence and fearful calamities.”¹⁷¹ In spite of repeated strong condemnations of homosexual behavior in Biblical texts over thousands of years, there are those, like Helminiak, who interpret these venerable words to be much less condemnatory.¹⁷² Today, after more than twenty years of the AIDS plague, which was brought to us by homosexuals,^{173 174 175} I am shocked that such biased writings can find such wide acceptance. We even have books and posters that claim that the Apostle Paul, St. Augustine, King David of the Old Testament, and Susan B. Anthony, among many other notables, were gay.¹⁷⁶ The federal National Endowment for the Arts gave a \$20,000 award to enable the research for this book, which promotes homosexuality.

During the Greek and Roman classical period, homosexuality was not diligently prosecuted, and in Sparta, it was an accepted part of the culture. Nonetheless, in the Byzantine period (c. AD 300–1452), Emperor Justinian once again made it punishable by death or castration in AD 533. Homosexual offenses were punishable by death or castration in England from 1533 to 1861 when life in prison was substituted for capital punishment. By 1991, France, Poland, Denmark, Switzerland, Great Britain, Germany, Norway, Spain, Yugoslavia, and New Zealand had decriminalized many of the forms of homosexual behavior. In some twenty-two countries, including Morocco, homosexuality is still against the law. In India, Nepal, Pakistan, Bangladesh, and Sri Lanka, homosexual sex is punishable by ten years in prison.

¹⁷¹ Sibylline Oracles, Oracle III, 584–606.

¹⁷² D. Helminiak, *What the Bible Really Says About Homosexuality* (San Francisco: Alamo Square Press, 1995).

¹⁷³ G. Antonio, *The AIDS Cover-Up* (San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 1986).

¹⁷⁴ R. Shilts, *And the Band Played On* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1987).

¹⁷⁵ L. J. McNamee and M. D. McNamee, *Aids: The Nation's First Politically Protected Disease* (LaHabra, CA: National Medical Legal Publishing House, 1988).

¹⁷⁶ P. Russell, *The Gay 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Gay Men and Lesbians, Past and Present* (1995).

Homosexuality is considered taboo under Islamic law, with suggested punishments ranging from whipping through death by stoning. On September 18, 2001, a sixteen-year-old Egyptian boy was sentenced to three years imprisonment for alleged homosexual behavior.¹⁷⁷ The first conference of gay men seeking repeal of these laws was forced to meet in a secret location near Bombay.¹⁷⁸ In some countries (notably Rumania, Iran, Cuba, former USSR, and Chile), homosexuals were arrested, beaten, tortured, and put to death, sometimes for simply being considered homosexuals without hard proof that they had acted out their perversity. In the United States, as of September 1993, some twenty-nine states had rescinded their old laws against sodomy. In twenty-one states it was still a crime. Rhode Island, Michigan, Georgia, Idaho, and Tennessee had the harshest criminal penalties ranging from five years to twenty years in prison.¹⁷⁹ Twenty years was also the penalty for armed robbery in the same jurisdictions. By 2003, only thirteen states had laws against sodomy, and they were seldom enforced.

In the 1986 *Bowers v. Hardwick* case, it was decided that homosexuals do not have a constitutional right to engage in sodomy—even in the privacy of their own homes. The Supreme Court upheld the Connecticut sodomy law, which had been on the books since 1662. The American Law Institute, however, continues to argue for the abolition of all laws that legislate against adults involved in consensual sexual acts. The American Psychological Association asked in 1987 for a constitutional amendment that would ban laws against consensual sodomy.¹⁸⁰ On June 26, 2003, the U.S. Supreme Court overturned the Texas anti-sodomy law effectively sweeping away similar laws in other states.

The 1974 Weinberg and Williams poll on the seriousness of homosexuality found that a majority of the respondents thought that only communism and atheism outweighed homosexuality as the greatest threat to the nation. The 1985 National Survey of Crime Severity, however, rated the statement “two persons willingly engage in a homosexual act” at the low figure of 1.3, which was about the same score as the statement “a person has some marijuana for his own use,” received. American gays first openly revolted against the many decades of restrictions on June 27, 1969, at the Stonewall Bar in Greenwich Village, New York. The police were raiding the bar for disturbance of the peace, but the gay crowd attacked them with bottles and sticks. Since this event, homosexuals have loudly demanded respect for their activities. Each year on the anniversary of the Stonewall Bar incident, mammoth parades and celebrations are held in New York and San Francisco to celebrate Gay Pride Day. The parades have featured nude walkers, signs proclaiming “dykes and tykes,” and a float with a giant crucifix in a garbage pail. “Ignorance and intolerance taught here” banners unfurled on St. Patrick’s cathedral steps as local politicians marched arm in arm with gay rights activists. Gay organizations demonstrate at all important political conventions. They

¹⁷⁷ “Torture, Ill-treatment, and Sexual Identity,” *The Lancet* 358 (December 1, 2001): 1899.

¹⁷⁸ “Activists Protest Law Against Gays,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (January 2, 1995): 6A.

¹⁷⁹ L. Rutledge, *The Gay Book of Lists*, 2nd printing (Boston: Allyson Pub., 1988), 131–135.

¹⁸⁰ P. Cameron, “Homosexuality,” *Psychological Reports* 63 (1988): 255–270.

have a huge quilt embroidered with the names of over 8,000 gays who have died of AIDS, which they frequently spread on the oval near the Capitol in Washington, DC, to elicit public sympathy.

Dennis Altman, in his book *The Homosexualization of America*, points out the changing status of the homosexual population:

Until the end of the sixties, the homosexual in most Western countries, and especially in the United States, was to experience a life that was largely furtive, shameful, and guilt-ridden ... The seventies saw the beginning of the large-scale transition in the status of homosexuality from a deviance or perversion to an alternate life style or a minority ... cast increasingly in the role of the vanguard of social and sexual change, worthy of considerable media attention.

The increasing credence of the hormonal versus the learned behavior theories of the cause of homosexuality has served to alleviate any guilt. After all, if they were born with this trait, they could not stop themselves ... Several worldwide gay organizations have become militantly active in campaigning for more social acceptance: the Gay Liberation Front, the Gay Activist Alliance, the Mattachine Society, the Homophile Society, and others. As of 1984, these organizations had secured passage of legislation forbidding discrimination against gays in jobs and housing in thirty-nine cities and counties. In Colorado, however, in the November 1992 election, voters overturned local gay-rights laws by an amendment to the state law. In reprisal for this, the Los Angeles chapter of the Gay and Lesbian Alliance Against Defamation wrote to more than 250 industry leaders asking them to support a boycott of the state. Joan Rivers, Barbara Streisand, and the National Council for Social Studies canceled plans to spend vacations or have meetings in Colorado as a result.¹⁸¹ On February 21, 1995, the U.S. Supreme Court agreed to decide whether states can forbid laws protecting homosexuals from discrimination, and ruled six to three on May 20, 1996, in a significant victory for gay rights. The new law was a significant victory for gay rights judging that the law was unconstitutional, in that it was based on "animosity" and "imposed a special disability" on homosexuals.

U.S. Representative Dannemeyer has ably traced the politics of homosexuality in his book *Shadow on the Land: Homosexuality in America*.¹⁸² The National Gay and Lesbian Task Force Director, Jeff Levi, sent a questionnaire to all presidential candidates, in 1988, and reported in an "action alert" letter that all of the Democratic candidates had said that as president they would sign the Gay Civil Rights Bill then pending in Congress. George Bush was the only Republican candidate to reply. He

¹⁸¹ "Winter of Discontent," *Newsweek* (December 14, 1992): 45.

¹⁸² W. Dannemeyer, *Shadow on the Land: Homosexuality in America* (San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 1989), 189.

wrote that “no group should have special privileges granted by government.” On August 1, 1990, the head of the Southern Baptist Christian Life Commission wrote to President Bush asking for a meeting to discuss “how your policies coincide with the agenda of the homosexual lobby.” The White House had invited a gay representative to witness Bush’s signing of the Americans with Disabilities Act.¹⁸³ President Bush signed the Ryan White Comprehensive AIDS Resources Act into law on August 18, 1990, providing \$882 million in federal grants to sixteen cities. This was the first law ever enacted to provide money to specific locations to fight a specific disease. Most of the victims of this disease were homosexuals.

In a Newsweek feature article, Turque and others reported that there were thirteen pro-gay speakers who addressed the Democratic National Convention. The audience included 108 openly gay delegates, alternates, and party officials. The article also reported that twenty-one states and 130 municipalities offered gay and lesbian people some form of legal protection against discrimination. Sixty-one openly gay officials have been elected nationwide (congressmen, judges, mayors, and city councilors). The number of gay and lesbian organizations nationwide in 1992 was said to be 1,580.¹⁸⁴

Newspapers, magazines, TV, and radio media were full for the news when the U.S. Supreme Court decided by a six to three vote on June 26, 2003 to strike down a Texas law banning gay sex acts. What gay men and women are doing in the privacy of their bedrooms is their business and not the government’s they said. Two gay men, one young black guy and an older white man, were arrested after police walked in on them in bed having sex in 1998 in Houston, Texas. They were each given a \$200 fine and spent a night in jail for the misdemeanor charge. Up to this time, it was unusual to hear about a gay black man, but the increasing prevalence of black AIDS patients and the cover story of the August 3, 2003 New York Times magazine revealed that gay black men were quite common in certain locations. Finally, what had been a death penalty crime for centuries now became a “protected” behavior in America. What will be the result? More AIDS? More of God’s wrath? More Muslim attacks? Quite likely, in my opinion.

Homosexuality has been frequently associated with other paraphilias such as transvestism, transsexualism, pedophilia, incest, fetishism, bestiality, pornophilia, satyriasis, gender identity disorder, osphresiolagnia, sexual addiction, masochism, and sadism.¹⁸⁵¹⁸⁶ Dr. John Money (Vandalized Lovemaps, 1989) has also documented the greatly increased propensity for homosexuals and bisexuals to fold over their deviance into more serious paraphilias such as autassassinophilia, pedophilia, and bondage.¹⁸⁷ Hazelwood and Dietz studied thirty sadists who had murdered at least 187 persons

¹⁸³ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 10, 1990).

¹⁸⁴ B. Turque, Newsweek (September 14, 1992).

¹⁸⁵ Encyclopedia Britannica (1968). Vol. II, p. 6119.

¹⁸⁶ C. A. Tripp, New York (June 25, 1979).

¹⁸⁷ Sandnabba et al., “Sexual Behavior and Social Adaptation Among Sadomasochistically-oriented Males,” 273–282.

and found that 43 percent had participated in homosexual activity and 25 percent had attacked males exclusively. History also shows that homosexuals commit more serious crimes than heterosexuals. Heliogabalus, Tiberius, Gilles de Rais, John Gacy, and Jeffrey Dahmer are a few of the more infamous homosexuals who mutilated and murdered their victims. Dr. Park Dietz said at Dahmer's sanity trial: "His orgasm is more valuable[to him] than your life."¹⁸⁸ Twenty percent of homosexuals admit to having had sexual contact with animals. Intravenous drug use and alcoholism are much higher among homosexuals than in an average cohort of the same age and sex.¹⁸⁹

Another article repeated what William Bennett, former National Secretary of Education and one of the leading conservative intellectuals, had written and said about homosexuals.¹⁹⁰ He stated that gay men are responsible for up to one-half of all child abuse cases, that they are ten to twenty times more likely to molest children than heterosexuals, that fully half of all sex murderers are homosexuals, and that the average life span of gay men was fifty-three years.

There has been a long-running struggle between gay activists and the Boy Scouts of America over allowing known homosexuals to become leaders, teachers, and guides in the troops of boys. On August 4, 1999, the New Jersey Supreme Court ruled that the organization violated the state's anti-discrimination law by excluding avowed homosexuals from leadership positions. The case involved an assistant scoutmaster ousted because he was also one of the leaders of a gay and lesbian group at Rutgers University. The justices ruled that the government's interest in ending discrimination outweighs the scouts' constitutional claim of freedom of association. This decision was viewed with great alarm by churches and conservative groups, but with victorious rejoicing by militant homosexuals.¹⁹¹ Fortunately for the scouts, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled five to four to overturn the New Jersey ruling on July 5, 2000, and settled this issue.

Weinberg studied S & M for a number of years and found that the gay leather sex scene in most middle-sized cities is much more accessible than the heterosexual S & M subculture.¹⁹² "Gay S & M bars are well known in the gay community ... and are not difficult to enter ... heterosexual sadomasochistic groups are almost invisible ... the largest group of respondents were sadomasochistic gays and bisexuals." His article was heavily dependent on sadomasochistic articles published in homosexual publications.

Research published in November 1995 showed preliminary evidence that transsexuals are like homosexuals in that they may be inherently biologically different after all. A Netherlands' study of six male-to-female transsexuals showed that a tiny structure

¹⁸⁸ R. Hazelwood, P. Dietz, and J. Warren, "The Criminal Sexual Sadist," FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin (February 1992): 17.

¹⁸⁹ "A Special Article on Homosexuality," New England Journal of Medicine 331, no. 14 923-930.

¹⁹⁰ The New Republic, (January 5 and 12, 1998): 15.

¹⁹¹ "Gay-scouts Ruling Raises Religious Questions," Northwest Florida Daily News (August 14, 1999): C1.

¹⁹² T. Weinberg, "Research in Sadomasochism: A Review of Sociological and Social Psychological Literature," Annual Review of Sex Research V (1994): 265-266, 277-278.

deep within a part of the brain that controls sexual function appeared to be more like that type found in women than that found in men. Nature, it would seem, is just as important as nurture in determining how we think and behave as sexual beings.¹⁹³¹⁹⁴

Homosexuals constitute a large percentage of vocal crime victims. A segment of the heterosexual population evidently feels that homosexual behavior is so reprehensible that they see nothing wrong with “beating up on queers.” Nearly half of the homosexual men screened in Philadelphia reported that they had been the victims of violent assaults—about twelve times the national average. Seventy-three percent had been threatened, chased, or had beer cans thrown at them. Gay, lesbian, and bisexual teens are four times more likely to commit suicide than their heterosexual peers.¹⁹⁵

At a well-known homosexual tryst place called The Chimney in Pensacola, Florida, at 2:30 am, June 15, 1991, “Jack” Braun, forty-three, was slugged from behind with a ball bat, pipe, and 2 x 4 by three boys aged seventeen and eighteen. The juveniles had been drinking and purposely set out to do some “queer bashing.” In this case, the man died of his wounds. One of the boys later bragged to a friend, “I got me a fag.” Several feature articles in the newspapers later headlined how much violent attacks send shockwaves of fear through the public consciousness, and psychiatrists were queried about the causes of such “hate” crimes. Dr. Jacob Cruz repeated the theory that homosexuals are targeted because people suspect that they are responsible for the AIDS plague. “AIDS is a very fatal disease, and people are angry this is happening,” said Cruz. Dr. Scott Benson said that people who commit such hate crimes are sadistic and angry. They identify a person who is different and try to dehumanize them.¹⁹⁶ Another theory is that people attack homosexuals because they may see something of the trait in themselves that family and friends despise, and in questioning their own sexuality, they take their fears out on others in the form of violence.

The apparent successes of the gay liberation movement in achieving favorable recognition and treatment have inspired another violent counter-culture. The skinheads exemplify this neo-fascist conservative movement, an organization that first appeared among the working-class youths of England in the early 1970s. This group openly admitted their hostility toward homosexuals and attacked and beat them up in several major confrontations during the 1980s. The Ku Klux Klan (KKK) also objects to rampant homosexuality. David Duke, in his book *My Awakening*, shares data that shows how homosexuals are created through biological forces.

The word homophobia was defined in a book by Weinberg as “the irrational condemnation of homosexuals” and “the dread of being in close quarters with homosexuals.”¹⁹⁷ It has also been defined as “the pathological fear of homosexuality (from the Greek

¹⁹³ “Nature Plus Nurture,” *Newsweek* (November 13, 1995): 72.

¹⁹⁴ C. Gorman, “Trapped in the Body of a Man?” *Time* 146, no. 20 (November 13, 1995): 94–95.

¹⁹⁵ “Gay Students Go to State Legislators for Safer Schools, Discrimination Ban,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (March 14, 2000): 6A.

¹⁹⁶ *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (June 23, 1991): 1.

¹⁹⁷ G. Weinberg, *Society and the Healthy Homosexual* (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1972), VII, 4.

homos, 'same,' and phobos, 'fear')."¹⁹⁸ Some scholars have challenged the utility of the "homophobia" label, and others have used different words to define the phenomenon more accurately—homonegativism, homosexophobia, and homoerotophobia are some of these terms.

Marsiglia mentioned several studies of this trait.¹⁹⁹ He used data from a 1988 national survey of 1,459 male youths, fifteen to nineteen years of age, that showed that 88.9 percent strongly agreed that the thought of men having sex with each other is disgusting, and only 12 percent felt confident that they could befriend a gay person. In this study, it was found that respondents with traditional male role attitudes, a religious fundamentalist orientation, and a parent who had avoided liberal colleges were significantly more likely to express homophobic views. The reaction of hatred, revulsion, and fear of homosexuals by heterosexual men was illustrated by the ancient story of Lot (c. 2050 BC). Lot offered his two virgin daughters to the lustful men of Sodom rather than allow them access to two men whom he was sheltering under his roof (Genesis 19:4–8). Homosexuals use the term homophobia very frequently. They often blame homophobia for much of their misfortune, thoroughly assured that their inclinations are biologically natural.

Another corollary of homonegativism has been observed in the workplace particularly among lesbians—an active hatred, fear, or distrust of the opposite sex. In the California aircraft industry, lesbians who rose to leadership positions because of their innate aggression and strength often would make life difficult for men who were forced to work under their supervision. The dominatrix in a sadomasochistic encounter is another example of these androgenized women—the virilistic female lesbianism, which is usually chronic as a lifestyle.²⁰⁰ Homosexual men sometimes have shown a similar deep-rooted revulsion for women, which can completely disrupt the workplace.

Still another aspect is the heart-rending pain and shame in the family when parents learn that one of their children is homosexual. Their parents reject 26 percent of these homosexuals, and it has been reported that 40 percent become runaways as a result of this rejection.²⁰¹

Most homosexual men are prodigiously promiscuous. Unlike the normal male and female sexual relationship where the woman is naturally far more reticent by nature and conditioning the male hormones drive both gay partners immediately to a constant stream of sex acts. Added to this natural inclination are many facilities that provide them with sexual encounters on demand.

The October 1996 issue of *Genre*, an upscale gay magazine, published the results of its survey of 1,037 readers. Twenty-four percent said they have had more than 100 sex partners. The magazine employees did not quote higher figures in their questions.

¹⁹⁸ Money, *Lovemaps*, 263.

¹⁹⁹ W. Marsiglia, "Attitudes Toward Homosexual Activity and Gays as Friends: A National Survey of Heterosexual 15- to 19-year-old Males," *Journal of Sex Research* 30, no. 1 (1993): 12–17.

²⁰⁰ J. Money, *Handbook of Sexology* (1978).

²⁰¹ Donahue Show (December 23, 1993).

“That’s more than we wanted to know,” they said. The supposedly monogamous couples are still one of the largest groups in the gay community still experiencing an increase in HIV infections. Thirty-nine percent of them thought it was “okay to flirt” with another man. Four percent of the Genre respondents said they had “knowingly lied” about their HIV status. Many of those who said they lied also admitted having over 100 partners. Promiscuously spreading the deadly disease, even a small 4 percent of them probably infected 4,000 others.²⁰² Other articles revealed that some gay men have had “between 2,000 and 3,000 sexual partners.”²⁰³ The Genre studied 250 men who said they have had “more than 100 sex partners,” and many said they’d had at least a thousand. The April 1999 issue of *Playboy* reported that epidemiologists had discovered that the median number of male sexual partners for an HIV-infected man was 1,100.²⁰⁴

Maguen and Armistead²⁰⁵ reported that adolescents between the ages of thirteen and twenty-one account for 25 percent of newly reported HIV infections, and two adolescents become infected with HIV every hour. While adolescents’ infection rates are increasing as a whole, gay and bisexual male adolescents are particularly at risk. In New York City, 9 percent of gay and bisexual men between the ages of eighteen and twenty-four are HIV infected, and in San Francisco (“Sodom by the Sea”), up to 17.9 percent of these young men are infected. In a Houston study, adolescents accounted for 22 percent of all HIV-infected cases, even though only 2 percent reported male-to-male contact. About 10 percent of the males who reported having have sex with males tested HIV-positive.

Coxon and McManus published data from a study of 1,035 gay/bisexual men who recorded their high-risk sexual behavior in a diary between 1987 and 1992. The sex act that carries the highest risk of transmitting the HIV virus, which causes deadly AIDS, is anal intercourse. They found that ejaculation without a condom into the partner’s anus is the rule rather than the exception in gay men’s sexual intercourse (53 percent did so). It was reported by these men that 11.4 percent had eight or more acts of anal intercourse per month, and one individual recorded that he engaged in 104 such acts in a month’s time. Therefore, a mere 2.3 percent of the men are responsible for 23 percent of the acts of anal intercourse. The data thus shows that the sexual activity of even a few such individuals has major epidemiological consequences for the transmission of HIV. Shockingly, Coxon and McManus concluded that HIV-positive men had more sex, more anal sex, and more anal sex to ejaculation than did the HIV-negative men. It’s no wonder that the AIDS plague has lasted so long and has continued to spread. We

²⁰² Lambda Report 5, no. 1 (January/February 1998): 20.

²⁰³ Jon Cohen, “Uninfectable,” *The New Yorker* (July 6, 1998): 32–39.

²⁰⁴ *Playboy* (April 1999): 114.

²⁰⁵ Shira Maguen and Lisa Armistead, “Prevalence of Unprotected Sex and HIV-Antibody Testing Among Gay, Lesbian, and Bisexual Youth,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 2 (2000): 169.

need to identify and restrain these few who do the most anal intercourse, or castrate them so that they will stop spreading the deadly disease.²⁰⁶

Same gender sex is different than that between two different sexes. Homosexuality is easy sex. It is much easier since it is facilitated by a large number of factors: a) Same-sex partners know instinctively and through personal experience what appeals to and pleases the other person. The multiple mysteries of what is exciting and pleasurable to the other one are largely clarified. The cues of sight, smell, and touch are usually much clearer to each because they have the same anatomy, desires, hormones, and milieu. b) The fact that hormones are similar draws both partners together more rapidly, particularly with males because they are both overloaded with testosterone. Testosterone tends to avalanche with sexual activity, sweeping fear and reticence aside in the urge for orgasm. c) There is no fear of pregnancy. d) Less fear, period—fear of the unknown, fear of greater strength, fear caused by strangeness or differences, and many other fear possibilities. There are fewer and fewer laws and conventions in place prohibiting intimate interactions between men. There are many facilities in place to openly serve and encourage same-sex interaction such as gay bars, baths, clubs, steam rooms, gyms, mazes, orgy rooms, glory holes, and certain sports. All sorts of periodicals and publications designed to facilitate same-sex interaction have proliferated. These range from the scientific and erudite to the vulgar and cheap, representing all shades of specializations, perversions, and acts, which were illegal up to 2003.

An article in the Pensacola News Journal described the gay newsletter Out and About, which first came out in 1992.²⁰⁷ This newsletter is for gay vacation travelers—an estimated \$1 billion a year market. Billy Kolber, the editor, said, “Most of the gay guides are extremely sex-oriented,” while Out and About merely notes the “sexual energy” of a place (this means how much of the destination is devoted to sex). There are gay-specific tour operators, cruise lines, accommodations, and resorts that market their business only to gay people. Palm Springs, for example, has thirty gay-targeted guest-houses, which the newsletter describes. The free advertising for this newsletter, which was provided by the news services, publishers, and editors in this article, indicates how widespread in the news media the homosexual influence is.

By the year 2000, technology had advanced greatly, and the homosexual community was quick to take advantage of it. AOL now provides special men-for-men chat rooms. At least 20 percent of AOL’s 21 million subscribers are gay, according to estimates by Internet demographers. That amounts to 4,200,000 gays reaching out for sexual partners through this effective forum. The publisher of a gay magazine was quoted in Time as saying, “It’s changed the world ... If you ask gay men under 25 how they meet

²⁰⁶ P. M. Coxon and T. J. McManus, “How Many Account for How Much? Concentration of High-risk Sexual Behavior Among Gay Men,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 1 (2000): 1–7

²⁰⁷ V. Helbreck (Gannett News Service), “Newsletter Tailored for Gay Travelers” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (January 15, 1995): 5E.

people, I think 99% would say they've met people online, and the vast majority of them would say they use AOL."²⁰⁸

Diseases that spread through gay sex include: the deadly AIDS, syphilis, gonorrhea, herpes, chancre, chlamydia, human papilloma virus, Reiter's syndrome, granuloma inguinal, scabies, and pediculosis pubis. The types of sex acts most frequently indulged in by homosexual males, sodomy and fellatio, tend to result in diseases of their own such as epidermoid, anal cancer, and those involved in the "gay bowel syndrome" including amebiasis, giardiasis, hepatitis B, shigellosis, and oral hairy leukoplakia.

In the year 2001, San Francisco saw a sharp increase in syphilis with the vast majority of cases among gay and bisexual men who had had unprotected sex with multiple partners. As of September 2001, 116 cases had been reported, compared with seventy-one cases reported in all of the year 2000. Ninety-three of the 2001 cases were among gay or bisexual men. The ninety-three infected gay men reported having 1,225 sexual partners, and could identify only 8 percent of them by name.²⁰⁹

Kaposi's sarcoma, which is fatal in some AIDS victims, is almost exclusively confined to homosexual men.²¹⁰ Human Herpesvirus 8 (HHV-8) is one of the main causative agents of Kaposi's sarcoma, and studies in San Francisco have shown that it correlates with the number of years of regular intercourse with men as well as the number of male intercourse partners. Those who had one to five male sex partners in the previous two years were about 22 percent infected, while those who had had more than 250 partners were about 68 percent infected.²¹¹ The average life expectancy of the American male homosexual is only fifty-three years as a result of all these dangers. The average life expectancy of other American males is seventy-two.

Many homosexual men are heavy users of illegal drugs. Several chemical stimulants widely used by gay men include alcohol, marijuana, cocaine, and "poppers" (isobutyl nitrite or amyl nitrate). These drugs significantly lower inhibitions and lead to high-risk sexual practices such as receiving anal ejaculation.²¹² In 1993, another drug snorted by homosexual men in nightclubs was ketamine, referred to as "special K" by the clientele. Many of these men tried this in an attempt to magnify dance floor sensations.²¹³

Cabaj estimated in 1992 that the incidence of substance abuse was approximately 30 percent in the homosexual population, contrasting with 10 to 12 percent in the gen-

²⁰⁸ "Dating on AOL: You've Got Males. The Gay Chat Room," *Time* (February 14, 2000): 74.

²⁰⁹ "San Francisco Sees Increase in Syphilis," *Northwest Florida Daily News* (October 27, 2001): A2.

²¹⁰ *Science*, *Journal of the American Association for the Advancement of Science* 266: 1803.

²¹¹ J. N. Martin, D. E. Ganem, D. H. Osmond, et al., "Sexual Transmission and the Natural History of Human Herpes Virus 8 Infection," *The New England Journal of Medicine* 338, no. 14 (April 2, 1998): 948-954.

²¹² T. Exner, H. Meyer-Bahlburg, and A. Ehrhardt, "Sexual Self-Control as a Mediator of High Risk Sexual Behavior in New York City Cohort of HIV+ and HIV- Gay Men," *Journal of Sex Research*, 29, no. 3 (1992): 389, 400, 403.

²¹³ *Newsweek* (December 6, 1993).

eral population.²¹⁴ Weiss reported details that reveal some of the compulsions among homosexuals as follows:

Methamphetamine use is by far the most dangerous and troublesome of the more recent addictions to have affected the gay community. Known as “the sex drug,” crystal meth is the drug of choice for anonymous sexual activity in bathhouses, sex clubs, and over the phone sex lines. Users describe the drugs’ effects as allowing them to be sexual for 24 to 48 hours at a time without coming down, sleeping, or eating. Safe sex is often not even considered for days at a time. One recovering drug and sex addict stated, “When you take crystal meth, you can have sex continuously for hours, even days ... the sex just goes on forever.”²¹⁵

Molitor, Facer, and Ruiz collected data from 834 California men who had sex with men (MSM) and found that 61.5 percent had been under the influence of drugs or alcohol during sex. Rates for specific drugs were 86.1 percent for alcohol, 53.3 percent for marijuana, 27.7 percent for amphetamines, 17.4 percent for amyl nitrates, 13.8 percent for cocaine, and 6.7 percent for injected drugs. Some of the MSM in the study used the drugs specifically to reduce social inhibitions and heighten sexual pleasure and performance. Such behavior is very dangerous, especially considering the high prevalence of HIV infection found among this population.²¹⁶ Dr. Hans Kubler estimated that over 60 percent of U.S. AIDS patients were homosexual.²¹⁷

It is easy to see why and how many homosexuals have histories, including thousands of anonymous sexual liaisons, which spread disease rapidly and widely. Homosexual men having sex with men were responsible from the beginning for the spread of the AIDS plague in this country and still account for the highest proportion of cases by exposure category (36 percent reported by The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention in 1996). This is in spite of the fact that the number of homosexuals is less than 3 percent of the total U.S. population.

Dannemeyer describes the typical San Francisco bathhouse:

... every conceivable perversity was practiced, but particularly anal intercourse, the most dangerous of all homosexual behaviors. A man would lie naked on his stomach, a can of vegetable shortening beside him, and

²¹⁴ R. P. Cabaj, “Substance Abuse in the Gay and Lesbian Community,” eds. J. H. Lowensen, P. Ruiz, and R. B. Millman, *Substance Abuse: A Comprehensive Textbook*, 2nd ed., (Baltimore: Williams and Wilkins, 1992), 852–860.

²¹⁵ R. Weiss, “Special Populations: Treatment Concerns for Gay Male Sex Addicts,” *Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity* 4, no. 4 (1997): 331–332.

²¹⁶ F. Molitor, M. Facer, and J. Ruiz, “Safer Sex Communication and Unsafe Sexual Behavior Among Young Men Who Have Sex with Men in California,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 4 (1999): 335–343.

²¹⁷ H. Kubler, Ph.D. *Journal of Longevity* 6, no. 9 (2000): 17.

wait for some stranger to enter. He would turn his head and nod, and the stranger would sodomize him. Typically, no conversation would take place and the stranger would quickly leave. Then another would enter, and then another. Such scenes would be taking place almost around the clock.²¹⁸

Homosexual prostitution rings offering athletic young men for hire for sodomy and other gay sexual practices are available. Some of these rings have operated from the homes of governmental officials in Washington, DC, such as that of Massachusetts Congressman Barney Frank. One such homosexual ring was broken in May 1990 in Indianapolis, Indiana, when its organizer, James W. Dayton, died after having sex with a male prostitute. Police found 140 pages of names, addresses, telephone numbers, nude photographs, and correspondence in Dayton's car. These records showed customers in thirty-nine states and Canada, but most of the activity was concentrated in Indiana, Ohio, and Michigan. At least one man killed himself when it was revealed that his name was on the list. Another deputy sheriff in Marion County resigned from his twenty-five-year position as a result of the revelations.²¹⁹

The Vatican's doctrinal congregation issued a directive on October 30, 1986, to all of the Roman Catholic bishops around the world to withdraw their support from any organization that opposes the church's teachings that homosexual behavior is sinful. In particular, allowing gay liberationists to meet in Catholic schools and church buildings was condemned as "misleading" and "ambiguous." An American organization of gay Catholics called Dignity had been meeting in San Francisco churches and holding masses. When they were forced to discontinue these meetings, they responded with a vicious hate campaign of savage mockery. By the year 2000, there was hardly a religious group in America that was not beset by arguments over whether gay people belonged in its pews.

On Saturday, July 8, 2000, tens of thousands of people took part in an international gay pride parade ending at the coliseum in Rome, Italy. On Sunday, Pope John Paul II bitterly denounced the festival and said that homosexual acts are "contrary to natural law." He condemned the gay pride parade and reminded his listeners of church tenets. "Homosexual acts are against nature's laws," he said. "The church cannot silence the truth, because this ... would not help discern what is good from what is evil," John Paul added. World Pride organizers said they chose Rome for the festival in hopes of opening a dialogue with the church. Instead, it highlighted tensions between the two.²²⁰

The May 20, 2002 issue of Time magazine, with a circulation of more than three million, published an article titled "Inside the Church's Closet" that revealed considerable formerly hidden information about homosexual priests in the Roman Catholic church. Hundreds of articles in magazines, newspapers, and on television had been published

²¹⁸ Dannemeyer, *Shadow on the Land*, 62.

²¹⁹ Pensacola [Florida] News Journal (May 28, 1990).

²²⁰ Northwest Florida Daily News (July 20, 2000): B6.

on the priestly sexual molestation of children scandals since January 5, 2002, when the Boston Globe printed their findings on this subject. The Time article quoted estimates of the percentage of gay priests that ranged from 15 to more than 50 percent in different communities of the church: relatively low among the Jesuits, but estimated to be 62 to 75 percent in the East Coast Franciscan community. The reasons given for the high percentage of homosexuals in the Catholic priesthood varied. Some of the homosexual priests felt that the church was a “safe place” and the priesthood was a shelter where they would not have to worry about their sexuality. Others hoped that by taking vows of celibacy, they could cancel out the sexual orientation that had caused them so much shame. And, for still others, there was an allure of the Catholic culture as one of the most homoerotic available with the shared residency of many men.

In addition to the many articles in magazines, newspapers, and books already mentioned, there are several more books documenting the problem of homosexual clergy in the Roman Catholic Church. Some of these are: Jason Berry’s *Lead Us Not Into Temptation* (New York: Doubleday, 1992); A. W. Richard Snipe’s *A Secret World* (New York: Brunner/Mazel, 1992), also by Sipe, *Sex, Priests and Power* (1995); Stephen J. Rossetti’s *A Tragic Grace* (Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 1996); Philip Jenkins’s *Pedophiles and Priests* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1996); Donald B. Cozzens’s *The Changing Face of the Priesthood* (Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 2000); James G. Wold’s *Gay Priests* (New York: Harper & Row, 1989); Michael S. Rose’s *Goodbye, Good Men: How Liberals Brought Corruption Into the Catholic Church* (Washington, DC: Regnery Publishing, Inc., 2002); and the Investigative Staff of the Boston Globe’s *Betrayal: The Crisis in the Catholic Church* (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 2002).

My own conclusion is that homosexuality is the basis of most of the sexual scandals that have rocked this church in recent years. Most of the cases have been male juveniles molested by male priests. Another indication that the blame should be on homosexual behavior is the large number of Roman Catholic priests who have died of AIDS (more than 300, up to the year 2000 in the United States.), which was mainly spread by homosexual acts until recently.

Many of the other Christian denominations offer some form of ministry to homosexuals and their families. The United Church of Canada voted on August 24, 1988, to welcome all persons regardless of sexual orientation, allow them to become full members, and allow them to be considered for the ministry.²²¹ The United Church of Christ has ordained at least five practicing homosexuals. The Methodist and Presbyterian churches allowed homosexual membership but would not ordain gay ministers. In June 2001, the Presbyterian assembly voted to repeal this ban. The Southern Baptists, however, still deny membership to homosexuals whom they classify as “open.” Lutherans debated ordaining gays in August 2001, triggering civil disobedience in

²²¹ Northwest Florida Daily News (August 28, 1988).

which forty-eight pro-gay protesters were arrested for blocking the sidewalk outside the meeting hall.

Aside from the moral and legal aspects of homosexuality, it has long been recognized that homosexual practices spread diseases. Philo of Alexandria (20 BC–AD 50) noted that “... they saddled them with the formidable curse of the female disease.” John Chrysostom (347–407) called homosexuality “the most severe of all plagues ... a new and insufferable crime.” Justinian wrote in 538: “Because of such crimes, there are ... pestilence ...”.²²² Syphilis was the most pestilential disease spread by gay sex acts in those days, but gonorrhea, chancres, herpes, and scabies were spread as well. In modern times, all homosexual men are considered to be infected with herpes simplex II, and most of them have the cytomegalovirus.²²³ Their infection level from STDs is also high, including shigellosis, amebiasis, hepatitis B (called “a national tragedy in the making” by Dr. Stanford Kuvin, vice chairman of the National Foundation of Infectious Diseases at their 1988 conference), and AIDS.

AIDS is the nation’s number one health problem, epidemic and fatal with no known cure. It was originally called GRID (Gay-Related Immune Deficiency) because it appeared to be exclusively caused by gay sex acts (mainly sodomy) when it was first identified in the early 1980s. In September 1982, 582 young gay men in San Francisco were diagnosed all with the same mysterious disease. In 1984, it was announced that the HIV virus caused the disease. The name has since been changed to the less incriminatory and less specific term, AIDS, under pressure from gay organizations, and both the name and the disease have since been spread to the general population. In addition to weakening the body’s immune system so that it becomes vulnerable to diseases, AIDS frequently infects the brain and central nervous system to cause neurological disorders, insanity, and death. Between 1980 and 1993, 91,789 homosexual and bisexual men died of AIDS. During 1993, a total of 103,500 new cases of AIDS were reported, 9 percent of which were heterosexuals and 91 percent of which were non-heterosexuals.²²⁴ Several studies have found that homosexual men attempt to commit suicide at rates higher than those of heterosexual men.²²⁵ The result of their many diseases and other problems is that only 1 percent of male homosexuals die of old age, and less than 3 percent are over age fifty-five when they die.²²⁶

The frequency alone of gay sex acts is believed to facilitate the invasion of the body by the HIV virus, which causes AIDS. The grim fact is that the American male homosexual is the most dangerous, virulent, disease vector (an agent transmitting a pathogen from one organism to another) in our country today. Yet he is seldom held

²²² R. Tannahill, *Sex in History* (New York: Scarborough House, 1980), 155–156.

²²³ “Disseminated Active HHV-6 in Infections in Patients with Aids,” *The Lancet* 343, no. 8897 (1994): 577.

²²⁴ Centers for Disease Control, Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (April 18, 1994).

²²⁵ “Is Sexual Orientation Related to Mental Health Problems and Suicidality in Young People?” *JAMA* 283, no. 2 183.

²²⁶ Dr. D. James Kennedy, personal letter, June 1, 1993.

accountable, prosecuted, or even admonished. The female prostitute, on the other hand, is vigorously denigrated, prosecuted, fined, and imprisoned for spreading disease even though she is a far less dangerous vector than the male homosexual.

This strange state of affairs appears to be due to intense activism by gay men and their supporters. ACT UP (AIDS Coalition to Unleash Power) is an organization that consists of people infected with HIV. They stage civil disobedience demonstrations at sensitive locations such as the Food and Drug Administration offices and churches in order to secure as much attention as possible to their causes. ACT UP has entered Catholic churches and sanctuaries and desecrated the Eucharist on both coasts. Ironically, the Catholic churches have been one of the largest networks of private support services for those infected with HIV. An even more militant group, called Queer Nation, maintains chapters in most major cities.

The International Gay Association (IGA) represents about 350 gay activist organizations in twenty-one countries, ranging from Australia to Europe to Iceland, from the Nordic countries to the Mediterranean nations and the United States. The headquarters of IGA were located in Coventry, England, in 1978. The IGA secretariat offices were in Dublin, and their financial center was in Amsterdam. Their region liaison office exists to respond with "immediate and coordinated action." To increase their numbers and power, they invited lesbians and others to join them in the 1980s and early 1990s and changed their name to the International Lesbian and Gay Association (ILGA). At a July 1993 meeting of the United Nations Economic and Social Council in Switzerland, the ILGA, after many years, finally was granted consultative status in the United Nations. This gives them the power to make recommendations to the United Nations General Assembly on crime and human rights. ILGA membership now includes sadists, masochists, foot fetishists, transvestites, and even pedophiles in the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA). In January 1994, the U.S. Senate voted unanimously to sharply reduce funds to the United Nations unless it severed ties to the ILGA. This vote was introduced by Senator Jesse Helms, who objected to the ILGA's relationship with the NAMBLA.²²⁷

The ILGA has served as a source of educational materials, a center for political activity, and as a nidus for recreational activities for its members. They make travel brochures available listing local contacts and exotic sexual pursuits to be found in various countries. As Enrique Rueda noted in his detailed book *The Homosexual Network*: "In all major cities there are dating services of one sort or another which match homosexuals on the basis of their wishes and characteristics to maximize the probability of a successful encounter."

The Loving Brotherhood is another international network of men with a novel approach to meeting the needs of its members. Haiti has long been known for its homosexual resorts replete with a wide array of sexual activities.

²²⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (February 14, 1994): 4A.

The American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) is a major organization of lawyers that has as one of its many objectives the protection and freedom of the homosexual "lifestyle." Alarmingly, Massachusetts Governor Michael Dukakis, the 1988 Democratic Party's presidential candidate, publicly announced that he is a card-carrying member of this organization. And on May 1, 2001, Anthony Romero was the first openly gay man appointed to lead the ACLU. Within the structure of many of our national health organizations there is usually a group of influential homosexuals or their sympathizers. The American Medical Association (AMA), the Gay and Lesbian Medical Association, the American Psychological Association (APA), and some religious groups and educational associations are some of these. The *Journal of Sex Research* states that 5.6 percent of psychiatrists are homosexual or bisexual.²²⁸ The homosexuals exert such power within these agencies that they have lowered the influence the AMA and APA might have had in combating the spread of AIDS. The voices of the AMA and APA were completely silent during the six months of debate over allowing gays in the military, although it was obvious that allowing them greater access to military personnel would permit greater spreading of AIDS and the other STDs, compromising fighting ability and lowering morale.

At the same time, homosexuals have been successful in obtaining the largest national budget to fight AIDS than is set aside for any other disease. This is in spite of the fact that many other medical calamities, such as heart attack, stroke, and cancer, each kill far more Americans than AIDS. They continue to push for special advantages and protections. On Sunday, April 25, 1993, a second "March on Washington" was staged to obtain civil rights legislation and admission into the military. The event was planned two years in advance and claimed to attract a million homosexuals to the Capitol. The Washington D.C. Park Service spokesman, however, estimated the gathering at 300,000 or less. The CNN television network devoted an unprecedented twelve continuous, uninterrupted hours to broadcasting the entire event live.

Gay political power in the United States has been greatly increased by the "Rainbow Coalition" of homosexuals, lesbians, blacks, prostitutes, pedophiles, Jews, sado-masochists, transvestites, and fetishists. Originally formed in 1965 by the Reverend Jesse Jackson to advance his black agenda and later presidential aspirations, it has achieved surprising political power and influence for almost all of its components.

Other homosexual organizations continue to form in response to gay problems worldwide. In Latin America and the Caribbean, where homosexuals are not only disdained but are frequently subjected to violence, an increasing number of gays are immigrating to the United States under American asylum laws. A New York-based Lesbian and Gay Immigration Rights Task Force, made up of lawyers and advocates, has been organized to help with their immigration problems. Up until 1990, homosexuals were specifically denied admission to the United States, but in that year Congress quietly removed this

²²⁸ R. Klitzman, J. A. Bodkin, and H. G. Pope, "Sexual Orientation and Associated Characteristics Among North American Psychiatrists," *Journal of Sex Research* 35, no. 3 (1998): 282-287.

disqualification. In 1994, Attorney General Janet Reno clarified that persecution based on sexual orientation can be ground for asylum. A report by Butler²²⁹ showed that the percentage of adults in the General Social Surveys who thought that sexual activity between two adults of the same sex is always wrong dropped from 74.9 percent in 1988 to 54.6 percent in 1998.

In 2001, China's psychiatric association removed homosexuality from its list of mental illnesses in its new diagnostic manual. The 8,000-member Chinese Psychiatric Association has concluded that homosexuality is not a perversion, said Chen Yanfang, the group's vice president. "Many homosexuals lead perfectly normal lives," he said on March 8, 2001. Homosexuality is embraced even in China, where an underground culture of gay bars, Web sites, and sports clubs flourishes.

Most homosexuals are bisexual to some extent. Some 65 percent of practicing homosexual men report having engaged in sex with women. Some 20 percent of them have been married.²³⁰ It is these people who now carry the deadly HIV across the gay frontier into the general heterosexual population, along with intravenous drug users, hemophiliacs, and the children of AIDS-infected parents. Many Haitian orphans are HIV positive. In Africa, where 25 percent of the population is dying of AIDS, almost nothing is being done to stop baby-raping, which people there believe cures AIDS.

As AIDS impacts the heterosexual community, the entire population is now at risk. The U.S. Centers for Disease Control reported in March 1992, that 202,843 U.S. citizens have been diagnosed with AIDS. In 1997, they estimated that 775,000 Americans carried HIV.²³¹ Six percent are believed to have contracted the disease from heterosexual activity.

1. Gays in the Military

During the 1992 elections, gay rights organizations were very active. Several hundred gay delegates attended the Democratic National Convention, and many were featured speakers. President Clinton had been convinced by a powerful gay organization that homosexuals should be openly welcomed into the military. He promised them at a reception in West Hollywood on October 14, 1991, that immediately upon taking office he would issue an executive order overturning the military ban on homosexuals. After he won the election, he was sworn into office on Wednesday, January 20, 1993. On the following Monday, January 25th, he called a meeting of the joint chiefs of staff, secretary of defense, and congressional leaders. This historic two-hour meeting found both sides solidly entrenched. The president was forced to delay his plans for six months. He did, however, declare a military policy known as "don't ask, don't tell," and he stopped them from removing homosexuals already in uniform. The president is the commander in chief of the military, but Congress has the responsibility and authority

²²⁹ A. C. Butler, "Trends in Same-gender Sexual Partnering, 1988-1998," *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 4 (2000): 333.

²³⁰ Bell & Weinberg, *Homosexuality: A Study of Diversities* (Simon and Schuster, 1978), 286.

²³¹ "CDC Finds Two-thirds with HIV Already Know They're Infected," *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (September 29, 1997): 3A.

for supervision over it. Senator Sam Nunn, head of the Armed Services Committee, adamantly opposed lifting the ban. Near the end of the six months, a poll of Congress showed that a congressional law would overrule an outright lifting of the ban. The General Accounting Office estimated that removing homosexuals from the military would cost about \$27 million annually. There were about 700 such “administrative separations” during 1992. Both men and women, 16,692 enlisted and 227 officers, had been removed as homosexuals between 1980 and 1990.²³²

To me, the question of whether gays should be allowed in the military is like the question of whether marijuana and other drugs should be legalized. Both questions are playing with fire. We will never know how far it will spread and how much damage it will do. For more than twenty years there have been organizations and individuals dedicated to both propositions. The National Organization for the Reform of Marijuana Laws (NORML) representatives have argued that legalizing marijuana would save the large sums of money that are now spent in enforcing the prohibitions against it. Protagonists claim that it would not do any more damage, and, in fact, it would be helpful to some people with certain medical problems such as glaucoma. Harvard Professor Timothy Leary and a former secretary of state were among those who were convinced that decriminalizing drugs would solve the drug war crisis. Then we elected a president who was convinced that homosexuality should be openly embraced in the military.

The military has always been a happy hunting ground for homosexuals. They find in the military forces the cream of American youth. Many of them are from small towns and farms and are naive to the blandishments, temptations, and influence of homosexuals who want to take advantage of their simple minds and make use of their strong bodies.

In Germany, the military laws against homosexual behavior were severe. The death sentence for SS and police members found guilty of homosexuality was passed on November 15, 1941, with Hitler’s approval. The basic idea was that the military should maintain its manly excellence.

Removal of bans results in increases, as it did in the cases of alcohol, gambling, and abortion. After we repealed the prohibition of alcoholic beverages, we saw more alcoholism and alcohol-related death and diseases. The gambling laws have been repealed in nine states as of 2001 with a resulting increase in the number of gambling-addicted people. Some lose all their money, bounce checks, and steal to pay their bills. Many thousands gamble away their children’s inheritance. Hundreds of thousands of fetuses are destroyed each year since abortion was legalized.

Removing the restrictions and laws against homosexuality is just as dangerous as permitting alcohol and gambling, and probably more so. AIDS could spread through the military like wildfire. If homosexuals are allowed free reign in the military, they may well act like gays do in prison. A lot of captive victims will be unable to defend themselves. As a retired air force colonel, I experienced their approaches as a young

²³² Newsweek (February 1, 1993): 54.

soldier myself. As an eyewitness with first-hand experience, I have seen how they congregate around army and navy installations like prostitutes did in dance halls, bars, and massage parlors. This phenomenon may be as old as the military itself.

Men have recognized for a long time that homosexuals are very dangerous to the discipline, health, and fighting ability of military soldiers. The institution of the Mameluke (Mamluk = slave) armies that were instrumental in control of the Middle Eastern areas for nearly a thousand years (969–1831) were trained and supervised by eunuchs to prevent the young recruits from being available to the depredations of the homosexuals. David Ayalon (1999) described this in a complete chapter in his excellent book *Eunuchs, Caliphs and Sultans* (Jerusalem: Hebrew University Magnes Press, 39–60).

We are at a crossroads; abandoning the straight-and-narrow ideals here will compromise discipline and foment disorder. The rest of the world watches what the United States does. An openly gay military won't attract healthy recruits, and the rest of the world will snort in derision. Petted by homosexuals in the Middle East, healthy army personnel were sickened with murderous impulses. America must be kept safe and enjoyable for clean, healthy, well-balanced people. Art declined, like the military could, from wholesome to degenerate, as illustrated by the 2001 Maplethorp exhibition of pictures of urinals.

The entertainment industry has lost many popular idols to AIDS and its complications: Rock Hudson, Michael Bennett, Liberace, Charles Ludlam, and too many others to list. In spite of the bloody warnings flashed by HIV infection and AIDS deaths in their ranks, the gay cohort of entertainers continues to flaunt their homosexuality. *Entertainment Weekly* magazine, September 8, 1995, mentioned James Dean, Boy George, Elton John, Jason Stuart, Bob Smith, Lea DeLauria, Dick Sargeant, and Stephen Spinella in their twenty-five-page spread on the "Gay '90s." Gay men are disproportionately represented in the arts, especially professional dance, including ballet, modern, and musical theater. The most famous male dancer of this century, Rudolph Nureyev, was openly gay, along with several other prominent dancers. A survey of 136 professional dancers conducted by Baily and Oberschneider found that over half of the male dancers were gay.²³³

Government on every level has been deeply influenced by homosexuals. Anti-sodomy laws have been repealed in many states. President Clinton appointed gay Bob Hattoy as his personal advisor, and Roberta Achtenberg was the first obvious lesbian confirmed by the U.S. Senate for a high government office as Assistant Secretary of Housing and Urban Development. Congress censured U.S. Representative Barney Frank for having a homosexual prostitute solicit sex from his apartment and using his official reserved parking spaces.

²³³ J. Baily and M. Oberschneider, "Sexual Orientation and Professional Dance," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26 (1997): 433–444.

Our schools are guided by homosexuals who want to teach children that homosexuality is a permissible lifestyle. The nation's first "gay" high school in Los Angeles scheduled its first gay prom in 1994.

Homosexuals have unduly influenced our medical institutions. The APA was forced to remove homosexuality from the DSM-III. The AMA has given up the effort of isolating AIDS cases for treatment. Even our religions have been ameliorated as we have gay churches in most of our large cities. Some denominations have ordained gay priests and preachers. Church attendance fell sharply in the 1990s while dozens of priests and ministers died of AIDS. We must not allow the military to fall prey to the attacks of the homosexual organizations.

Another view of the damage possible to military effectiveness from allowing homosexuals in the military can be found by examining the effects of increasing the number of women in military units. Women have been actively seeking greater military status over the last fifty years. They were originally needed during World War II as nurses and clerical workers and were usually segregated in their own units and jobs. Then they became truck drivers and later pilots and police. Most of the old restrictions against women taking positions in combat were removed in 1993. Greater mingling of the sexes on the job has led to more and more charges of sexual harassment. In the 1991 Tailhook incident, many officers and other high officials were demoted, fined, or discharged from service. Between 1993 and 2002, there were 142 sexual assault cases at the Air Force Academy in Colorado Springs, Colorado. The overall impact has been a decrease in morale, military vigor, esprit-de-corps, and respect for the military. Similar incidents are certain to arise if homosexuals are allowed visible entry into military units. Peer pressure and constant exposure will certainly put many otherwise innocent men at risk for HIV infection, AIDS, and other STDs.

Major General Harold N. Campbell called President Clinton a "gay-loving, pot-smoking, womanizing, draft-dodging commander in chief" at a dinner attended by 250 in Soesterberg Air Base in the Netherlands on May 24, 1993. The Uniform Code of Military Justice, Article 88, prohibits this sort of talk, and its presence is certainly an indication of low morale. Secretary of Defense Les Aspin, in an Air Force Academy speech on June 2, 1993, acknowledged that the quality of America's armed forces has fallen "off the peak" and that contention over gays might cause it to slip more. During his 60 Minutes television program, June 6, 1993, Mike Wallace said that the bid to allow gays in the military was one of President Clinton's worst mistakes. Clinton's popularity at the end of the first 100 days in office was lower than that of any president for at least twenty years at 36 percent approval. Other nations' leaders are asking: What is happening over there?

As we have already seen, there is a strong tendency for homosexual men to leave areas where they are prosecuted and gravitate to areas where they are allowed greater freedom, such as San Francisco. If the restrictions in the military against them are lowered, they will undoubtedly congregate in certain bases, units, ships, or stations. These places tend to increase "outing" and more and more overt sexual behavior.

The sight of healthy young men in showers, bathrooms, and dormitories sexually stimulates homosexual men in the military. The more sex they get, the more they will want. Skyrocketing testosterone levels drive homosexuals to be prodigiously promiscuous with hundreds of partners a year. Promiscuity accelerates the spread of diseases, and there is a tendency to degenerate to increasingly bizarre and dangerous sexual perversions. These distractions from military duties lead to greater degeneracy, laxness, and haphazardness. Discipline suffers and military effectiveness declines. For thousands of years, warriors have abstained from sex before battles in order to ensure victory. Athletes too have known for thousands of years that sexual activity enervates the body, lowering strength and endurance.

After a flurry of last-minute meetings between July 14 and 16, 1993, and rumors of what was being discussed, Les Aspin, the secretary of defense, missed the July 15th target date and produced an agreed-upon compromise measure, which President Clinton announced on July 19, 1993. The press promptly characterized the new policy as “don’t ask, don’t tell, don’t pursue,” and the gist of the five-page measure was publicly discussed and agreed upon by the joint chiefs of staff in televised hearings before the Senate Armed Forces Committee on July 20 and 21, 1993. General Colin Powell, joint chiefs chairman, said, “I do agree with the president’s policy both as a private matter and as a professional matter ... the choice is in the best interest of the armed forces and the American people.”

The new measure, which became effective October 1, 1993, provided that: 1) The emphasis would be on homosexual conduct rather than simply sexual orientation. Recruits would not be asked whether they are homosexual. Past policy stated that “homosexuality is incompatible with military service.” The new policy stated that it would be up to commanders to judge the suitability of persons to serve on the basis of their conduct. The guideline stated that the military will discharge members who engage in “a homosexual act, a statement that the member is homosexual or bisexual, or a marriage or attempted marriage” to someone of the same sex. 2) “Bodily contact, actively undertaken or passively permitted” between members of the same sex, such as same-sex handholding, kissing, or dancing is banned. No distinctions are made between whether these occur on or off base. 3) Service members cannot be removed for associating with known homosexuals, visiting a gay bar or social club, attending services in a place of worship frequented by homosexuals, or marching in a gay-rights parade in civilian attire. 4) No investigations will be conducted solely to determine a service member’s sexual orientation. But commanders will initiate inquiries if “credible information” exists “based on articulatable facts, not just a belief or suspicion.” A single allegation that someone is homosexual is not grounds for official action. 5) Questions pertaining to an individual’s sexual orientation will not be asked on security questionnaires, but the guidelines state that an individual’s conduct “is a legitimate security concern only if it could make an individual susceptible to exploitation or coercion.”

The change in policy also covers members of the reserves and the national guard.

On July 22, 1994, Armed Services Committee Chairman Senator Sam Nunn called President Clinton's new guidelines a "sound policy." "I think it is very similar to the policy we have right now," he said. In the same newspaper, which carried this information on page 1, another article appeared on page 4a about AIDS. This article was headlined "More Women Getting AIDS" and gave the general impression that women were contracting the AIDS virus from heterosexual activity. Buried in the article was the information that homosexual and bisexual males accounted for 40,453 of the 47,095 new cases reported in 1992 while 6,642 were women. But women had accounted for a 9.8 percent increase while males accounted for a 2.5 percent increase since 1991. It could have been emphasized that homosexual males still account for about 85 percent of the AIDS cases.

Over the six months of debates and publicity, the once-powerful voices of the medical profession, the AMA and APA, were not heard. It is a well-known fact that the AIDS virus is more easily transmitted from the male to the female than the other way around. Why have doctors remained silent and passively allowed the homosexuals easier admission into the military, which we should be able to depend upon for national security? Apparently Dannemeyer was right when he wrote: "I have discovered that radical suppression of scientific opinion can and does exist in this country and that confrontation and belligerence can even change a medical diagnosis."²³⁴

On July 27, 1993, the ACLU and Lambda Legal Defense and Education Fund made good on several earlier threats of legal action by the gay community. They filed suit in the U.S. District Court in Washington, D.C., on behalf of seven gay service men and women against President Clinton's new policy on homosexuality in the military. The suit said the policy was "restrictive, confused, and self-contradictory," and they demanded that the policy be declared unconstitutional. Their ultimate aim was to remove all restrictions on homosexuals serving in the military. Ironically, on the same day, a few blocks from the courthouse in Washington, the House Armed Services Committee voted forty-three to twelve against a proposal to end the ban on homosexuals in the military.

Opposing factions continued the tug-of-war as October 1, 1994 approached the effective date of the new legislation. On September 9, the Senate voted sixty-three to thirty-three to reject a measure that would have allowed President Clinton to dictate the outcome himself. On September 28, the House of Representatives voted 301 to 134 against a similar measure, squelching the legislation of open homosexuality in the military by October 1. The congressional measure branded homosexuality an "unacceptable risk" to military morale, and the Pentagon decided to wait for Congress to pass legislation before informing field commanders how the policy should be enforced.

In 1996, 850 homosexual service people were discharged for their sexual orientation as compared to 1,145 people in 1998. On August 13, 1999, in response to the rage expressed by gay-rights groups over the bludgeoning death of gay army private Barry

²³⁴ Dannemeyer, *Shadow on the Land*, 56.

Winchell, Defense Secretary William Cohen updated the Pentagon's "don't ask, don't tell" guidelines for gays in the military. The new policy required that mandatory training be given to all troops beginning in boot camp on acceptance of homosexuals.^{235 236}

The ready availability of explosive devices combined with the higher-than-average suicide and murder rates among homosexuals creates new dangers. A couple of past incidences that demonstrate this are: a) the Air Force A-10 attack plane that crashed into a mountain near Vail, Colorado, in April 1997 (the May 2, 1997 Tucson Citizen newspaper reported that the pilot of the bomb-loaded \$8.8 million plane committed suicide for fear that his homosexual affair with another pilot was about to be exposed); and b) the explosion on the navy's USS Iowa in 1989 in which a suicidal homosexual sailor killed himself and forty-six of his shipmates.²³⁷

A Pentagon inspector general's survey released March 24, 2000 indicated that anti-gay speech and harassment is commonplace in the U.S. military, especially among young enlisted troops. Eighty-five percent of those surveyed said they believe anti-gay comments are tolerated in their unit, and 37 percent said they had personally witnessed or been the target of harassment—such as hostile gestures, graffiti, or physical assault—based on perceived homosexuality.²³⁸

On March 15, 2001, the Service Members Legal Defense Network issued its seventh annual report on harassment of homosexuals in the military. The report said that many commanders continue to violate the policy by overzealously investigating the sexual orientation of service members. Reports of harassment received by the legal aid group had jumped from 400 in 1998 to 986 in 1999, but in 2000, reports of anti-gay harassment declined 10 percent to 871. Newly elected President Bush has said he supports the "don't ask, don't tell" policy.²³⁹ With the bombing of the World Trade Center on September 11, 2001 and the war on terrorism, the debate over gays in the military re-ignited. Following the September 11th attacks, the Pentagon suspended certain types of military discharges, but not the ban on serving as an openly gay member of the armed forces.²⁴⁰

2. Pique

There is very little doubt in my mind that some of the ugliest behavior of male homosexuals is caused by pique. Pique is a French word meaning "spite" or "quarrel." It comes from the verb meaning "to prick; to sting; to goad; to puncture; to gall, to

²³⁵ "Military Bolsters Policy on Gays," Northwest Florida Daily News (August 14, 1999): A1.

²³⁶ "Pentagon Updates Rules on Gays in the Military," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 14, 1999): 1A.

²³⁷ Associated Press, Northwest Florida Daily News (May 3, 1997): 3A.

²³⁸ "Anti-gay Stance Strong in Military," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 25, 2000): 4A.

²³⁹ "Study: Gays Having an Easier Time in Military," Northwest Florida Daily News (March 16, 2001): A5.

²⁴⁰ "War Against Terrorism Reignites Debate Over Gays in the Military," Northwest Florida Daily News (October 16, 2001): A8.

nettle, to rouse, or, medically, to inject.” It can inspire great depths of animosity, anger, and vexation.

On October 1, 1993, the television program 20/20 broadcast the story of how AIDS-infected, homosexual, dentist David Acer infected at least six of his patients by adding some of his infected blood in the hyperdermic syringe that he used to inject the Novocaine anesthetic into their gums. These victims were all innocent of any sexual involvement with the homosexual dentist. Acer deliberately murdered them because, as a sexual deviant, he took umbrage at their normality and wanted to show the world that AIDS was not exclusively a homosexual disease. One of Doctor Acer’s homosexual lovers, Edward Parsons, said on the program that the late Jensen Beach, Florida, dentist wanted to change the perception that HIV was infecting only gays. Parsons said in his interview with Barbara Walters that Acer had told him in one of their last conversations in 1990, before Acer died, “I guess I’ve got their attention, don’t I? Everyone’s talking about it now, aren’t they?”

Other cases have demonstrated how destructive homosexual pique can be. Jeffrey Dryfka, twenty-six, was stalked and murdered at Pompano Beach, Florida, on February 17, 1990, by homosexual James Barfield, forty-seven. Barfield had bragged that the hunt would end in death: “If he couldn’t have Dryfka, no one could.” Then there was the case of gay Adam Brown, thirty, indicted by the grand jury in Roseburg, Oregon, November 13, 1992, on five counts of attempted murder after having unprotected sex with youths after he knew he was HIV positive. Brown had contracted the AIDS virus while cruising gay bars in Southern California. His wife told the jury that he had become depressed and angry and sought revenge. He said, “They gave it to me. I’m going to give it back to them.” In one of the incidents, he smeared his semen into a scratch on his victim’s arm. This is pique.

The pique phenomenon has been described in other words by several other authors. Dr. Robert Stoller wrote in his 1975 book *Perversion—The Erotic Form of Hatred* that perversion “is the result of an essential interplay between hostility and sexual desire ... People with perversions feel (are made to feel) an unending sense of being dirty, sinful, secretive, abnormal, and a threat to these finer, unpervise citizens who are supposed to make up the majority of society.” In each form of perversion Dr. Stoller found “... in gross form or hidden but essential in the fantasy—hostility, revenge, triumph, and a dehumanized object. Before scratching the surface, we can see that someone harming someone else is a main feature of most of these conditions.” Mona Charen wrote in her newspaper column on April 30, 1993, about a gay rights demonstration in Washington, DC: “This rally made clear that the gay agenda goes far beyond a plea for tolerance—which most Americans are more than happy to extend. The gay movement wants simultaneously to be accepted and to offend—mutually exclusive goals.” Ray Kerrison wrote in his New York Post column for June 30, 1993: “The homosexual parade is not a harmless street theater. It is the face of a well-organized, well-financed movement dedicated to the destruction of the family as we know it.”

The consequences of pique in those who are infected with the deadly AIDS virus today in America are becoming truly catastrophic. It's nothing less than slow-motion mass murder on an unprecedented scale! Alarming, it will continue to widen because:

- 1) Homosexuality has recently been shown to be biological in nature. If it is innate, so the reasoning goes, much of the sense of responsibility is lifted from the gay man's shoulders.
- 2) The measures that have been put into effect against the AIDS plague have proven ineffective, and the numbers of those infected continue to increase. In Cuba, a system of quarantine has been effective in holding the numbers of new cases down, but we do not have this measure in this country.
- 3) Many deeply entrenched gay organizations have become more powerful in protecting and increasing gay "civil rights," which allow them to continue to newly infect others with the virus.
- 4) Medical researchers have not found a cure for the AIDS disease, but have been successful in improving the sense of wellbeing and extending the lives of infected homosexuals so that they feel well enough to continue indulging in sex acts, which spread the disease. This approach could never expect to stop the spread of any pestilence.
- 5) The AIDS virus frequently (in at least two-thirds of the cases) attacks the brains of carriers so that they are not always capable of logical thinking or of refraining from infectious sex acts.
- 6) The way male hormones escalate, perpetuating an increasing addiction to sexual activity, together with increasingly easy access to new partners, produces rampant promiscuity (1,000 different partners or more) in many homosexuals.
- 7) Large numbers of gay bars, gay baths, gay clubs, gay "communities," gay magazines, gay pamphlets, and gay dating agencies greatly facilitate gay promiscuity.
- (8) Lacking families to support, time and financial resources for alcohol and drugs are greater in the gay community than in the straight community. Such habits lower inhibitions, leading to more episodes of infectious sex.
- 9) The five- to ten-year latency period of the HIV virus allows those who are diagnosed to reach out and enjoy themselves all the more.
- 10) The AIDS-infected homosexual man often feels like an outsider even in his own community. The disease is a terrible secret that the homosexual man doesn't always share with other gay men. This can make him feel even more isolated from the general population.
- 11) The political climate, with a homosexual-friendly government, mitigates against putting any potentially effective measures such as quarantine or castration into effect against infected homosexuals continuing to spread the disease carelessly, accidentally, and ON PURPOSE.

All of these factors add up to produce the real threat of an unprecedented catastrophe as the number of infected heterosexuals rises.

A study of 308 homosexual men in the Netherlands by the State Department of Public Health and Environment showed that homosexual men comprise a very high-risk group for transmission of HIV infection. Moreover, undergoing an HIV test did not help reduce the risk of infection transmission. The number of men who continued to have sexual relations with more partners was about the same as those who had

relations with fewer partners, so there was no real decrease in risky behavior after the test.²⁴¹

In a wide, 1994 sexuality study of 3,400 men and women, aged eighteen to fifty-nine, in the United States, it was reported that “AIDS is, and is likely to remain, confined to exactly the risk groups where it began: gay men and intravenous drug users and their sexual partners.”²⁴²

During the Fifth European Conference on HIV Infection in Copenhagen, Denmark, on September 29, 1995, it was announced that the 3,000-patient “Delta” trial had confirmed the benefit of combination therapy using AZT and other drugs to delay the mortality of AIDS patients by 38 percent.²⁴³ Several new drugs were introduced in 1995 that increased the health and life expectancy of AIDS victims; 3TC, also known as Epivir or Lamivudine, was one of these, and ddC was another. A study of 45,028 patients in Brussels, Belgium, showed that 20 percent of all seropositive heterosexual STD patients and 40.7 percent of all seropositive homosexual patients were already aware of their infective status at the time of the current STD episode.²⁴⁴ This shows that a substantial number of HIV infections are transmitted from aware HIV seropositives to uninformed sexual partners.

Study after study has shown that high-risk behavior continues among gay men and minorities. The Miami Public Health Clinic officials found that those who tested negative for HIV increased their high-risk behavior. Those who returned after counseling had STDs, which jumped more than 100%.²⁴⁵

Over time, evidence accumulated that the promiscuous homosexuals who knew they were HIV infected continued to have unprotected sex and knowingly infected other men. The Centers for Disease Control announced in October 1981 that AIDS had become epidemic in the United States, and they highlighted homosexual acts as the most high-risk behavior. During this time, therapist Michael Quadland worked with gay men in New York and noticed a disturbing trend among a number of his clients: They continued to “engage in high-risk sexual practices despite awareness of the possibility of mortal danger to themselves and others.”²⁴⁶

At the 12th World AIDS Conference in Geneva, Switzerland, in June 1998, it was reported that about 15 percent of the people who were found to be HIV infected at the Geneva University Hospital over the past two years had been infected with strains of the virus that had already become resistant to AZT, the key part of the

²⁴¹ HIV Among Homosexuals in the Netherlands. (1994). *Lancet*, 343(8896), p. 536.

²⁴² Michael, R. T., Et al. (1994). *Sex in America: A Definitive Survey*. Boston: Little, Brown, and Co., p. 216.

²⁴³ *Science*. (October 6, 1995), p. 33.

²⁴⁴ L. Lavreys, E. Declercq, and D. Van Hove, “Secondary Transmission of HIV by Aware Seropositives,” *The Lancet* 346 (1995): 1102–1103.

²⁴⁵ D. Whitman, *U.S. News & World Report* (December 16, 1996): 29.

²⁴⁶ M. C. Quadland and W. D. Shattls, “AIDS, Sexuality, and Sexual Control,” *Integrated Identity for Gay Men and Lesbians*, ed. E. Coleman (New York: Haworth Press, 1987), 280.

AIDS treatment. The doctors examined the patients further and found that they had acquired their infection from someone with an advanced disease who had tried several treatment strategies.²⁴⁷

In spite of the large number of widely publicized cases, it was not until March 14, 1994, that an HIV-infected homosexual man was finally convicted and sentenced for attempted murder by sexual assault. In the nation's first such conviction, Ignacio A. Perea, Jr., thirty-two, of Miami, Florida, was sentenced to five consecutive life terms for kidnapping, and in so doing trying to kill three young boys in 1991. Brion Blackwelder, project director of the AIDS law project at Nova Southeastern University, Fort Lauderdale, Florida, said the case was an example of how the law must evolve to deal with crimes involving the deadly virus. "It becomes a bit of a different crime given the consequences," Blackwelder said. "HIV has modified how people regard sexual activities in this society, so it doesn't surprise me that it is making its way into criminal law as a prospect."²⁴⁸

The death penalty in Indiana for individuals who "knowingly transfer the HIV virus to another person" or "attempt to do so" is an example of legal measures being taken in 1995 against AIDS.

Pique is not unique to the homosexual community alone. It is also found among heterosexuals who build up excessive testosterone levels through sexual promiscuity. Doctor Richard Schmidt, a forty-eight-year-old gastroenterologist in Lafayette, Louisiana, injected his long-term lover, Janice Trahan, thirty-three, with HIV when she decided to drop her affair with him. She told police that Schmidt had vowed never to let her leave him and threatened that no man would want her if she did.²⁴⁹

J. Incest

Punishable adult incest legally refers to sexual intercourse between two persons who are too closely related by blood to be married. Among Roman Catholics, this is interpreted to extend down to first cousins; but in some states, blood relationship is not necessary and sex between a stepmother and stepson (until the death of the natural parent) is considered incest.²⁵⁰ Almost all human societies have had strong cultural taboos against incest between individuals of close-blood-relationship, and it was a "cursed," capital offense under biblical law (Leviticus 18:6–16, 20:11–21; Deuteronomy 27:20–23). Thirty states banned incest in 1993, nine of which punished it severely with up to seven years in prison for brother-sister copulation. All states forbid mar-

²⁴⁷ "Strains of HIV Resist Drugs," Northwest Florida Daily News (July 7, 1998): 8A.

²⁴⁸ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 26, 1994): 15A.

²⁴⁹ Newsweek (August 9, 1996): 64.

²⁵⁰ Barrett & Shaeffer, 1939.

riage between certain kin. Adultery incest has been subjected to the death penalty in Pakistan under its Islamic law.²⁵¹

Incest between fathers and daughters is the type most frequently reported to authorities because it usually also involves child abuse charges. This problem has received heavy publicity, and multimillion-dollar LEAA programs have been launched against it since 1979. Statistically, however, incest between brother and sister is the most frequent type in the American population. It simply is not well reported. In the 1980s and 1990s in the United States, an increasing number of children who murdered their parents (2 percent of all homicides) pleaded self-defense from parental incest and received less severe penalties as a result.

Popular actress Roseanne Barr stood up before the 1,100-member conference on incest at the Presbyterian church in Denver on September 21, 1991, and said, "My name is Roseanne, and I'm an incest survivor." In her hour-long speech she told how her father had told her to play with his penis and sit on his lap in the bathtub, and how her mother had placed things in her vagina and abused her. Later, with her new husband, Tom Arnold, she appeared on a nationwide Sally Jessy Raphael television broadcast and tearfully accused her father of sexual abuse. The *National Enquirer* of January 21, 1992, headlined her family's counterattack. "Everything Roseanne has been saying is lies, all lies!" her sister, Geraldine, said, and she filed a \$70 million lawsuit against Roseanne in Los Angeles on December 18th. By 1991, several other celebrities have overcome the traditional shame, which formerly kept women silent concerning their childhood molestations, and they found the courage to publicly tell of their incest victimization. Among these were Marilyn Van Derbur, former Miss America; Oprah Winfrey, talk show hostess; La Toya Jackson, singer; and Paula Hawkins, former Florida senator.

Apart from the cultural taboos, incest was formerly believed to increase the likelihood of physical and mental defects in the offspring of such unions. Defective traits, which normally remained hidden when unrelated couples mated, were thought to appear more frequently in offspring of incestuous couples. Frequent cases of hemophilia in old European and Egyptian royal families, which intermarried, were cited as examples. Dr. John Money, however, has shown that the theory of biological degeneration has not held up as a foundation for the incest proscription and taboo.²⁵² Cleopatra was the product of twelve generations of inbreeding, and she has been hailed as one of the most beautiful and clever women of her age. Franco Ferracuti studied the literature of the Egyptian, Inca, and Hawaiian royal families and could find no direct relationship between degeneracy and intrafamilial breeding.²⁵³ Cattlemen and horticulturists routinely interbreed their stock to bring out their most desirable hereditary

²⁵¹ Xin Ren, "Incest-anthropological and Historical," *Encyclopedia of Criminology and Deviant Behavior*, III, ed. Clifton Bryan (Philadelphia: Brunner-Routledge, 2001), 173.

²⁵² J. Money and J. Tucker, *Sexual Signatures: On Being a Man or Woman* (Boston: Little Brown and Company, 1975), 182.

²⁵³ F. Ferracuti, "Incest Between Father and Daughter," *Sexual Behaviors, Social Clinical, and Legal Aspects*, eds. Resnick and Wolfgang, (Boston: Little Brown Co., 1972).

traits—usually with very satisfactory results. “Incest is universal among wild animals, yet their races do not die out ...”²⁵⁴ Human society was said to begin in an incestuous relationship, wherein the sons of Adam married their sisters (Genesis 4 and 5).

Many studies cite that one in four girls suffer from incestuous abuse, but Marsha Utain, sex offender therapist and author of the book *Scream Louder*, said on the Geraldo television broadcast of October 27, 1989, that she believes this figure is actually closer to 50 percent of all American women. The 1953 Kinsey Report reported that of 4,000 women interviewed, about 4 percent of their respondents knew that they were victims of incest.

In the late 1980s, a new kind of incest dawned on the awareness of a shocked American public: “professional incest,” which was due to the sexual exploitation in professional relationships. Gabbard has shown the prevalence of sexual exploitation of patients by psychiatrists, psychologists, hospital staff, sex therapists, doctors, and social workers.²⁵⁵ Also included are: sexual involvement between teachers and students, sexual boundary violations by clergy, and sexual contact in fiduciary relationships, which have many of the coercive characteristics of the more familiar incest varieties. The Phil Donahue television show, which was broadcast nationwide October 20, 1992, featured women who had been violated by their psychiatrists. Incest offenders have been found to be among the most responsive to treatment whereas pedophiles and rapists are among the most resistant to present sex offender treatment.

Josephus tells us of the Roman emperor Gaius Caesar, known as Caligula (AD 37–41) having raped his own sister, Julia Drusilla. “This conduct was the source from which citizens’ hatred of him grew fiercer and fiercer. Such a deed, which for ages past had not been recorded, drew them to incredulity and hatred of the doer.”²⁵⁶

Abuse by a relative is different from abuse by a stranger. The incest victim cannot run away and go home for help and comfort. Dysfunctions commonly noted in victims include eating disorders, depression, PTSD, alcohol abuse, self-mutilation, drug dependence, promiscuity, suicidal thoughts and attempts, and dabbling in Satanism.

K. Abortion

Abortion is the suction of the embryo or fetus from the womb of a woman. An abortion is considered safest within the first trimester, especially between the eighth and tenth week. Abortions committed after the thirteenth week of pregnancy are three or four times more risky for the mother than those performed earlier. Due to liberalized

²⁵⁴ Karpman, *Sex Offender and His Offense*, 332.

²⁵⁵ G. Gabbard, *Sexual Exploitation in Professional Relationships* (Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press, Inc., 1989).

²⁵⁶ Flavius Josephus, *Jewish Antiquities*, Book XIX, 204, trans. Louis Feldman (Cambridge, MA: Harvard UP, 1965), 309.

abortion laws, a woman can obtain an abortion quickly when it is much less painful and dangerous to her personally (Tietz and Lewit, 1972).

Abortions can be performed in several ways. Suction abortion, or vacuum curettage, is often used up to the twelfth week of pregnancy. The cervix is dilated and anesthetized. A hollow plastic rod called a vacuum curette is inserted into the uterus and the contents are sucked out. The procedure can be performed in a doctor's office or clinic on an outpatient basis in about ten minutes. A dilation and curettage (D and C) is frequently performed on the later pregnancies in a hospital with the patient under anesthesia. Inserting instruments dilates the cervix and a spoon-like instrument is used to scrape the conceptus from the uterine wall. Physicians occasionally use a procedure called a hysterectomy for fetuses older than sixteen to twenty-four weeks. This operation excises the uterus vaginally or through an incision in the abdominal wall and requires a hospital stay of a few days.

Late-term abortions, after twenty-four weeks of pregnancy, are barred in thirty states under partial birth abortion legislation. Some of these states prosecute them as infanticides. These laws have been challenged in twenty-one states, and courts have either stopped or dramatically watered the laws down.

Years after most European countries legalized abortion, the Swiss parliament voted on March 23, 2001, to permit women to end pregnancy until the twelfth week. The Swiss National Council—parliament's largest chamber—voted by 107 to sixty-nine to legalize abortion without obliging women to first seek neutral advice at a state-approved center. The other house, the Council of States, approved the proposal, twenty-two to twenty, but some of the members called for a national referendum about when the law will take effect, thus possibly delaying the effective date for years.

The "morning after pill" is a series of high-dose estrogen pills taken for three to seven days after unprotected sex. They alter the hormonal environment so that it becomes inhospitable to the fertilized egg and it is rejected. Prostaglandin suppositories can be used early in pregnancy to induce menstruation or miscarriage. Side effects, such as uterine cramps, vomiting, and diarrhea, have restricted these later methods' use, however.²⁵⁷ In the fall of 1988, an abortion pill known as RU-486 (mifepristone) was approved for use in France and China. This drug induces a spontaneous miscarriage in the first fifty days of pregnancy but must be used under medical supervision. It is considered more convenient, less costly, and safer than abortions and was also approved in Britain and ten other countries. The anti-abortion lobby was too strong, however, for it to be approved in the United States at that time.²⁵⁸

On June 14, 1998, the U.S. House of Representatives voted 223 to 202 to bar the FDA from testing, developing, or approving "any drug for the chemical inducement of abortion." If this measure were to become law, it would effectively block approval

²⁵⁷ M. Diamond, *The World of Sexual Behavior: Sex Watching* (New York: Gallery Books, 1984), 208–211.

²⁵⁸ U.S. News & World Report (November 7, 1988).

of RU-486. During the same session of Congress, action moved forward on legislation to make it a crime to take an underage girl across state lines for an abortion if her home state had a law requiring parental notification. The House Judiciary Committee approved the bill after fifteen hours of debate.²⁵⁹ The FDA almost approved RU-486 in February 2000, but it once again demanded more information from groups seeking to market it in the United States.²⁶⁰

Finally after a decade of controversy, the RU-486 was given final approval by the FDA on September 28, 2000, although the Vatican had dubbed it “The Pill of Cain—the monster that cynically kills its brothers,” and pro-life activists continued to protest against it. Presidential candidates split again on the issue. Democrat Al Gore praised RU-486. “Today’s decision is not about politics, but the health and safety of American women and a woman’s fundamental right to choose,” he said. George W. Bush, Republican candidate, called the FDA’s decision “wrong,” saying, “I fear that making this pill widespread will make abortions more and more common.” Reform Party candidate Patrick Buchanan called RU-486 “a human pesticide.” Green Party candidate Ralph Nader said that use of the drug is “up to the woman, not the government ... and it is preferable to surgical procedure.” FDA Commissioner Jane Henney approved mifepristone on the basis of scientific studies that found it 92 to 95 percent effective in causing abortion in the first seven weeks of pregnancy. Bush won the election and appointed Tom Thompson Secretary of Health and Human Services. Thompson had a strong pro-life record and planned to review the safety of RU-486 after assuming his new office in January 2001.

Before 1973, abortion was prosecuted as a criminal offense unless it could be proven that carrying the child full term would endanger the life of the mother. In 1970, it was estimated that at least a million illegal abortions were performed in America each year. Illegal abortion was considered the most remunerative criminal enterprise after gambling and narcotics. Abortionists were arrested for fewer than 1 per 1,000 abortions—no other felony was as free from punishment. More women died of illegal abortions than of legal abortions.²⁶¹ Women who could afford an abortion went to other countries (some just across the border of Mexico) or paid more money to physicians to perform an illegal abortion. Some women with little money were known to have dangerous back-alley abortions under nonsterile conditions by unqualified individuals. Some women tried to abort the fetuses on their own, often seriously harming or even killing themselves in the process.²⁶² Senator Barbara Boxer said, “Approximately 78,000 women throughout the world die each year as a result of unsafe abortions.”²⁶³

²⁵⁹ “U.S. House Votes to Bar ‘Abortion Drugs,’” *The Lancet* (July 4, 1988): 45.

²⁶⁰ S. Schultz, “Long-Awaited Abortion Pill Will Offer More Privacy—But No Less Controversy,” *U.S. News & World Report* (February 28, 2000): 79.

²⁶¹ Morris. (1970).

²⁶² M. Harmatz and M. Novak, *Human Sexuality* (New York: Harper & Row Publishers, 1983), 521.

²⁶³ *The Congressional Record Procedures and Debates of the 107th Congress, First Session*, 147(22), (Washington: Thursday, February 15, 2001).

In January 1973, the Supreme Court ruled seven to two in the famous *Roe v. Wade* case that the decision of a woman to have an abortion in the first trimester of pregnancy could not be interfered with by state laws. They further stated that under special conditions, abortion could be performed during the second trimester or even in the third trimester under competent medical care. This decision touched off a moral and political storm that still raged across the country in 2001, with no signs of abating, despite the Hippocratic oath, which read in part: “Nor will I give a woman a pessary to procure abortion” (Hippocratic oath, c. 375 BC). The most liberal law was signed by the Governor of Maryland, February 18, 1991, protecting a woman’s right to abortion in the event *Roe v. Wade* was overturned. One thing became very clear as time went on: *Roe v. Wade* did more to reduce pregnancy-related adult mortality than any other procedure since blood transfusion.²⁶⁴

Strangely enough, Norma McCorvey, the woman who used the pseudonym “Jane Roe” and won her right to an abortion in the *Roe v. Wade* case, later had a change of heart and joined the pro-life forces. She became a filing clerk for Operation Rescue, but still supported women’s rights to first-trimester abortions. Operation Rescue is a nonprofit religious organization dedicated to saving the lives of unborn children. Operation Rescue was slow to exploit Ms. McCorvey, however, because of her lesbianism, past drug abuse, and alcoholism.²⁶⁵

The moral forces are marshaled mainly under church banners. They have steadily rejected abortion for any reason; Roman Catholics, Eastern Orthodox, Lutherans, Mormons, Church of the Brethren, Muslim, and various evangelical denominations all saw abortions as a moral evil. Others have opposed abortion except when necessary to save the mother’s life and in cases of similar urgent necessity. These include the Presbyterians, Southern Baptists, and American Baptists. Scriptural guidance reads as follows: “Thou shalt not destroy the conceptions before they are brought forth; nor shalt thou kill them after they are born” (The Epistle of Barnabas 14:11). Father John Connery has elucidated the Catholic position in his 1988 book *Abortion: The Development of the Catholic Perspective*. Dr. D. James Kennedy led media drives to overturn the *Roe v. Wade* decision and called abortion the “number one moral problem in the United States today” and “an American Holocaust” on nationwide television. Joan Andrews of the Pro-Life Action League was arrested in Pensacola, Florida, in March 1986 and sentenced to five years in prison for criminal mischief, burglary, and resisting arrest in connection with the burning of abortion clinics. She served two and a half years and was released, but again engaged in demonstrations and was arrested four or five times in Pennsylvania, Toronto, Detroit, and Ohio. Operation Rescue planned and sponsored the picketing and vandalizing of abortion clinics in fifty cities, especially in Atlanta where some 1,235 demonstrators were arrested in a three-month period in

²⁶⁴ F. Boehm, *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (June 21, 1995): 9A.

²⁶⁵ “Groups Grapple over ‘Jane Roe’ Change of Mind,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (1995, August 12): 8A.

1988. The American Medical Association opposed abortion for more than 100 years, while many of their members continued to perform “therapeutic abortions.”²⁶⁶

The abortion issue has divided the country more than any other issue since slavery. Large numbers of highly moral people continue to break the law, go to jail, and suffer fines over the abortion issue. Tens of thousands of people picket and obstruct access to abortion clinics across the United States. They march and conduct demonstrations at political gatherings, sometimes obstructing traffic and creating civil unrest. They have vandalized dozens of clinics, burned and bombed many clinics, and have even killed or injured innocent people in the process. These pro-life activists also struggled for political impact; they have been active in political ways, lobbying for restrictive measures on abortions, and they have been partially successful. In June 1977, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that no state is obligated to pay for an abortion, even though matching federal funds are available. Many state laws were ruled unconstitutional on June 15, 1983 and June 6, 1986, because they restricted women’s access to abortions. A Florida law that required parental consent for a minor to have an abortion was ruled unconstitutional in November 1988. On August 25, 1991, the Reverend Pat Robertson of the Christian Broadcasting Network (CBN) was the featured speaker at the pro-life rally in Wichita, Kansas. Over 2,600 pro-life protesters were arrested over the next few days for obstructing access to clinics and causing civil unrest.

Some feel that the legalization of abortion is a government-sponsored justification of sin. God’s commandment to “be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it” (Genesis 1:28) is broken. We regress into barbarity when we kill our own children. Many cultures sacrificed their little ones—their innocent little lambs, pure and untarnished by life and sin. Is this progress? These cultures and their people died out and left a lifeless desert where their cities, homes, and gardens once stood. A cemetery now—an arid, bleak, and barren desert with little bones under the ground. This is the vision that comes from those who multiply the sin of their lust by destroying their innocent babies.

The political forces split along party lines concerning abortion in 1988. The pro-lifers generally supported the Republican tickets, while the pro-abortionists supported the Democrats. President Reagan and president-elect Bush were outspoken in their opposition of abortion. In spite of the results of a poll conducted by the National Abortion Rights League in 1987, which showed that 56 percent of polled voters supported abortion while only 10 percent believed abortion “should not be allowed under any circumstances,” the pro-life conservatives won the presidency. Other polls consistently showed that a majority (60 to 70 percent) of Americans favored abortion. They lost, however, several seats in congress. NOW (National Organization for Women) and the ACLU (American Civil Liberties Union) have been very vocal in support of abortion rights in politics by staging counter-demonstrations and lobbying.

²⁶⁶ JAMA (August 18, 1997): 687.

Some abortion rights supporters quote the shocking statistics that on any given day in the United States 49,322 children are in correctional facilities, 3,288 children run away from home, and 2,989 kids see their parents divorced. In a typical day in the United States, 2,269 illegitimate children are born, 2,753 teenagers get pregnant, 1,287 teenagers give birth, 1,099 teenagers have abortions, 666 babies are born to women with inadequate prenatal care, 367 teens miscarry, 110 babies die before their first birthday, seventy-two babies die at under one month of age, nine children die of gunshot wounds, and five teenagers commit suicide. From 1982 to 1996, maternal deaths occurred at the rate of seven or eight per 100,000 live births in America each year. Some developing countries have maternal mortality rates as high as 1,200 per 100,000 births.²⁶⁷ Supporters feel that these bleak statistics would be worse if it were not for the relief of legal abortions. Unwanted pregnancies have always been a major problem for some women. The CDC reported that there were 1,333,521 abortions in 1984; 1,328,570 in 1985; 1.4 million in 1990; 1.33 million in 1993; 1.2 million in 1995; 1,221,585 in 1996; and 1.31 million in 2000. Twenty of every 1,000 women, between the ages of fifteen and forty-four had abortions in 1995, the lowest rate since 1975. This may have been due to lack of access to abortion clinics.²⁶⁸

Benefits available through the abortion industry are: 1) Fetal tissue has potentially very valuable applications in the treatment of Parkinson's and Alzheimer's disease, diabetes, hemophilia, and spinal cord injuries. 2) Designer babies—free of genetic defects and available in either gender. There are hundreds of inheritable diseases and abnormalities that can be detected while the fetus is still unborn. The gender of the fetus can also be determined well before the time of birth. If abortion is legal, the fetus can be aborted when it is the desire of the parents to avoid having imperfect children. 3) Celebrities can avoid harming their careers with the publicity unwanted children might bring them. For example, according to the unauthorized biography of Frank Sinatra by Kitty Kelly (*His Way*, 1988), Elizabeth Taylor is supposed to have had the pregnancy she shared with Sinatra aborted. 4) Research shows that women tend to show few negative emotional reactions to abortion and that most women feel relieved. In fact, women whose request for abortion was granted have better emotional outlooks than those whose request was refused.²⁶⁹

Former U.S. Surgeon General C. Everett Koop and his staff reviewed over 250 scientific articles on the medical and psychological sequella of abortion in women. Koop was a political appointee charged by President Reagan to provide evidence supporting the reversal of *Roe v. Wade*, the landmark U.S. Supreme Court decision that legalized abortion in the United States during the first two trimesters of pregnancy. Although personally opposed to abortion, Koop could not find evidence of significant adverse

²⁶⁷ "U.S. Failing to Reduce Deaths from Pregnancy Complication," *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (September 5, 1998): 1B.

²⁶⁸ "U.S. Abortion Rate Dropped Again in 1995," *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (December 5, 1997): 8A.

²⁶⁹ McCary, *McCary's Human Sexuality*, 432; and *JAMA* 283, no. 20 (May 24/30, 2000): 2700.

consequences in women who had undergone abortions. His report, which was never officially released, also expressed doubts about the existence of the “post-abortion stress syndrome.”²⁷⁰

In the largest protest demonstration in the nation’s capital in twenty years, 500,000 abortion rights advocates marched Sunday, April 5, 1992. Abortion rights leaders organized the demonstration to bring attention to the threat to abortion rights posed just weeks before by an April 22 Supreme Court ruling on a Pennsylvania case that could lead to new restrictions on a woman’s access to legal abortion. “George Bush is the most anti-choice, anti-woman president in the history of America, and he has to go,” Kate Michelman, president of the National Abortion Rights Action League, told the crowd gathered on the Mall. Democratic presidential candidate Bill Clinton was in the rally, supporting abortion rights, and so was a group of female candidates for the U.S. Senate. When Clinton and some of the senate candidates prevailed in the November election, many believed that it was because of their stand on the abortion issue.

President Clinton was sworn into office January 20, 1993, and on the twentieth anniversary of the *Roe v. Wade* decision, January 22, he scuttled abortion restrictions imposed by Presidents Reagan and Bush by signing memorandums to: 1) allow abortion counseling at federally supported clinics; 2) permit research using fetal tissue from abortions; and 3) allow abortions at military hospitals and devote funding toward overseas population control programs. Clinton also pledged to review a ban against importation of RU-486, the French abortion pill. Ironically, a crowd of anti-abortion sympathizers, estimated at 75,000, made their annual march from the White House to the Supreme Court on the same day.

President George W. Bush, Jr. was sworn into office January 19, 2001, and on January 22, he signed a memorandum imposing abortion restrictions on U.S. foreign aid. Democratic Senator Barbara Boxer, of California, said she would try to fight Bush’s anti-abortion policies.

The twenty-fourth anniversary of *Roe v. Wade* was again marked by major demonstrations by tens of thousands marching to Capitol Hill and bomb blasts at abortion clinics in Atlanta, Georgia, and Tulsa, Oklahoma.

In spite of stricter laws, protesters increased their attacks on abortion clinics, capturing national headlines on several occasions from 1985 to 1992. At ten o’clock in the morning of March 10, 1993, Doctor David Gunn, forty-seven, became the first abortionist killed by pro-life protesters. Michael Griffin, thirty-one, a deeply religious man, had calmly walked up to Dr. Gunn as he approached the Pensacola, Florida, abortion clinic and fired four shots from his .38 caliber revolver, killing Gunn. On August 19, 1993, Rachelle Shannon, thirty-seven, emulating Michael Griffin, fired at and slightly wounded Dr. George Tiller, fifty-two, outside his abortion clinic in Wichita, Kansas. This murder attempt was soon followed on August 21, 1993, by the murder of Dr.

²⁷⁰ A. Kulczycki, M. Potts, and A. Rosenfield, “Abortion and Fertility Regulation,” *The Lancet* 347 (1996): 1663–1668.

George Patterson, forty-four, owner of the Pensacola clinic, by an unknown assailant. Again on August 29, 1994, a Pensacola abortion protest killing inspired several days of headlines and feature articles across the nation. At 7:30 in the morning in the clinic parking lot, Paul Hill, forty, a defrocked Presbyterian minister who had repeatedly threatened the clinic staff, blasted Dr. John Britton, sixty-nine, and his escort, James Barrett, seventy-four, in the head both with his shotgun, killing them instantly. Barrett's wife, June, sixty-eight, who was sitting in the rear seat of the pickup truck, was wounded in the arm.

Between 1988 and 1998, there were a total of seven murders, fifteen attempted murders, fifteen bombings, 101 cases of arson of abortion facilities, and forty-five attempted bombings or arson of clinics by protesters. Dr. Barnett Slepian, abortion provider, was shot and killed October 23, 1998, in Amherst, New York, as he stood near a window in his kitchen at ten o'clock in the evening. A bomb exploded outside abortion doctor Neal Sager's office in Jacksonville, Florida, Tuesday afternoon, September 5, 2000. Slepian's killer, James Kopp, was arrested in France April 5, 2001, but could not be extradited to America because of French law against the death penalty. The battles raged on, and the pro-life advocates justified the murders, bombings, and burnings because they considered abortion a "crime against humanity."²⁷¹

The announcement of the FDA's approval of the abortion drug RU-486 on September 28, 2000, did not stop the pro-life protesters. Just two days after the announcement of the FDA's approval, a Catholic priest smashed his car into an abortion clinic in Rockford, Illinois. The reverend John Earl, thirty-two, who drove the car, then got out and began chopping at the building with an ax until the owner of the clinic fired two shotgun blasts in attempted murder. No one was injured, but Earl was arrested and charged with felony criminal damage to property. The clinic doctor, Richard Ragsdale, said, "I'm not surprised that something happened on the heels of the RU-486 announcement, but this is a little more than we were expecting."

Shortly after the September 11, 2001, bombing of the World Trade Center in New York and the Pentagon in Washington, and during the height of the anthrax bioterrorist scare, more than 200 abortion clinics received packages containing a powdery substance alleged to be anthrax. Some of the packages contained threatening letters signed by the Army of God. Fortunately, none of the powder tested positive for anthrax, so the FBI recognized these incidents as hoaxes.²⁷²

Abortion was the main topic of the third International Conference on Population and Development in Cairo, Egypt in September 1994 with some 20,000 participants from 182 different countries. The Vatican, together with some pro-life Christian groups, and some Muslim countries voiced their opposition, just as they did in previous conferences in 1974 and 1984, as covered by world headlines. A preacher in the Cairo mosque called the meeting "a Zionist and imperialist plot to destroy Islam." On the other side

²⁷¹ 60 Minutes, CBS (February, 19 2000).

²⁷² "Abortion Groups Threatened," USA Today (November 9, 2001): 2A.

of the argument, gynecologists from Cameroon and Tanzania each shared this claim: “I have women dying in my arms almost every day. They’re not dying from abortions; they are dying from childbirth. At times we can’t deliver babies because there’s no water in the clinics.” Complications from pregnancy and childbirth are among the leading causes of death for women of reproductive age in many countries. About 500,000 women, 99 percent from developing countries, die of pregnancy-related causes every year. In the United States, the risk of dying from pregnancy or childbirth is fifteen times that of dying from a legal abortion.²⁷³

Because of the population excesses in China, that country adopted a one-child family policy in 1979 and made contraceptives, the abortion drug RU-486, and surgical abortions available to those that needed them to keep the population within limits. Seventy percent of the abortions were performed because of contraceptive failures, and 30 percent were done on unmarried young females.²⁷⁴

One critical piece about a negative consequence of abortion, which was largely ignored by the media and hence the general public, was the subject of columnist Mona Charen’s article “Most Under Reported Story in the U.S.” in the October 21, 1994 Pensacola News Journal (p. 12a). Charen wrote:

No fewer than 24 published studies have shown a link between early abortion or miscarriage and breast cancer ... According to the available research, women who have had miscarriages or abortions before a full-term pregnancy have a 50% greater chance of getting cancer than those who do not. The greater the number of miscarriages or abortions, the greater the risk ... The speculation is that the onslaught of hormones then causes cells to reproduce in the breast, if halted abruptly, before the cells have reached their full destiny in delivery and lactation, leaves them permanently liable to divide uncontrollably (which is cancer).

The Lancet published an article that claimed this adverse relationship between breast cancer and the termination of the first pregnancy has not been firmly proven.²⁷⁵

By mid-1999, some of the potential eugenic benefits of abortion had been documented in various reports. One study by Steven Levitt, a University of Chicago economist, and John Donahue, a Stanford University Law School professor, linked the abortions of the 1970s to the reduction of crimes in the 1990s. In their forty-five-page analysis the authors detailed the following findings: “The five states that legalized abortion in the three years before the 1973 *Roe v. Wade* decision experienced drops in

²⁷³ Council on Scientific Affairs, American Medical Association, “Induced Termination of Pregnancy Before and After *Roe v. Wade*: Trends in the Mortality and Morbidity of Women,” *JAMA* 268 (1992): 3231–3239.

²⁷⁴ L. Humphries, “China Generally Regards Women as Sex Objects,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (September 1, 1998): 3E.

²⁷⁵ *The Lancet* 347 (June 15, 1996): 1666.

property crimes, violent crimes and murder before the other states did. The timing of the crime drop in the 1990s coincides with the period roughly twenty years after *Roe v. Wade*. The children who would have been born would have reached the peak ages for criminal activity, roughly ages eighteen to twenty-four. Places with high abortion rates in the 1970s experienced high crime rate drops in the 1990s. The subsequent fall in crime was about 15% greater for regions with higher abortion rates than for regions with low abortion rates. Every 10% increase in abortion in the years they studied later led to about a 1% drop in crime.”²⁷⁶

L. Fetishism

Fetishism, formerly spelled fetichism, was originally defined as “the worship of material things as the abode of spirits.” It was similar to idolatry, the worship of idols or sacred relics as gods. Today, however, it has come to be more commonly associated with a paraphilia in which a fetish is defined as “an object or body part with special powers not inherent to the object that arouses libido.” The word fetish comes from the Portuguese word *feitico*, meaning “artifact or charm.” The Portuguese were the first Europeans to trade with the natives on the west coast of Africa where several of the native tribes worshiped fetishes. The prevalence of pathological erotic fetishism in the United States is essentially unknown, but is believed to be quite low, probably less than 1 percent of the total male population and less in the female population. Martin Kafka published a study of a hundred outpatient males who had come to him for evaluation or treatment for paraphilias or paraphilia-related disorders. Seven percent of these men were fetishists and 2 percent were frotteurs, who derive erotic satisfaction from rubbing against strangers in crowds.²⁷⁷

Kraft-Ebing, in his famous book *Psychopathia Sexualis*, listed four main types of pathological erotic fetishes: 1) Parts or aspects of a woman’s body: hair, hand, foot, bosom, waist, hips, and medical condition, such as lameness or obesity; 2) female attire: underwear, shoes, stockings, garters, handkerchiefs, etc.; 3) fur, velvet, silk, roses, etc.; and 4) beasts, like cats and dogs. Sometimes beast fetishists go to the extent of sodomizing them. He enumerated many shocking details in thirty-three case studies in his famous book, which has been reprinted at least twenty-five times in several languages down through the years. These horrendous details are what has made his book so vivid, clear, and meaningful. Thirteen of these cases, about 40 percent, resulted in arrests: three for hair despoiling and ten for robbery or theft of female linen, shoes, or silks.

²⁷⁶ “Study Links Abortions, Low Crime,” Northwest Florida Daily News (August 8, 1999): A1.

²⁷⁷ M. Kafka, “Hypersexual Desire in Males: An Operational Definition and Clinical Implications for Males with Paraphilias and Paraphilia-Related Disorders,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26, no. 5 (1997): 505–526.

Magnus Hirschfeld has three chapters in his 1938 book on fetishism, which he divided into two main kinds: minor and major fetishism. He wrote that fetishism has its roots in normal sexual life and only becomes a perversion when exaggerated to an obsessive practice. “In the case of minor fetishism the effective detail is the center of attraction, but does not completely overshadow its possessor, to whom the fetishist’s love is gradually transferred. In the case of major fetishism, on the other hand, no such transference takes place, but a complete substitution—*pars pro toto*—in which the fascinating detail or object entirely supplants the loved person. The genuine fetishist does not desire a sexual partner but is content with a symbol.”²⁷⁸

Benjamin Karpman defines fetishism as a paraphilia in which “the sexual partner is dispensed with and the subject gratifies himself onanistically with the aid of a symbol.”²⁷⁹ He also associates kleptomaniac tendencies with fetishism. Also, he states: “Fetishism is sexual interest centered on a part of the body of a desirable individual or on an inanimate object. Fetishism is an erotic response to something serving as a substitute for the original object. Fetishists may commit burglary, theft, assault, to secure the object. Some fetishists find the garment must be stolen for full satisfaction.” Karpman found in 1964 that there was no fetishism in women. L. Gamman and M. Makinen, in their 1994 book *Female Fetishism*, believe that female fetishism is due to the “feminine experience of world and love being bound in a concrete, personal level.” Karpman wrote that one of the three types of transvestites was the “fetishist, whose pleasure is increased and phantasy stimulated by looking at themselves in mirrors.” He quoted several authors and cases, and in his chapter on motivations, he stated that “somasochism is the root of fetishism.” He also speculated that it is a manifestation of the castration complex, particularly the fear of castration. “In partialism, or anatomical fetishism, the most frequently encountered examples are the female buttocks or breast.” In the field of *osphresiolagnia*, the fetishistic-libidinal attachment is related to odors, especially those emanating from some part of the loved one’s body.”

Dr. Mathis is clearer in his definition: “Fetishism is a sexual deviation in which an inanimate object or body part is endowed with all the sexual significance usually attributed to the female genitalia. That object or body part is known as a fetish. Fetishism may be one of the most common of the sexual deviations.”²⁸⁰ He gives an excellent example of the Chinese attaching tremendous importance to the female foot until recent times, and he quotes Matignon in a description of Chinese pornographic engravings: “In all these lascivious scenes we see the male voluptuously fondling the woman’s foot.”²⁸¹

The practice of binding the feet of the Chinese women to make them sexually attractive to men began in the T’ang Dynasty (AD 618–907) and endured for over a

²⁷⁸ M. Hirschfeld, *Sexual Anomalies and Perversions: Physical and Psychological Development, Diagnosis and Treatment* (London: Encyclopaedic Press, 1966), 536, 578.

²⁷⁹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 13, 28, 37, 112, 116, 325, 335, 338.

²⁸⁰ Mathis, *Clear Thinking about Sexual Deviations*, 91–102.

²⁸¹ J. Matignon, *Superstition, Crime and Misery in China* (Paris & Lyon, 1900).

thousand years. The practice of making these “golden lily” mutilations was officially discontinued in 1911, but women with these distorted feet could still be seen on the streets of Peking in the 1990s. Alaska’s Kutchin Indians also did a similar deformation of the feet.

The use of a particular part of the female anatomy as a fetish is called partialism. “Frottage refers to partialism involving the buttocks. In which the male feels compelled to rub against the buttocks of females ... He usually prefers to maneuver so that his erect penis rubs against the female’s buttock, although some can obtain orgasm even if only their hip or thigh is in direct contact ... the man interested in frottage habituates crowded elevators, streetcars, subways, and other places where a crowd is certain to contain females and to be thick enough to excuse his apparently ‘accidental’ contacts.”

Mathis also links fetishism with transvestism in the case of a man found to be wearing black lace-trimmed panties. “This could have represented transvestism rather than a fetishism ... if he used the panties as a sexual end, that is, only as an aid to masturbation, then they probably were a fetish. On the other hand, if he wore them in order to admire himself or to be admired, they may have been a part of transvestism.” “Fetishism usually becomes manifest in early adolescence. Punishment is irrational and ineffective ... Psychiatric consultation is mandatory.”

McCary quotes Gebhard in defining a practical continuum of fetishistic behavior. “At one end are persons who express a slight preference for a fetish object; next are those holding a “strong preference;” next, those who must have the fetish to function sexually; and, at last, those who substitute the fetish for a human sexual partner.”²⁸² Gebhard believes that statistical normality ends and fetish deviance begins approximately at the point where strong preference is expressed.”²⁸³ “Fetishism is actually an intensification of the normal tendencies existing in almost all people. The fetishist obtains sexual gratification from a particular object or body part because of its unique relationship to some childhood conditioning.”

Money and Musaph have some interesting observations on fetishism. There is even a linkage of brain diseases with fetishism ... “observed in small number of patients with psychomotor epilepsy.”²⁸⁴ A possible relationship between paraphilia and temporal lobe abnormality is suggested by two cases in which the paraphilia was totally eradicated following the ‘cure’ of psychomotor epilepsy by unilateral temporal lobotomy.” Money and Musaph mention deviation theory as a cause of fetishism. They claim that the degeneration of hereditary/normal factors is necessary before perversity can develop. “The abnormality consists only if a partial aspect of the person of the opposite sex will attract the entire sexual interest, so that all other aspects pale beside it more or less into indifference.” A sharp distinction between the fetish and the person as a whole is not possible. “ ... In the life of every fetishist there can be assumed to have been an

²⁸² P. H. Gebhard, “Fetishism and Sadomasochism,” *Sex Research: Studies from the Kinsey Institute* (New York: Oxford Press, 1976).

²⁸³ McCary, McCary’s *Human Sexuality*, 357.

²⁸⁴ Money and Musaph, *Handbook of Sexology*, 10, 11, 973.

event which determined that particular stimulus is colored by sexual pleasure. This event will have taken place in early youth.” Good results in the treatment of fetishism have been reported.

Ford asserts that the fetish need not be physical and cites the case of a man who experienced a sudden orgasm on hearing a patient coughing in a paroxysmal fashion. “The association was with his mother, who was a consumptive, and with whom he had a strongly Oedipal relationship.”²⁸⁵

Mair claims that feet are the second most common sexual symbol among human cultures. He mentions that of the fifty clearly defined fetishes, foot and shoe fetishes are the most intense, most common, and most ancient. He claims that many “famous men were foot or shoe lovers, including Thomas Hardy, Goethe, filmmaker D. W. Griffith, and author George du Maurier.”²⁸⁶ In the United States there is a national foot fetish organization, the Lotus Love Foot Erotica Club, which publishes a newsletter called Foot-Notes and provides a personal introduction service. The Palace of Pedic Pleasure in London is a brothel specializing in the use of feet and toes to stimulate clients. “There is the Mackintosh Society, whose members have a fetish for clothing made of rubber, because of both the smell and the texture. It has one thousand members in twenty-three countries.”

Money describes the transvestite male who must wear some article of female clothing himself before he can perform sexually as a fetishist. He notes that the enema fetish (klismaphilia), soiled underclothes, and products of elimination (urophilia and coprophilia) are also fetish paraphilias.²⁸⁷ “The fetishist’s erotosexual arousal is contingent on something less than a complete sexual partner ... Even if the partner is present and having intercourse with him, the fetishist will be dependent on the fetish object, or at least the memory image of it, in order to perform successfully. He may also use the fetish when alone, masturbating, as a substitute for coitus.”²⁸⁸

Money points out that “Religion, mythology, and folklore in our society have, since ancient times, been replete with relics, talismans, amulets, fetishes, charms that work miracles, protect from harm, and have mystical powers of prophecy and magic.”²⁸⁹ He lists several paraphilias that are related to fetishism: hyphephilia, the touchy-feely paraphilia; mysophilia, erotic attraction to filth; klismaphilia, the enema paraphilia; olfactophilia, the smell fetish; autonepiophilia, infantilism or paraphiliac wearing of diapers; and transvestophilia, paraphiliac transvestism or cross-dressing. “Transvestophilia is only secondarily a fetishistic syndrome. Primarily it is one of the gender-transposition syndromes.”

²⁸⁵ B. J. Ford, *Patterns of Sex: The Mating Urge and Our Sexual Future* (New York: St. Martin’s Press, Inc., 1980), 167.

²⁸⁶ G. Mair, *The Sex Book Digest* (New York: William Morrow and Company, 1982), 105, 106.

²⁸⁷ J. Money, *The Destroying Angel* (Buffalo, New York: Prometheus Press, 1985).

²⁸⁸ Money, *Venuses Penuses*, 464.

²⁸⁹ Money, J. (1986). *Love Maps: Clinical Concepts of Sexual/Erotic Health and Pathology, Paraphilia and Gender Transposition*. New York: Irviheston Publishers, Inc., pp. 63, 65, 66, and 96.

DSM-IV splits the sexual disorder into two categories: fetishism (code 302.81) and transvestic fetishism (code 302.3).²⁹⁰ Diagnostic criteria for fetishism are: 1) Over a period of at least six months, recurrent, intense, sexually arousing fantasies, sexual urges, or behaviors involving the use of nonliving objects (e.g., female undergarments). 2) The fantasies, sexual urges, or behaviors cause clinically significant distress or impairment in social, occupational, or other important areas of functioning. 3) The fetish objects are not limited to articles of female clothing used in cross-dressing (as in transvestic fetishism) or devices designed for the purpose of tactile genital stimulation (e.g., a vibrator).

Diagnostic criteria for transvestic fetishism are: 1) Over a period of at least six months, in a heterosexual male, recurrent, intense, sexually arousing fantasies, sexual urges, or behaviors involving cross-dressing. 2) The fantasies, sexual urges, or behaviors cause clinically significant distress or impairment in social, occupational, or other important areas of functioning. DSM-IV also points out that fetishism tends to be chronic and typically begins in childhood.

Crenshaw reports that in a case report by Fedoroff,²⁹¹ the serotonin agonist buspirone reduced paraphiliac fantasies and transvestic fetishism.²⁹² It is difficult to find literature about other successful medical treatments for fetishes. Psychotherapies, mainly aversive therapy and systematic desensitization, have been used with inconclusive results.

Fetishistic behavior is often labeled by the police as “disorderly conduct” and is seldom recorded as a “sex offense.” Organizations catering to these individuals have emerged openly in the past few years, including the Macintosh Society and the Atomage Correspondence Club. The Atomage Club had about 200 members and specialized in leather clothing for sadomasochism. Fetishists may be homosexual, bisexual, or heterosexual, and the majority of them are seldom prosecuted.²⁹³

The Weinberg, Williams, and Callahan study of 262 homosexual foot fetishists found considerable involvement in sadomasochistic practices. “Of all forms of erotic symbolism, the most frequent is that which idealizes the foot and the shoe.”²⁹⁴ Extreme sexual attraction to high-heeled shoes is called “altocalciphilia,” and general shoe fetishism is called “retifism.” Leg fetishism is “crurofact,” and the study of members in still another 1,100-plus membership organization, the Foot Fraternity, in the United States. The 262 homosexual foot fetishists in this study primarily learned fetishism in childhood

²⁹⁰ American Psychiatric Association. (1994). *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*. (4th ed.). Washington, DC: Author, pp. 526 and 531.

²⁹¹ Fedoroff, J. P. (1992). Buspirone Hydrochloride in the Treatment of an Atypical Paraphilia. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 21, pp. 401-406.

²⁹² Crenshaw, T., & Goldberg, J. (1996). *Sexual Pharmacology – Drugs that Affect Sexual Functioning*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, p. 254.

²⁹³ Weinberg, M., Williams, C., & Callahan, C. (1994). Homosexual Foot Fetishism. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 23(6), p. 612.

²⁹⁴ M. Weinberg, C. Williams, and C. Callahan, “If the Shoe Fits—Exploring Male Homosexual Foot Fetishism,” *Journal of Sex Research* 32, no. 1 (1995): 17–27.

(mean age twelve years), reportedly from pleasurable experiences rather than negative ones as some researchers have hypothesized. Masturbatory fantasies were important reinforcers to 80 percent of the respondents in the study, and fewer than a quarter of them were characterized by a distinct psychotic personality profile.

At the same time that President Clinton was preparing to make his acceptance speech for the Democratic Party's presidential nomination, it was revealed that his top strategic advisor, Dick Morris, was a foot fetishist who had paid a Washington prostitute \$200 an hour for "kinky" sex more than 400 times. He would suck her toes, lick the bottoms of her feet, and have her rub her feet over his face, chest, and genitals. He also showed her a foot fetish magazine with photographs of men sucking women's toes.

On the night of August 22, 1996, a reporter for the Star tabloid newspaper had photographed Morris and the prostitute together on the terrace of Dick Morris' \$440-a-day hotel room, which had been paid for by President Clinton's campaign funds. The prostitute had kept a diary of her meetings with Morris for nearly a year and sold the story for nearly \$50,000 to the tabloid with the details of his peculiarities. The story was on the cover of Time, Star, and Newsweek, as well as the front page of many of the nation's newspapers.

On May 31, 2000, Darin Keith Swearington, thirty-three, son of a Bayou La Batre minister, was given a life term sentence for his foot fetish activities. Swearington was classified as a habitual offender who had stalked women in Birmingham and Mobile, Alabama, burglarized the women's homes, and used their shoes for sexual pleasure. He had stalked two young women in Mobile, while he was out on \$160,000 bail from his Birmingham case, and stuffed twenty to thirty pairs of their shoes in a refrigerator and freezer while the women were out of their apartment. A week later, he had taken girls' shoes and underwear from a school.²⁹⁵

M. Pyromania

Pyromania is compulsive fire setting—a type of arson. Arson is the intentional damage or destruction of property by means of fire or explosives. The motivation for the pyromania type of arson is sexual. A pyromaniac receives sexual gratification by setting fires, seeing the flames, smelling the smoke, or hearing or seeing firefighting equipment. Often the pyromaniac is drunk or under the influence of drugs when setting the fire. One of the reasons that the crime is poorly prosecuted is the general poor understanding of the motivations.

Morneau and Rockwell list pyromania as one of the dangerous perversions, along with lust mutilation, rape, necrophilia, flagellation, and pedophilia.²⁹⁶ They point out

²⁹⁵ "Judge Sentences Foot Fetishist to Life in Prison," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 2, 2000): 7C.

²⁹⁶ Morneau and Rockwell, Sex, Motivation, and the Criminal Offender, 117–127.

that knowing that pyromaniacs were frequently bed wetters and cruel to animals in their youth can help perceptive law enforcement officers develop suspects. Pyromania is also associated with low intelligence, low impulse control, and learning disabilities. Many pyromaniac people are reckless drivers and have frequent outbursts of uncontrolled rage. Karpman writes, "Pyromania belongs to a particular developmental phase in psychosexual development. Awakening and ungratified sexuality often impel neurotic persons to seek a symbolic solution of the conflict between instinct and reality. There is a relation between impotence and frigidity and pyromania. Homosexual, sadistic, or other regressive motives may be at work. Orgasm may be achieved during conflagration."²⁹⁷ Half of all persons arrested for arson are juveniles.²⁹⁸

The pyromaniac typically experiences mounting tension, restlessness, and an urge for motion as the first symptoms of an oncoming act of pyromania. As the fire is lit, or during the act, sexual excitement and gratification are achieved.²⁹⁹ Once orgasm occurs, the individual often feels guilty and frequently steps forward to help extinguish the blaze.³⁰⁰

Pyromania has been associated with the sex urge for a long time, but only in recent years has this been confirmed and clarified. Stekel published a detailed description of pyromaniacs.³⁰¹ Karpman used this case material to delve deeper into the sexual aspects of these arsons.³⁰² Conn and Guttmacher added case material observations.³⁰³³⁰⁴ McCary was one of those who classifies pyromania under the heading of fetishism.³⁰⁵ About half of the pyromaniacs who have been studied were of subnormal intelligence or mentally defective. DSM IV points out that it is important to rule out other causes of fire setting before giving a diagnosis of pyromania.³⁰⁶ Volavka suggests that fire setters have a disturbance of the brain's serotonergic system, which is very much involved with the sexuality of men.³⁰⁷ Fire is a symbol of sexuality. Orgasm may be achieved during conflagration.

Pyromaniacs and other types of arsonists ignited more than 140 churches across the southern part of the United States in the 1995–1996 period. During the first nine

²⁹⁷ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 140.

²⁹⁸ U.S. Department of Justice, "OJJDP Fact Sheet No. 91" (February 1999).

²⁹⁹ Roffins. (1969).

³⁰⁰ Coleman. (1972).

³⁰¹ W. Stekel, *Peculiarities of Behaviour—Wandering Mania, Dipsomania, Kleptomania, Pyromania and Allied Acts*, Volumes I and II (New York: Liveright Publishing Corp., 1924).

³⁰² B. Karpman, "Stekel's Peculiarities of Behavior (Kleptomania, Pyromania)," *Archives of Neurology & Psychiatry* 24 (1930): 787–808.

³⁰³ Conn. (1949).

³⁰⁴ M. Guttmacher, *Sex Offenses, the Problem, Causes and Prevention* (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., Inc., 1951), 187.

³⁰⁵ McCary, *McCary's Human Sexuality*, 357, 358.

³⁰⁶ American Psychiatric Association, *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, 614, 615.

³⁰⁷ J. Volavka, *Neurobiology of Violence* (Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press, 1995), 184, 185.

months of 1996, there were ninety-two churches worshipped in by blacks set on fire and 148 other churches. Almost all of the publicity blamed the fires on racial strife. None of the numerous newspaper and magazine articles on the fires mentioned the obvious fact that pyromaniacs ignited a percentage of them. Apparently the sexual motivation to ignite fires is still not widely known.

Nationwide, 429 arson fires, bombings, and attempted bombings of houses of worship were investigated in 1996 and 1997. The FBI reported 199 people were arrested in connection with 150 of the church arson fires.³⁰⁸

The Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention of the U.S. Department of Justice mentioned in their national satellite TV broadcast of November 14, 2000, that each year police make more than 250,000 arrests of children age twelve and younger. Of all juvenile (under age eighteen) arrests, those of very young offenders account for one in three of arson, and one in five for sex offense.

More than 33,000 wildfires hit the South in 2001, the worst rash for nearly a decade. Nine suspects were arrested on arson charges in Tennessee. Most of the suspects who started some of the thousands of wildfires tell investigators nearly the same story each time—they were bored. “Most say it’s something to do,” Tennessee Agriculture Crime Unit supervisor Max Thomas said. These people were apparently looking for the excitement the fires caused.

N. Mysophilia

Mysophilia is the general term for a group of paraphilias in which sexual excitement is generated by filth or excretions. Krafft-Ebing attributes it to “latent masochism”—disgusting acts for the purpose of self-humiliation and sexual gratification.³⁰⁹ “Impressions obtained through the taste and smell, which in the normal man produce only feelings of nausea and disgust, are made the basis of the most vivid emotions of lust producing in the perverse subject mighty impulses to orgasm and even ejaculation.” Coprophilia and urophilia are subtypes describing specific types of excreta. These are listed in the American Psychiatric Association’s DSM III-R as “sexual disorders not otherwise specified” and defined as paraphilias that do not meet the criteria for any of the other specific categories.

Coprophilia (also coprolagnia) is a paraphilia in which sexual excitement is associated with eating, smelling, throwing, or handling feces. The act of defecation is also involved. Havelock Ellis tells of Parisian brothels, which were called “tabouret de verre,” that had glass floors so the customers could watch women defecating at close range.³¹⁰ Karpman and Freud saw it as directly traceable to early childhood experiences and

³⁰⁸ “Church Fire Investigators Go High Tech,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 17, 1998): 16A.

³⁰⁹ Krafft-Ebing, *Psychopathia Sexualis*, 123–127.

³¹⁰ H. Ellis, *Psychology of Sex*, 9th ed. (London: 1933).

interests. James Beal, sixty-two, pleaded guilty December 11, 2001, in Grand Rapids, Michigan, to splattering postal employees with feces. He faced three to twelve years in prison. The Bible mentions eating excrement and drinking urine in 2 Kings 18:27 and Isaiah 36:12.

Coprophagia is a closely allied term meaning “ingestion of dung or feces.” In the ancient Hindu ascetical sect in India known as “Tapas,” or the “Tapasians,” the diet was supplemented with cow dung, human excreta, and urine.³¹¹ In the Academy Award-winning film *The Last Emperor*, the preoccupation with the young emperor’s feces was depicted and coprophagia implied. Today, the sexual act of being smeared with feces is referred to as a “mud wrestling.” The rampant promiscuity of the gay liberation movement has enabled this disgusting preoccupation with awful offal to become more common. The resurgence of formerly rare bowel diseases among homosexual men is one of the results.

Urophilia is the paraphilia in which sexual excitement is generated by urine or urination. Watching one another urinate fascinates children, as well as some adults. Increased sexual excitement causes some women to expel urine. Men cannot urinate with an erection. Undinism is the association of sexual ideas with water, including urine. In this perversion, the urophiliac enjoys having a partner urinate into his or her mouth or on his body (“golden showers”). *Time* magazine of October 24, 1977, and the 60 Minutes television program of June 4, 1978, both mentioned Prime Minister Desai of India’s habit of drinking his own urine in a “urine therapy.” At least two books and a newspaper article have been published which advocate “uropathy”: John W. Armstrong’s *The Water of Life: A Treatise on Urine Therapy*, The Waters of Life Institute’s *The Miracle of Urine Therapy*, and Martha M. Christy’s *Your Own Perfect Medicine*. On page 7 of her book, Christy claims urine is “one of the most powerful medicines known to man.” Drinking urine has been taught as a survival technique to military and travelers in the desert.

O. Prostitution

Prostitution, often referred to as “commercial vice,” is a sex offense that is characterized by the payment of money or favors for sexual services. It is often referred to as “The World’s Oldest Profession,” but as Tannahill points out: “If the word profession is taken to imply specialization on a more-or-less full-time basis, then the Shaman, or Witch Doctor, was probably ahead of the prostitute by thousands, or even tens of thousands of years.”³¹² Later in her book she enumerates the history of the second oldest profession from the most ancient Sumerian temple prostitutes down through the harimto of Babylon, the Greek temple hetairai, the Green Bower Girls of China, the

³¹¹ B. Walker, *Hindu World* (London: 1968), 80.

³¹² Tannahill, *Sex in History*, 78.

Giyân of Baghdad, the auianine of Mexico, and the various types of bordello women of more recent history.

In AD 1 in Rome, there were 36,000 registered prostitutes. In 1760 in Paris, one of every eight women was a prostitute. In the late 1700s in London, child brothels proliferated with fourteen- and fifteen-year-old harlots in an attempt to avoid the serious venereal diseases of the older whores of that period. In 1844 in New York, it was estimated that there was one prostitute for every seven men in the population. The famous Kinsey Reports of 1948 and 1953 reported that 70 percent of the men in the United States had visited a prostitute at least once. In 1977, it was estimated up to 3,000 boys and girls under the age of fourteen were engaged in prostitution in Los Angeles.³¹³ In 1980, prostitution was outlawed in thirty-eight states and two states punished prostitutes under anti-vagrancy laws. California tried to decriminalize it but was not successful. Prostitution has been legal in Nevada for many years, and several counties there permit open bordellos. In 1996, prostitutes advertised openly on the main streets. Forty-four states have statutes against the act of soliciting (asking a woman for sex for pay). France, Germany, Italy, Spain, England, Switzerland, and the Netherlands have attempted to control the worst features of the bawdy houses from time to time by operating them as government enterprises. In 1992, Amsterdam decided to promote its booming annual \$830 million sex industry as part of its tourist trade.³¹⁴ There are, however, still existing strong religious sanctions against it.

In Muslim countries, prostitution is strongly prohibited. Three prostitutes were executed by firing squad in Tehran in July 1979, and twenty-seven of their male patrons were flogged with fifteen lashes each. In 2001, a fundamentalist killed twenty prostitutes in Iran for “the sake of God.” The Koran says: “Scourge the whore and the whore monger with a hundred lashes ... you must not give way to pity in God’s religion.” Biblical law made whoring a capital crime. When Tamar played the whore, Judah said, “Bring her out, and let her be burned” (Genesis 38:24). “When the daughter of a priest profanes herself through prostitution, she profanes her father; she shall be burned to death” (Leviticus 21:9). “... The men of her town shall stone her to death, because she committed a disgraceful act in Israel by prostituting herself in her father’s house” (Deuteronomy 22:21). “... Wild beasts, these will hate the harlot and make her devastated” (Revelation 17:16). Christ, however, absolved, befriended, and honored Mary Magdalene who had been a prostitute. Later in church history, we find that Saint Thais, Saint Pelagia, and Saint Mary of Egypt were also absolved of their sexual sins.

The communist government of the People’s Republic of China was remarkably successful in reducing prostitution in that country nearly to the disappearing point. It required a major effort with heavily repressive measures over a long period time—some

³¹³ Ibid.

³¹⁴ “Amsterdam Tourist Industry Set to Promote Legal Prostitution,” Northwest Florida Daily News, (June 6, 1992): 9A.

fifteen years between 1950 and 1965—to accomplish it. But, by the year 2001, prostitution had returned to China with a vengeance, according to an incisive article in the September 3rd U.S. News & World Report. Just as AIDS first spread in Africa, along the truck routes from prostitute to trucker to prostitute, a similar pattern now shows in China. From the Burmese border city of Ruili north and east, AIDS has spread mainly along the truck routes where brothels proliferate. Along China’s Route 107 in towns such as Wenlou in Henan province, giant neon signs blaring names like “Sweet Heaven” on hotels are reputed to have as many as 600 women in them. Strangely, also in the year 2001, a high official in the World Health Organization (WHO) was advocating decriminalization of prostitution in Asia because the laws were threatening WHO efforts to control the HIV. Gilles Pomeroy, WHO Western Pacific regional advisor on HIV/AIDS, said, “We are certainly advocating decriminalization of prostitution in Asia.”³¹⁵

In the United States, a major poll of the populace, the National Survey of Crime Severity, taken in 1985, scored the various aspects of prostitution as follows:

ASPECT	SCORE
A person gets customers for prostitutes	6.4
A person runs a prostitution ring	6.1
A woman engages in prostitution	2.1
A person is a customer in a house of prostitution	1.6

So it would seem that the general opinion is that prostitution in itself is not too serious a crime, but those others who illegally profit from it are more censored.

In addition to the moral proscriptions against prostitution, there are economic and health problems. Along with the prostitutes go the white slavers, organized crime, madams, pimps, procurers, police corruption, bribery, drug addiction, alcoholism, and venereal disease. Today there are four general types of a female prostitute: the call girl (at the top of the hierarchy), the part-time prostitute, the house girl, and the streetwalker (at the bottom of the hierarchy). More than half of the female prostitutes tested in Nairobi and 40 percent of those in Miami tested positive for the AIDS virus. Their high frequency of sexual encounters with anonymous partners—thirty to forty per week is not uncommon—often results in lesions and sores, which provide ports for the entry of the infection³¹⁶ In the United States, 62 percent of female-reported AIDS cases were in black women.³¹⁷

The police in Pensacola, Florida, resorted to a form of entrapment in August and December 1990 when they stationed female undercover agents among the prostitutes

³¹⁵ The Lancet 358 (August 25, 2001): 643.
³¹⁶ G. Antonio, *The AIDS Cover-Up* (1986), 87
³¹⁷ Sterk, Elifson, and German, “Female Crack Users and Their Sexual Relationships,” *Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 4 (2000): 354.

and seized the men who approached them for sex. The names and addresses of those arrested were published in the newspaper, and these men were given a \$250 to \$500 fine for the crime of soliciting. Judge William White imposed an additional punishment on a dozen of these men by sentencing them to buy space in the newspaper to run their photographs.³¹⁸ This type of publicity has destroyed several families. It is one thing to know your partner had visited a prostitute and quite another to have the whole town aware of it.

The consequences of being revealed as a customer of a prostitute are often catastrophic in the lives of these men. Florida State Representative Marvin Couch, forty-two, resigned his office March 1, 1996, after being caught in the act of being felled by a prostitute in his pickup truck. Couch attended prayer meetings in the Capitol with other lawmakers who call themselves the “God Squad” and earned a perfect rating from the Christian Coalition of Florida for his service since 1992. At the time, Couch was married and had six children. After his arrest, he admitted that he had paid prostitutes for sex in the past.³¹⁹

One of the most sensational news stories of 1993 was about a ring of prostitutes in Hollywood, California, who worked for Heidi, an upper-class young woman, and served the many varied sexual desires of the rich and famous in the film industry. Two of the prostitutes—a good friend (who has written a book about her activities) of Heidi’s and another Hollywood madam—appeared on the Maury Povich television show on September 8, 1993, and told of the great amounts of money they were sometimes paid (up to \$15,000) and expensive gifts they received. The usual fee for an evening was \$1,500. The customers would often fall in love with these beautiful, young women and maintain expensive affairs with them. As Heidi’s trials were paraded through the media, many of the rich and famous in Hollywood had their marriages and careers seriously jeopardized. Heidi’s address book contained the names of many actors, directors, and executives in the movie industry. This book fell into the hands of the Hollywood Police Department.

A Playboy report on the subject, although admitting that prostitution is more open today than formerly, points out that there is a continuation of a long-term trend of less frequent male patronage of prostitutes than in former generations. This trend has coincided with the emancipation of women and the decay of the double standard, for, as dating partners have become sexual partners, prostitutes have become somewhat more unnecessary and undesirable. Still, there are many women today that have discovered that they can be very well paid for doing something they would rather do than anything else that they know of. Thanks to modern devices, techniques, and medications, they have relatively less to fear from pregnancy and disease than in former times. Prostitutes organized in the 1980s in efforts to decriminalize prostitution in such groups as COYOTE (Call Off Your Old Tired Ethics), PONY (Prostitutes of New York),

³¹⁸ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 25 and December 15, 1990).

³¹⁹ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 2, 1996): 5C.

and ASP (Associated Seattle Prostitutes). In 2002, there was an organization called Helping Individual Prostitutes Survive (HIPS) that had been cruising the streets in Washington, DC, since 1993 and handing out free condoms to street prostitutes.³²⁰

A former prostitute who called herself Jane Roe II of West Palm Beach, Florida, entered a federal lawsuit against the prostitution laws in May 1995. In her petition, she described her old job as a “lucrative (and often glamorous) business” to which she would like to return.³²¹ It’s not a frivolous lawsuit. U.S. District Judge Jose A. Gonzales, Jr., refused to toss the case out even after receiving a request from the State Attorney General Bob Butterworth’s office. The state plans to fight. “This right just plain does not exist,” said Cecil Dykas, an assistant attorney general in Hollywood. “You do not have a privacy right as she’s defined it.”

A conference was held among more than 100 nations in Sweden in 1996 to cooperate more closely to protect children from being lured into prostitution, but on March 23, 1997, several articles were published in the newspapers from Associated Press writers Donna Bryson and L. J. Hazleton that indicated that the problem of child prostitution was getting worse. The United Nations Children’s Fund estimated that every year at least one million children, most of them girls, become prostitutes. UNICEF’s estimate included at least 100,000 children in the United States and an equal number in India. In Kenya, child prostitution has become accepted as normal.³²² Most of the exploiters of child prostitutes are local, near their home, but there is also a worldwide network that encourages a thriving tourist trade.³²³

A more recent estimate in 1997 puts the estimate at 1,000,000 adults and 500,000 juvenile prostitutes in the United States, 50 percent of whom are street prostitutes. Seventy percent of the women in jail were first arrested for prostitution and “over 30% of the females currently in jail are incarcerated solely on prostitution charges.”³²⁴ Why should it be illegal to sell something that is perfectly legal to give away?

Although prostitution is primarily a female crime, there is also a substantial number of male prostitutes. In Atlanta, Georgia, which was considered a gay epicenter in 1994, Boles and Elifson identified a sample of 224 male street prostitutes. Their sample included 17.9 percent homosexual, 46.4 percent heterosexual, and 35.7 percent bisexually identified men. The rate of HIV infection was 50 percent for the homosexual, 18.5 percent for the heterosexual, and 36.5 percent for the bisexual. Thirty percent of the homosexuals, 20.8 percent of the heterosexuals, and 32.1 percent of the bisexuals had syphilis. Addicted to cocaine were 87.8 percent of the homosexuals, 68.2 percent of

³²⁰ Northwest Florida Daily News (July 8, 2002).

³²¹ E. Goodman, “Sex for Sale—Will it Soon be a Legal Act?” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal.

³²² *Lancet* 359 1526.

³²³ Associated Press, “Amsterdam Tourist Industry Set to Promote Legal Prostitution,” Northwest Florida Daily News, 9A.

³²⁴ “Ex-prostitute Files Suit to Legalize Her Profession,” Northwest Florida Daily News 2B.

the heterosexuals, and 81.2 percent of the bisexuals. Of the sample, 17.9 percent were black and 82.1 percent were white.³²⁵

The literature on prostitution is vast and difficult to summarize because of the widely different viewpoints on the subject. Prostitution is alive and well in the United States. It is obvious that if prostitution continues to exist in our culture, there is a need for this service; otherwise, it would not exist. In the Bible, Ezekiel 23 tells the story of two sisters in prostitution and dire punishments of stoning and cutting off nose and ears.

P. Bestiality and Zooerasty

These are terms denoting sex acts between man and animal. Zoophilia is the experiencing of sexual excitement by stroking or fondling animals. It is usually associated with experimental sexual activities of adolescents in rural communities and is considered a paraphilia only when it involves the deliberate continued use of animals as sexual objects. Bestiality is subject to social ostracism and penalties in almost every state. Rhode Island imposes prison for not less than seven years, but in Minnesota, the penalty is not more than one year. According to Victor Streib, law professor at Cleveland State University, the first execution of a juvenile was for bestiality in Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts, in 1642. Old English law classified carnal knowledge of an animal by a man or woman as one of the “unnatural” sex offenses (Cushing, 1950). The Bible classed it as a perversion (Leviticus 18:23) and dictated death for the man or woman and the beast (Leviticus 20:15–16).

In spite of legends to the contrary, such as those cited by Valeria Finucci in her 2003 book *The Manly Masquerade* (p. 58–65), the ancient Greek minotaur of Minos, and Leda and the swan, the sexual connection of human beings and lower animals is generally grossly unsuitable in the anatomical sense and universally nonfunctional in the reproductive sense. The 1948 Kinsey investigators estimated that 17 percent of men reared on farms in the United States had at least some sexual contact with animals and that coitus with calves, sheep, or burros was the most frequent type. Calves will suck whatever is placed in their mouth whether it is their mother’s teat, a finger, or a little boy’s penis. Kinsey estimated that 3.6 percent of the women in his sample had some sort of contact with animals and that half that number involved only general bodily contact; about a fifth had the animals lick their genitals, and only one woman in his entire 12,000-plus sample group had actual coitus with an animal. The Playboy survey reported roughly comparable observations. This is in spite of a considerable amount of pornography that depicts a male animal such as a pony, donkey, or large dog copulating with a woman.

³²⁵ J. Boles and K. Elifson, “Sexual Identity and HIV: The Male Prostitute,” *The Journal of Sex Research* (1994): 39–46.

Bestiality is a source of several serious diseases in humans. As a result of concentrated study brought about by the AIDS plague, it has recently been observed that whenever a disease crosses the barrier from one species of animal to another, the results are often devastating. A virus or other disease-causing agent may not harm its normal host, but can be deadly in its new host. The myxomatosis virus causes harmless warts in the South American jungle rabbit, but leads to a 99 percent mortality rate in the European rabbit. The virus of African swine fever does not inconvenience the African warthog, but it kills nearly all infected European pigs.³²⁶ AIDS itself is a disease that has somehow crossed the species barrier from the African green monkey to man. Other diseases formerly found only in animals are now beginning to show up in men: Toxoplasmosis is caused by a small intracellular parasite often found in cat feces; cryptosporidiosis is an intestinal disease caused by a protozoan usually found in farm livestock, cats, dogs, and other animals only; giardiasis is a bowel disease caused by the flagellate *Giardia Lamblia*, which is usually found only in beavers.

Doctor Peter K. Lewin, of the Hospital for Sick Children in Toronto, has speculated that cases of AIDS-like diseases may have originated from the Visna virus, which is endemic in flocks of sheep in Europe. This virus causes a neuro-degenerative disease similar to the late stages of AIDS in some patients. It may have come from a member of a homosexual group known for its lax sexual mores in Northwest Europe.³²⁷ Syphilis also was believed to have originated from sheep.

Dr. Gene G. Abel, head of the Behavioral Medical Institute of Atlanta, told the Annual Conference of the American Association of Sex Educators, Counselors, and Therapists on May 12, 2000, that bestiality is a major factor leading to other sexual misconduct. Sex with the lower animals is necessarily impersonal in that there is very little intellectual interaction. This is likely to cause the zoophiliac to be impersonal with a wife, girlfriend, or sexual assault victim in later life. If you can be sexual with an animal and no love or romance is involved, it will likely be the same way later with people, he rationalized.

Mark Matthews' book *The Horseman* (1994) is an autobiographical account of his love affair with a pony. Matthews reported that some zoophiles he knows are not unlike transsexuals. Matthews has founded a nonprofessional support group for zoophiles called the Zoophilic Outreach Organization (ZOO) and argues that the majority of the members are fully functioning members of society who are merely sexually diverse and do not require any "treatment."

Bestiality may range from touching or fondling the genitals of animals to sexual intercourse and violent sexual abuse. Some species of animals may be seriously injured or die as a result of the abuse inflicted (e.g., penetration that damages internal organs).

³²⁶ J. Seale, "AIDS Virus Infection: Prognosis and Transmission," *Journal of the Royal Society of Medicine* 78 (1985): 613-615.

³²⁷ P. K. Lewin, *Canadian Medical Association Journal* (1985): 132,1110.

In a study of sexual homicide, 40 percent of the men who said they had been sexually abused in childhood reported having sexual contact with animals.³²⁸

Q. Scoptophilia

Scoptophilia, or scoptolagnia, literally means “love of looking.” The scoptophiliacs are generally the voyeur or “peeping Tom” (named for one of the characters in the legend of Lady Godiva), types who derive excessive sexual excitement from surreptitiously viewing other people’s genitalia. Mixoscopia is a term for the sexual excitement and gratification resulting from watching others in the sex act. Another related type of scoptophiliac is the exhibitionist (flasher or autagonistophiliac), an indecent exposé who derives sexual excitement from having others see his sexual organs. Scoptophilia is the most frequently reported of the sex offenses, resulting in some 35 percent of all sex crimes known to the police in some jurisdictions.³²⁹ It is considered a nuisance offense, generally implying no serious threat or assault. Freud linked voyeurism and exhibitionism as two aspects of the same problem in which the sexual energy is totally used up in the act of looking.³³⁰ Many scientists had hypothesized that early peeping predicated later, more assaultive sexual and nonsexual crime, but this has not been borne out by modern research. Langevin found the association very weak: 18 percent of voyeurs in one study and only 3 percent in another study had assault convictions.³³¹ Another theory is that we have inherited it from our ancient animal ancestors’ mating displays.

R. Exhibitionism and Voyeurism

Exhibitionism and voyeurism, in spite of being among the most minor kinds of sex crimes, often get participants into very serious trouble. On August 27, 1997, Robert Doolittle shot Greg Dean Cowart in the neck as he tried to enter his home in Pensacola, Florida, at about 11 pm. Cowart was wanted in other states on flashing charges.³³² On March 19, 1998, a Florida state panel passed legislation creating criminal penalties for voyeuristic acts such as secretly videotaping, recording, or filming people in places where they have an expectation of privacy such as a restroom or dressing room. Those convicted of “lewd, lascivious, or indecent” conduct under the bill could be found guilty of a first-degree misdemeanor and face imprisonment for up to a year. A subsequent

³²⁸ U.S. Dept. of Justice, “Animal Abuse and Youth Violence,” Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Programs Bulletin (September 2001): 8.

³²⁹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 27.

³³⁰ L. Saul, (1952).

³³¹ L. Saul, *The Bases of Human Behavior* (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1951).

³³² “Man Shoots Intruder Suspected in Flashing Case,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 29, 1997): 1A

conviction for a similar offense would be a felony, punishable by up to five years in prison.³³³ In St. Louis, Missouri, James Beine, sixty-one, a defrocked Roman Catholic priest, was sentenced to twelve years in prison on September 15, 2003, for exposing himself. Beine had been dismissed from the priesthood in 1977 over allegations of sexual abuse.

Thanks to technological advances that have allowed tiny, affordable video cameras to fall into the hands of peeping Toms with a penchant for voyeurism, private moments of individuals became available to someone's VCR or even on the Internet. Smoke detectors, exit signs, cellular phones, stuffed animals—almost anything can hold a hidden camera, spawning a troubling new market in voyeurism. Some Internet entrepreneurs were selling videotapes or charging for sneak peeks on their Web sites in 1999, and the practice was hard to stop. Some voyeurs even put little mirrors on their shoes that contained little hidden cameras that allowed them to shoot pictures up women's skirts.³³⁴

Public displays of affection are generally considered acceptable, but there is a line of demarcation where private, intimate actions become public exhibitionistic performances. Tolerance guidelines are something like this: holding hands? No problem. Walking arm in arm? That's cool. Hugging? Okay, depending on the amount and duration of body contact. Kissing? Fine, if it's quick and tidy, but no tongues please. Petting and fondling? Nope. Illegal use of the hands is a major no-no. For a lot of people, this is where lovey-dovey innocent stuff turns into serious, sexual behavior. Foreplay and beyond? Absolutely not. Expect to get a ticket for indecent exposure or exhibitionism if you're caught with your pants down.³³⁵

A man who exposes his genitals is typically described as filth, while a woman who exposes is typically described as entertainment. A woman who chooses to expose can often earn a lot of money by exposing.³³⁶ Most exhibitionists commit a large number of sexually deviant acts during their lives and show a continued propensity to re-offend. In a study of 561 adult subjects, exhibitionists reported a lifetime average of more than 500 incidents.³³⁷

Other variants of exhibitionism are called "streaking" and "mooning." Streaking was popular in the 1970s and involved individuals or groups, often college students, running naked through public areas, sometimes during graduation exercises. A twenty-seven-year-old man streaked past Queen Elizabeth II's Rolls Royce on May 7, 2002, as the

³³³ "Proposed Voyeurism Bill Targets Secret Videotaping," Northwest Florida Daily News (March 20, 1998): 2B.

³³⁴ "Video Voyeurs: They're Watching, Taping," Northwest Florida Daily News (August 13, 1999): A3.

³³⁵ "Get a Room," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (November 19, 1999): 1D.

³³⁶ F. Weber, "Coeducational Sex Offender Therapy," *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity—Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 6, no. 4 (1999): 311–315.

³³⁷ K. English, S. Pullen, and L. Jones, "Managing Adult Sex Offenders in the Community—A Containment Approach," *Research in Brief, National Institute of Justice* (January 1997): 2.

queen and Prince Philip toured through the town of Newcastle. Streakers are usually male. Similarly, males are more likely than females to moon, or expose, their bare buttocks in someone's direction, typically to express contempt.

Peodeiktophilia, "love of showing the penis," is a psychoanalytic model thought to be connected with early childhood relationships with mothers.

S. Pornophilia

The pornophiliac derives his primary sexual stimulation from pornography. Pornography (from the Greek *porne* and *graphos*) is the depiction of erotic behavior in pictures, writings, books, magazines, movies, plays, videocassettes, letters, or commercial products designed to elicit or enhance sexual arousal. A pornographer is one who deals in obscenity. The definition of obscenity and the prohibition against censorship involved in the First Amendment right to free speech are two of the main points concerning pornography that have been argued endlessly in our courts. The U.S. Supreme Court has handled more obscenity cases than nearly any other issue in its history. In the landmark 1957 *Roth v. U.S.* (354 U.S. 476) and *Alberts v. California* decisions of the court, the definition of obscenity was left up to local officials and the contemporary community standards of the region. If the material in question has some redeeming social value, then it is not to be considered obscene.

Other countries have resolved their similar problems by completely rescinding all laws against pornography. Denmark did this in 1968, and Sweden drastically modified its laws in 1971, so erotic material has become widely distributed in these countries. The result was a decline in the sales of pornographic materials and a drop in the number of sex crimes in the first year after the change in the law.³³⁸³³⁹ Erotographomania is a term sometimes used to distinguish conduct in which major sexual satisfaction is derived from viewing explicit paintings, sculpture, or other objects.

The ancient biblical guidance from Genesis 3 is that Eve saw the fruit and it looked good, and when Adam and Eve ate of the Tree of Knowledge, their eyes were opened and they saw that they were naked and were ashamed, and God punished them. Christ, in his great sermon on the mount, said, "You have heard it said, 'You shall not commit adultery.' But I say to you that everyone who looks at a woman with lust has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin tear it out and throw it away; it is better for you to lose one of your members than for your whole body to be thrown into hell" (Matthew 5:27–29). "The eye is the lamp of the body. So, if your eye is healthy, your whole body will be full of light; but if your eye is unhealthy, your whole body will be full of darkness" (Matthew 6:22–23).

³³⁸ S. Lawrence, *Decision in Denmark, the Legalizing of Pornography* (San Diego: Academy Press, 1970).

³³⁹ McCary, *McCary's Human Sexuality*

The eye is the window to the soul. Most of what we know comes from what we see. If we see tempting material, we will be tempted to do as the material suggests. Viewing pornography can easily lead us into crime.

The Federal Comstock Obscenity Act of 1872 classified contraceptive literature and devices as obscene material, but this was modified in 1936 so that physicians could prescribe contraceptives “... for the purpose of saving life or well-being of patients.” This major change in the description of pornography was mainly the work of Margaret Sanger, founder of the birth control movement in the United States. She opened the nation’s first birth control clinic in Brooklyn, New York, in 1916, and was made to serve thirty days in the workhouse in 1917 for “maintaining a public nuisance.” This illustrates how far we have come in the past eighty years in our approaches to this sex crime.

Several massive studies have been made of the harmful effects of pornography in order to formulate appropriate laws controlling it. Nineteen of the nation’s top experts conducted a two-year study in a Presidential Commission on Obscenity and Pornography, which published its 700-page report in 1970. The general resulting conclusion was that little, if any, harm could be directly traced to the effects of pornography. A second Presidential Commission, under the chairmanship of Henry Hudson, a Virginia state prosecutor who had earned a reputation of being a “policeman’s prosecutor” with his crackdowns on massage parlors and adult bookstores, made an about-face in their conclusion. The members of the commission noted that the United States was becoming increasingly “pervaded by sexual explicitness” in all forms of media. In their nearly 2,000-page 1986 report, they asserted that sex crimes can be linked to hardcore pornography and recommended that Congress force pornography traffickers to forfeit their profits and be prosecuted. A second conviction under obscenity laws would become a felony, guaranteeing at least a year behind bars.

There has been considerable hue and cry over the follow-up Child Protection and Obscenity Enforcement Act of 1987 with tens of thousands of letters and telephone calls to congressmen. Most of them were urging swift passage of the bill coming from a campaign orchestrated by the American Family Association of Tupelo, Mississippi.³⁴⁰ President Reagan signed the bill into law on November 18, 1988. Several women’s organizations, most notably Women Against Pornography (WAP), have also been successful in securing more restrictive anti-pornography legislation in some parts of the country.

Pornographic material that depicts dirty pictures of children was particularly objectionable to a majority of the public in 1989. Michael P. Haggerty, thirty-six, of Pensacola, Florida, was sentenced to 143 years in prison in 1987 for child pornography production and distribution. It is forbidden in all of the states, and thirteen states even bar “kiddie-porn” possession. The stigma of being exposed as a person possessing this material is so severe that it caused at least two men to kill themselves in 1987.

³⁴⁰ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 13, 1988).

A twenty-five-year-old Ohio student shot himself after being indicted for possessing child porn, and a Wisconsin lawyer left a suicide note that he had been “cursed with a demon for a sexual preference.” In 1989, a Florida man could be sentenced to five years behind bars for possessing one item of child pornography. The 1985 National Survey of Crime Severity rated the seriousness of showing pornographic movies to a minor child at the rather high score of 5.7. Congress twice directed the sentencing commission to increase its length of sentence guidelines for child pornography, once in November 1991 and again in April 1995.

The 1996 Child Pornography Prevention Act, which forbade any visual depiction of what “appears to be” children in sexually explicit situations, was still being discussed in the U.S. Supreme Court on October 30, 2001. Free speech advocates and pornographers were once again challenging the pornography laws.

In the second week of September 1998, government agents in thirteen countries raided the homes of dozens of members of the Wonderland Club, the largest child pornography ring yet encountered. Authorities in Europe and Australia locked up forty-nine people and planned dozens more arrests. Members traded “in the most vile pornography imaginable over the Internet. The images depicted everything from sexual abuse to the actual rape of children,” some as young as eighteen months.³⁴¹ The only thing they banned were snuff pictures, the actual killing of somebody. One alleged club member in Allen, Texas, committed suicide after being served with a search warrant. The case grew out of a 1996 bust of a San Jose, California, child pornography ring called the Orchid Club. One of the pedophiles cooperated with the agents by identifying an online purveyor of child porn in England where agents were able to uncover the Wonderland Club.

Another case of very heavy sentencing for pornography was reported in the Pensacola News Journal on February 4, 2000. Former navy computer maintenance man Andrew Peter Clark, thirty-four, of Corry Station, Florida, was discharged from the navy and sentenced to fifteen years in prison, ten years probation, and two years of community control for collecting and distributing pornographic photos of children.³⁴² In August 2001, 100 people were arrested for Internet child porn and one Web site owner was sentenced to life in prison. Rapists, kidnappers, and even some murderers have been sentenced to fifteen years.

Hollywood broached the queasy topic of erotic snuff films in their 8mm film in 1999, and in June that year, two men in Germany received life sentences for killing a woman on film. Dieter Korzen, thirty-seven, and Stefan Mahn, thirty, kidnapped a Turkish prostitute in Cologne and took her to a rural farmhouse. Then after setting the cameras rolling, they sexually tortured her, duct-taped her nose and mouth, then strangled her with a belt. In need of more footage, the men kidnapped a local woman

³⁴¹ E. Shannon, “Main Street Monsters,” *Time* 152, no. 11 (September 14, 1998): 59.

³⁴² “Ex-Navy Worker Gets 15 Years for Child Porn,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (February 4, 2000): 1A

and assaulted her in a similar fashion. But while Korzen took a break, the woman convinced Mahn that she'd fallen in love with him and begged him to take her home so she could change clothes. He agreed. Once there, she slipped out the back door and called the police. The police then descended on the farmhouse and captured Korzen, seized the videotape, and discovered the dead prostitute buried under a pile of manure. The local prosecutor said, "This represents a new depth in perversion."³⁴³

Playboy magazine has for many years outsold any other periodical, and it has been called "pornographic" due to its nude photographs and erotic writings. Hustler, another sexually oriented magazine, has been indicted and its publisher convicted and sent to prison for violating obscenity laws. Officials at the 14,000-student St. Cloud State University in Minnesota removed Playboy, Playgirl, and Penthouse magazines from the shelves of the campus bookstore January 20, 1989, in response to a four-day, sit-in demonstration by a coalition of female students and an anti-violence organization.³⁴⁴

Lust-murderer Ted Bundy, who may have killed more than 100 young women, tearfully told Dr. James Dobson, psychologist, California religious broadcaster, and member of the second Presidential Commission on Pornography, that his crimes "should serve as a warning to the danger of pornography." Bundy warned the public in his televised interview with Dobson on the day before his execution that "there are people loose in their towns and their communities like me. What scares me, Mr. Dobson, is when I see what's on cable TV, some of the movies and some of the violence in the movies that comes into homes today ... that stuff, I'm telling you from personal experience, is the most graphic violence on the screen that gets to children who are unaware that they may be a Ted Bundy who has that vulnerability, that predisposition to be influenced by that kind of behavior. I'm not blaming pornography; I take full responsibility for my own behavior, but pornography guided and shaped my acts. You keep craving something harder that gives a greater sense of excitement." He also said early experiences with pornography had "crystallized" the violent tendencies within him. Robert Keppel, the Seattle, Washington attorney general's investigator who had tracked Bundy for nearly fifteen years, dismissed Bundy's putting some of the blame for his crimes on pornography as "phoney." "Pornography is maybe 1/1,000 of the whole problem he had."³⁴⁵

Another whole aspect of pornography dawned on the American public with that emotional television interview of Bundy just sixteen hours before his electrocution on Tuesday, January 24, 1989. What Bundy specified as "violent pornography" was "detective magazines" that he had been able to pick up as early as age twelve or thirteen. Most of us had thought of pornography as either the "soft core" variety picturing the bare breasts and buttocks of beautiful women in magazines like Playboy and Penthouse, or even frontal views of their pubic region such as those found in Oui and Hustler maga-

³⁴³ "View to Kill," Details (August 1999): 29.

³⁴⁴ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 21, 1989).

³⁴⁵ Northwest Florida Daily News (June 26, 1989).

zines, or the “hardcore” variety that shows actual copulation, fellatio, and cunnilingus. No one had even accused the detective magazines of being pornographic. Magazines like *True Detective*, *Official Detective*, *Master Detective*, *Inside Detective*, and *Front Page Detective* openly sat on our newsstands for sixty years or more, relatively unstigmatized by the label of “pornography.” True, they almost always managed to show a woman in skimpy attire with a gun or a knife in her hand on their front covers. They usually were able to mention the words lust, sex, nude, beauty, or love garishly in their article titles, and they sometimes showed photographs of the murdered bodies of the victims. Otherwise, they did not seem to fit the usual descriptions of pornography that most of the people were accustomed to.

Other, relatively new, definitions of pornography were revealed in the “pornography wars” of the 1980s and 1990s. Governor Martinez of Florida labeled the songs and music of the rock music group 2 Live Crew as “audio pornography” when commenting on the arrest of a record store owner who sold one of the 2 Live Crew records to an undercover agent. The Crew’s leader was arrested after one of his shows on June 10, 1990, in Hollywood, Florida. Authorities in Toronto, Canada, threatened to arrest Madonna, the popular singer/actress, for her “explicit dancing.” Ron Howard, a Palm Beach county commissioner, mounted a statewide campaign against 900 and 976 telephone numbers that are used for “telephone sex.” Pornographers responded with bomb threats at a St. Augustine, Florida, church on May 20, 1990, and a fire at the First Baptist Church in Daytona Beach, Florida.

Technology in the past twenty years has upgraded pornography to a far more powerful and pervasive art form than any that has ever existed before. They are no longer dirty little pulp magazines in dark alleys; they are now glossy, high-visibility best sellers on the corner convenience store shelves. The advent of the VCR in the 1980s has greatly increased the availability and power of pornographic movies. All the talent, technique, and art of Hollywood, learned over many generations of filmmaking, is now producing vivid, exciting, and memorable pornographic videocassettes and DVDs. Beautiful women with handsome men plus impressive background music, sound effects, staging, and costuming results in more videos sold at higher prices, which, in turn, results in higher profit, which results in proliferation. Proliferation results in more and kinkier sex at younger and younger ages.

Madonna in her all-time best-selling picture book, *Sex*, was not only photographed nude, but she was shown in sadomasochistic play. Her 11x14, aluminum-covered book, with an accompanying compact disk, sold 150,000 copies in one day (out of 500,000 printed) at \$50 per copy. The cover story of the November 2, 1992, *Time* magazine was “The New Voyeurism: Madonna and the Selling of Sex.” In 1993, Villard Books in New York published the scholarly 539-page book *Different Loving* by Gloria Brame, William Brame, and Jon Jacobs. *Different Loving* went a long way toward justifying some of our worst sexual perversions: sadomasochism, body modification, fetishism, and mysophilia. The July 3, 1995, *Time* magazine’s cover story was “On a Screen Near You: Cyberporn.” This article told of one of the latest methods of selling pornographic

pictures: displaying them on home computers that are connected to the Internet. An eighteen-month study by Carnegie Mellon University researchers revealed that the most popular types of pornography bought from the Bulletin-Board System in this manner were nude photographs of small children, sadomasochism, urination, defecation, and sex acts with barnyard animals. "As of April 1, 1990 ... over 300,000,000 X-rated videos were distributed in our neighborhoods. Since then, sales and rentals of adult videos have risen 75%. Today, pornography is a \$13 billion a year industry."³⁴⁶ The rental of pornographic movies rose from \$75 million in 1985 to \$490 million in 1992. Sex sells!

As new technologies have been adapted to pornography, the cost of production has dropped and control of production has diffused. Successful pornographic magazines have massive production and distribution requirements; a magazine start-up today can require as much as \$20 million. Adult videos, which became the preferred pornographic medium during the mid-1980s, are far less expensive to produce than magazines. A typical adult-oriented VCR tape can cost as little as \$3,000 to produce. This relatively inexpensive production price has allowed an enormous upsurge in both the number of producers and the number of videos made each year. Pornographic magazines are dependent upon advertising, which may require the magazine to mute the violent content for a more mainstream consumerism. Videos and the Usenet are less dependent on advertising.

The March 27, 2000, U.S. News & World Report cover story was "Porn dot Com—A Lust for Profits." This article reported that Web surfers spent \$970 million on access to adult-content sites in 1998, and that figure could rise to \$3 billion by 2003. The article said there were at least 40,000 sex-oriented sites on the Web and probably thousands more catering to every conceivable fetish. Customers can order any type and create their own interactive experience. A recent study at Stanford University claimed that at least 200,000 Americans are hopelessly addicted to E-porn, and there is a growing concern over these "cybersex compulsives." A pastor was told by his superiors to confess to his congregation that he had used Internet pornography and resign, a tragedy for him and his family.

This all adds up to produce dangerous levels of moral degeneracy. Degeneracy equals decadence. History can provide the scenario for the future: Decadence leads inexorably to disintegration, which equals destruction. Do you remember what happened in Greece, Rome, and France? They were not half so well equipped with such efficient devices as we have today for imparting lust and national destruction. What is there that could prevent this inexorable slide? The thin, wavering line of the churches is all that I can see, yet the churches are badly infected with sex themselves. They have got to get stronger, more moral, and more impervious to sexual sinning and armored, impregnable, and unassailably pure before they will merit the moral leadership that the people need. The churches have got to unify themselves and stop quarreling back and forth over tiny variations in dogma. They've got to allow castration of the deviant;

³⁴⁶ L. Hall, "Pornography—What's the Big Deal?" *The Plain Truth* (May/June, 1998): 51–55.

they've got to allow castration of their priesthood as in the ancient times to assure the necessary purity of their leaders.

Charles H. Keating, Jr., was one of the leading anti-pornography figures of the 1970–1990 period. In 1970, Keating was a member of the President's Commission on Obscenity and Pornography, which stated that pornography should be banned for all persons regardless of age. His classic statement was: "Those who wallow in filth will get dirty." Keating was also the founder of Citizens for Decency Through the Law, an organization that has long been involved in pushing for legislation against pornography. Keating defrauded the public of \$250 million in the savings and loan scandals and corrupted at least five U.S. senators (the "Keating Five" who were tried by the Senate Ethics Committee in widely televised hearings in 1990).

Under the Child Protection and Obscenity Enforcement Act of 1987, the U.S. Postal Service became the chief federal warrior in the effort to stem the flow of child pornography within the United States. The Customs Service and FBI were responsible for enforcement against the importation of this pornography from abroad, mainly from Holland, Belgium, and Thailand. The postal inspector for Alabama and Northwest Florida, Mr. B. B. Hedrick, Jr., had a list of 1,449 persons suspected of being child pornographers in this area. Hedrick said in 1989 that he would probably make ten arrests that year. "Child pornography is an area we're not even putting a dent in," he said. Postal statistics showed that nationwide 211 child pornography arrests were made in 1987, 440 in 1988, and 280 in 1989.³⁴⁷ Sentences for those convicted of child pornography have ranged from a few months in local jails up to four and a half years in federal prison.

The drug scene, too, has changed radically to include more powerful sexual stimulants. The sexual revolution, gay pride, drug war, and pornography have all combined to heighten sexual availability and kicks, all contributing to the moral decadence of our population. Crack cocaine and amyl nitrate poppers have added their volatile fuels to the conflagration. It grows worse each year. America, quo vadis? Whither goest thou?

According to a ten-state survey of 4,621 adults taken by Winick and Evans between 1976 and 1985, "... a national standard of general acceptance of sexually explicit materials appears to exist."³⁴⁸ They point out that: The religious and older people are more against pornography, but the better educated (sixteen years or more of schooling) and younger adults tended to favor it; there has been a general trend over the years of more and more adults accepting it; "In 1990, the Motion Picture Association of America made movie sex more acceptable by replacing the old X-rating with the NC-17 category"; and by 1992, there were over 1,500 strip clubs in the United States. The 1972 explicit sex movie *Deep Throat* made more money (production cost of \$25,000 and income of \$600 million) than any other movie in history. After 1983,

³⁴⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 17, 1990).

³⁴⁸ C. Winick and J. Evans, "Is There a National Standard with Respect to Attitudes Toward Sexually Explicit Media Material?" *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 23, no. 4 (1994): 405–419.

the popularity of the X-rated videocassettes increased, so by 1989, over 5,000 of them were available to buy or rent. By 1994, it appeared that the politicians, activists, and churches had lost the pornography battles of the sexual revolution, which had begun in the 1960s. Even the AIDS plague, which put a damper on promiscuous, non-marital sexual behavior, did not slow the demand for pornography. In fact, the fear of AIDS may have actually encouraged consumption of pornographic materials as a substitute for real sexual behavior.

In 1999, the American Cancer Society published a fifty-six-page pamphlet on sexuality and cancer that recommended looking at erotic pictures or stories to increase sexual excitement for men who had their penis removed in treatment for cancer of the penis. Men who have not been circumcised have a greater tendency to develop cancer of the penis than the circumcised men.

The United States, in spite of its laws against pornography, led the world in its production. Americans spent more than \$8 billion on hardcore videos, peep shows, live sex acts, adult cable programming, computer pornography, and sex magazines in 1996. Hollywood churned out about 150 new hardcore videos per week, and their rental hit \$665 million.³⁴⁹ In 1996, there was also a proliferation of sex films on CD Rom with interactive videos for the home computer, which presaged the type of pornography likely to become more popular in the twenty-first century. This type of pornography became more powerful, intimate, lifelike, and dramatic than that which was formerly available. It is also very convenient with few hassles, so it increases sexual pleasures, leads to increased sexual activity, and results in increased levels of testosterone and addictions in our young men. Sex is the number one destination of the Internet in a single month, 15 percent of the 57 million Americans using the World Wide Web accessed the ten most popular adult Web sites. Porn is the Net's first cash cow.³⁵⁰ This forebodes more sex crimes, addictions, and violence. Those who study the effects of pornography and violent TV shows point out that these depictions definitely affect what people do later.

By the year 2000, there was a clearly discernable movement that showed kinkier pornography becoming more prevalent. There were sadomasochistic films showing more and more evil characters in bondage and dominance. The film festival for this stuff showed *The Dungeon of the Borgias*, *Dangerous Desires*, *Misty's First Whipping*, *Leather-Bound Dykes from Hell*, *This Old Dungeon*, and *the Lair of the Bondage Bandits* with many devilish, horrific, and demonic characters. The domino theory of porn—that consumers go from pinups and playing cards to the harder stuff—seems to be working in America today to drag many of us down the tubes of decadence.

At the crack of dawn in Vancouver's seedier business district, on August 20, 1999, an armed team of law-enforcement agents smashed into the offices of Starnet Communications International, a four-year-old company that ran gambling and pornography sites

³⁴⁹ U.S. News & World Report (February 10, 1997).

³⁵⁰ G. Gutfeld, "The Sex Drive," *Men's Health* (October 1999): 116–154.

on the Internet. The raid was the culmination of an eighteen-month probe of Starnet's operation, which authorities described as "substantially and fundamentally an illegal enterprise." The company's stock, publicly traded in the United States, was a hot buy, soaring from 37.5 cents in November 1998 to \$29.00 in July 1999. At its peak, Starnet's paper value neared \$900 million. The company's Web sites included Sizzle.com, Chisel.com, and Redlight.com, featuring live strip shows and graphic depictions of sadomasochism, which violated Canada's anti-obscenity laws. The company boasted that it had porn customers in more than sixty countries and moved its headquarters to the Caribbean haven of Antigua, outside the reach of Canadian and American regulators.³⁵¹

Sui-Ming Pan tells us how it is in China with half the world's population:

Pornography has spread wide and far, despite a campaign, annually since 1982, of "sweeping pornography away." The greatest and strongest initiative was started immediately after June 1989; a new law was passed in the spring of 1990. By mid-1992, at least 21 persons were put to death for selling, copying, or spreading pornography. The main argument is that the leaders consider the spread of pornography to be a cultural aggression from the West.³⁵²

T. Partialism

Partialism is unnatural sexual interest in a part of the human anatomy such as the female breast or foot. Almost everyone has certain anatomical preferences, and traces of partialism may be found in nearly everyone. A man who has an overdeveloped interest in women's breasts, but who engages in normal sexual intercourse, does not exemplify partialism. Only if he has no other interest in a woman than her breasts, and they are his sole avenue of sexual expression, may we say he exhibits partialism. This is a paraphilia closely akin to fetishism and has gotten into the category of sex crimes when it is responsible for such behavior as pretending to be a doctor to examine the erotic part of a patient or when it drives an individual to overtly and frequently fondle the erotic parts of complete strangers.

Alvinolagnia is an extreme attraction to the stomach, and just as women's fashions provide low-cut gowns exposing their breasts, there is also a prevalent fashion that exposes their belly. So it is easy to assume that partialism or fetishism sometimes develops from these exposures. In many Islamic cultures, women are required to conceal their bodies and faces in veils and burkas so the tendency to develop those extreme attractions does not happen. Podophilia is sexual arousal from feet.

³⁵¹ "Sex, Bets and Bikers," *Newsweek* (October 18, 1999): 50.

³⁵² Sui-Ming Pan, "A Sex Revolution in Current China," *Journal of Psychology and Human Sexuality* 6, no. 2 (1993): 6.

U. Tranvestism

Also known as “cross-dressing,” tranvestism is listed under the category of the paraphilias in the American Psychiatric Association’s DSM-III of 1980 as “recurrent and persistent cross-dressing for the purpose of sexual excitement ... Intense frustration when the cross-dressing is interfered with.” It was against Biblical law as described in Deuteronomy 22:5. The three main types of transvestite men are the following: (1) Approximately 10 percent of the homosexual population dress as women to increase their attraction to men. For many years there was a very popular nightclub in San Francisco called Finocchio’s and another on Bourbon Street in New Orleans where men dressed as women and performed as seductive female entertainers. (2) Fetishists whose sexual pleasure is increased by looking at themselves in the mirror while dressed in female attire. (3) The transvestites proper who obtain their sexual gratification by dressing as—and pretending to be—women.

The more overt transvestites, who dress up and parade the streets, are sometimes apprehended by the police in a few jurisdictions that still maintain laws against it. Some transvestites also run into trouble with the law because of their predilection for stealing women’s garments from clotheslines and stores. In 1989, police arrested three members of a sixty-member gang of transvestites in Florida who smashed windows in designer dress shops and grabbed the dresses, from Miami to Titusville.³⁵³ Transsexuals and transvestites also cause a lot of trouble in prison settings because of occasional assignment to opposite sex confinement areas.

Karpman wrote that transvestism is essentially a combination of homosexuality and fetishism, with castration anxiety as the psychological controlling factor.³⁵⁴ Havelock Ellis used the term eonism, a term derived from the name of the famous French secret agent Chevalier d’Eon (1728–1810), who lived a large part of his life dressed as a woman. Transvestites in modern America have organized themselves into two principle groups: The Beaumont Society and the Foundation for Full Personality Expression, with over a thousand members. These organizations publish information bulletins with advertisements of specially tailored women’s clothing for men and undergarments that produce the appearance of breasts and flat pubic regions, hiding the bulge of the penis and testicles.

A transvestite who appeared on the Sally Jessy Raphael television show February 20, 1991, said he feels more comfortable when dressed in female clothing, is sexually attracted to women only, and “feels like a lesbian woman.” Dr. Peo, a psychologist on this show, said that the biological cause is a different brain structure, but there also is some social influence—like in homosexuality—that causes the odd behavior.

The great Joan of Arc, who led the French troops to victory again and again in the Hundred Years’ War against the British and Burgundians, was burned at the stake in

³⁵³ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 23, 1989).

³⁵⁴ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 350.

the churchyard of St. Ouen, May 30, 1431, for “breaking the divine law, Holy Scriptures and the canon laws ... against the decency of nature” by wearing men’s clothing.³⁵⁵

V. Adultery

Adultery is voluntary sexual intercourse between a married person and someone other than his or her spouse. Adultery is specifically prohibited by the seventh of the Ten Commandments, which Moses received from God 3,500 years ago on Mount Sinai: “You shall not commit adultery!” (Exodus 20:14, Deuteronomy 5:18). It is one of the cardinal sins of Christianity, Judaism, and several other religions. Punishment by death for both participants is called for in Leviticus 20:10 and Deuteronomy 22:22–24. The death penalty for adultery was still in effect in the year 2002 in Nigeria, Sudan, and other Muslim countries under the Shariah legal system. Solomon, son of David, King of Israel, wrote the warnings against adultery in Proverbs (5:3–5, 20 and 6:32, 34) about the year 716 BC:

For the lips of a loose woman drip honey, and her speech is smoother than oil; but in the end she is bitter as wormwood, sharp as a two-edged sword. Her feet go down to death; her steps follow the path to She’ol. Why should you be intoxicated, my son, by another woman and embrace the bosom of an adulteress? He who commits adultery has no sense; he who does it destroys himself. For jealousy arouses a husband’s fury, and he shows no restraint when he takes revenge.

A man whose wife is unfaithful is called a “cuckold”: the husband of an adulteress.

The Oracle Malachi wrote in about 443 BC: “... Do not let anyone be faithless to the wife of his youth” (Malachi 2:15).

The New Testament guidance in John, chapter 8, tells the story of how the Pharisees brought a woman caught in the act of adultery before Christ and reminded him of the Law of Moses, which commanded them to stone such women. Christ answered them saying, “Let anyone among you who is without sin be the first to throw a stone at her.” When they heard this, they went away, one by one, and Jesus was left alone with the woman, and he said to her, “Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?” She said, “No one, sir.” And Jesus said, “Neither do I condemn you. Go your way, and from now on do not sin again.” The New Testament Bible mentions the word adultery and its synonyms some forty times. It is a sin, but forgivable.

Except for an interlude in Oliver Cromwell’s seventeenth-century England, adultery has generally been regarded in our culture as a matter within the cognizance of the spirituality hierarchy rather than the civil authorities. Japan, Uruguay, and the USSR have no penal provisions on the subject. The penal codes of France, Italy, and Argentina

³⁵⁵ Elizabeth Abbott, *A History of Celibacy* (New York: Scribner, 2000), 235.

distinguish between adultery by a husband and adultery by a wife and punish the latter more severely. In the United States, as a result of our Puritan heritage and in the absence of a state church, civil laws against adultery were quite common with penalties ranging from wearing the “Scarlet Letter,” receiving two sets of forty lashes, or paying a \$1,000 fine to twelve years in prison. Euphemistically called “infidelity” or “illicit cohabitation,” it is rarely prosecuted today, although it is still the most frequent reason for divorce and is made a matter of judicial record in tens of thousands of divorce cases each year.

The 1948 Kinsey Report revealed that about half of the married men in their sample had extramarital coitus. The 1953 Kinsey et al. report estimated that 26 percent of the married women in their study also had extramarital coitus. Masters and Johnson reported in the 1988 *Crises: Heterosexual Behavior in the Age of AIDS* that 44.3 percent of married men and 32.3 percent of women had at least one extramarital partner in five years. In 1955, the American Law Institute voted not to include adultery in its Model Penal Code. The 1973 *Institutes of Biblical Law* by Rousas John Rushdoony (p. 393) notes that:

By and large, faithful monogamy does not seem to be a natural pattern, but a socially fabricated one; even so, it is rare to the point of seeming almost abnormal. Of 185 societies analyzed in the Human Relations Area Files at Yale University, only about 5% were monogamies in which all outside sexual activity for men was disallowed or disapproved. Fidelity thus seems to some scholars difficult, unnatural, and greatly overpriced; and the insistence on it is the cause of hypocrisy, guilt, unhappiness, and broken marriage.

The Opinion Research Center in Washington reported a somewhat different situation in their 1993 General Social Survey, however. About 15 percent of married Americans have cheated on a spouse reported Tom W. Smith, director of the survey. Perhaps 3 to 4 percent of husbands and wives have a sexual partner outside their marriage in a given year, Smith said.³⁵⁶ Laumann, Gagnon, Michael, and Michaels reported 26 percent of men and 10 percent of women had violated monogamy.³⁵⁷

At the end of 1986, all but fifteen states had repealed their sanctions against adultery. It has been estimated, however, that the AIDS plague and other sexually transmitted diseases could be eradicated simply by the enforcement of the rules of monogamy.

By 1997, Florida was one of the last states to have a law that prohibited adultery and cohabitation. Lewd and lascivious cohabitation had been made illegal in 1868, and open adultery prohibition followed in 1874. The “unnatural and lascivious act” statute was revised in 1993 to classify it as a misdemeanor. Howard Fletcher, sixty-five, confessed November 13, 1997, in a Boca Raton, Florida, court that he had oral

³⁵⁶ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (October 19, 1993): 2a

³⁵⁷ E. Laumann, J. Gagnon, R. Michael, and S. Michaels, *The Social Organization of Sexuality* (University Press, 1994).

sex in a hotel room with a woman who was not his wife. Fletcher was the executive secretary of the National Sexual Rights Council, Inc., which is funded in part by Playboy magazine founder, Hugh Hefner, and he wanted to be prosecuted in order to challenge Florida's nineteenth-century sex laws. Fletcher was also part of a group seeking to amend the Florida laws that required tourism industries to publish warnings to visitors of Florida's sex laws. Florida is a tourist state with millions of visitors every year who are unaware of the state's restrictions.³⁵⁸

SPLAT!

The American people were hit squarely in the face Friday afternoon, September 11, 1998, with the smutty 445-page Starr Report on the president's having been given oral sex by his young intern Monica Lewinsky in and around the Oval Office of the White House. In this report, sent via Internet and repeated on television, on radio, in newspapers, in books, and in magazines, she detailed ten sexual contacts with the president, including the one on February 28, 1997, in which the president ejaculated on her. The resulting stains on her dress were later proven by FBI laboratory tests to be the president's semen. The anticipation of this story being released had been building for weeks in the news media and that was shocking enough to most of us, but the actual broadcast of the results of the months of investigation was still a very sickening experience for most Americans. Several of the television commentators used the term salacious (arousing sexual desire or imagination—lascivious, lustful), but even this strong word was not sufficient to fully describe the feeling of offensive defiling that millions of us felt at the time.

The Clinton-Lewinsky adultery was not the only case that had been made public for this president. He had been sexually involved with several other women: Paula Jones in 1991, Jennifer Flowers in 1992, and Kathleen Wiley in 1994. He allegedly told Lewinsky that he had "hundreds of affairs" earlier in his marriage, but "since turning forty," he had "made a concerted effort to remain faithful" to his wife. Since this was in 1997, he obviously had failed to do this. Was he sexually addicted? Quite possibly. This is very dangerous for men in positions of great power because they can reveal important state secrets to their lovers as Dick Morris, the president's advisor, and others have done. President Clinton, in his testimony before the grand jury August 17, 1998, said that "Miss Lewinsky has a way of getting information out of people." The videotape of this testimony was broadcast on eight of the nation's major networks the morning of September 21, 1998. The next day, my local newspaper's headline was "Nation Watches, Winces."³⁵⁹

In all the hundreds of commentaries on the president's adultery, the Biblical guidance in John 8 was not mentioned. Perhaps this is a significant indicator of our general moral laxness today. In spite of the fact that adultery and lying to cover it up is sta-

³⁵⁸ "Group Challenges Sexual Relations," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (November 14, 1997): 2A

³⁵⁹ "Nation Watches, Winces," Northwest Florida Daily News (September 22, 1998): 1A

tistically normal in America, the U.S. House of Representatives voted December 18, 1998, to impeach President Clinton.

Larry Flynt, publisher of the pornographic *Hustler* magazine, initiated a campaign to unmask the hypocrisy of the Clinton investigation by placing an advertisement in the *Washington Post* offering to pay up to \$1 million for verifiable information on adultery by members of Congress. A number of women responded to the ad. U.S. Representative Bob Livingston, who was about to take over as Speaker of the House, said he would resign from Congress after admitting he had adulterous affairs. U.S. Senator John McCain, potential Republican presidential candidate, also cheated on his wife, who had been seriously injured while McCain was a prisoner of the Vietnamese.

Although adultery in the late 1990s was considered a relatively minor sex offense, it was still serious enough to cashier the career of the air force's first female B-52 bomber pilot. Lieutenant Kelly J. Flinn, twenty-six, was discharged from the service for her affair with Marc Zigo, husband of an air force-enlisted woman, in a case that was prime national news in May 1997. Sixty men and ten U.S. Air Force women were also prosecuted on adultery charges in 1996. On April 12, 2002, the White House issued changes to the Manual for Courts-Martial, which included new rules on adultery that can lead to a dishonorable discharge and up to a year in prison.

On February 12, 1999, the U.S. Senate acquitted President Clinton on both impeachment charges and allowed him to retain his office—after thirteen months of allegations and investigations of his extra-marital affair with former White House intern Monica Lewinsky, which Clinton at first denied and then later changed his story. After the vote, the president appeared without Mrs. Clinton, and again apologized to the American people.

In the evening of October 23, 1999, the A&E television channel broadcast a full hour devoted to adultery in one of their *Love Chronicles* series. Overall, the main impression the program left me with is that the program seemed to justify adultery as being “all too common in society today” and sanctioned adultery as a biological urge and “natural.” One of the wives on the program said: “If both are in agreement, what’s the problem?” She and her husband admitted that they had each had several extramarital affairs. Apparently, this was a general state of affairs as the twentieth century concluded.

In spite of the lowering of sanctions against adultery, it has remained one of the leading causes of divorce, sexual jealousy, spousal abuse, assault, and murder, with much pain and suffering. According to several studies, it has been found that men are much more distressed than women by sexual infidelity, and women are more distressed by emotional infidelity.³⁶⁰

³⁶⁰ Arnie Cunn, Jessica Mangum, and Marissa Wells, “Distress in Response to Relationship Infidelity: The Roles of Gender and Attitudes About Relationships,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 38, no. 3 (2001): 185–190.

W. Fornication

Also called coitus, copulation, coupling, sexual congress, intercourse, venery, doing it, fucking, balling, screwing, etc., fornication is sexual intercourse between two unmarried humans. It is an offense in several states with penalties that range up to three years in prison. In 1985, the American Lutheran Church estimated that as many as 40 percent of couples live together before marriage. In 1987, the U.S. Census Bureau estimated that approximately 2.7 million unmarried couples were living together.

Some of the biblical injunctions concerning fornication are: “For this is the will of God, your sanctification: that you abstain from fornication; that you know how to control your own body in holiness and honor, not with lustful passion” (1 Thessalonians 4:3–5); “... for God will judge fornicators and adulterers” (Hebrews 13:4); “The body is meant not for fornication but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body ... Shun fornication! Every sin that a person commits is outside the body; but the fornicator sins against the body itself” (1 Corinthians 6:13, 18); and “Put to death, therefore, whatever is earthly: fornication, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed” (Colossians 3:5).

The vast improvements in methods of contraception, the legalization of abortion, and the discovery of miraculous cures for most of the STDs have reduced the fear of these dangers, and illicit sex has increased to the point where it is rarely pursued by the criminal justice system in America. The results have been huge increases in the numbers of unwanted pregnancies, a trend to younger and younger first sexual experiences, and greatly increased numbers of STD infections—including the deadly AIDS. Senator Daniel Patrick Moynahan announced on the McNeil-Lehrer News Hour on June 24, 1994, that by the year 2000, 40 percent of births in the United States would be non-marital. The 1921 fornication law was invoked against Amanda Smisek, seventeen, on May 13, 1996, in Emmett, Idaho. She and her illegitimate child’s father, Chris Lay, sixteen, were sentenced to a three-day suspended jail sentence, three years probation, and a directive to complete parenting classes.

Penalties are much more severe for fornication in Nigeria, however. In November 2001, an Islamic court in Gwadabawa, Sokoto State, in Northern Nigeria, ruled that a pregnant woman be sentenced to death by stoning. The court found Safiya Hussaini Tungar-Tudu guilty of having premarital sex, but they later ruled that the sentence may be delayed until after she delivered the baby. A teenage girl was given 100 lashes in January for a similar offense under their Sharia Islamic laws.³⁶¹

By late 1996, the horrendous consequences of the relatively minor sexual sins of adultery and fornication began to be seen by the American public in spectacular media exposés. The popular 60 Minutes television program on November 10, 1996, mentioned the AIDS of basketball star Magic Johnson and heavyweight contender Connie Morris, along with a more detailed account of the spread of the disease by stockcar racing

³⁶¹ “Rising Tensions: Sharia Law in Nigeria,” *The Lancet* 358 (December 1, 2001): 1900.

champion Tim Richmond. All of these men had sexual intercourse with women after they were infected with the AIDS virus, but Richmond was more promiscuous and probably spread it more widely. Richmond had been obviously ill, but refused to acknowledge that he had AIDS in 1986. He finally died of this disease in 1989, and it came out in the news at that time. He had been a very popular, handsome, dashing, and promiscuous public figure, and several beautiful women were attracted to him. Most of them had sex with him, and many came down later with the disease as a result. The consequences of adultery and fornication, even among our beautiful and famous people, in the age of AIDS are far from inconsequential.

The feature article in a 1997 U.S. News & World Report gave a carefully worded warning and some of the statistics on fornication and teen pregnancy. “Teen pregnancy,” Bill Clinton said, “is the nation’s most serious social problem,” and he vowed to do something about it. Approximately 80 percent—or 400,000—of teen births in the United States in 2000 were non-marital. In 1994, just 22 percent of children born out of wedlock had mothers who were eighteen or under; more than half had mothers ages twenty to twenty-nine. In the period from 1960 to 1965, 43 percent of white women were virgins when they married; from 1980 to 1985, it was only 14 percent in the United States. “Almost certainly, television has had a central role in eroding the stigma of premarital sex.” Theoretically, the ready availability of effective contraceptives should have provided the avenue for eliminating the worst complications of sex before marriage. In practice, though, this has not stopped the rise in out-of-wedlock births or put an end to STDs and abortion.

X. Frottage

is a French word meaning “rubbing,” and it is the name of a form of sexual assault in the criminal codes of most of the states in America. It involves deliberate rubbing against another person for the purpose of sexual stimulation. The frotteur is usually a male who obtains sexual satisfaction by rubbing against women’s bodies while fully clothed. It is often undetected by the victim, who, if she is aware of it at all, believes it to be accidental since it usually occurs in crowded busses, subways, elevators, or other places where people are massed closely together. It is closely related to another offense called “toucherism,” an unusually strong desire to touch an unknown female intimately.

Y. Oral-Genital Sex

Fellatio, the practice of obtaining sexual satisfaction by oral stimulation of the penis (“blow job,” “giving head,” and “irrumation”), and cunnilingus (“eating out” and “cunnilinctus”), stimulation of the vulva and clitoris with the lips and tongue, are the two most common manifestations of oral-genital sex. Under Pope Gregory I (590–604),

seminem in ore (semen in the mouth) earned three to fifteen years penance on bread and water.

An increase in a variety of sexual practices and partners (such as engaging in oral-genital sex and more positions of intercourse) was noted by Hunt (1974) when compared with the earlier Kinsey Reports (1948, 1953). Money and Musaph showed that oral-genital stimulation in a variety of postures was observed in rhesus and stump-tailed monkeys and gorillas.³⁶² Oral sex was once considered a paraphilia, perversion, or deviancy, but for couples who have one partner disabled, oral-genital satisfaction may be a solution to their problem, yet in many cases it will be felt to be abnormal. The stimulation of an erect penis by mouth is a common practice and occurs in many marriages as an adjunct to foreplay (the incidence being around 40 to 45 percent).³⁶³

The findings from the National Health and Social Life Survey (NHSLS) suggested that 45 percent of men found receiving fellatio very appealing, while only 17 percent of women found performing fellatio very appealing. The proportion of men who found performing cunnilingus very appealing was 34 percent, while the proportion of women who found receiving it very appealing was 29 percent.³⁶⁴

“Certain techniques, specifically oral-genital contact and anal coitus, are punishable in various countries. In the U.S., they are legally labeled ‘sodomy’ in the majority of the states.”³⁶⁵ The use of kissing, licking, or sucking on the genitalia or nipples is widespread and for many people, a highly arousing part of foreplay—yet cunnilingus and fellatio are punishable by law in some Western states. It is possible for one of today’s physicians to have been told, during the course of his or her career, that masturbation causes insanity or that oral stimulation between marital partners represents perversion. “The social tolerance of personal idiosyncrasy used to be nil. Now it is slowly expanding. Fellatio and cunnilingus are no longer considered abnormal, and the same applies to various other personal and playful erotic idiosyncrasies.”³⁶⁶

An “increasing number of infections are acquired anally and orally.” “The penile and urethral lesions of homosexuals are usually symptomatic or noticeable while those of the anus, rectum, and mouth are not.” Money stated in *Love & Love Sickness* that at one clinic in London, 82 percent of infectious syphilis cases treated between 1968 and 1971 were in homosexuals. The oral cavity could be an important source of infection of clinical candidiasis among those who practice oral sex. Dr. Susan Buchbinder of the University of California, San Francisco, conducted an investigation of 3,257 gay men. At the Geneva conference in June 1998, she reported that her findings were that oral sex carried a measurable risk ... Unprotected oral sex to ejaculation as the receptive partner accounted for 5 percent of the infections, while unprotected anal intercourse as the receptive partner accounted for 15 percent. In a San Francisco study of thirty-four

³⁶² Money and Musaph, *Handbook of Sexology*, 922, 941, 982, 1023, 1072, 1089, 1111, 1170, 1174.

³⁶³ Ford, *Patterns of Sex*, 78, 175.

³⁶⁴ Martin A. Monto, “Prostitution and Fellatio,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 38, no. 2 (2001): 140.

³⁶⁵ Money and Musaph, *Handbook of Sexology*, 78, 75, 982, 995, 1023.

³⁶⁶ J. Money, *Love & Love Sickness* (Baltimore: John Hopkins University Press, 1981), 119.

gay men and five women, 12 percent contracted HIV from oral sex. Another study of 102 gay and bisexual men showed 8 percent of HIV infections from fellatio.³⁶⁷ A report from Canada found that more than 90 percent of gay men have unprotected oral sex with male partners. “Though the HIV risk associated with oral sex may be small, case reports and epidemiological studies suggest that transmission can occur and may account for an increasing proportion” in infections among gay men.³⁶⁸ Rates of rectal and oral gonorrhea in males soared after gay liberation in the 1970s. Oral cancer and human papilloma virus infection are other possible risks, and risk factors include smoking and alcohol consumption.³⁶⁹

Participation in oral sex as either performer or recipient may be an impossibility for some women. If one partner is intensely dependent on the odors, pheromones, flavors, and sensations of oral sex for erotosexual arousal, and if the other had an intense aversion to it, compromise may prove unattainable and the partnership may prove unviable.³⁷⁰

In 1971, Gerard Damiano’s film *Deep Throat* portrayed a woman, Linda Lovelace, who thought her clitoris had been displaced to an attachment low down in her gullet, and could only be reached by gulping down almost the entire shaft of an erect phallus as she showed in an act of fellatio. The film grossed a reported \$600 million, but Linda’s family was only paid \$1,250. She later became an anti-porn advocate and died April 22, 2002, in a car crash at age fifty-three.

Legman wrote an entire 319-page book on “oragenitalism.” One hundred fifty-eight pages were devoted to cunnilinctus (111 pages of which described the positions and varieties of action), seventy-four pages on fellation, thirty-six pages on irrumation, and thirty pages on the sixty-nine (mutual simulation oragenitalism alluding to the similar appearance of two human bodies to the numerals 6 and 9 during this act). Legman believed that oragenitalism is generally engaged in at the request of and to give pleasure primarily to the oral partner and not to the genital partner. According to Legman, oragenital acts are the expression of a profound psychological urge to satisfy the oral partner.³⁷¹

Fellation, also known as “French love,” has sometimes claimed the life of men who were in poor physical condition. The former president of the French Republic, the venerated Felix Faure, died of a heart attack in a Paris brothel in 1899 while being fellated. Irrumation is a classical Latin term, meaning “to give suck, as a mother gives the breast.” Irrumation, as the action of the dominant genital partner in oral sex in-

³⁶⁷ “Oral Sex More Dangerous Than Some Think, Study Says,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (February 2, 2000): 4B.

³⁶⁸ L. Keen, “Medical Notebook,” *New York Blade News* 28, no. 2 (1998): 14.

³⁶⁹ S. Swartz, J. Daling, et al., “Oral Cancer in Relation to Sexual History and Evidence of Human Papilloma Virus Infection,” *Journal of the National Cancer Institute* 90, no. 21 (1998): 1626–1636.

³⁷⁰ Money, *Love & Love Sickness*, 89.

³⁷¹ G. Legman, *Oragenitalism: Oral Techniques in Genital Stimulation* (New York: The Julian Press, Inc., 1969).

volving the penis, is carefully distinguished from fellation. “Where the genital partner is dominant, the action is irrumation. Where the oral partner is dominant, it is fellation.”³⁷² Another book, *Histoire Raisonnee* by Terry Leguay, addresses the historical, religious, psychological, and sociological aspects of oral sex and was published in the year 2000 in France.

In the 445-page Starr report on President Clinton’s adulterous affair with Monica Lewinsky, the words oral sex were mentioned ninety-two times and genitalia was mentioned thirty-nine times. On the morning of September 21, 1998, most of the four-hour videotape of President Clinton’s testimony before a grand jury was played on eight of the nation’s primary news channels. The most salacious of the details of the president’s sexual affair with the intern were edited out of the presentation. One commentator pointed out that after “four years and \$40 million, it all has come down to the definition of sex.” The president’s main defense was that he did not have sex with the intern because oral sex was not included in the definition of the term sexual relationship. President Clinton apologized to his wife, his daughter, friends, and the public on several occasions for his indiscretions.

The Journal of American Medical Association (JAMA) of January 20, 1999, published an article detailing the results of a study of 599 college students from twenty-nine states, which was conducted in 1991. Fifty-nine percent of the respondents indicated that oral-genital contact did not constitute having “had sex.” Since this article was published at the same time President Clinton was being tried for impeachment in the Senate concerning his sexual relations with Lewinsky, it was controversial. Results of publishing this article were that the JAMA editor for seventeen years, Dr. George D. Lundberg, was fired from his job, and the nation’s newspapers *Time*, *Newsweek*, and *U.S. News World & Report* responded with diverse commentaries. In another study of undergraduate college students in England, only one-third of respondents regarded oral-genital contact as having sex.³⁷³

For a long time, at least ten or fifteen years, after the general public became aware of the AIDS plague, there was an impression among the more promiscuous men, particularly those who had sex with men, that oral sex was safe sex and not likely to transmit the disease. Early studies on the likelihood of HIV transmission through oral sex suggested that transmission by this route was insignificant, which led to a widespread advocacy of oral sex as a safer alternative to anal sex for gay men. Since then, there has been a steady increase in the number of transmissions attributed to oral sex, which has led epidemiologists to revise upward their estimates of the likelihood of transmission from oral intercourse.³⁷⁴ Other studies suggested that “... oral intercourse in humans may be riskier than the anal variety—contrary to a mountain

³⁷² *Ibid.*, 255.

³⁷³ N. Pitts and Q. Rauman, “Which Behaviors Constitute ‘Having Sex?’” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 30, no. 2 (2001): 169.

³⁷⁴ J. Richens, J. Imrie, and A. Copas, “Condoms and Seat Belts: The Parallels and the Lessons,” *The Lancet* 355 (January 29, 2000): 400–403.

of other reports that identified unprotected anal intercourse as the likeliest route to an AIDS-abbreviated life.”³⁷⁵

Adam, Sears, and Schellenberger also studied a population of homosexual men and found that “... ill-advised prevention strategies that have little relevance to gay men may actually end up promoting unsafe sex.” And, “... most endorse the use of condoms for anal sex but not for oral sex.” Also, “the question of swallowing semen during oral sex remains fraught and of concern to gay men around the world ...”³⁷⁶ Oral sex is also a risk factor for the acquisition of hepatitis A via the ingestion of fecal matter.

Weinberg, Shaver, and Williams studied sex workers in the San Francisco area and found that almost all had provided oral sex (at least 97 percent did) to their paying customers.³⁷⁷ The women were more likely than men to provide “half-and-half” (a combination of oral sex and vaginal or anal intercourse).

Z. Masturbation

Masturbation is the manual stimulation of the genitalia to produce sexual gratification. Other terms that have similar meanings are: autoeroticism, auto-sexuality, auto-monosexual perversion, narcissism, self-pleasuring, jerking off, circle jerk, and onanism. The terms autoeroticism (or autoerotism) and auto-sexuality refer to sexual feelings arising in and directed to oneself. Automonosexual perversions are sexual actions performed on or with one’s own body such as self-mutilation, self-abuse, and self-fellatio as well as masturbation. Narcissism is the egocentric love of, or sexual desire for, one’s own body. Self-pleasuring is a term only obliquely connected with masturbation. Jerking off is the slang term for masturbation. Circle jerk refers to a form of group masturbation. The term onanism has erroneously been applied to masturbation since 1710 when an English clergyman named Bekkars published an indictment, called *Onania*, or the Heinous Sin of Self Pollution, against the practice. This book was so popular that by 1759 it had gone into its nineteenth edition. A Swiss doctor named Simon Andre (S.A.D.) Tissot was quick to capitalize on this popularity and published a medically inaccurate book in 1758 called *Onana*, a Treatise on the Diseases Produced by Onanism. The last known edition of this epoch-making book was published in 1905. In 1855, the New Orleans Medical Journal quoted a well-known doctor who claimed that “neither plague, nor smallpox, nor war has proved more disastrous for humanity than the habit of masturbation” (Nigel Davies, 1984). The word onanism comes from the story of Onan, the son of Judah who “spilled his semen” on the ground when he was commanded to sire children to his dead brother’s wife. “... And what he did was

³⁷⁵ S. Sternberg, “New Study May Redefine High-risk Sex,” *Science News* 149 (June 8, 1996): 356.

³⁷⁶ B. D. Adam, A. Sears, and E. G. Schellenberg, “Accounting for Unsafe Sex: Interviews with Men Who Have Sex with Men,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 1 (February 2000): 24–36.

³⁷⁷ M. S. Weinberg, F. M. Shaver, and C. J. Williams, “Gendered Sex Work in the San Francisco Tenderloin,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 6 (1999): 503–521.

displeasing in the sight of the Lord, and He slew him ..." (Genesis 38:8–10). Onan's sin, therefore, is properly termed coitus interruptus or coitus reservatus rather than masturbation.

The myths concerning masturbation ("onanism") did not arise and cease with the two books mentioned here; they extended back into ancient history and (sadly) are still being perpetuated right up to the present day. This is happening in spite of massive investigations and voluminous data indicating that masturbation is statistically normal in the population. Professor Uta Ranke-Heinemann, who holds the chair for the History of Religion at the University of Essen, Germany, has spent an entire chapter on the myths of onanism in her book *Eunuchs for the Kingdom of Heaven*, published in November 1990. The following information was obtained from her book: "The grand progenitor of masturbation anxiety, especially the fear of *tabes dorsalis* (a syphilitic disease of the nervous system), was the Greek physician Hippocrates (d. ca. 375 BC) ... Galen (d. ca. AD 199) took the opposite tack, arguing that sexual intercourse and masturbation were good for maintaining one's health ... Borrowing from Galen the Muslim philosopher Avicenna (d. 1037) later spoke of medical methods for advising onanism where sexual intercourse was not possible ... Every ejaculation that cannot lead to procreation is considered unnatural, thus onanism is a vice that according to Thomas Aquinas (d. 1274) is worse than intercourse with one's own mother (II/II q. 154 a 11 and 12)." Pope Gregory I (590–604) wrote that a priest who masturbated to orgasm should be denied communions. A monk who masturbated in church would be sentenced to thirty days fasting.

In 1479, Johann von Wesel, pastor of the Cathedral of Mainz, was tried, condemned, and imprisoned in a monastery for his writings to the effect that emitting semen might be healthful. "Self-pollution" was the greatest sin against nature and led to bodily weakness, impotence, and shortening of the lifespan through suicide. This was the claim made in London in 1640 by the Reverend Richard Capel in his book *Temptations, Their Nature, Their Danger, Their Cure*. In 1842, the well-known ethicist J. C. Debreynne, who was both a Trappist priest and a doctor, described the consequences of onanism: "Palpitations, weakened vision, headaches, dizziness, tremors, painful cramps, convulsive epileptic movements, often genuine epilepsy, general pains in the limbs or in the back of the head, in the spine, in the chest, in the stomach, great weakness of the kidneys, general paralytical phenomena" (*Essai sur la theologie morale considerée dans ses rapports avec la physiologie et la medecine*.)

In 1956, the book *In All Candor*, written by an English minister named Leslie D. Weatherhead, was published in Zurich. The book relates how for thousands of English men and women, onanism is the greatest problem in life and how they have nervous breakdowns over it. In 1975 Pope Paul VI in his "Declaration on Some Questions in Sexual Ethics," attacked the grave sin of onanism ... The pope wrote that the masturbator forfeits the love of God. Beyond that, masturbation is a mortal sin, "even though it is not possible to prove unequivocally that Holy Scripture expressly repudiates this sin as such." Pope Gregory I (590–604) denied communion to priests who masturbated

... Masturbation results in impotence, brain damage, and nearsightedness (Hubert Döbisch, *Theologie der Gegenwart*, 1982, 2, 106). The pamphlet *General Information on the Hygiene and Biology of Young Persons* warns that “masturbation impairs health” (*Der Spiegel*, no. 13, 1986).

Masturbation in public, or the viewing of this activity, is punishable under the laws of most jurisdictions in America as a contribution to the delinquency of the public or as a public indecency. On November 5, 1990, sheriff’s deputy Bob Stewart observed the mayor of Shalimar, Florida, Bart Hudson, thirty-three, masturbating himself in the public restroom at the Shoal River Wayside Park near Crestview, Florida, and arrested him. Ten days later, State Attorney Curtis Golden charged Hudson under two statutes dealing with lewd and lascivious behavior. In spite of the fact that Hudson had been dealt with in a similar case by the sheriff several years earlier, a judge dismissed the two charges on March 4, 1991. This case was headline news for several months in the two local newspapers, even grabbing the headlines away from the Persian Gulf War from time to time. Such is the sensationalism that so often attaches to public figures over anything sexual, even such a minor offense as masturbation.

Researchers Kinsey, Masters, Johnson, and Hite have all demonstrated that masturbation is highly prevalent in the population. Its prevalence in individuals under age twenty has been reported as follows: Hirschfeld, 96 percent; Dukes, 95 percent; Marcuse, 93 percent; Rohleder, 90 percent; and Meirowsky, 88.7 percent. In Shere Hite’s 1976 *The Hite Report—A Nationwide Study of Female Sexuality*, the conclusion was that a majority of women achieve orgasm more reliably this way than through sexual intercourse with a man. Masters and Johnson in their 1986 *Sex and Human Loving* went so far as to say that “there is mounting evidence that the lack of masturbatory experience may lead to psychosexual problems ...”³⁷⁸ In spite of the known fact that a very high percentage of humans and all other animal species³⁷⁹ have indulged in masturbation, our religious leaders, family seniors, and civil authorities continue to sternly admonish their juniors and make them feel very guilty about it. “There is a truth that, man and boy, I’ve spent a lifetime ruing: There isn’t much that I enjoy I don’t feel guilty doing.”³⁸⁰ Freud, although he knew that it was statistically normal in the population, still regarded masturbation with disgust. Up until 1940, a man could be dishonorably discharged from the U.S. Navy if he was caught masturbating.

By 1996, up to seven orgasms a week average for six months for men older than fifteen was considered in the normal category. The most commonly observed range, however, is one to three times a week. Kinsey et al. reported only 7.6 percent of their male sample had an orgasm seven or more times a week on an average.³⁸¹ Kafka

³⁷⁸ Masters, Johnson, and Kolodny, *Sex and Human Loving*, 289.

³⁷⁹ Stephen J. Roberts, D.V.M., *Veterinary Obstetrics & Neonatal Diseases*, 2nd ed. (1971), 626.

³⁸⁰ Dick Emmons, *Northwest Florida Daily News* (December 2, 1979).

³⁸¹ A. C. Kinsey, W. B. Pomeroy, and C. E. Martin, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male* (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders, 1948), 193–217.

reported that 57 percent of his sampling of 100 men with sexual impulsivity disorders averaged in excess of seven sexual outlets per week for a five-year period.³⁸²

The most harmful and disturbing aspect of masturbation in this country at the present time is a phenomenon labeled “auto-erotic asphyxiation,” “asphyxiophilia,” “hypoxxyphilia,” or “scarfing.” An estimated 500 to 1,000 young American men accidentally kill themselves in this manner each year. Dr. John Money, the world’s foremost sexologist, puts the total deaths at “tens of thousands.”³⁸³ Doctor Harvey Resnick, resident psychiatrist at the School of Medicine at George Washington University, and a woman whose thirteen-year-old son had died in this manner revealed the startling facts in a Larry King Live television broadcast on January 4, 1988. The characteristic case is that of an adolescent boy who has somehow learned that he can heighten the effects of masturbation by cutting off his breath with a cord around his neck during masturbation. Often the cord constricts the carotid artery to the point where he loses consciousness from the lack of blood flow to the brain. His body then slumps down, tightening the noose further, and he strangles to death.

The term scarfing refers to the practice of using a scarf instead of a rope for the noose, or placing a scarf under the rope to minimize abrasions on the neck. Formerly, such cases were simply dismissed as another suicide for unknown reasons, but now police and medical examiners have learned to recognize such cases by the presence of erotic literature, nude or partially clad body, and the noose around the neck. Sometimes it results in death in the initial experiment, but often death results from habitual behavior, which happened to go just a bit too far. Aquaeroticism is a closely related method of heightening the orgasm of masturbation by placing the head or the entire body in water to cut off the flow of oxygen; there are also chemical techniques. Psychiatrists believe that these dangerous practices stem from a youthful need for the stimulation and excitement of danger as also seen in playing the games of chicken or Russian roulette, speeding, and experimenting with drugs.

In 1972, the American Medical Association took the position that “masturbation is a normal part of adolescent development and requires no medical management.”³⁸⁴

In 1981, the Nass, Libby, and Fisher comprehensive book *Sexual Choices: An Introduction to Human Sexuality* attributed the taboo against masturbation to our Jewish religious heritage. The Jews valued procreation very highly for expansion of their tribe or clan. Only in the late twentieth century have attitudes toward masturbation softened appreciably. Sex therapists were openly advocating masturbation as a therapy for lonely oldsters in 1990 and 1991. Yet the old beliefs continue to haunt millions of people around the world with an excessive load of guilt.

³⁸² M. P. Kafka, “Hypersexual Desire in Males: An Operational Definition and Clinical Implications for Males with Paraphilias and Paraphilia-Related Disorders,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26, no. 5 (1997): 518.

³⁸³ J. Money, *The Breathless Orgasm* (Prometheus Books, 1991), 11.

³⁸⁴ N. Woods, *Human Sexuality in Health and Illness* (St. Louis: C. V. Mosby Co., 1979), 48.

In 1996, the Barnes & Noble book-selling empire was marketing the second edition of *Sex for One: The Joy of Self-Loving*, by Betty Dodson, PhD. The book showed masturbation to be a healthy, vital form of sexual expression and was dedicated to taking the shame out of the practice, which once had been a death penalty crime. Besides being a PhD, Dodson readily admits in the foreword of her book that she is a feminist, a pornographer, a lesbian, and a whore. In April 1999, Titanic actress Gloria Stewart revealed her devotion to masturbation. The old axiom is once again demonstrated in the book *Sex Sells!* In 1997, Denniston and Milos published a book that showed that one of the main reasons for circumcision and even, to some extent, castration was to prevent or cure masturbation.³⁸⁵ Yet the old beliefs continue to haunt millions of people around the world with an excessive load of guilt.

Regardless of what a person may think of the seriousness of the charge of masturbating, it still holds the potential for ruining a person's reputation and livelihood. At 9:50 pm, July 26, 1991, Paul Reubens, thirty-eight, was arrested by undercover police at Sarasota's XIX-rated South Trail adult cinema and charged with exposing himself and masturbating twice during the showing of a porno flick. He might have walked away after posting a \$219 bond, but he revealed that he was Pee-Wee Herman, the celebrated star of the five-year-running children's series *Pee-Wee's Playhouse*. Forty-eight hours later, the mortifying incident made national news, and his shows were canceled.

Another prominent figure who was brought low by masturbation was U.S. Surgeon General Jocelyn Elders, who made an infamous comment in a speech to the International AIDS Conference in 1994. Elders said masturbation "is something that is part of human sexuality, part of something that perhaps should be taught." To appease her furious critics, President Clinton fired her, but she stood by her words and later said, "You should say to kids, 'It's okay, but it's something you should do in the privacy of your room.'" Doctor Spock gave similar advice. In 1996, Elders, while writing *The Dreaded "M" Word*, a book on masturbation, was quoted as saying it is "not the time to be discrete."

On September 20, 1996, the shocking realization hit home to many of us that a man could be sent to prison for life for masturbation under certain conditions. On that date, Asa Dwight Bostic, forty-seven, was found guilty in Milton, Florida, of seventy-seven sex and drug crimes in which he masturbated in front of teenage girls and had them masturbate him. From 1992 to 1995, Bostic had several fourteen- to eighteen-year-old girls in his house where he gave them marijuana, cocaine, crystal methamphetamine, LSD, and alcohol, and had them pose nude for his photographs. The actual legal charges against Bostic were for delivery of drugs to a minor, contributing to the delinquency of a minor, soliciting sexual performance, soliciting prostitution, possession of photographs of sexual conduct by a child, "sexual performance," and indecent exposure, but the actual motivating sex act was masturbation. This demonstrates that even a

³⁸⁵ G. C. Denniston and M. F. Milos, *Sexual Mutilations a Human Tragedy* (New York: Plenum Press, 1997), 5, 18, 19, 23, 32, 72, 78, 90, 92.

relatively innocuous sex act, even one encouraged by experts, can bring a man the heaviest legal punishment. How much better off would a man like Bostic be without that infernal sex drive? Infinitely better in my judgment.

Masturbation was one of the main engines leading to cybersex compulsivity (see page 226), in which sexual arousal and masturbation result in positive reinforcement due to the physical sexual stimulation and release that occurs with orgasm. Further reinforcement also occurs if the sexual arousal and masturbation relieves a negative emotional state, such as anxiety. The powerful effect of operant conditioning occurs in individuals who have problems with online sexuality because online activities usually result in masturbation and orgasm to relieve a dysphoric state.³⁸⁶ One meta-analysis found that the incidence of masturbation was significantly higher with men than women.³⁸⁷

AA. Sodomy

Sodomy (often called “buggery” and scientifically known as “proctophallism”) is anal sex. According to the 1972 best-selling book *The Joy of Sex*, sodomy “is something which nearly every couple tries once. A few stay with it, usually because the woman finds that it gives her intenser feelings than the normal route and it is pleasantly tight for the man. In England, and in some states of the U.S., it is actually illegal.”³⁸⁸ Usually the first try is painful, especially if the recipient has hemorrhoids. The area was not designed for coitus, so anal sex can cause injury or disease, especially if it is mixed with straight intercourse, because there are yeast and other organisms that belong to the gut, not the vagina or male urethra. The anus is sensitive in most people, and penile entry must be lubricated with oil, Vaseline, or K-Y Jelly—saliva is not sufficient.

The term sodomy comes from the ancient city of Sodom near the Dead Sea, which was destroyed by sulphur and fire by the Lord for the homosexual practices of its inhabitants. In the Koran version of the story of Sodom, the men are portrayed as more bisexual than the Bible version in Genesis 19. Genesis 19:5 and Judges 19:22 make it clear that the men of Sodom and Gib’e-ah were seeking intercourse with other men.

In 1985, the Supreme Court overturned Georgia’s sodomy law by a five-to-four vote in the *Hardwick v. Georgia* case. Justice Warren Burger, who was one of the four opposing the overturning of the law, wrote: “In Constitutional terms there is no such thing as a fundamental right to commit homosexual sodomy. Condemnation of those practices is firmly rooted in Judeo-Christian moral and ethical standards. Homosexual

³⁸⁶ D. E. Putnam and M Maheu, “Online Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity: Integrating Web Resources and Behavioral Telehealth in Treatment,” *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* 7, no. 1 and 2 (2000): 94.

³⁸⁷ Oliver and Hyde, *Psychological Bulletin* 114 (1993): 29–51.

³⁸⁸ A. Comfort, *The Joy of Sex: A Gourmet Guide to Lovemaking*, 10th ed. (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1972), 150.

sodomy was a capital crime under Roman law.” Burger’s brief quoted those who called homosexuality “the infamous crime against nature” and “an offense of deeper malignity than rape.” By 1989, some twenty-five states had overturned laws forbidding sodomy.³⁸⁹ The act was still illegal in fifteen states in 2000. The Koran decrees death by stoning for sodomy, and in Iran, capital punishment and flogging are meted out in public. On New Year’s Day, January 1, 2002, three men were beheaded for sodomy in Abha, Saudi Arabia. Under Roman-Dutch law, offending sodomites were publicly hanged and their bodies burned.³⁹⁰ Seventy-five men were executed in Holland between 1730 and 1732. In the seventh century, Theodore of Canterbury wrote a penitential condemning anal coitus and other sexual acts. In England in 1806, more persons were executed for sodomy than murder.

Sodomy is the homosexual and bisexual male sex act that is the main source of infection with the deadly AIDS virus and the anal squamous cell, or human papillomavirus, that causes anal cancer. Rectal gonorrhea and syphilis are also transmitted this way. Coxon and McManus studied high-risk behavior among gay men and found that although anal intercourse is the most hazardous behavior for the spread of the AIDS virus, 53 percent are unprotected and at least 37 percent ejaculate semen into the partner’s anus. One of the men in their sample had 104 acts of anal intercourse in a month’s time, and at least 11.4 percent of their sampling had more than seven such acts in a month.³⁹¹

In spite of millennia of extreme punishment, denigration, and deadly disease, Lau-
man et al.³⁹² found in a national sample of heterosexuals in the eighteen-to-twenty-four age group that 15.8 percent of the males and 16.2 percent of the females reported ever engaging in anal intercourse. Some 24 percent of teens consider anal sex abstinent behavior.³⁹³ On March 23, 2001, a judge threw out Arkansas’ anti-sodomy law saying it unfairly singles out homosexuals for prosecution.³⁹⁴

BB. Stalking

Stalking, defined as “persistently following or harassing others,” became a legally punishable crime in the twentieth state in 1992 when the Florida House of Representatives and Senate unanimously (115-0 and 36-0, respectively) voted for its anti-stalker bill, CS-HR 97. The Florida law was based on the California law that went into effect

³⁸⁹ Petersen, “Playboy’s History of the Sexual Revolution 1980–1989: The Great Repression,” 156, 157.

³⁹⁰ A. Grey, *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 3 (1999): 272–273.

³⁹¹ A. P. M. Coxon and T. J. McManus, “How Many Account for How Much? Concentration of High-Risk Sexual Behavior Among Gay Men,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 1 (2000): 1–7.

³⁹² E. O. Lauman, J. Gagnon, R. T. Michael, and S. Michaels, *The Social Organization of Sexuality: Sexual Practices in the United States* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1994).

³⁹³ U.S. News (May 27, 2002): 45

³⁹⁴ “Judge Throws out Anti-sodomy Law,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 24, 2001): A2.

in 1991. Until these laws took effect, a woman who was being pursued and terrorized by a vengeful boyfriend or husband had little recourse unless physically abused or the man trespassed on her property. There had been a Dade county case of a woman who had been killed by a former lover after the police did nothing in response to her complaints that he was stalking her. Stalking is an old behavior, but a new crime.

Under the new law, stalking could be punished by a year in jail and a \$1,000 fine for following or harassment that causes “substantial emotional distress and serves no legitimate purpose.” A stalker who also “makes a credible threat with the intent to place that person in reasonable fear of death or bodily injury” could be found guilty of aggravated stalking and face penalties of up to five years in prison and a \$5,000 fine.³⁹⁵ On the June 18, 1992 Today television show, Connie Chung interviewed a woman who had been victimized and an ACLU lawyer who felt that the new laws were filling a “terrible void” in the government’s protection of women. The question was raised whether the new laws will work to stop this behavior or simply complicate the already overworked legal system.

By mid-January 1993, stalking-law arrests in Florida had reached 468, ranging from a sixty-six-year-old Fort Lauderdale man to a twelve-year-old Escambia county boy who wrote threatening notes to a classmate. Problems have cropped up, however. In Osceola County, nineteen-year-old Sharon Henderson was slain nine days after she filed a stalking complaint against twenty-eight-year-old James Bead. The sheriff’s policy at the time was to not arrest suspects until they made violent threats. Since the killing, the policy has been changed so deputies can arrest any suspected stalker. The new law did not protect nurse Sandra Sheldon from being followed home from her abortion clinic job in Fort Walton Beach, Florida. Nor did it protect her home from being picketed by abortion protester Randy Hensley and his cohorts.³⁹⁶

Surveys published in 1997 showed that stalking was one of the most prevalent of the sex crimes in the United States. One out of every twelve women is stalked at some point in her life. More than a million American women—and 370,000 men—are victims of stalking each year, according to the national survey on stalking behavior conducted by the Center for Policy Research, a Denver-based organization that received funding from the Justice Department and Centers for Disease Control and Prevention to measure the prevalence of stalking. About 45 percent of the victims reported overt threats from stalkers, and 75 percent report being spied on or followed. In 30 percent of the cases, the victims reported vandalism of their property. “Stalking is an act of terror that builds a prison of fear around its victims,” Attorney General Janet Reno said in releasing the survey findings. “This survey indicates that stalking is a bigger problem than we previously thought.”³⁹⁷

³⁹⁵ Northwest Florida Daily News (March 4, 1992).

³⁹⁶ J. Newell, “Pro-Lifers Picket at FWB Woman’s Home,” Northwest Florida Daily News (January 18, 1993): 5C.

³⁹⁷ National Institute of Justice and the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, “Stalking in America: Findings from the National Violence Against Women Survey,” Research in Brief (April 1998).

In the first nationwide study of stalking, it was found that 8 percent of women and 2 percent of men in the United States have been stalked at sometime in their life; an estimated 1,006,970 women and 370,990 men are stalked annually. American Indian/Alaskan Native women are significantly more likely to report being stalked than women of other racial or ethnic backgrounds. About 12 percent of all stalking cases result in criminal prosecution, and about a quarter of female stalking victims obtain restraining orders against their stalkers. Of all victims with restraining orders, 69 percent of the women said the stalkers violated the order. Of the victims no longer being stalked, 19 percent said the stalking ceased because the stalker was convicted of a crime.³⁹⁸

Women are the primary victims of stalking, and the effects on them have been found to be very serious in a majority of cases. In one study, it was found that 24 percent of the women seriously considered or attempted suicide. Forty-seven percent had frequent headaches, 74 percent had chronic sleep disturbances, 83 percent had heightened anxiety, 55 percent had excessive tiredness or weakness, 73 percent were extra cautious, 48 percent were more easily frightened, 30 percent had persistent nausea, and 48 percent had appetite disturbances.³⁹⁹

CC. Sexual Slavery

. Representative Joseph P. Kennedy II, Democrat from Massachusetts, told the Congressional Human Rights Caucus on July 15, 1993, that an estimated 25,000 girls have been forced into prostitution in Brazil's Amazon mining camps, and 70,000 Thailand women work as "virtual indentured sex slaves" in Japan. More than 200,000 Bangladesh young women, ages ten to twenty-five, have been auctioned as slaves, housemaids, wives, or prostitutes. The lawmakers were studying the legislation making it a federal offense for Americans to engage in child prostitution outside the United States. U.S. authorities felt there was a need for such a law to curb the rising demand for sex with children, which was apparently caused by "the mistaken belief that AIDS cannot be contracted from children," said Kenneth L. Klothorn, executive director of the Philadelphia-based Defense for Children International. The law would target those who travel individually or in organized sex tours. Pagsanjan, Philippines, and certain Sri Lankan beach resorts are internationally known as sex tourism destinations. "Child prostitutes pay a terrible price ... they are virtually slaves to their procurers," he said. Carol Bellamy of the United Nations Children's Fund was quoted as saying some 250 million children were trapped in smuggling and prostitution rings.⁴⁰⁰

³⁹⁸ "The Crime of Stalking: How Big is the Problem?" National Criminal Justice Reference Service Newsletter 28, no. 20, FS-000186, 2, 3.

³⁹⁹ E. Blaauw, F. W. Winkel, E. Arensman, L. Sheridan, and A. Freene, "The Toll of Stalking," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 17, no. 1 (2002): 50-63.

⁴⁰⁰ "U.N. Awareness of Child Sex Trade," *Northwest Florida Daily News* (December 17, 2001): A2.

The trade in slaves surged in Sudan, Africa's largest country, after February 1994. For much of the time since Sudan obtained its independence in 1956, southern rebels maintained black Christians and followers of tribal religions have fought for autonomy from the national government in Khartoum, which is dominated by northern Arabs. From 1984 to 1998, an estimated 1.5 million Sudanese died in the fighting, famine, and disease, and more than 3 million have fled or been forced from their homes. Unpaid, local militias who take slaves as their compensation do much of the fighting on the government side. Young women and children are the most valuable war booty. Old people are beaten and robbed, while young men are killed because they cannot be trained into useful, harmless slaves.⁴⁰¹

Uganda, directly south of Sudan, became independent of the British rule in 1962, but was backed by the Sudan government in its twelve-year war. The Ugandan army abducts children, who are "owned" by their army commanders, and the girls are held as virtual sexual slaves through enforced "marriages."⁴⁰² The Taliban and Al-Qaeda soldiers in Afghanistan were also rewarded with stolen women for victory in battle.

Five members of the Mexican Cardena family were arrested in West Palm Beach, Florida, in February 1998, on white slavery charges. At least twenty-three young women, some as young as thirteen, had been smuggled in from Vera Cruz, Mexico, and kept in trailers where they were forced to be prostitutes for Hispanic migrant workers. The keepers of the slaves were called "ticketeros," and they would receive the money and give makeshift vouchers for access to the women. The women would perform about twenty sex acts a day for about \$20 each. The brothels had been in operation since at least 1996.⁴⁰³

In March 2000, the house judiciary committee passed a federal house bill designed to protect victims of the growing international sex slavery trade by a unanimous vote. The bill would allow child victims under age sixteen to be brought to this country to stay in America. The issue of sexual slavery and how to curb its rapid growth has been on the minds of Capitol Hill lawmakers for some time.⁴⁰⁴

On December 12, 2000, the Women's International War Crimes Tribunal closed a symbolic trial of Japan's World War II leaders by finding the late Emperor Hirohito guilty for his army's policy of systematically forcing Asian women into sexual slavery. Gabrielle McDonald, one of the four judges, said: "We have concluded that Hirohito knew or should've known about the establishment of the system of comfort stations." Today, most female Asian slaves are forced into prostitution rings, serving metropolitan areas with large Asian communities.

The U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service has identified 250 brothels in twenty-six states suspected of using unwitting immigrant women as prostitutes. Texas

⁴⁰¹ "Slave Trade Resurges in Sudan," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (February 8, 1998): 10A.

⁴⁰² G. Omona and K. E. Matheson, "Uganda: Stolen Children, Stolen Lives," *The Lancet* 351 (February 7, 1998): 442.

⁴⁰³ "Mexicans Enslaved for Prostitution," Northwest Florida Daily News (February 25, 1998): 2B.

⁴⁰⁴ "Measure Would Curb Sex Slavery," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 9, 2000): 5A.

prosecutors got guilty pleas in August 2000 in a case where 100 Chinese and Thai women were agreeing to pay \$40,000 a piece to sneak into America, only to find themselves pressed into the “flesh trade” in Houston and several other cities.

Trafficking in women and girls for the purpose of sexual exploitation is a very lucrative market estimated at an annual \$7 billion on a worldwide basis. Only drug smuggling generates greater profits for criminals. Women are trafficked to, from, and through every region in the world, and this highly profitable trade poses relative low risks compared to the trades in drugs or weapons. The moneymakers are mostly transnational networks of traffickers and pimps. In Israel, for instance, organized crime groups invested profits from trafficking in women into legitimate businesses. Between 1990 and 1995, some \$2.5 to \$5 billion had been invested in Israeli banks, and another \$600 million had been invested in real estate.⁴⁰⁵ The sex slave trade continued on a broad scale up to the year 2003 as shown by an article in the September 2003 National Graphic magazine.

The Angel coalition of forty-three women’s group in Russia launched a campaign May 16, 2001, to stop trafficking in women. They estimated that 50,000 are trafficked abroad from Russia every year and forced into sexual slavery.⁴⁰⁶ The October 19, 2003, New York Times (p. 6YT) reported that an estimated 700,000 women are trafficked for the sex trade annually worldwide, and “of that number 200,000 are said to be moved annually through southeastern Europe.”

DD. Domestic Violence

Although seldom classified as a sex offense, domestic violence usually involves the male sex hormone testosterone and could be mollified or prevented by the use of the castration treatment. On February 8, 2001, Victoria Lutz, Director of the Pace University and Women’s Justice Center, told her audience that there are an estimated one million instances of domestic violence each year in America and that about 90 percent of the victims are women. Since the enactment of the 1994 Violence Against Women Act, domestic violence has become a felony with penalties up to twenty years in prison.

Domestic violence frequently involves stalking, rape, and homicide with the estimated incidence of one in four cases of homicide resulting from domestic violence. Professor Lutz showed a thirty-minute video called *Defending Our Lives*, which documented the stories of several women in prison for killing their husbands or boyfriends as a result of being attacked. The tide is changing today from the uncaring situation ten years ago. There are now at least 1,200 battered women’s shelters in the United

⁴⁰⁵ Donna M. Hughes, “The ‘Natasha’ Trade: Transnational Sex Trafficking,” *National Institute of Justice Journal* (January 2000): 8–15.

⁴⁰⁶ Northwest Florida Daily News (May 17, 2001): A12; and (November 25, 2001): A7.

States, and there is a toll-free number that women can call that helps guide the victims of domestic violence (1-800-799-SAFE) in how to proceed to gain protection.

Several women's groups were active in getting the government to supplement the Violence Against Women Act with Grants to Encourage Arrest Policies Program. At least 130 grants to police and criminal justice agencies across the country, varying between \$100,000 and \$300,000 a year, each resulted in a greatly increased arrest rate for batterers, establishment of special domestic violence training facilities, and better protection for victims.

Numerous theories have been put forth in an attempt to explain why some men abuse women. One widely supported construct associated with relationship violence is experiencing or witnessing violence in one's family of origin. Men who witness wife assault in their family of origin have battering rates that are three times greater than those who do not have such experiences.⁴⁰⁷

EE. Fondling

Fondling is usually an innocuous cuddling or caressing to show affection, but when it involves handling the private parts of another person, it is called lewd or lascivious fondling and is a third-degree felony in Florida and several other states. Three teenage boys were arrested December 11, 2001, in Navarre, Florida, after a young female student said she was fondled in the backseat of the school bus on their way home from their middle-school classes. Mitchell Mundy, twenty-one, was arrested May 4, 2002, in Crestview, Florida, for fondling himself in public.

William Breer⁴⁰⁸ wrote that fondling was "... the most minor sex offense that usually comes to the attention of law enforcement and clinicians. Fondling can take place either through the clothing or after removal of clothing ... Fondling that involves removal of clothing is more serious than fondling through the clothing."

In spite of its relatively minor status in the hierarchy of sex crimes, a fondling case ignited the priestly sexual sinning crisis that swept over America's largest Christian denomination in the year 2002. Beginning about January 5, the Boston Globe newspaper ran a series of articles about ex-priest John J. Geoghan, who had molested approximately 130 boys. The archdiocese of Boston agreed to pay up to \$30 million to eighty-six people who had accused Geoghan. Geoghan was convicted of fondling a ten-year-old boy and sentenced in February to nine to ten years in prison. On May 16, 2002, Father Alfred J. Bietighofer, sixty-four, hung himself in his room at St. Luke Institute, a Catholic psychiatric hospital in Silver Springs, Maryland. He had resigned after being accused of fondling two boys in the 1970s and 1980s.

⁴⁰⁷ D. Reitzel-Jaffe and D. A. Wolfe, "Predictors of Relationship Abuse Among Young Men," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 16, no. 2 (2001): 101.

⁴⁰⁸ William Breer, *The Adolescent Molester* (Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas Publisher, 1987): 23.

VII. Other Sex-Related Problems

There is another chamber of horrors, which is full of behaviors that are really sex offenses, but I hesitate to classify them as such because they are rarely recognized as such by the criminal justice system. I might more aptly call them sexual deviations, aberrations, abnormalities, or perversions—meaning that they vary from the normal heterosexual coitus and so have become recognized by some specialists as such. These anomalies are listed here because they cause disquietude or trouble in the populace, and they are amenable to the castration treatment. Here again I have arranged them in an approximate descending order of seriousness, bearing in mind that those that cause death are by far the most serious. Some of the terminology employed for these deviations rarely or never appear in the criminal justice literature because of the added complexities of keeping records. Although these are fairly comprehensive lists, I cannot guarantee that they are complete. These variations are almost endless because of mankind's great ingenuity in seeking sexual pleasure.

When and if it ever comes down to the long-play argument on the benefits of castration in any given branch of the sex offenses, I believe that it can be shown that in every one of these there will be found a justification. Within each category of sexual misdoings—even the most innocuous of them—there can be found some examples where castration would have been a far preferable alternative or remedy. Masturbation, for example: Though nearly universal among American men and relatively harmless, it can become a major criminal incident. My local newspaper of December 15, 1987, headlined “Elementary School Principal Arrested” for masturbating a fifteen-year-old boy in the shopping center men's room. His life is ruined. He would be far better off had he been castrated when he discovered that he had a weakness that would jeopardize his reputation and career. Public masturbation is a criminal offense. Another case of an extreme in masturbation is the person who is so preoccupied that he masturbates twenty times a day and has little time or energy left for family and job.

Another aspect of my study of the multiple types of deviant sexuality is that there is a fairly general tendency for some of our worst criminals to progress from innocuous sexual behavior to more serious both in degree and frequency. The thrills that sexual activity brings are addictive, and there is a detectable change in the body chemistry that is similar to addiction to alcohol and drugs. Testosterone increases and the brain's dopamine adjusts to demanding greater and greater thrills. Ted Bundy, one of our most notorious serial killers who murdered at least thirty women, began about age nine as a peeping Tom (voyeur).

A. Lycanthropy

The word lycanthrope comes from the Greek *lykos* (wolf) and *anthropo* (man)—literally, wolfman. In general usage, it refers to a man who has taken on all the attributes of a wolf: excessive body and face hair, heavy-joined eyebrows, dry tongue and eyes, a savage and predatory nature, a fearsome bloodlust, and roaming about at night on all four limbs. The wolfman also appears to have the mind of a fierce wolf rather than a human mind. The term werewolf is also common in English usage—coming from the Latin *vir* (a cognate of the Teutonic *wer*), meaning “man,” hence manwolf. The differences between the two terms are slight. Both have had similar meanings at various times and places, so they are used interchangeably.

The belief in the wolfman or the manwolf is as old as time and worldwide in occurrence. The evidence for the existence of such a creature is simply too pervasive to shrug off as mere superstition. In other cultures than our own, the man became the locally most-feared beast rather than the wolf of western culture: the tiger in Asia, the leopard or hyena in Africa, the panther in South America, and so on.¹ The Holy Scriptures mention such an instance in the fourth chapter of the book of Daniel written about 168 BC. The mind of the great king of Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar (605 to 562 BC), was taken from him and a beast’s mind was given to him for seven years. He ate grass like an ox, his body was wet with dew, his hair grew long as an eagle’s feathers, and his nails were like a bird’s claws. Another Biblical reference is Matthew 7:15, which warns of false prophets who are inwardly ravenous wolves.

Herodotus (484 to 425 BC) retold the story that was current among the Scythians during his period about the Neurians and Androphagi who lived in the remote areas north and east of Greece. “Once a year every Neurian turns into a wolf for a few days and then turns back into a man again ... The Androphagi are the most savage of men, and have no notion of either law or justice. They are herdsmen without fixed dwellings; their dress is Scythian, their language peculiar to themselves, and they are the only people in this part of the world to eat human flesh” (Herodotus, *The Histories*, Book IV). The trail of the werewolf will-of-the-wisp takes us down through the morass of myths and legends, which have grown up over a long time. Probably the most venerable of these is the story of Lycaon, king of ancient Arcadia. Ovid retold the legend in the year AD 1—as though Jupiter himself was telling it in his marble council chamber surrounded by the other gods—as follows:

Scandalous rumors concerning the state of the times had reached my ears. Hoping to find them false, I descended from the heights of Olympus, and walked the earth, a god in human form ... I entered the inhospitable home of the Arcadian tyrant. I revealed myself as a god, and the people began to do me homage. Lycaon, however, first laughed at their pious prayers, and exclaimed: “I shall find out by an infallible test, whether he be god or

¹ M. Somers, *The Werewolf* (New Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1966), 1 ff.

mortal: there will be no doubt about the truth” ... He took a hostage sent him by the Molossian people, slit the man’s throat with his sharp blade, and cooked his limbs, still warm with life, boiling some and roasting others over the fire. Then he set this banquet on the table. No sooner had he done so, than I with my avenging flames brought the house crashing down. Lycaon fled, terrified, until he reached the safety of the silent countryside. There he uttered howling noises, and his attempts to speak were all in vain. His clothes changed into bristling hairs, his arms to legs, and he became a wolf. His own savage nature showed in his rabid jaws, and he now directed against the flocks his innate lust for killing. He had a mania, even yet, for shedding blood. But, though he was a wolf, he retained some traces of his original shape. The greyness of his hair was the same, his face showed the same violence, his eyes gleamed as before, and he presented the same picture of ferocity.

Another well-known ancient legend is the story of Romulus and Remus who were suckled and raised by a she-wolf.

There are hundreds of werewolf stories extending down through time from these early legends to the present day. Some people put more or less credence in some of these old tales, but a majority of the populace today regards them merely as hoary ghost stories—well calculated to instill fear and dread in the reader, and thus to achieve a certain credibility and a life of their own. Some of these stories are: *The Satyricon* of Petronius by T. Petronius Arbiter (c. AD 65), *King Arthur and Gorlagon* (c. AD 1135), *the Lay of the Werewolf* by Marie de France (c. 1167), *the Breton Legend of the Other Side* by Eric Stenback (1893), *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* by Robert Louis Stevenson (1886), and others. Most of these old stories managed to insert a dash of sex to increase their interest. There is nothing quite like aberrant sex to pique the interest of the reader of a story and make it memorable. The werewolf in these stories is usually a man who attacks women or children—often beguiling them in some manner, ravishing them, raping them, and eating their flesh. The synonym for a lecherous man is that he is a “wolf.” There were at least fifty movies that have a werewolf theme and made the rounds of theaters and television shows in the 1980s.

Most people will probably choose not to believe the old myths and legends of werewolves, but there are other documents that have come down to us that are considerably more credible, such as the official records of werewolf criminal prosecutions, religious treatises, and medical studies, which may not be so easily dismissed. During the Middle Ages, lycanthropy was studied intensively as a theological doctrine. The *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics* reports that thousands of people were put to death because they were believed by church officials to be werewolves.² According to one of Voltaire’s writ-

² James Hastings, editor, *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics* (New York: Charles Scribners Sons, 1951).

ings (the grand judge of the ecclesiastical court of St. Claude, France), Henri Boguet boasted of having put more than 600 lycanthropes to death between 1569 and 1616.

In 1521, three werewolves were identified: Michael Udon of Plane, Philbert Montot, and Gros Pierre, who were executed at Poligny, France. These men confessed that they had changed themselves into wolves and eaten several people. Udon was wounded in an encounter with an armed man who later followed him to a hut, where Udon had reverted to human shape and was having his wounds dressed by his wife. On January 18, 1573, Gilles Garnier, a sadistic hermit, confessed killing and eating several children. He was condemned to be burned to death at Dole, France. More than fifty witnesses deposed that he had attacked and killed children in the fields and vineyards, devouring their raw flesh. He was sometimes seen in human shape and sometimes in the shape of a wolf. Jean Grenier was brought to trial in 1603 and sentenced to life imprisonment in the monastery at Bordeaux, France, for eating a baby and clawing and biting several young girls. He died in the monastery at the age of twenty in a badly demented condition.

Peter Stumpf, also referred to as Stubbe Peeter, was another werewolf who lived a double life in the city of Cologne, Germany, and the towns nearby. He dressed well and civilly saluted those whose friends and children he had butchered. Strangely, his villainous side was not revealed for some twenty-five years. On one occasion, he craftily called the name of one of two men and a woman who were traveling through some woods. When the man went to see who called his name, Peter ambushed and killed him. After a time, the other man went to see what had happened to his friend, and he, too, was silently murdered. The woman, seeing that neither returned, suspected that some evil had befallen them and sought to save herself by flight, but she was quickly overtaken by the fleet-footed wolfman who raped and murdered her. The two men were later found mangled in the woods, but the woman's body was never recovered—apparently her flesh had been devoured. So great was Peter's passion for human flesh that he enticed his own son into the woods, slew him, and ate the brains out of his head in one of the most degenerate acts of German history.

Stumpf killed lambs and kids in the fields, feeding on them raw and bloody like any natural wolf. He would also run among a group of maidens in the fields, scattering them, but he was certain to run one down who he would rape and kill. In the space of a few years, he thus murdered thirteen young children and two pregnant young women. The fetuses were torn from their wombs and the hearts eaten hot, pulsing, and raw. He begat a child by his own daughter, Stubbe Beell, and fornicated with his sister. The inhabitants of the area would often find the arms and legs of dead women and children scattered up and down the fields. So great was the fear in the populace that no one dared travel abroad without good defense provisions. Finally, enough large mastiffs, hunting dogs, and men were dedicated to entrapping him, and he was pursued and surrounded so that there was no chance of his escaping. Suddenly, instead of the wolf they had pursued, the hunters found a well-known inhabitant of the area walking with a staff in his hand toward the city. They all walked to Stumpf's home then, perceiving

that he was the one for whom they had searched, and delivered him to the magistrates for further examination. After being threatened by the rack, he voluntarily confessed to his life of villainies.

After some period of imprisonment, the magistrates found out that his daughter and his common-law wife, Katherine Trompin, were both accessories to some of his murders. They were also arraigned and condemned on the same day as Peter, October 28, 1589. On the thirty-first day of the same month, he was laid on a wheel, the flesh pulled from his bones in ten places with red-hot pincers, his arms and legs broken with a wooden axe, his head struck from his body, and his carcass burned to ashes. His daughter and wife were burned the same day in the presence of many peers and princes of Germany. After the execution, Stumpf's head was mounted on a tall pole with a wooden likeness of a wolf and left for a long time as a monument and notice to ensuing ages.

Sawney Beane, with his wife and fourteen children, lived in a cave by the North Sea in Galloway, Scotland. They formed the infamous "Bean Clan" with thirty-two of their other relatives, which attacked and ate travelers in their vicinity. When they were finally subdued, piles of bones were found in their cave with a large store of parts of human bodies. Some parts had been pickled in brine; others were dried out and hung up like pieces of beef. The entire clan was transported to Edinburgh and executed in the year 1435.³

John "Liver-Eater" Johnson (c. 1820–1900) carried on a vendetta against the Crow Indians for the murder of his squaw wife and child in which he killed some three hundred Crow Indians. Whenever he killed one, he would slash him open with his Bowie knife and eat his raw liver.⁴

Physicians considered lycanthropy a disease from very early times. Paulos Aigina of seventh-century Alexandria attributed its causes to brain malfunction, hallucinogenic drugs, or humoral pathology. The name for this pathology comes from the Latin word *humor*, meaning "moisture, especially the moisture of the bodily fluids." In this ancient understanding of the physiology of the body, the four humors were: red blood, yellow choler, clear phlegm, and black melancholy; the variant mixtures of these humors in different men determined their temperaments, physical shape, and mental qualities. The ideal man was believed to have had an equal proportion of each of these four. A predominance of one produced a man who either was sanguine (the Latin word *sanguis* means "blood"), choleric, phlegmatic, or melancholic. According to the humors' theory, the lycanthrope was insane due to a superabundance of the humor of melancholy.⁵ Some of the old werewolf stories told of the color of the blood of werewolves as being black as tar when their flesh was cut open.

³ McNally, *Dracula Was a Woman*, 136.

⁴ *Ibid.*, 133.

⁵ C. F. Otten, *A Lycanthropy Reader* (New York: Syracuse Press, 1986), 13.

There are several diseases that produce the symptoms common to lycanthropy. Rabies—generally called hydrophobia, meaning “morbid fear of water”—is probably the most common. Rabies produces great thirst, restlessness that increases to an uncontrollable excitement, mental deterioration, and spasms of the larynx, which sometimes produces strange vocal sounds. Porphyria (from the Greek meaning “purple” for the dark discolorations of the urine and blood, which results from the disease) is another pathological body condition resulting from a gene causing the production of excessive amounts of porphyrin in the bone marrow. Since 1961, it has been labeled “erythropoietic protoporphyria” and is estimated to have a prevalence of 1 in 75,000 to 200,000 in the population. It also produces symptoms that are common to lycanthropy such as an extreme sensitivity of the skin to sunlight. This, in turn, results in a strong tendency to avoid sunlight, and outside movement is usually only after dark. Deformities or scarring of the arms and legs are frequently seen, as are psychiatric manifestations ranging from irritability and confusion to severe psychoses or delirium. Intermittent episodes of porphyria may be brought on by alcohol, drugs, or fasting. Symptoms are exacerbated by garlic and alleviated by injections of heme molecules from dehydrated blood cells or by drinking blood.⁶

Hypertrichosis, excessive growth of hair, is another lycanthropy-related disease. Also called polytrichia, polytrichosis, and hirsutism, hypertrichosis has been classified into several types: 1) Hypertrichosis lanuginosa is persistent or acquired production of lanugo. It may be a congenital, autosomal disorder in which there is excessive hair distributed over the entire body through life, usually in association with other congenital anomalies such as carcinomas. 2) Hypertrichosis pinnae auris involve the pinna of the ear and may be linked with the Y-dominant autosomal trait—called also “hairy ears.” 3) Hypertrichosis universalis is the congenital form of hypertrichosis lanuginosa. A forty-three-year-old carnival star named Jackie Johnson of Los Angeles has this form of the disease and was pictured on the front page of the *Weekly World News* on February 26, 1991, with the caption, “Marry me and I’ll give you \$100,000.” By the end of March, he had received hundreds of letters from women all around the country.

Another medical aspect of the werewolf phenomenon was written up in the June 1995 issue of the journal *Nature Genetics*. Members of a family in rural Mexico are born with hair all over their faces, even their eyelids—a condition called congenital generalized hypertrichosis, hairy congenital nevus, or the “werewolf syndrome.” Scientists have moved closer to finding the key gene by studying blood samples from this family, which was not named, but was well-known to gene expert Dr. Jose Cantu of the University of Guadalajara. Cantu said that one of the members of the family shaved his face every day and worked as a night watchman “where he was by himself, he didn’t have to see anyone, and he was very happy with that work.” But eventually,

⁶ H. Aekehagy, *Cannibalism—From Sacrifice to Survival* (Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 1994), 58.

like most of the other afflicted men Cantu knows of, the man joined the circus and for that he let his hair grow out.⁷

Still another condition that has contributed to wolfman stories and behavior is lupus (systematic lupus erythemstosis). This is a disease that usually puts a butterfly-shaped rash across the face, making the victim look like a wolf, hence the name “lupus.” It is most common in blacks, Indians, and some Asian groups. The disease is made worse by exposure to the sun, so those infected with it are more likely to be out at night or in dark places like the wolf. Dementia, psychological problems, and epilepsy are some of its side effects, which may also contribute to fierce wolf-like behavior.

Seasonal affective disorder (SAD) is another manifestation of the night-preferring behavior of the lycanthrope. People with this disorder feel severely depressed in the sunlight—like a dying, withering flower—and much prefer the dark and cold of night, winter, and dimly lit rooms indoors. Dr. Herbert Pardes, chairman of psychiatry at Columbia University, noted that not much is known about this unusual malady. He told Ann Landers,⁸ “It could have something to do with a change in hormones.” Xeroderma pigmentosum is a rare—striking about four people out of 1 million—autosomal recessive disease with somewhat similar sensitivity to the ultraviolet rays of the sun. It is the result of a deficient enzyme in the excisional repair of ultraviolet-damaged DNA. It usually begins in childhood with excessive freckling, keratoses, papillomas and malignancies, lacrimation, and photophobia. Mental retardation, areflexia, and other neurological disorders may be associated with it. Bloom’s syndrome is still another autosomal recessive disorder producing a wolf-like preference for the dark. This syndrome is characterized by photosensitivity, dwarfism, erythema, dilation of the blood vessels, and a tendency to occur in patients of Jewish ancestry.

The older literature on the attribution of the lycanthropy phenomenon to drug-induced mental states hinges on the effects of nightshade, wormwood, aconite root, hemlock, mandrake, jimsonweed, and henbane; the more modern writings tend to blame atropine, LSD (lysergic acid diethylamide), marijuana, and peyote. Atropine and its related drugs produce the dry tongue and eye characteristic of the lycanthrope. Nightshade contains belladonna, wormwood, and aconite root; hemlock is a cerebral stimulant. Mandrake is a narcotic herb that contains atropine and scopolamine. All these substances can produce altered states of consciousness and perceptual distortion, which could produce the appetite, ferocity, cunning, swiftness, and strength of a wolf on a temporary or permanent basis under the right conditions. A man’s genetic predisposition, the superstitions induced by his culture, an excess of male hormones, and a mixture of other substances in his diet could combine to produce a wolf-like man. There are also other substances, which were fairly common, that could cause these symptoms. One of these is the ergot fungus of rye grain and other food items, which produces hallucinations, loss of mental control, great thirst, twitching of the extremi-

⁷ “Scientists Close In On ‘Werewolf’ Gene,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 1, 1995): 9C.

⁸ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 26, 1989).

ties, dilation of the pupils, and gangrene of the fingers and toes. Ergot has been used since the 1960s to make the lysergic acid component of LSD, 100 micrograms of which can cause psychotic episodes. Extremes of hunger are another cause of werewolf-like behavior. In 1960, several athletes who were isolated in a wrecked airplane in the high Andes ate their fellow passengers. In 1988, fifty-two Vietnamese refugees killed and ate three of their membership while in a disabled boat at sea.⁹

We are not as far away from the jungle as we may like to think we are. The Reverend Robert Schuller told of his experience in a fine hotel in Africa that made him realize that the jungle is never very far away. In spite of our fine clothing, automobiles, and homes, the jungle of human emotions lies just under the surface of our civilized facade. We have evolved from very primitive life forms as paleontology has clearly shown. Things are rarely what they seem. When we are not progressing, we are usually regressing. Regression is easier than we realize; we could slide backward to the jungle under many conceivable conditions. We are never very far from the jungle.

The werewolf phenomenon has been a subject for major theological studies for a very long time. The Holy Roman Emperor Sigismund (1368–1437) ordered that a council of the most learned theologians study the phenomenon. After much study and debate, they agreed unanimously that anyone who dared to deny that a human being could transform himself into a wolf should be found guilty of heresy and burned at the stake. Most of the man-to-wolf transformations were thought to be the work of the devil. If the devil had such power in the world that he could change one of God's creatures—made in His own image—into the form of a wolf for his satanical purposes, then he must be greatly feared. But then it was rationalized that the devil's power could not be superior to God's and must be severely limited. However, the devil could have the power to delude by illusions. He could simulate the transformation by troubling their imagination, strengthening the effects of drugs, and superimposing animal-like shapes and postures on their bodies to deceive spectators. Devils and demons were acknowledged to have power over sorcerers, magicians, witches, and other evildoers—some of whom were well known to be consummate deceivers. They might well be suspected of confusing their nature and purposes by occult practices and magic. As a consequence, church leaders down to the present day have found it expedient to encourage some of their clergy to be proficient in exorcism so that they can help cast these demons out of possessed individuals.

The standard of beliefs for over 300 years was the famous *Malleus Maleficarum*—the witches' hammer—written in 1487 by two priests, Henricus Institoris and Jakob Spenger. It asserted that the origin of witchcraft was "carnal lust," insatiable in certain women, and laid down the rule that those accused of witchcraft should be investigated if necessary with torture; convicted witches if penitent should be condemned to life imprisonment and if unrepentant, handed over to the law to be executed. It was a major work in the history of psychiatry since it specified that sudden loss of reason in

⁹ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 11, 1988).

a person is a symptom of demonic possession. The usual method of driving away the demon was to burn the person—just as they had done with Joan of Arc in 1431.

Raymond McNally most ably demonstrated in his 1983 book *Dracula Was a Woman* how Bram Stoker, the author of the 1897 novel *Dracula*, used the true histories of real people: Prince Vlad Dracula of Wallachia (The Impaler, 1431–1476), together with Countess Elizabeth Bathory of Transylvania (1560–1620), as source material to fabricate the story that has become the principle modern legend of the vampire. This is an excellent illustration of how such legends were formulated of both facts and the embellishment of fiction. The Bible, itself, may provide source material for the imaginations of some of the tellers of these nightmarish yarns: “... You shall not eat the blood of any creature, for the life of every creature is its blood; whoever eats it shall be cut off” (Leviticus 17:10–14 and Mark 5:2–9).

Numerous explanations of werewolf behavior and the clinical conditions of lycanthropy have been offered from the psychiatric viewpoint. The lycanthropy phenomenon is not considered a diagnostic entity in itself, but rather a symptom of deeper underlying complexes. Schizophrenia, particularly the paranoid variety of this psychosis, is the principle type. The needs of the schizophrenic to be fed along with other overpowering oral needs, rule his life and his behavior. The male ego, repressed by an overpowering female, often turns the man to violence. Karl Abraham has reasoned that the oral phase of infantile development at which a male child develops teeth is also the time he finds himself provided with an effective weapon of aggression, which he can use to satisfy his needs and overcome his frustrations. Rosenstock and Vincent reviewed the literature on lycanthropy and concluded that in addition to schizophrenia, organic brain syndrome with psychosis, psychotic depression reaction, hysterical neurosis of the dissociative type, and manic-depressive psychosis could be diagnosed as contributing. Other psychiatrists have attributed homosexuality along with strong oral drives and blood fetishism with abnormal excitement to the sight of blood to the imagination as contributing to lycanthropy. Brill (1941) pointed out that necrophilia is not as rare as people believe, and it has been known for centuries. He also points out that “destruction of the dam of shame, disgust, and morality requires more psychic labor than in the construction of any other perversion.” There is also a mental condition sometimes called zoophagous in which individuals have a strong desire to eat living animals, which contributes to some of the werewolf behavior. Some experts also attribute an oral-sanguinary sadism etiology.

A fifty-year-old widow, who kept a general store in a certain small Midwestern town, suddenly disappeared in November 1958. There were bloodstains on the floor near the cash register, but no money had been taken. The whole town became alarmed immediately because three years before, another woman, who ran a bar in the town, had disappeared in a similar manner. The sheriff was able to trace down a suspect through store records of a purchase of a gallon of antifreeze to a well-known and respected bachelor of the community. One of the deputies who lived nearby was sent out to interview the man at his home just outside of the town. When he approached

the house, he saw a light on in the kitchen, so, with the assurance of an old friend, he opened the door. A ghastly sight met his eyes. The missing woman's headless, eviscerated body was hanging by the heels from hooks in the ceiling, and some of her internal organs were stewing in a pot on the stove. The man was busily engaged in cutting up her body into packages of convenient size for his freezer. A search of the house revealed ten other human heads—one of them the missing bar owner from three years earlier. A chair in the living room was upholstered in human skin. Belts and purses made of the same material were also found. Extra pieces of skin were rolled in cellophane and stored in various parts of the house. The building was filthy with dust-covered bones and piles of decayed garbage in the corners of the rooms. The one exception to the general condition of the house was his long-dead mother's room. Everything in that room was intact just as it had been the day she died. The bed was carefully made up, the bedstead and chest of drawers meticulously dusted, and all was in order.

The man confessed to robbing the graves of recently buried females over a period of several years. He also admitted that he had killed and eaten the woman who owned the bar. He was preparing to eat the storeowner's body when he was caught. Immediately, the news of this horrid case spread throughout the nation. The writers of Alfred Hitchcock's famous movie *Psycho* used some of this grisly episode in 1960 for their gruesome horror film. The psychiatrists who interviewed this monster described him as a schizophrenic personality—torn between love and hate for women—with an Oedipus complex and necrophilia tendencies combined with anthropophagy (cannibalism). He told one of the psychiatrists that he wished that he were a woman, and he spoke of cannibalism as though it were an accepted custom. It was found that this individual had been providing adequate behavioral clues to his perversions for many years, but no one blamed the local police for not picking up on them because such nightmarish behavior is incomprehensible to the average law officer.¹⁰

In the modern vernacular of the criminal justice system, the werewolf and vampire of the ancient legends and superstitions are the lust murderer, sadist, or necrophiliac of today. They are all crimes that have a major element of sexual causation. The lurid horror of the werewolf draws the mind away from its sexual nature. Most of us are accustomed to thinking of sexuality in a kinder and more loving light. We equate sex and love very often. Love is a noble emotion, far removed from such evils as the ravening werewolf. We have trouble shifting the gears of our normal thought processes from the beauty of sexual fulfillment to the gruesome eating of human bodies, yet it is the same set of male hormones that is the biological root cause of these widely different behaviors. It is strange, but true, that without these hormones circulating in the blood and in the brain, the romantic troubadour does not sing his love song beneath his sweetheart's window, and the brutal murders do not occur.

¹⁰ Morneau and Rockwell, *Sex, Motivation, and the Criminal Offender*, 9 ff.

How incredible it is that the human race has suffered so acutely for thousands of years the fear, horror, dread, terror, and death by the werewolf when all the time there has been a simple and near-perfect treatment for the problem. One little snip would do it. Castration (orchidectomy) eliminates the behavior and cures the problem. It is guaranteed to eliminate the aggressive drive and the sexual potency that drives the werewolf to his heinous acts. It also provides many fringe benefits to society and the individual. Castration satisfies the public cry for vengeance with poetic justice. It punishes the criminal in a manner that imparts a powerful deterrent to other men who might be tempted to commit similar crimes. It permits the criminal to make later restitution to the aggrieved victims and their families. It is relatively inexpensive due to the testes being located external to the body cavity, especially if the cost of years of imprisonment is the alternative. It has the potential for preserving whatever talents for the public good that the criminal might possess.

I have heard it said that castration is too draconian, severe, or invasive a procedure. For the love of Heaven, where are our values? What perverted sense of justice makes us so sympathetic to the most evil of all possible human behavior? Castration imparts very little suffering compared to the crimes of the lycanthrope. There is a vast misunderstanding of the results of castration in the general public because one hears of men who prefer death. Hanging, dismemberment, and burning were common punishments for hundreds of years. These gruesome penalties were ineffective in many of the objectives of punishment and have been withdrawn. Castration has the effect of removing the principle source of testosterone (T), the main hormone of sex and aggression. Once the testes are removed, T is gradually depleted from the brain and blood. The result is that the individual no longer wants to maim, murder, and devour people. The desire, ability, and the aggressive instinct are all three components that make the fiendish behavior possible; these are eliminated or sharply reduced. The criminal eventually reaches a plateau where he loses interest in these beastly activities. Lust no longer drives him. He is relieved of the demon within him ... freed of the anxiety, suffering, torment, agitation, and restlessness caused by his former passions. We may very well ask: Of what are we depriving a man if he no longer wants or is capable of this aggressive behavior?

The fact that castration effectively quenches the aggressive element of behavior has been known since man first domesticated animals some 8,000 years ago. With most mammals, the number of male and female births is approximately equal, but only one male is all that is needed for serving dozens of females in the procreation of their species. The result has been severe competition, fighting, wasting, and wounding among the males who are seeking to mate with many females and protecting their own harems. It was found that castration eliminates this fighting dangerousness and makes the animals more tractable for riding or pulling the plow. Castration also makes better meat more efficiently. With castration, bulls become oxen and steers, stallions become geldings, rams become wethers, boars become barrows, and so on with other species—

being gentled and improved. Human slaves and servants who have been castrated have always been more valuable and reliable than intact ones.

The hierarchy of violence among all vertebrates clearly shows an almost perfect correlation with the species' levels of testosterone in the blood plasma. The ferret and elephant are high in both, man is normally about midway, and the cocker spaniel and pigeon are near the bottom. The ferret has a measured peak level of 83 nanograms (ng) of testosterone per milliliter of plasma and is well known as a very fierce animal that kills rats and prairie dogs and often bites people. It is a feared and relentless hunter. The bull Indian elephant has a peak level of 65.4 ng/ml and a mean level of 44.7 during his sexually active period called musth (Hindi meaning "intoxicated"). The bull's behavior when he is in musth is characterized by murderous belligerence and frenzied fury. The bulls often fight to the death. Musth is also marked by the exudation of a smelly brown ichor from small holes above the eyes. At other times, the elephant's normal level of testosterone is only 0.7 ng/ml, and his behavior at this level is very timid for a creature of his size—six tons or more. The old bulls later usually become mentally deranged and unruly solitary outcasts from the herd.

In the white race, men usually record a peak testosterone level of 17.7 ng/ml and a mean of 8 with a daily range varying from 1 to 11. Fifty-two out of fifty-seven behavior studies showed that boys, with their normally higher testosterone levels, were more aggressive than girls. At least 90 percent of the sexual crimes, assaults, wars, and combative sports belong to the male of the species. On the lower end of the hierarchy of violence and testosterone is the cocker spaniel with a peak of 4.3 and a mean of 1.9 ng/ml concentration. These spaniels are well known for their gentle and loving behavior.

B. Vampirism

Vampirism is closely related to lycanthropy. It is the act or practice of bloodsucking—the actions of a vampire: a bloodsucking reanimated cadaver. The word is of Slavic origin akin to the Serb word vampire. Just as we have seen with lycanthropy, vampirism has a very long history that goes back to at least as far as the Assyrians who had an up-and-down history from about 2000 to 612 BC and occupied the region that is now northern Iraq. In one cuneiform translation of their Prayer Against the Evil Spirits quoted by Montague Summers, the vampires are described as follows:

Knowing no care,
They grind the land like corn;
Knowing no mercy.
They rage against mankind;
They spill their blood like rain,
Devouring their flesh (and) sucking their veins.
Where the images of the Gods are, there they quake;
In the temple of Nabu, who fertilizes the shoots of wheat,
They are demons full of violence ceaselessly devouring blood.¹¹

The Assyrian/Babylonian name for one of their demon vampires was Lilitu (also Lulti, meaning “lascivious” or “lechery”). This is believed to have been adopted and modified to Lilith (and Lamia, in the classical Latin) in the Rabbinical literature of the Hebrews (see Isaiah 34:14). Old Hebrew legends called Lilitu the mother of demons and spirits and queen of the succubi. Her cult survived until the seventh century AD among the Jews in spite of the clear prohibition against eating blood in Leviticus 17:10–16.

The Romans believed in rapacious bird-like vampires as Ovid (43 BC to AD 18) described them. They:

... fly by night and attack nurseless children
And defile their bodies, snatched from the cradle.
They are said to rend the flesh of sucklings
With their beaks, and their throats are full of blood which they have drunk.

... they sucked his infant breast with greedy tongues, and the poor child
squalled and craved for help.¹²

The ancient Mayas of Central America consumed human blood in some of their religious rituals at one period in their history. Christian churches still do this symbolically with the bread and wine of the Eucharist representing the body and blood of Christ in the Holy Communion.

In 1897, Bram Stoker (1847–1912) published a novel about the vampire Dracula believed to have been inspired by the horrors of the fifteenth century conqueror of Transylvania, Vlad Dracule, “The Impaler.” Since then, at least 100 vampire films have been made. Bloodlust and the fierce thirst for blood have been portrayed as a life force akin to sexuality in some of these films. Some of the early-twentieth-century cases of syphilis were believed to have been transmitted by drinking human blood. By the end of the century, there were several vampire nightclubs in some of our larger cities where

¹¹ Montague Summers, (New York: Dorset Press, 1991), 224. Summers quotes R. Campbell Thompson (1903). *The Devils and Evil Spirits of Babylonia*, 1, pp. 69-71.

¹² Ovid, *Fasti*, Book VI, Lines 135–138, 145, 146. *Fasti* is Latin for “festivals.”

the clientele had vampire-like fangs and clothing and sipped bloody cocktails. The sexual attraction of vampirism is more apparent in these settings. Blood (especially menstrual blood) is even mentioned as an aphrodisiac.¹³

An urgent appeal for blood donation from German Health Minister Andrea Fischer attracted help from an unusual quarter—Count Dracula. The last surviving member of the Dracula family, Ottomar Rudolphe Vlad Dracula Prince Kretzulesco, who had taken up residence in a crumbling castle on the outskirts of Berlin, volunteered to lead a Red Cross campaign for donors on August 15–16, 1999. The count attended a special showing of vampire movies to attract potential donors. Several went away with an autograph and personal thank you from the Prince of Darkness.¹⁴

Evidence still exists very much right up to the present day that the old legends were, in fact, based on the conduct of certain individuals who had an insatiable thirst for blood. John Crutchley, forty-eight, of Melbourne, Florida, drained and drank blood from a nineteen-year old woman he abducted in 1985. Crutchley, a former engineer for Harris Corporation, was sentenced in 1986 to twenty-five years in prison. He admitted imprisoning the woman in his home in Malabar for two days, raping her, and drawing blood from her with a syringe and then drinking it. He agreed to plead guilty to the murder and rape of six other women to avoid the death penalty.¹⁵ Crutchley became known as the “Vampire Rapist” in several articles in the news and was released after slightly over ten years of confinement because of state rules designed to ease prison-overcrowding conditions. He was back in prison on August 9, 1996, just one day after being released, because he violated the conditions of his parole by imbibing and testing positive for marijuana use. The American Journal of Psychiatry (134, no. 10, October 1977) and The Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases (178, no. 2, February 1990) both carried articles on cases of lycanthropy as a psychosis ... often diagnosed as paranoid schizophrenia.

The disease porphyria, as mentioned above, is one of the likely contributors to the legends of lycanthropy and vampirism. The two general classes of porphyria are erythropoietic porphyria with three subtypes in which large quantities of porphyrin are found in the blood’s erythroid cells, and four types of hepatic porphyria in which excessive amounts of porphyrin are produced by the liver. The type called porphyria cutanea tarda is more common in men than women. It is frequently associated with alcoholism, skin disfiguration, pimples, and hirsutism, and is probably the disease that led to the lycanthropy beliefs. The type most likely to be associated with vampirism is called acute intermittent porphyria (AIP), Swedish genetic porphyria, or Porphyrrolporphoria and is more common in women. AIP is often related to the menstrual cycle and alcohol, and dieting or injection of barbiturates may precipitate attacks. Most AIP patients also develop psychiatric manifestations ranging from irritability to seri-

¹³ McCary, Aphrodisiacs and Anaphrodisiacs.

¹⁴ “Good Blood Count,” *The Lancet* 354 (August 21, 1999): 660.

¹⁵ “Still No Evidence Tying ‘Vampire Rapist’ to Killings,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (April 11, 1995): 4C.

ous psychoses. Exposure to the sunlight causes the urine of AIP victims to turn red or black.

Dr. Juan Gomez-Alonso of Vigo, Spain, published an article in the September 1998 issue of the *Neurology* journal, which said the legend of the vampire may have arisen from the rabies epidemics of the 1700s. Rabies can incite aggressiveness, extreme sensitivity to smells and sights, and insomnia—all of which, in vampire fashion, might make a person inclined to bite others, avoid sunlight and garlic, and wander around at night. The rabies infection can even delay the congealing of blood after death. A corpse buried in a cool climate might dribble liquid blood for months. Gomez-Alonso points out that the medical literature reports 25 percent of rabid men studied had a tendency to bite others, and they often could not bear mirrors or pungent scents. Also, large rabies epidemics occurred in Hungary beginning in the 1720s, about the time vampire lore swept through Europe.¹⁶

In 1994, there was a strong surge of interest in vampirism. The obsession reached fever pitch in pop culture with the showing of the film version of Anne Rice's best-selling (4.5 million copies in print) novel *Interview with the Vampire*. Several articles were published in the news media. J. Gordon Melton, author of the monumental *The Vampire Book: The Encyclopedia of the Undead*, was quoted in the *Pensacola News Journal* of October 30, 1994, p. 4E, as saying: "There are two things that hook you about vampires. First, vampires are a way of living on. Second, there's the sexuality. Vampires have become increasingly erotic figures." *Newsweek* magazine for November 21, 1994, p. 85, revealed there were fifty or so "vampire interest" groups in the United States. New York's Vampire Research Center claimed that there are some 750 citizens who really are vampires, not literally undead corpses, but people who get antsy if they do not drink blood. Vlad Llecina, twenty-six, a Chicago-area rock singer, publicly announced that he has been sucking his wife's blood for years. The headline of the February 19, 1995, *Pensacola News Journal* (p. 4B) read: "Killer admits drinking victims' blood." Dannie Barnard, twenty-five, stabbed two neighborhood women and drank their blood. "I knew it was wrong," he said.

One article told of a gang rape of women and drinking of blood by young rebel soldiers in Sierra Leona, Africa. "Some of them drink blood. Especially on the war fronts where there's no food, no water; when we killed civilians we would cut a hole on the top of the arm, above the wrist, and press on the arm, and drink."¹⁷

The Biblical guidance is clearly against the drinking of blood: "Only flesh with its soul—its blood—you must not eat" (Genesis 9:4). "And you must not eat any blood in any places where you dwell, whether that of fowl or that of beast. Any soul who eats any blood, that soul must be cut off from his people" (Leviticus 7:26, 27). "For the soul of the flesh is in the blood ... No soul of you must eat blood" (Leviticus 17:11,

¹⁶ Dr. Juan Gomez-Alonso, *Neurology* (September 1998).

¹⁷ *Newsweek* (May 13, 2002): 28.

12, and 14). "... to keep abstaining from things polluted by idols and from fornication and from what is strangled and from blood" (Acts 15:20 and 29).

C. Satanism

Satanism is defined as an innate wickedness or obsession with or affinity for evil. Various cult practices have surfaced from time to time down through history, which have usually involved the worship of the devil with ceremonies. The repudiation of Christian dogma, sacrifices, sex, and drugs (see 1 Timothy 5:15). Some of these practices and beliefs can be traced from the remotest antiquity to the present day in many different cultures. Our own Judeo-Christian representation of the devil with horns and tail and grotesque shape comes down from the Assyro-Babylonian era (Britannica).

According to national surveys conducted by Barna Research, 25 percent of Americans "believe strongly" that Satan is a real being, and 60 percent of adults believe that Satan "is not a living being but a symbol of evil." Forty-five percent of Christians who describe themselves as "born again" deny Satan's existence. This widespread disbelief in the reality of Satan is a relatively recent development in Christianity. During the Middle Ages, belief in Satan was taken very seriously. To medieval Christians, the devil was a real living being. He was the Great Adversary, the Prince of Darkness, and the chief spirit of evil in the universe. Worshippers of Satan were seen as a serious threat to the welfare of the church and state. But in time, as the influence of Christianity began to wane in Western culture, so too did the belief in Satan.¹⁸

One of the very influential writings was the 1486 *Malleus Maleficarum* (Witches' Hammer) of James Sprenger, which had run through twenty-eight editions by 1600: "...God allows more power of witchcraft over the genital functions, on account of the first corruption of sin which came from the act of generation, so he also allows greater power over the actual genital organ, even to its total removal ... There is no doubt that certain witches can do marvelous things with regard to male organs ..." ¹⁹ Another quote from this book is "... All witchcraft comes from carnal lust, which in women is insatiable." ²⁰

Biblical references to Satan are contained in Genesis 3:15; 1 Chronicles 21:1; Job 1:6–12, 2:1–7; Zechariah 3:1–2; Matthew 4:10, 12:26, 16:23; Mark 1:13, 3:23–26, and 4:15; Luke 10:18, 22:3; Acts 26:18; Romans 16:20; 1 Corinthians 5:5; 2 Corinthians 2:11, 11:14, 12:7; 2 Thessalonians 2:9; 1 Thessalonians 2:18; and Revelation 2:9, 12:9, 20:2–7. Satan is also frequently called the devil particularly in the New Testament (Matthew 4:1, 5, 8, 11, 25:41; John 8:44, 13:2; Ephesians 4:27, 6:11; Hebrews 2:14; James 4:7; 1 Peter 5:8; 1 John 3:8; and Revelation 12:12, 20:1–3, 20:2). Satan is sometimes referred

¹⁸ "Satan—Is the Devil Dead?" The Plain Truth (March/April 2001).

¹⁹ Montague Summers, translator, *The Malleus Maleficarum* of Heinrich Kramer and James Sprenger (New York, 1971), part 1, question 9, p. 58.

²⁰ Encyclopedia of Criminology and Deviant Behavior, III, 435.

to in the Bible as the Evil One (Matthew 13, 19, 38; and 1 John 2:13, 5:19); Leviathan or the serpent (Genesis 3:1, 3:4, 13; Numbers 21:9; 2 Kings 18:4; Job 3:8, 41:1; Psalms 74:14; Isaiah 27:1; 2 Corinthians 11:3; and Revelation 12:9, 20:2); Lucifer (Isaiah 14:12 in the King James Version of the Bible, later versions use “day star”); Belial or Beliar (2 Corinthians 6:15); prince of demons and Beelzebub (Matthew 2:24, 12:14, and 12:24); and other names such as father of lies (John 8:44) and the tempter (Matthew 4:5 and Thessalonians 3:5).

One of the nine tenets of Satanism quoted in Anton S. LaVey’s book *The Satanic Bible* is that Satan represents indulgence in sexual perversions rather than abstinence. The old Biblical commandments against adultery, homosexuality, and the sex crimes are overlooked, so many people with deviant sexual orientations are strongly attracted to the satanic cults. Strangely enough, we find in history a fanatical Christian religious sect called the Adamites, which had a similar belief. The Adamites of Bohemia (in modern Czechoslovakia, south of Prague) denied the concept of original sin and asserted that all human impulses, including sexual desire, were manifestations of divine will and should, therefore, be given free reign. They were attacked and destroyed October 21, 1421, by the puritanical general Jan Zizka. The forty survivors of the attack were taken prisoner and burned to death.²¹

Early Christian theology mentions the fallen angels and the nephelism that gave rise to demons (Genesis 6:2). Various writers in Paris, France, practiced satanic worship in the 1890s. Judging by the news media, we are seeing a resurgence of Satanism at the present time. David Berkowitz, the sensational serial killer in the infamous “Son of Sam” cases in New York, was allegedly sacrificing his victims to appease Satan in a cult ritual. In the apocalyptic writings, Satan is identified with death and the evil impulse in man. The religious view is that God permits the devil to tempt man—not directly, but through his body’s urges. Thousands of people have been accused by the ecclesiastical judges of demoniacal possession and burned at the stake in ages past. The modern psychological approach regards sin as principally a mental disorder and holds that temptation comes from natural instincts that require some sort of satisfaction.

Geraldo Riviera hosted a two-hour television program on October 25, 1988, called *Devil Worship: Exposing Satan’s Underground*, which showed the evidence of the Church of Satan, which holds beliefs directly opposite to those of the Christian churches. They believe that evil is good and good is evil. “It is a religion to some of the members, but merely a chance to do evil by others.” Several women testified they were former “breeders” who donated their infants to be ritual sacrifices. Child sacrifice to Mo’lech (satanic in nature) is mentioned in the Bible (Leviticus 18:21). Both humans and animals are mutilated at the ceremonies, and the initiates drink their blood. Satanists robbed graves in southeast Louisiana and defaced a dozen legitimate churches in Maine. Sean Sellers, a twelve-year-old boy, murdered three people as a sacrifice so

²¹ *Voyages of Discovery—Timeframe AD 1400–1500*, 3rd printing (Richmond, VA: Time-Life Books Inc., 1993), 106.

that he could get “powers” from Satan. He was in prison in 1989 and condemned to death by lethal injection. He had a “hatred for society” and wanted to break all of the Ten Commandments. Satanism obsessed Thomas Sullivan, a fourteen-year-old boy in Jefferson Township, New Jersey. He butchered his mother with his Boy Scout knife then slashed his wrists. A child molestation scandal by the members of the Satanism ritual at the Presidio in San Francisco involved the sodomy of a five-year-old boy by one of the Satanic “priests.”

On February 24, 1999, the A&E television channel’s American Justice program introduced Richard Ramirez to the viewers as “The Night Stalker” who had killed eighteen people in California and sometimes left a satanic pentagram drawing on the wall using the victim’s blood. Another Satanist was Jay Scott Ballinger, twenty-six, of Muncie, Indiana, who on February 9, 1999, admitted to setting fire to thirty to fifty churches. Ballinger had persuaded fifty teenagers to sign contracts in blood pledging their soul to the devil. Satanic books were found in his home.

The thrills that a satanist gets from killing and torture are clear indications of the involvement of their sex hormones and neurotransmitters. There is no acting out on the more horrible crimes and mutilations that these disciples of Satan do until they are at an age where their androgenic hormones surge. This is usually about age twelve to fourteen, but many of these criminals have experienced “precocious puberty” at a much earlier age, some as young as six or eight. Some of these young Satanists have revealed their horrible thoughts and activities to their computers and left a record, so we know much more clearly that sexual impulses and kicks are part of their motivation. Michael B., sixteen, of Florida wrote the following in January 1999:

All fell to their knees, glorifying the dark being,
as I looked at I quaked,
realization of what I was seeing
This was Satan, from the depths of Hell
they had called him
Slowly he moved, now standing before the virgin.
Stretching out a hand of fire
He lifted up the witch, reaching down inside her
Pulling out her heart, her eyes went dark
Blood spewed from her mouth,
he dropped her to the ground
Then coming to the virgin, he folded back the skin
Of her breast, he placed the heart inside her chest
He then brought her back from death,
and lovingly healed her flesh
Still most of her body was bare of skin
and her breath came at first thin

Santeria witchcraft is practiced in Haiti, Cuba, Miami, and New York and follows many of the same practices as the other satanic cults such as animal sacrifices and using human skulls as tokens. These and other practices are forbidden in Deuteronomy 15:9–14.

D. Whitago

Whitago is a type of psychosis that is peculiar to certain North American Indian tribes who believe that an individual can be transformed into a giant monster called a whitago who eats human flesh. It is similar to lycanthropy and some possession states.²²

E. Amok or Amuck

Amok, or amuck, is the name of another unusual psychiatric syndrome that occasionally is observed. Amok is a Malayan word meaning “to engage furiously in battle,” and it consists of a sudden, wild rage that causes the affected person to run madly about, attacking, maiming, or killing indiscriminately any animal or human he encounters until he is killed or overpowered.²³

F. Symphorophila (Greek *symphoro*, “disaster,” plus *philia*)

“A paraphilia of the sacrificial/expiatory type in which sexuoerotic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and dependent upon stage-managing the possibility of a disaster, such as a conflagration or traffic accident, and watching for it to happen. This is the predatory paraphilia in which the symphorophile stage-manages a disaster or catastrophe which may claim victims. The symphorophile usually is a sexuoerotic spectator of the disaster at a distance. Mostly, the victims are chance bystanders or those who are trapped in an arranged crash, explosion, or fire. The catastrophe may be arranged to annihilate acquaintances or relatives and, in some instances, the self in a final act of sexuoerotic self-immolation. The seizure and assault paraphilias are biastophilia (raptophilia) and symphorophila, the paraphilia of catastrophes.”²⁴

²² M. Teicher, “Whitago Psychosis: A Study of Relationships Among the Indians of Northeastern Canada,” *Proceedings of the American Ethnological Society* (1961): 11:1.

²³ J. A. Westermeyer, “Comparison of Amok and Other Homicides in Laos,” *American Journal of Psychiatry* 129, no. 79 (1972).

²⁴ Money, *Lovemaps*, 271, 54, 92.

Money outlines the causes of the paraphilias as: "All the paraphilias have their origin in early childhood development, before puberty. A paraphilia is a developmental dissidence, and the prime suspect in the etiology of all paraphilias is excessive restriction of normal infantile and childhood sexual rehearsal play, plus excessive punishment for being caught at it."²⁵

Several sensational stories over the years have told how a few individuals have caused explosions, fires, and other catastrophes, but they were seldom found to meet all of the above criteria for this paraphilia. The Unabomber, Theodore Kaczynski, fifty-five, is one who does. At the age of nine months, while in a hospital, he was forcibly pinned to a bed for a week for a drug treatment reaction.

His mother noticed that his personality changed after that experience, but it wasn't until many years later that something made him want to destroy people, places, and things. In the meantime, he had been a very brilliant student, skipping forward a year twice in the public schools. He graduated from one of the nation's top universities, Harvard University, with honors and became a mathematics professor in California in one of the nation's top universities. He dropped out of that job unexpectedly and became a reclusive hermit in a Montana mountain cabin. He would string wires across the trails in the woods to injure the dirt bikers that used the trails. He fabricated bombs and mailed them out to unsuspecting people in universities and businesses from May 25, 1978, to April 24, 1995. Sixteen of the bombs killed three people and twenty-three others were injured. On one occasion, he trashed a neighbor's cabin, and it is likely he probably attacked others over the years. On September 9, 1995, the Washington Post and New York Times published a 35,000-word "manifesto" that Ted Kaczynski wrote. His brother, David, read the manifesto and compared it to letters that Ted had written to him. David notified the FBI in February 1996, and they arrested Kaczynski at his Montana cabin on April 3, 1996. After creating courtroom chaos and apparently enjoying it, on January 22, 1998, in a Sacramento, California, courtroom, he confessed to the sixteen bombings in order to avoid the death penalty. He was sentenced May 5, 1998, to life and sent to the Federal Supermax prison in Florence, Colorado, a maximum-security prison. The plea bargain agreement also specified that any money that Ted Kaczynski might subsequently earn by writings in prison would be used to reimburse the relatives of some of his victims. There would be no possibility of parole.

Further information was revealed in the 20/20 television program of May 4, 1998, elucidating some of the sexual aspects of symphorophilia in the Ted Kaczynski case. His brother, David, told more details of Kaczynski's life, which showed his frustration of normal sexuality. Kaczynski strongly desired to find a woman but was repulsed by his closest female companion and was unable to find another outlet for his sex drive short of murder. On Friday, September 11, 1998, a prison psychiatrist's report was released detailing the Unabomber's fantasies about mutilating a girlfriend, killing psychiatrists, and having a sex-change operation. The report said Kaczynski's frustrated desire for

²⁵ Money, *Venuses Penuses*, 552.

a sex-change operation set him on the path to being a killer. He had written that his 1966 visit to a psychiatrist to discuss his desire to become a woman was a major turning point in his life. He left the doctor's office consumed with a visionary new hatred.²⁶

There have been many other bombings—more than 2,000 in 1994 alone—that were mostly unexplained or the bomber not caught. Fifty years ago the “Mad Bomber,” as he was called, placed bombs in public places and wrote several messages to public figures. A psychologist made a profile from these letters of what the individual must be like. This profile was published in newspapers in 1956 and led to the bomber's arrest at his home in Waterbury, Connecticut. Timothy McVeigh confessed immediately when arrested. The profiler had deduced that the man was a paranoid with a “chronic illness.” McVeigh was found guilty of the April 19, 1995, bombing of the federal building in downtown Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, which killed more than 160 people; he is probably a symphorophiliac.

Another case of symphorophilia gradually unveiled itself in Vermilion County, Illinois. The first bomb in the case exploded on December 30, 1997, at the United Methodist Church in the town of Oakwood, killing one of the members. The second bomb blew out the wall of the First Assembly of God church in Danville, ten miles east of Oakwood, on May 24, 1998, injuring thirty-three worshipers.

G. Erotomania

Also called Clérambault's delusion, Clérambault-Kandinsky Syndrome, psychose passionnel, and eroticomania, erotomania is another psychiatric syndrome involving delusional love affairs, which become greatly exaggerated and the patient's central purpose for existence.²⁷ An example is John W. Hinkley, Jr., who shot President Reagan and an associate on March 6, 1981. Hinkley was obsessed with Jodie Foster, an actress who played the role of a prostitute in the movie *Taxi Driver*. The film plot concerned a plan to kill a senator who was seeking the presidency. Hinkley was acquitted of the responsibility for the shooting by reason of insanity and committed to St. Elizabeth's Hospital in Washington, DC. Erotomania may pass unrecognized in suicides and murders. The assassination of John Lennon by Mark David Chapman on December 8, 1980, should be attributed to it. Lovesickness of the more everyday variety usually recedes into remission by two years.

The tabloids have told us for many years about the sensational deaths of Film's beautiful and talented people. Many of these have probably involved erotomania, lust murder, autassassinophilia, jealousy, or Othello delusion types of crimes. It is certain,

²⁶ “Unabomber Frustrated in Wish for Sex Change,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (September 12, 1998): B12.

²⁷ Henry A. Nasrallah, M.D., *Special and Unusual Psychiatric Syndromes*, Medical Basis of Psychiatry (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders Co., 1986), 270.

however, that all of them have involved the sex hormones in one way or another. The Hollywood and the Los Angeles areas have attracted and displayed our sexiest people since the early 1920s. In 1921, the lurid sexual murder of Virginia Rappe by screen star “Fatty” Arbuckle was one of these. Some of the others are: the 1932 suicide or murder of Jean Harlow’s husband of two months, Paul Bern; the 1935 murder of screen goddess Thelma Todd; the 1947 mutilation-murder of the beautiful “Black Dahlia”; the 1948 tragic suicide of Carole Landis; the 1958 murder of Lana Turner’s lover, Johnny Valentine; the 1959 murder or possible suicide of “Superman,” George Reeves; the 1962 suicide or possible murder of Marilyn Monroe; the 1976 Sal Mineo homosexual murder; the 1978 murder of Nancy Spungen, girlfriend of punk rocker Sid Vicious; the 1980 murder of Dorothy Stratten (Playmate of the Year) by Paul Snider who committed suicide; and the 1981 suspicious drowning of Natalie Wood. There are many others of lesser stature in the public eye.

H. Erotophobia

Erotophobia is the fear of sexual feelings and activities, also the fear of love. This is often expressed as a feeling of being “out of control” with your own sexuality; you can’t seem to control your sexual urges, and this makes you uncomfortable. Many males have voiced this feeling in one way or another. They sometimes seek castration as an answer to this feeling of loss of control over their lives. This is one of the legitimate reasons for seeking castration that psychologists will recognize, and they will provide urologists with the assurance that you will be better off, healthier, as a castrated male. Doctors generally do not like to remove healthy organs, and they have to be convinced that there is a real need for the surgery and that the patient will be better off.

I. Othello Delusion

Iago speaks:

O, beware, my lord, of Jealousy; It is the green-eyed monster, which doth mock the meat it feeds on: that cuckold lives in bliss Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger; But, O, what damned minutes tells he o’er, Who dotes, yet doubts; suspects, yet fondly loves! (Shakespeare, 1621, **Othello**, Act III, Scene 3)

The Othello delusion, also called sexual jealousy, morbid jealousy, psychotic jealousy, and conjugal paranoia, is a common psychotic disorder in middle-aged males which frequently results in wife beating or murder, alcoholism, or suicide.²⁸ The delu-

²⁸ Nasrallah, *Special and Unusual Psychiatric Syndromes*, 272.

sion of spouse infidelity may crystallize suddenly into irritability, depression, and homicidal tendencies. The most dangerous calls for the police are family altercations, which often erupt from this source. It is especially hazardous when combined with alcohol, mind-altering drugs, or neuroses. It is a state in which a person's jealousy, which is already an irrational mixture of hatred and anger toward both the rival and the beloved, has gone much further than normal. It has taken on the persecutory delusions of paranoia, and there is hypersensitivity to even the minutest evidence, which tends to confirm the jealousy. Also there is unreasonable resistance to all contradictory evidence (Britannica). Ramon Salcido, twenty-eight-year-old winery worker from Mexico, slashed to death his attractive wife, mother-in-law, two daughters, and a male co-worker at the winery in Cotati, California, on April 16, 1989, as a result of this towering jealousy.

J. Infanticide

Throughout much of history, the most frequent type of murder in Europe was infanticide. It represented over 25 percent of all murders from the Middle Ages up to about 1800, and approximately 90 percent of those infanticides were committed by mothers ... usually a young, unwed woman who became pregnant and delivered a "bastard."²⁹ Infanticide is defined as the murder of a child by anyone. The killing of one's own child is called "filicide," and filicide within twenty-four hours of birth is termed "neonaticide." This is a horrendous crime that has plagued mankind from ancient history right up to the present. Children were offered as sacrifices to gods as "sacrificial lambs" as far back in history as 500 BC in Jericho. It is also reported that the Carthaginians, Moabites, and Ammonites made such sacrifices to their gods. The Old Testament mentions killing children for food in Leviticus 26:29, Deuteronomy 28:53, 2 Kings 6:28, Jeremiah 19:9, and Lamentations 2:20. They were also slain in battle as recorded in Isaiah 13:16 and Ezekiel 9:6. The myth of Medea in Greek mythology is an example. Medea killed her two children to revenge the betrayal of her husband with another woman. Medea told him: "Thy sons are dead and gone. That will stab thy heart." In the files of the National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime at the FBI Academy in Quantico, Virginia, there were at least 103 solved cases of filicide in 1997. Weak and deformed infants were often killed up to February 7, 374, when it was legally branded as murder.

Peter C. Contos, thirty-four, was convicted on February 4, 1999, in Cambridge, Massachusetts, for killing his illegitimate children, ages four years and two months, and their mother when she threatened to expose their relationship to his wife. This is an example of another type of infanticide, which happens several times each year.

²⁹ M. Piers, *Infanticide* (New York: W. W. Norton Co., 1981).

K. Gilles de la Tourette's Syndrome

This syndrome is characterized by its onset in the childhood years with tics, compulsive motor outbursts, forced utterances of obscenities (coprolalia), and/or barking and grunting sounds. It was formerly regarded as a state of diabolical possession such as lycanthropy was, but now it is recognized as a neurological disorder that is due to hereditary genetic transmission (Nasrallah, 277). Dr. Oliver Sacks, neurologist at Albert Einstein College, wrote a popular book, *The Man Who Mistook His Wife for a Hat*, that mentions this ailment. Dr. Benjamin Simkin,³⁰ endocrinologist, wrote that Mozart's letters showed he had the disease. It may be mild or severe depending on the number of the predisposing genes transmitted at birth. If all twenty-four genes are inherited, it will be severe, but if only nine are inherited, it will be mild. Thirty to 50 percent of Tourette's is associated with conduct disorders.

L. Prison Sex

This is a serious problem, which has become worse in recent years because of a number of factors. Among these are: 1) the public demand for longer and longer periods of confinements for criminals, 2) the failure to find a reliable treatment for sexually deviant inmates, 3) prison overcrowding, 4) the advent of the AIDS plague, and 5) sexual abuse heightens propensity to commit further crime. Sex has been the principle deprivation that prison confinement imposed on men. The custodial problems became so desperate in some prisons that connubial visitations were authorized and special rooms provided for the prisoners so they could relieve their sexual tension in private.

Prison sex is not only a problem in men's prisons, but also in female institutions. The primary difference suggested by Schram in the relationships among female inmates and male inmates is that the relationships are usually consensual among women and rapacious among men. The threat of homosexual rape in a male prison creates a climate of fear, resulting in a hostile and threatening environment. The fear of sexual victimization is not a pervasive aspect of female institutions. Involvement in homosexual relationships among the women is usually based on romantic love and mutual consent, although occasionally one woman may attempt to "buy" affection from another woman with candy and cigarettes.³¹ Sexual relationships between female inmates and male staff members are quite another matter, however. Having sex with an inmate is a felony, punishable by up to ten years confinement. Captain Alfred Rowe, Jr., of the Women's Correctional Institution in Columbia, South Carolina, was arrested September 18, 2000, for having sex with Susan Smith, South Carolina's most famous inmate. Rowe was the fourth officer in a twenty-month period charged with having sexual re-

³⁰ British Medical Journal (December 19-26, 1992).

³¹ Pamela Schram, "Prison Sex—Female," *Encyclopedia of Criminology and Deviant Behavior* (Ann Arbor, MI: Sheridan Books, 2000), 252-256.

lations with inmates at this facility. More than 130 women in the Georgia prisons had complained of sexual misconduct, according to the Geraldo Rivera CNBC broadcast of March 29, 2001.

Prison male-on-male rape has been poorly reported because of a number of reasons, mostly because of the prejudice against the assaulted inmates. Fifty percent of Massachusetts' voters agreed that prison rape is part of the price criminals pay for wrongdoing. One report showed that 27 percent of inmates had experienced sexual aggression, and another report showed that 20 percent had experienced sexual aggression from both inmates and prison staff.³² In the prisons studied, the majority of targets pressured for sex were white (59 percent and 72 percent), and perpetrators were black in 73 percent and 71 percent of the cases.

All manner of sexual deviance tends to flower in the prison environment. The most serious is the rape of white juvenile boys by black adult male inmates. In late 1988, the federal government finally recognized the dire complications of this problem and mandated that adolescent prisoners be housed in separate facilities to protect them. Many communities have had great difficulty in raising the large amounts of money required to build the additional facilities and provide supervision.³³

In penal institutions that have animals associated with them, bestiality is not uncommon. More than a few prisons, especially honor farms, house animals. Cows, dogs, hogs, sheep, goats, horses, and mules have served as sexual partners for men under the deprived condition of imprisonment. However, masturbation is the most frequent method of relieving sexual tensions, and upward of half of the inmates in the average prison is involved to some degree in homosexual experiences.³⁴ Robert Martinson's analysis began the notion that rehabilitation programs do no good. Martinson said punishment did no good either, but practitioners and legislators paid no attention to his report.³⁵³⁶

Prison sex, mainly the homosexual variety, is a source of the deadly AIDS disease infection. The prevalence of HIV infections that cause AIDS in prisons was more than five times the rate in the general population outside of prisons in 1988 and 1997.³⁷ Between April 1986 and April 1988, the National Institute of Justice published three editions of the 186-page AIDS in Correctional Facilities: Issues and Options and distributed thousands of copies to criminal justice facilities, libraries, and students

³² C. Struckman-Johnson, L. Rucker, K. Bumby, and S. Donaldson, "Sexual Coercion Reported by Men and Women in Prison," *Journal of Sex Research* 33, no. 1 (1996): 67-76.

³³ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (October 5, 1988).

³⁴ Columbus Hopper, "Prison Sex—Male," *Encyclopedia of Criminology and Deviation Behavior*, III (Ann Arbor, MI: Taylor and Francis, 2001), 257-260.

³⁵ "What Works? Questions and Answers About Prison Reform," *Public Interest* 35 (Spring 1974): 22-54.

³⁶ "HIV in Prisons," *Bureau of Justice Statistics Bulletin*, NCJ 178284 (November 1998).

³⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 15, 1988).

in a strong effort to curb the ravages of the AIDS plague in that environment. The information in the next three paragraphs was taken from this publication.

The prison population is taken from the criminal element that is most likely to engage in behavior that spreads sexually transmitted diseases (STDs), including HIV. Homosexuals and prostitutes who are highly promiscuous with hundreds of different partners and drug addicts who share their injection needles with other addicts. Also, tattoo machine use is prevalent in most prisons. This exposes inmates to the AIDS virus. By October 1987, the total AIDS cases in correctional institutions had increased 156 percent over the first survey of inmates in 1985. The increase in AIDS cases in the general population during the same period was 187 percent. Sixty-five to 73 percent of adult AIDS cases in 1987 were infected by male-to-male sexual intercourse, 4 percent by male-to-female intercourse, and 17 to 25 percent by sharing needles and "works" of IV drug abusers. Those who are sexually active with numerous partners are at higher risk. No cases were known of infection being transmitted by casual contact, sneezing, coughing, breathing, hugging, or sharing eating and drinking utensils or toilet facilities. HIV has been isolated in saliva, tears, and urine, although at a much lower concentration than in semen and blood. The virus is not found in perspiration, feces, or vomit. Insect bites do not transmit HIV. Ninety-two percent of all American AIDS cases in 1987 were in males, and 88 percent of the cases were in persons aged twenty to forty-nine years, and less than 1 percent was in persons thirteen to nineteen years of age. The overall racial/ethnic distribution of adult cases in the United States was: white—60 percent; black—25 percent; Hispanic—14 percent.

Available data in 1988 suggested low rates of HIV transmission within the correctional facilities. The army conducted follow-up testing on inmates who were seronegative on intake one and two years later, and none had become infected while incarcerated. Maryland did a similar series of tests and found that less than one-half of 1 percent per year had become infected in prison. Some prison administrators argue that AIDS is not being transmitted in prisons because the behaviors associated with transmission (sexual activity and intravenous drug abuse) are effectively being controlled in institutions. On the other hand, known outbreaks of syphilis and other STDs in prison populations suggest that HIV can also be transmitted in correctional settings.

The majority of correctional administrators agree that it is important to provide education of AIDS for staff and inmates although high-quality programs for this are expensive. Staff training usually emphasizes ways to reduce risk during contact with inmates, while inmate training typically stresses avoiding behavior such as sexual activity and needle sharing. Seventy-one percent of state and federal systems make at least some inmate training on AIDS mandatory. Staff training on AIDS is always mandatory in 55 percent of these systems. HIV antibody screening and testing would appear to be necessary to identify infectious people in the prisons, but there was considerable debate on the subject in 1988. The Federal Bureau of Prisons and twelve states have mass screening programs, but county and city jails do not because of the rapid population turnover there. Mandatory screening for HIV antibodies was not used in more than

75 percent of state correctional systems, largely because of costs, inability to maintain confidentiality of results, ostracism of and violence against infected inmates, and concerns about the accuracy of the tests. HIV tests were subject to error. Weeks must elapse between an individual's infection and the appearance in the blood of detectable antibodies to the virus, even though infected individuals are capable of transmitting the virus from the instant they are infected. Reliable testing became available later, and costs were reduced.

The debates on mass screening and segregation of HIV-infected prisoners resulted in several court cases, which were mostly resolved in favor of testing and segregation. In spite of the five and a half times more HIV-infected population in prisons than in the population at large, the rate of infection while in prison has been kept at a relatively low rate by the segregation policies. This indicates that a general policy of quarantine of HIV-infected people could materially reduce the spread of the disease. If the infected men were castrated before being allowed back out into the general population, there would be an additional reduction in the spreading of the AIDS plague.

M. Munchausen's Syndrome

In 1951, Richard Asher coined the term Munchausen Syndrome. This syndrome is an unusual psychiatric disorder listed in the DSM III as a "factitious disorder with physical symptoms." Patients with this problem spend a major part of their lives fabricating false medical symptoms and signs in an effort to get medical attention and be admitted to hospitals. They frequently resort to pathological lying to substantiate their stories, and nearly all of them eventually have a criminal record. This syndrome is more severe than simple malingering and is believed to involve masochistic tendencies with a background of cold or sadistic parents.³⁸ The name comes from the famous liar Baron von Munchausen (1720–1797), author of fantastically distorted stories.

N. Jealousy

"Jealousy³⁹ is an emotional attitude directed toward another person who is seen as usurping possessions or privileges felt to be properly one's own. It derives from a sense of insecurity and is characterized by a feeling of anger, depression, and self-pity. In its most familiar form, it is based on anxiety at the prospect of losing to another the love of some person important in one's life. Envy need not involve hostility. Jealousy, on the other hand, always involves hostility toward a real or suspected rival. Like all emotions, jealousy can be just as intense when irrational as when it is justified in fact."⁴⁰

³⁸ Nasrallah, *Special and Unusual Psychiatric Syndromes*, 278.

³⁹ Also the Othello Delusion.

⁴⁰ *Encyclopedia Americana*.

“Jealousy is one of those affective states, like grief, that may be ascribed as normal” (Sigmund Freud).

Jealousy and envy are closely allied, with much in common. They are both selfish and malevolent; they are both concerned with persons; and both imply hatred of their object and a desire to harm. But there is a deeper malevolence in jealousy than envy, and it is the more imperious passion. When someone is jealous of the usurping person, he hates that person; but the jealous person is also annoyed with the other who has allowed him to intrude. In titi (*callicebus*) monkeys of South America, the males show more jealousy than the females.⁴¹

Scientific studies of sexual jealousy have shown that men found male-female sexual infidelity most upsetting, whereas women found male-male sexual infidelity most upsetting.⁴² Men are more suspicious than women regarding their mate’s sexual fidelity when, in fact, men are more likely than women to have such extradyadic sexual involvement both before and after marriage. The scenario depicting female-female sexual infidelity was found to be the least likely to arouse jealousy. Among swingers (married couples who exchange partners for sexual purposes), jealousy was the main reason for dropping the practice. Twenty-four percent of those dropping out said jealousy was their reason. Thirteen percent of the swingers questioned said being jealous of one’s partner, if attracted to others or having sex with others, was a problem.⁴³

Several studies have investigated the sex differences in emotional distress due to infidelity. Cann, Mangum, and Wells⁴⁴ discovered that men were much more distressed by sexual infidelity and women were more distressed by emotional infidelity.

Jealousy is a very primitive and elemental emotion. All the creatures are subject to displays of jealousy from time to time. A favorite dog will show emotion when his master fondles another pet; he will slink, sway, and hide or keep pushing forward to be caressed. Very young children behave in a similar way when their mother nurses another child. In both cases, the jealous creature will show anger toward the intruder.⁴⁵

Sexual jealousy is one of the worst forms of this emotion. Infidelity cannot be tolerated. Fish and other creatures fight to the death to defend their mates. Possible rivals are instantly attacked on sight. The male feels that “she’s mine,” usually his prize possession. Sex is our greatest pleasure and violent, jealous rage is the immediate response whenever the source of the pleasure is threatened. This is such a common reaction that even the law has been shaped accordingly. The general public can recognize and sym-

⁴¹ Mitchell, *Behavior Sex Differences in Nonhuman Primates* (1979), 130.

⁴² M. Wiederman and L. LaMar, “Not With Him You Don’t! Gender and Emotional Reactions to Sexual Infidelity During Courtship,” *Journal of Sex Research* 35, no. 3 (1998): 288–297.

⁴³ R. Jenks, “Swinging: A Review of the Literature,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 27, no. 5 (1998): 507–521.

⁴⁴ A. Cann, J. L. Mangum, and M. Wells, “Distress in Response to Relationship Infidelity: The Roles of Gender and Attitudes About Relationships,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 38, no. 3 (2001): 185–190.

⁴⁵ Hastings, *Encyclopedia of Religion*.

pathize with the blind, mindless rage that jealousy imparts in a situation such as when a man returns home unexpectedly and finds his wife “in flagrante delicto” (in the very act) of having intercourse with another person. He kills the interloper in a sudden fit of anger and sometimes the wife as well. The laws have been shaped to modify murder of another human being in this one instance to a charge of manslaughter—justifiable homicide in the minds of many. The sentence for murder is death or life in prison while the sentence for manslaughter is a maximum of ten years in prison and usually much less than that. Circuit Judge Robert E. Cahill of Towson, Maryland, sentenced Kenneth Peacock to only eighteen months in prison for murdering his wife, Sandra Peacock, after finding her in bed with another man ... “only because I think I must do it to make the system honest,” he said.⁴⁶

Some ethnic groups of people are noted for having “hot-blooded natures” with higher sexuality and higher jealousy components in their psychic makeup. Latinos and Italians are commonly understood to show this characteristic. Instances of knifings of philandering mates or lovers by their jealous partners are more prevalent in this segment of the population. The types of cuts frequently made in these knifings are often directly against the genitalia, buttocks, or breasts, further demonstrating the sexual nature of the jealousy. Elwood Morgan, psychiatric director of the California Medical Facility at Vacaville, California, estimates that as many as 70 percent of the first-time murders or attempted murders were caused by jealousy.⁴⁷ Jealousy is defined in DSM III-R under the Delusional (Paranoid) Disorders as one “in which the predominant theme of the delusion(s) is that one’s sexual partner is unfaithful.” The Lancet, April 23, 1994 (p. 992), called it “ubiquitous” (omnipresent—capable of appearing everywhere) and “one of the clearest psychological symptoms known to man ...”

I will not claim that castration has sufficient power to completely overcome jealousy, but I will assert that the worst results of jealousy will be sharply reduced as a result of the operation. The aggressive instinct, which enables violent acts of reprisal, will be attenuated, and the sex urge will be so reduced that the sex act will have lost its explosive value. The castrate no longer needs or wants sex, so the foundations of jealousy have evaporated. I will, however, additionally proclaim that there are several types of sinning that will also be obviated by the operation: “Thou shalt not lie” is the commandment, yet 35 percent of men said that they have lied in order to have sex, and 42 percent said they would never admit a one-time sexual affair with someone else to their long-term partner. The Bible names jealousy as a work of the flesh and one of the eleven acts unworthy of a Christian (Galatians 5:19, 20 and 2 Corinthians 12:20, 21).

Another story of jealousy and castration comes down to us from ancient Assyria (c. 900 BC) in the legend of Combabus and Stratonica. Combabus was a handsome, young nobleman and architect at the court of the king. Stratonica was the wife of the

⁴⁶ Associated Press Report (October 19, 1994).

⁴⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 6, 1989): 10

king who wanted Combabus to accompany her on a long journey for the purpose of building a temple to the goddess Innana in a distant city. Combabus, knowing that upon his return he would be killed by the jealous king, castrated himself and sealed his “members” in a box which he gave to the king to keep until his return. After three years, upon his return, the king accused him of dalliance with his wife and condemned him to die. Combabus was able to prove his innocence by asking the king to open the box and inspect its contents.

Jealousy is very difficult to control because it goes beyond reason to something elemental in our natural makeup. All of the animals show some of this same emotion and humans do even as very young infants, so we can conclude that it is in our evolutionary development. Something that was important in the four or five million years over which we became as we are today. Something in our genes, then, that molded our brain to make us respond to sexual infidelity with such violent, uncontrollable passion. Cuckoldry is the greatest genetic threat to a man’s family. It is the inflaming maximum hazard that his wife might produce a child infected with some other man’s genes rather than his own. The ape, our closest animal relative, often slaughters the infants of newly acquired females because they are not his.

The famous O. J. Simpson murder case, which occupied the nation’s headlines and featured magazine articles and dozens of television special programs for over a year, is illustrative of the nature of jealousy. Simpson slashed his wife and her male friend to death with a knife as she returned home with the friend.

No matter how much is written about it, it is—like other sex-driven emotions—almost impossible to describe the feelings and reactions of jealousy. There is absolutely no limit to the horror of jealousy. There is absolutely no limit to the horror, degradation, and violence that can result.

O. Interracial Sex

Interracial sex comes in several varieties and deviations: 1) the white, sissy fag transvestite who seeks fellatio, sodomy, and/or humiliation with male, black aggressors; 2) the white woman who prefers black men for fellatio, intercourse, sodomy, and/or humiliation; 3) the white man who prefers black women to white for sex; and 4) the black man who is especially anxious to be seen in public with white women who are subservient to him and who will submit to his harassment as well as perform sexual services for him. Usually the large, strong black is preferred by the white, and the small transvestite-type man or small, pretty woman is preferred by the black. There is a trade specializing in newspapers, magazines, videos, and sex toys for the section of the public that is into this kind of kinkiness. The newspapers appeal to the blacks with “sex-a-whitey today” advertising, and they appeal to the whites with “big, black stud” availability advertising.

I am black and beautiful

O daughters of Jerusalem
Like the tents of Ke'dar,
like the curtains of Solomon.
Do not gaze at me because I am dark,
because the sun has gazed on me.
Song of Solomon 1:5

These practices are strongly condemned by the general public and have been the basis for much of the random, informal, interracial hatred and jealousy, which have flared up spontaneously and have for so long generated mob violence in many parts of the world. Also, there are many formalized organizations dedicated to racial hatred and violence such as the White Aryan Resistance Youth, Klu Klux Klan, Skinheads of the National Resistance, United White Resistance, Aryan Brotherhood, and the American Front, which are highly motivated by interracial sex. These and other similar organizations stage marches, rallies, demonstrations, and cross-burnings. On November 6, 1988, a "White Pride Day" rally was scheduled at the historic Independence Hall in Philadelphia, and an anti-Klan group sometimes called the Partisan Defense Committee organized 500 to 1,000 protesters. In spite of enormous civil rights gains in the past thirty years, the rawest forms of racism continue to exist, and there has been a 400 percent increase in the number of these incidents from 1980 to 1988. A Gallup Poll showed 58 percent of blacks and 54 percent of whites agree that "relations between blacks and whites will always be a problem."⁴⁸ Motorcycle gangs like the Outlaws, Hells Angels, Pagans, and Bandidos also ally themselves to the white supremacist groups.

David Brakke wrote that "when the visual appearance of a demon was registered as not merely black, but Ethiopian, the Ethiopian body's characteristic hypersexuality could augment the clarifying function of blackness so as to signal the presence not just of evil, but of specifically sexual evil." He quoted several other authors who referred to black demons, and some of them even used the term *macrophallic* when referring to the Ethiopians.⁴⁹

Doctor John Money⁵⁰ provides an explanation of the phenomenon of interracial sex under his classification of "morphophilia," which he defines as: "one of a group of paraphilias of the stigmatic/eligibilic type in which sexueroptic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and contingent on a partner whose body characteristics are selectively particularized, prominent, or different from one's own (from Greek *Morphe*, "form," plus *philia*). The partner is lust eligible because of being different in body build, appearance, or racial stock." Money and Annecillo (1992) write about a paraphiliac masochist who, though white herself, felt particularly attracted to young black men. "I guess, for one thing, it's because they're more aggressive. I just feel they know how to express themselves better, doing sex. I just feel an attraction

⁴⁸ "Dialogue of Dishonesty," *Newsweek* (June 30, 1997): 39.

⁴⁹ David Brakke, *Journal of the History of Sexuality* (July and October 2001): 517.

⁵⁰ Money, *Gay, Straight, and In-Between*, 212.

towards them. It's almost an obsession ... I haven't come across any who didn't have a big dick. You can feel it more. It just feels better to me."⁵¹ This confirms the saying that "once you go black, you never go back."

Interracial sex has spawned a whole vocabulary of very inflammatory language with epithets like nigger lover, white trash, sleazebag, honky, mother fucker, niggerized, and Uncle Tom. These words and the practices which they allude to fertilize much racial hatred, jealousy, fear, and violence; but they are seldom heard of in ordinary, polite society. They are at the core of the unmentionable (ignored by the press and politicians) emotional fires that cause much stress and bloodshed. These interracial sexual practices need to be brought out of the closet, where they have long been hidden, and recognized for their hormonal etiology. The dry tinder of suspicion and sexual jealousy is broadly distributed in both races, and it can be ignited at most any moment into an unquenchable conflagration that can completely destroy the nation. The plight of many of the African nations, the racial riots in our own cities, and the several other minor skirmishes are but preliminaries compared to the civil war that could result.⁵²

The rape of a white woman by a black man has led to countless lynchings in the South. The *Furman v. Georgia* case, which caused a ten-year hiatus in the nation's death penalty law, was a black-on-white rape case. In many of those cases, the white woman encouraged the sexual liaison, but she cried "rape" when discovered. The Tawana Brawley and Howard Beach racial assault case received a major flurry of national news coverage in 1988. The Brawley case of a black teenager's alleged rape by six white men became a national symbol for racial tension and occupied New York state criminal justice officials and politicians for most of a year—even though the rape charge was later proven false. Sexuality is the premium attention-getter and emotion-arouser for those who are interested in fanning the flames of divisiveness beyond the actual importance of the act itself. The 1988 presidential campaign "tapped the rich lode of white fear and resentment of the blacks" (*Time*, November 14, 1988) and was one of the reasons the Democrats lost. Their candidate had permitted the prison furlough of a black rapist and murderer, Willie Horton, who promptly raped again when freed on parole.

James Dean was elected Monroe County, Florida, judge in November 1888. He made history as the first black county judge to take the bench in the South after Reconstruction. Nine months later, the governor removed him from his post for allowing a biracial marriage.

The first American black heavyweight-boxing champion was Jack Johnson, whose marriages to white Irene Pineau in 1925 and two other white women were denounced in

⁵¹ John Money and Chares Annecillo, "Paraphilia as a Sexual Disability: Outcome Study in a Female with a History of Kaspar Hauser Dwarfism Syndrome," *Sexuality and Disability* 9, no. 4 (1992): 304.

⁵² See the 310-page book by Carl Rowan entitled *The Coming Race War in America: A Wake-Up Call* (Boston: Little, Brown, and Co., 1996).

Congress and led to miscegenation laws in several states. Johnson was forced to eight months in prison and seven years in exile for his “immoral behavior.”

Interracial marriage was illegal in thirty states in 1966, then the 1967 *Loving v. Virginia* Supreme Court case caused all of these statutes to be repealed or nullified. By 1990, the old laws that had been passed to preserve the racial purity of the white race in the beliefs stemming from the evolutionary theories of Charles Darwin, the hereditary theories of Mendel, and the eugenic theories of Malthus and Galton were erased. Today, a strong bias still exists, and many mainline preachers will not perform the marriage ceremony. Several couples who had this trouble appeared on the Donahue television show September 16, 1991. Many in the younger generation have yielded to the strong interracial attractions, and the numbers of mixed marriages have greatly increased. In 1970, there were about 60,000, and in 1990, there were over 200,000 interracial marriages. In 1992, there were 246,000 black and white couplings—163,000 (63 percent) of these were black husband and white wife. In 1994, about 328,000 black-white marriages were reported. In 2002, these accounted for 0.7 percent of marriages. Black husbands were at a greater risk of being killed by their spouses than black wives or white spouses of either sex.⁵³

My own survey of 944 “personal connections” advertisements, which appeared in the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal and the Austin[Texas] American-Statesman in early May 1995, showed 6.7 percent of the white women were seeking black companions, and 4 percent of white men were seeking black companions. Still, even today, if a white woman has a black child, she is usually stigmatized by a large percent of the population.

In the first week of December 1997, President Clinton was being questioned on interracial marriages, and his comment was in praise of the practice. They can “break down stereotypes and build bridges,” he said in an interview. “I don’t think people should get married to make a statement—they ought to get married for the right reasons. But I think it’s a good thing.”⁵⁴ In 1958, surveys showed only 4 percent of whites said interracial marriages were okay, but by 1994, the figure had climbed to 45 percent. In 1963, less than 1 percent of marriages by African Americans were racially mixed. By 1993, 12 percent were. The Census Bureau’s annual report, “Marital Status and Living Arrangements: March 1998,” found that there were 1,348,000 interracial married couples in 1998. Another survey by the Washington Post found 456,000 black-white marriages in the United States in 2001, compared with 700,000 white-Asian and 2 million white-Hispanic.⁵⁵

In the 1970s and 1980s, the increasing use of cocaine and other illegal drugs accelerated the numbers of young, white women who were “living together” and prostituting

⁵³ J. A. Mercy and L. E. Saltzman, “Fatal Violence Among Spouses in the United States,” *American Journal of Public Health* 79 (1989): 595–599.

⁵⁴ Knight-Ridder News Agency, “Interracial Unions May Be a Key,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (December 7, 1997): 2A.

⁵⁵ *Time* (November 19, 2001): F5.

themselves with black drug dealers and addicts. The “ultimate taboo” of thirty years ago has become relatively common in spite of the population statistics, which show that our black population has remained fairly close to the same ratio (12.5 percent) with whites. The black population, at the time of the first census in 1790, was 757,208—about one-fifth of the total—and they were mostly (90 percent) concentrated in the southern part of the country. By 1860, the black population was 4,441,831—about one-seventh of the total; in 1960, it reached 18,871,831—about one-tenth; and in 1980, it was one-eighth, where it has remained through the 1990s.

The consequences of miscegenation are profound on the offspring because of the social convention of classifying as black any person of mixed blood no matter how small the actual percentage of the black inheritance. Several of the old state statutes classified a person as black even with as little as one-sixteenth actual black blood. Several dozen books, such as Louise Derman-Sparks’ *Anti-Bias Curriculum*, have been published, and several organizations, such as *People of Every Stripe* in Portland, Oregon, and the *Interracial Club of Buffalo*, New York, have sprung up to deal with these problems. Large numbers of “crack babies” and children with fetal alcohol syndrome that result from interracial couplings are a problem to welfare agencies because there are not enough black families willing to adopt or care for them as foster parents. Nearly one-third of the children adopted from the foster care system are placed with families of a different race.⁵⁶ Organ transplants and blood transfusions are also complicated in persons with mixed blood.

Interracial sex also leads to a wide variety of other social problems. The black race has been observed to exceed the white and yellow races in crime by a factor of four to eleven times at various times and in several nations. In 1993, seven times as many blacks as whites were incarcerated. In the United States, we have tended to blame this on racial prejudice, poverty, and their lower-socioeconomic status, but this has been called into question in recent years. Wilson and Herrnstein (1985, 473) showed that citizens of the yellow race in San Francisco’s Chinatown suffered worse prejudice, higher unemployment, lower income, low educational level, and high tuberculosis rate with a high proportion of substandard housing in the 1960s, yet in 1965, only five yellow race individuals were committed to prison in the entire state of California.

Meston et al. studied Asians (mostly Chinese) in Canada and the United States and found that their levels of sexual functioning, knowledge, and attitudes were considerably lower than non-Asians. She also quoted several other studies that showed Asians were considerably more sexually conservative.⁵⁷

In March 1992, Judge McSpadden of Houston, Texas, let it be known that he would not press rape charges against a twenty-seven-year-old black man if he had himself castrated. There was a furor in the black community with several black ministers loudly

⁵⁶ Time (May 3, 1999).

⁵⁷ C. Meston, P. Trapnell, and B. Gorzalka, “Ethnic, Gender, and Length-of-Residency Influences on Sexual Knowledge and Attitudes,” *Journal of Sex Research* 35, no. 2 (May 1998): 176–188.

proclaiming racism and discrimination, and a female, black rape counselor stated on television that castration would not stop raping because rape was a crime of dominance and control. The NAACP and other black organizations have long been against the castration treatment. Perhaps it is because it was widely used throughout Africa for thousands of years in the making of more obedient black slaves, who brought more money than the uncastrated ones.⁵⁸ It is only in recent years that we have learned that the black man, on average, has a higher level of testosterone than either the white or the yellow man. The ancients knew of the effects of castration in making blacks more tractable and useful and less threatening, but they could not have known that it was because of testosterone reduction. "Two U.S. studies have shown that black males have significantly higher average levels of circulating testosterone than do white males of comparable age."⁵⁹ "The racial difference appears to vary by age, with nearly a 20 percent difference reported for young adults, which gradually diminished to no difference beyond the age of fifty."⁶⁰

The athletic prowess of the black man has lent his race an aura of sexual superiority. Boxing, football, baseball, basketball, and track sports have been monopolized by blacks for many years in spite of cocaine overdose deaths of stars like Len Bias and David Croudpin and the steroid use of runner Ben Johnson.

Burfoot points out the surprising lack of public dialogue and the shroud of silence resulting from our societal taboo against discussing racial differences, which has blinded us to the physical differences in men of the black race and the other races.⁶¹ Blacks have less body fat, narrower hips, thicker thighs, longer legs, and lighter calves, which allow for efficient running. On the all-time list for the 100-meter races, forty-four of the top fifty performers are sprinters of West African origin. The highest-ranking white stands in sixteenth place. In the Seoul Olympics, Kenyan men won the 800 meters, the 1,500 meters, the 3,000-meter steeplechase, and the 5,000 meters. Based on population percentages alone, the likelihood that this should have happened is 1 in 1,600,000,000.

Dr. Anderson has pointed out that the natural form of "blood doping," which the key male hormone, testosterone, gives men, is the reason they perform better as runners.⁶² This hormone increases the concentration of red blood cells and promotes the production of hemoglobin, the oxygen-carrying protein found inside red blood cells. It also works along with the physical exercise in training to reduce the percentage of body fat.

The entertainment industry further enhances the sexual image of the black race with Sammy Davis Jr., Michael Jackson, Bill Cosby, Ray Charles, and Red Foxx. There is

⁵⁸ Nikolai Nikolavich Vokov, *Skoptchestvo and Sterilization*, (Moscow, 1937), 37.

⁵⁹ Ross et al., 1986; Ellis & Nyborg 1992.

⁶⁰ Lee Ellis, *The Sex Paradox in Crime Victimization: A Neurohormonal Hypothesis*. Paper presented October 29, 1993, at the American Society of Criminology meeting in Phoenix, AZ.

⁶¹ Amby Burfoot, "White Men Can't Run," *Runner's World* (August 1992): 89-93.

⁶² Owen Anderson, "Sexual Equation, Men and Women May Train the Same But Perform Differently," *Runners World* (June 1992): 28.

a belief that black men are sexier and have larger genitalia than white men, and that attracts a large portion of the white female and homosexual population to them.

The hip-hop culture is America's dominant youth culture today, even more pervasive than the rock and punk styles. Hip-hop originated in the ancient African traditions and evolved through the subterranean Bronx (New York) expression in the 1970s to the contemporary, profitable, billion-dollar music industry. Hip-hop is not only music; it is also manifested in clothing, attitude, style, art, language, and the World Wide Web—the way you look and walk. The term hip-hop was taken out of verses made up by the founder of the Universal Zulu Nation Movement, Afrika Bambaataa.

I saw the Red Foxx show at the Las Vegas Hacienda Resort in September 1988 and noted that there were two black men with pretty white women standing nervously at the head of the waiting line. A black man with a pretty white woman on his arm has become a status symbol in the black community. Foxx told several ethnic jokes about blacks stealing auto parts and Mexicans in shacks and overloaded cars. "Hurricane Gilbert had caused 50 million dollars worth of improvements to their home town, and they might even go back there now." He reviled his three ex-wives—one of them had cost him \$300,000 a fuck, and another had gone from ninety-five to 302 pounds, and he could not tell when he had it in her. He applauded fucking, "... we wouldn't be here if our parents hadn't fucked. Sucking wouldn't have got us here." "Men shouldn't wear white shorts," he advised, "because they show the brown streak that has to be scrubbed out. Brown, polka-dot, or flowered are okay." He plugged his album on the importance of washing your ass, "Because your nose is close to it when you lick your sweetheart's pussy—especially in the sixty-nine position." Foxx asked the men in the audience, "Do you remember the first time you saw one? Just like a tomahawk cut. Wham! Oeeooah, aeoooh, coo ...[Indian dialect]."

The frequent featuring of sexy, white female entertainers in black nightclubs and black male entertainers like Michael Jackson in white clubs, on TV, and in auditoriums reveal that interracial sexual attraction is fairly general in the population. Other interracial combinations besides black and white—the yellow/white, yellow/black, Indian/white, etc.—do, of course, exist, but are not such an emotional issue in the general American public, even though rates of violent victimization are higher among American Indians than any other race. The black pimp is another feature of interracial sex and is quite predominant in many of our larger cities. Becoming a pimp with a stable of white girls is the main objective of the "cat"—the young, lower-class black who directs his life around a search for "kicks."⁶³ "White girl" is the street name for cocaine, suggesting that there is an extra intense pleasure black men get from sex with white women. *Jungle Fever*, released in June 1991, was the name of the first film to be released in the United States that suggested that a black man had sex with a white woman; it showed the horrendous consequences that resulted from this union to both black and white individuals involved.

⁶³ Daniel Lockwood quoting Harvey Finestone, *Prison Sexual Violence* (1980), 115.

Still another way in which interracial sexual attraction works in a segment of the male, black criminals in our society is as an expression of vengeance for real, or imagined, repression of members of the black race. These men feel that their most effective reprisal against the white race is to rape and sexually degrade white women—taking something important away from the envied other to build himself up. Bunnie Browne was a muscular, six-foot black man in Pensacola, Florida, who brutally raped two women and infected them with gonorrhea because they were white. He had reasoned, while in prison for an earlier manslaughter conviction, that he was going to make “authority” pay for his prison misery. “The authority that I vowed to make pay was primarily and foremost represented by white men. I concluded that the way to destroy the mind of the white man was through the abuse of his female counterpart. I told myself that this man’s woman was his most prized possession.”⁶⁴ He had earned a parole hearing after being a model prisoner for ten years, but was rejected when his victims and their neighbors appeared before the parole board and opposed his release. During the proceedings, Browne said that if there were any way that he could make amends, he would. There is a way that men like him can make amends and reassure their victims and society that they will not again rape. They can do this by getting rid of the source of their troublesome aggression and lust ... their testes.

South and Felson examined a number of explanations for interracial rape (black offender–white victim) and found that there was little support for the hypothesis that it was the result of black economic deprivation.⁶⁵ They did find, however, that a white woman faces a greater risk of being victimized by a black rapist in cities with a large black population and in locations where there are low levels of segregation between the races. A woman living in a mildly segregated city like Oakland is twice as likely to be raped by a black man as a woman living in a highly segregated city like Chicago.

On March 15, 1994, the headlines on the front page of the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal read: “Principal suspended over mixed-race date ban.” Randolph County High School Principal Hulond Humphries in Wedowee, Alabama, had been suspended by the five to two vote of the school board for his remarks of February 24th to the juniors and seniors in the school gym, which were to the effect that they would shut down the scheduled April 23 prom if mixed-race couples showed up. According to the verbal reports of some of the students, ReVonda Bowen spoke up and asked, “Who am I supposed to take to the prom?” Her father is white and her mother is black. The principal is reported to have replied: “That’s just it. Your mom and dad made a mistake having you as a mixed child.”

The school board meeting was addressed by the Reverend Joseph Lowrey, president of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference in Atlanta, and a white woman who had gathered 1,800 signatures in support of Principal Humphries. In the span of ten

⁶⁴ Browne. Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (October 30, 1988).

⁶⁵ Scott J. South and Richard B. Felson, “The Racial Patterning of Rape” *Social Forces* no. 1 (September 1969): 71–93.

short years, apparently the laws on miscegenation had been completely reversed. What had recently been against the law was now a hotly protected right of the blacks to date whites. Interracial sex had become a right to be protected by ardent demonstrations.

On August 6, 1994, this hullabaloo once again appeared in the nation's headlines when the Randolph County High School was completely destroyed by fire of "very suspicious origin" (probably set by blacks out of hatred for the high school principal). Mmoja Ajabu, leader of the Black Panthers in Indianapolis, said this act was justified because of racist acts toward blacks there. Christopher Johnson, twenty-five, son of a black protest leader, was arrested June 1, 1995, and charged with setting the August 6th fire in Wedowee.

Apparently the well-intentioned activists who have been trying for thirty years to harmoniously integrate the races are completely innocent of the knowledge of the power and dangers of interracial sexual attraction. They have greatly facilitated interracial sexual contacts, and ever more violent tensions have erupted in many places as a result. The forced busing and integration of educational facilities, dances, and social activities places young blacks and whites in close physical contact in sexually arousing circumstances (music, dancing, alcohol, and other stimulants). When viewed from a background of knowledge of the characteristics of interracial sex, such activities are directly counterproductive. We are fighting a racial hatred conflagration with fire hoses mistakenly filled with the high-octane gasoline of sex. The racial integration of military units and the feminist movement inserting women into formerly all-male jobs has also resulted in greater interracial contacts leading to severe sexual problems in our military.

Although the black race was only about 12.5 percent of the U.S. population in 1990, it accounted for about 41 percent of the jail inmates and 55 percent of the crime (63 percent of robbery, 54 percent of homicides, 30 percent of burglary). In 1994, blacks comprised 54.2 percent of prison admissions.⁶⁶ Thirty-one percent of the abortions and 69 percent of the AIDS cases are attributed to heterosexual contact.⁶⁷ The U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics February 1997 report titled *Sex Offenses and Offenders: An Analysis of Data on Rape and Sexual Assault* reported that 43.7 percent of rape offenders in state prisons in 1994 were black and 48.2 percent of all violent sexual assault prisoners were black. In 1954, 42 percent of all violent Uniform Crime Report arrestees were black, 56 percent were white, and only twenty-one were other races in America. About half of those arrested for rape were convicted. About 40 percent of rape victims suffered a collateral injury. Released rapists were found to be 10.5 times as likely as non-rapists to be rearrested for rape. A 50.53 percent of known offenders in murders involving sexual assault between 1976 and 1994 were black.

An FBI Bureau of Statistics report of January 21, 1999, said that in 1997 racial prejudice was the most common motivation for hate crimes, accounting for 4,710 of

⁶⁶ "Life Behind Bars," *Parade* (March 13, 1995): 4.

⁶⁷ According to the Bureau of Justice Statistics Bulletin: *Prisoners in 1993* (June 1994), the number of sentenced prisoners per 100,000 residents in 1992 was 372 for white males and 2,678 for black males ... more than seven times the number of whites.

the total of 8,049 such crimes. One thousand three hundred eighty-five incidents were attributed to prejudice about religion, 1,102 were attributed to sexual orientation, and 836 were attributed to ethnic or national origin. The 1990–1996 drug epidemic in this country and other problems are also disproportionately black problems, but are hushed up by the fear of retribution by militant black organizations.

These phenomena (black crime, athletics, and entertainment) all tend to enhance the macho image of the black man and support his image as a super-sexy person. Interracial sex, once so violently abhorred and feared by a majority of the population, both white and black, is increasingly a factor in our society that should be closely examined by scientific inquiry. The possible repercussions are truly catastrophic. Already virulent new AIDS-related viruses are being introduced into the white populations of Europe and America from African nations, which are reeling under the contagion of 15 percent of their populations (McNamee, *AIDS: The Nation's First Politically Protected Disease*, 1988, ch. 4). Several books on the AIDS plague (Shilts, 1987; Antonio, 1986; Dannemeyer, 1989; McNamee, 1988) make it clear that AIDS was a black disease that came out of Africa. It has spread throughout the world primarily by interracial sex and drugs.

This is the worst of the problems caused by interracial sex. AIDS is the most deadly and widespread of all of the pandemics in the history of mankind. In mid-1992 at least 60 million were infected worldwide. In 1995, 21 million were infected. In Uganda, the epicenter of the disease, more than half of the population was infected and dying of their HIV contagion. On July 23, 1992, during the great international AIDS conference in Amsterdam, it was announced that there was a new virus, besides the HIV-1 and HIV-2; a black woman in riot-torn, black South-Central Los Angeles had been diagnosed as carrying another unknown virus that produced the same symptoms. African-American and Hispanic females accounted for over 75 percent of AIDS cases diagnosed among women in 1994.⁶⁸ AIDS is the leading killer in the twenty-five to forty-four, black age group. African-American and Hispanic youths aged thirteen to nineteen account for 65 percent of teenage AIDS cases and 70 percent of HIV-infected teenagers in the United States. Among males aged fifteen to nineteen, 81 percent of African Americans, 61 percent of Latinos, and 57 percent of Caucasians have had sexual intercourse. Over 3 million adolescents are infected yearly with an STD.⁶⁹

On the December 1, 2001, World AIDS day, it was announced that white and Hispanic AIDS cases had decreased in Florida, but they had increased in the black population. It was still about seven times that of the white's rate of infection.⁷⁰

We must face the fact that interracial sex has brought this deadly AIDS disease and several more, which were called at one time "rare tropical diseases," across the old racial

⁶⁸ J. K. Watters, "HIV Test Results Partner Notification and Personal Conduct," *The Lancet* 346, no. 8971 (1995): 326.

⁶⁹ SIECUS[Sexuality Information and Education Council of the United States] Report 25, no. 5 (June/July 1997): 15.

⁷⁰ "Vigil Held for World AIDS Day," *Northwest Florida Daily News* (December 2, 2001): B1.

barriers and infected the other races of the world. We must abolish the fear of being accused of racism and examine the racial differences that are at the bottom of these pestilences if we are ever to be able to stop them. Another aspect is that it is the black race that is suffering more than any of the others. The remedy that I am proposing will help the black race far more than the others. Black men will live longer, healthier, more productive lives if they are castrated. Junius Wilson, ninety-six, is one of the black men who had been castrated in 1925 at the state mental hospital in Goldsboro, North Carolina, and was in still good health in 1996, thanks to the operation and keeping in shape by riding his bicycle.⁷¹

Education, medications, and condoms are the main “weapons” being used against the AIDS pandemic, but they are not sufficiently effective. These methods have cost billions of dollars already and still the disease roars on, victimizing more and more people. Education is, perhaps, 50 percent effective by teaching safe sex practices. Condoms are less than 90 percent effective in blocking transfer of the HIV and other infective agents even when they are used, and they are used less than half of the time. STDs from Africa have infected the white population for a long time. Around 1500 BC, Moses married a black woman (Numbers 12:1) and suffered from syphilis.⁷²

Jealousy is another of the major factors in interracial sex that remains inadequately discussed. Disease, hatred, and fear are much more familiar features, and even these are not completely explored. Sex is our greatest pleasure. It is also a status symbol—anyone having more and better sex promptly becomes envied. Regardless of whether it is true or not, even the suspicion that another person or race is capable of greater sexual pleasure than oneself is enough to create jealousy. Jealousy is a very negative emotion. It is the “green-eyed monster” that eats away at our psychological viscera and often destroys the individual or the object of our jealousy. As Niccolo Machiavelli wrote in 1517, “Men’s hatreds generally spring from fear or envy” (Introduction to Book I, Discourses on the First Ten Books of Titus Livius, ch. 26).

“Officially, China was a champion of black-African interests. The government has denounced South Africa’s policy of apartheid and devoted the lion’s share of its scanty foreign aid to assisting 45 friendly African states. Beijing also gave scholarships to 1,600 black students each year to study at Chinese universities. Unofficially, though, many Chinese consider blacks inferior and question their government’s aid to Africa when citizens are tightening their belts at home. Two young Chinese women accompanied two African men to a Nanking University dance December 24, 1988, and touched off a wild fracas which lasted for 4 days and spread to other cities.”⁷³

Many of those in academia who pretend that race makes no difference are blind to the obvious large differences in constitution, chemistry, food, lifestyle, etc., between the races—particularly those between the black and white races. Perhaps those who

⁷¹ “Deaf Man Wins Belated Freedom,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (February 5, 1994): 2A.

⁷² E. M. Josephson, *The Unheeded Teachings of Jesus* (New York: Hedny Press, 1959): 52.

⁷³ U.S. News & World Report (January 9, 1989).

know the scientific facts and do not reveal them are running scared and do not want to take a chance of being accused of racial prejudice. Granted, there are large differences within the races that tend to obscure differences between the races, but we still need to bring out more of the differences so that we can learn more of the phenomena. Four examples of the type of phenomenon that I am referring to are the higher incidence of the sickle-cell trait, AIDS, prostate cancer, and glaucoma in the black race.

Black men in the United States have the highest prostate cancer rate in the world, and this has only been detected in the last few decades. Testosterone (and its metabolic DHT) causes prostate cancer; this is known. It is now known that black men have higher than white men's levels of testosterone, and they are generally regarded as having larger sexual equipment than white men. It is clearly possible that the increase in the deadly cancer of the prostate may be due to the black man's increased T and sexual activities like interracial sex. According to the National Vital Statistics Report of 2002, black males' life expectancy is only 67.6 years and white males' life expectancy is 74.5—nearly seven years longer on the average.

Blacks have always had higher rates of sexually transmitted diseases, and their rates are increasing faster than any of the other races. The most recent escalation in the syphilis rate among blacks began in 1986. Between 1985 and 1989, the incidence rose by 132 percent—from 52.6 to 121.8 cases per 100,000 (*Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality*, November 1990, p. 19). U.S. blacks, over age seventy, are more than five times more likely to be afflicted with glaucoma than whites, independent of socioeconomic status or access to health care, according to a study of 5,300 Baltimore residents published in the *Science News*, July 20, 1991.

Bit by bit—laboriously—we have slowly established that the black race is inferior in some disciplines, and it is not just that the white race has made a hostile climate for them. One such study was published in *Science News* of August 25, 1995, which showed that the reason that disproportionately few black students majored in science was because of lower math scores and high school science grades.⁷⁴ Rushton has ably documented the biological differences in the black, white, and yellow races.⁷⁵

Lee Ellis (*Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency*, May 1991, p. 238) has published a tentative article that shows that the neurologically active enzyme monoamine oxidase (MAO) has frequently been associated with criminality, psychopathy, and related behavior patterns. "Not only does finding lower MAO activity levels among blacks than among whites coincide with the higher crime rates, but it also compliments evidence that, relative to whites, blacks have higher rates of psychopathy (Robins, Murphy, Woodruff, and King, 1971; Davis, 1975), alcoholism (Bailey, Haberman, and Alksne, 1965; Robins, Murphy, and Breckenridge, 1968), childhood hyperactivity (Spring, Blunden, Greenberg, and Yellin, 1977, p. 313), and poor academic performance (Schaie

⁷⁴ "No Hostile Climate Found for Minorities," *Science News* 269 (August 25, 1995): 1047.

⁷⁵ J. Philippe Rushton, *Race, Evolution, and Behavior* (New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers, 1995 and 1999).

and Roberts, 1971; Anonymous, 1974) ... Additional studies seem warranted which would explore possible neurochemical underpinnings of race variations in propensities toward criminal behavior and other behavior patterns associated with MAO activity.” As early as 1929, the differences in racial response to medications had been reported, according to Craig K. Svenson, PhD, and Pharm. C. of the College of Pharmacy at Wayne State University in Detroit, but conducting formal studies was avoided because it was felt to be courting racial disaster. Finally, it became necessary for the Pharmaceutical Manufacturers Association to create a task force to study racial responses to drug dosages in May 1992 in Washington, DC (Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, February 4, 1992).

Doctor Vanessa Gamble, University of Wisconsin historian (black), told the American public on the Nova television program *Deadly Deception* on January 26, 1993, that in the 1930s there was a theory that blacks had smaller brains, which caused them to be more susceptible to lust than white men. This was believed to be one of the explanations for the fact that blacks had a higher incidence of syphilis. In some localities in the South, 35 percent of the black population was infected. According to the *Detroit News*, May 17, 1991, blacks were fifty times more likely to have syphilis than whites.

Black men, being higher in testosterone, are sexier, more aggressive, and, like weeds in the grass lawn, procreate faster than the white, red, or yellow races. Like the weeds overcoming the grass, if they are not trimmed back, they will eventually overcome the other races. The natural consequences of their higher lust and violence have also been that they have a higher disease, crime, imprisonment, and death rates, which have held them back until recent years, but now billions of dollars have been spent in improving their educational, economical, and health condition so they are able to proliferate more and more. Don’t call this racism; it is a historic fact.

We first thought that the testosterone (formerly called “bad blood”), which gives the black race their sexuality and aggression characteristics, would dilute out in interracial marriages and eventually produce lower crime-prone populations. Unfortunately, the reverse seems to be happening. The white and yellow race intermarriages with the blacks over the past ten or twenty years have shown that the offspring usually have gained more of the black aggressive character rather than losing it. Just as the black physical characteristics (skin tone, large lips, broad nose, kinky hair) show strongly in the children of mixed-race marriages, the high-testosterone-based, physical and behavioral characteristics also do. The long-term eugenic results indicate an impending holocaust of crime and disease as a result. The black mayhem, which occurred in Rwanda with 500,000 to 1,000,000 murders between April 10 and July 31, 1994, bears witness to my dire predictions. Somalia, Sudan, Sierra Leon, Uganda, and Congo, high AIDS infection rates AIDS infectious; slavery and mayhem also do.

A ten-hour, no-advertising television program on the Public Broadcasting System September 12–16, 1999, entitled *An American Love Story* told the true story of a black man married to a white woman and their two daughters. Their lives were difficult, and

one of the daughters affirmed that “a lot of white people don’t realize that it’s hard to be black ... Every moment you’re outside your door it’s high tension. Very high tension.” The white wife’s Caucasian friends deserted her, and the police harassed the black husband whenever he went to his wife’s town to visit. The other daughter found the most hurtful prejudice that she encountered was from black classmates in college.

Rodney King, the big black man whose beating by the police filmed on TV triggered the three-day Los Angeles riots, which destroyed several city blocks and killed more than fifty people in 1991, was arrested seven more times in the following seven years. In 1995, he was convicted of hitting his estranged wife with a car and then leaving the scene.

Not only does the high T level of the black race tend to cause them to have higher rates of diseases, but it has caused them to bring diseases that were peculiar to the black race into non-black populations. Sickle cell anemia was one of the first of these to be detected, and the deadly AIDS is one of the most recent. Sickle cell anemia causes the destruction of red blood cells, and the distorted cells plug the vessels, causing circulatory problems, pain, and often death. Lehmann and Huntsman originally documented the spread of the sickle cell anemia into non-black populations in the 1950s. The drift of the genes that cause the disease probably started about 2,000 years ago from Central Africa to the Mediterranean people. The major acquisition of the African sickle cell gene probably occurred during the Islamic rule of the region from AD 825 to 1060. Between 8 and 13 percent of American blacks carry the sickle cell gene,⁷⁶ and the present interracial sexual relations are infecting more of the white race with the gene.⁷⁷

The HIV, which causes AIDS, has been traced back to the epicenter of the disease in Uganda. It is believed to have been introduced into the United States by way of Haiti by homosexuals. The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention researchers found that 30 percent of AIDS victims in 1989 were black in this country, although the black race is only about 12.5 percent of the total population. Bacteria causes pneumococcal pneumonia, which is found in about sixty-eight out of 100,000 black Americans, while it is found in only eighteen cases per 100,000 in whites.

The late J. Edgar Hoover, legendary head of the Federal Bureau of Investigation, despised Reverend Martin Luther King, Jr., leader of the black movement for greater racial equality. He insisted that King, who won the Nobel Peace Prize at age thirty-five, was under Communist influence. In 1963, he pressured U.S. Attorney General Robert Kennedy to approve wiretaps of King’s home and office. It was found that King was no angel and in fact confessed to a friend: “I’m away from home twenty-five to twenty-seven days a month. It[extramarital sex] is a form of anxiety reduction.” In November

⁷⁶ D. R. Powars, “Sickle Cell Disease in Non-black Persons,” *The Lancet* 271, no. 23 (September 9, 1994): 1858. See also Hamdallah and Bhatia, “Prevalence of Sickle Cell Trait in USA Adolescents of Central American Origin,” *The Lancet* 346 (1995): 707.

⁷⁷ M. Tapper, “In the Blood: Sickle Cell Anemia and the Politics of Race,” *JAMA* (December 22/29, 1999): 2369.

1964, an FBI agent sent a package to King, which contained a reel of “sex” tape and an anonymous letter. King’s wife, Coretta, opened the package, played the tape, and read the letter, which said in part: “King, there is only one thing left for you to do ... You better take[your life] before your filthy, abnormal, fraudulent self is bared to the nations.” Further details are contained in the Pulitzer Prize-winning book *Bearing the Cross* by David J. Garrow. Another King biography is *Parting the Waters* by Taylor Branch (Parade, January 29, 1989). King was also cited for using material in his PhD thesis without attributing it to its original sources.

Several black and mulatto thinkers have written about interracial problems. Probably the most comprehensive and deepest insight was that of William Hannibal Thomas in 1901. Thomas had more than fifty years of personal experiences and deep study when he wrote in his 440-page book *The American Negro*:

It is proposed that, when any male person of the age of 15 or upward shall be charged with an attempt to commit an assault on a female person of any age or condition, with intent to violate her chastity and have carnal knowledge of her under duress and against her will, or upon the commission of such act, such person shall undergo an examination before a court of competent jurisdiction, and, upon conviction thereof, by due process of law, shall undergo emasculation, and be further subjected to such restraint as the nature of the case and the welfare of the community justifies. It will be observed that this proposition embraces deterrent features, as well as punitive functions.⁷⁸

Thomas provided elaborate details for the implementation in a bill he wrote. “Executive Surgical Bailiffs” in each judicial district would perform the castration. As might have been expected, there was considerable opposition to Thomas’ proposal, and it was never enacted into law. Lynching continued to be the main punishment for black-on-white rape several years later.

The most recent book on Thomas’ strong measures is the book by Smith who comments:

... No one stepped forward to sponsor Thomas’s castration bill in Congress, probably because it was too extreme for genteel racists ... given the brutalities meted out to blacks in these years, “surgical castration” certainly was not too radical for the likes of white supremacists who mobbed, lynched, and then murdered blacks in rituals of hate.⁷⁹

⁷⁸ W. H. Thomas, *American Negro: What He Was, What He Is, and What He May Become; A Critical and Practical Discussion* (New York: The MacMillan Co., 1901), 234, 235.

⁷⁹ J. D. Smith, *Black Judas: William Hannibal Thomas and The American Negro* (Athens: The University of Georgia Press, 2000), 159, 275.

Smith spent fifteen years researching out every aspect of Thomas's background and work. In investigating Thomas's biological racial composition, he found that in 1890, the Bureau of the Census had instructed their enumerators to be particularly careful to distinguish between blacks, mulattoes, quadroons, and octoroons. The word black should be used to describe those persons who have three-fourths or more of black blood; mulatto, those persons who have from three-eighths to five-eighths black blood; quadroon, those persons who have one-fourth black blood; and octoroon, those persons who have one-eighth or any trace of black blood.

P. Gender Identity Disorders

These disorders are problems with the individual's self-concept as a male or female (Abel, p. 246). DSM-III listed transsexualism under this heading and defined the disorder as a "sense of discomfort and inappropriateness of one's anatomical sex. A wish to be rid of one's own genitals and live as a member of the opposite sex ... the disturbance has been continuous for at least two years, and there is an absence of any physical intersex or genetic abnormality. For boys—a strong and persistently stated desire to be a girl—or insistence that he is a girl. Persistent repudiation of his male anatomical structures ..."

"Other terms employed for the same disorder are: gender dysphoria, transsexual, and autogynephilia. The first legally sanctioned male-to-female operation was performed at Johns Hopkins June 1, 1965.⁸⁰ An estimated 3,000 adult Americans had hormonal and surgical sex reassignment therapies in 1979. Some 30,000 to 60,000 were estimated to see themselves as candidates for these treatments. Some forty centers across the country offer treatments for individuals with this disorder. Among these are the Virginia Gender Clinic, the UCLA Gender Identity Treatment Program, and the Harry Benjamin International Gender Dysphoria Association, Inc. of Stanford, California (Abel, 1986, pp. 261, 265).

Gender identity disorder is often confused with transvestism, which is much more concentrated on the cross dressing aspects than it is on the actual transfer of sexuality. Dr. Robert C. Granato said on the November 28, 1989 Geraldo television show that the usual surgery requires one to two hours, but can take up to four or five hours if a skin graft is required. The usual cost of the operation was around \$6,000 in the Netherlands, but could be as high as \$100,000 in 1995 in the United States. Two doctors were fined \$3,400 each in Aix-en-Provence, France, April 23, 1990, for performing the operation on a patient who later committed suicide. French law permits the operation only in cases where stringent conditions concerning the patient's psychological need for the surgery are met. In this case, the procedure was not successful, and the patient had

⁸⁰ John Money, "Serendipities on the Sexological Pathway to Research in Gender Identity and Sex Reassignment," *Journal of Psychology & Human Sexuality* 4, no. 1 (1991): 112.

been left in constant pain.⁸¹ There is, as yet, no psychodynamic theory of this disorder that is satisfactory by itself, and psychotherapy by itself is an ineffectual procedure.⁸²

Meyer-Bahlburg differentiates patients with intersexuality (i.e., “patients who are born with ambiguous genitalia secondary to a prenatal sex hormone disorder”) from gender identity disorder (GID). He gives the prevalence of transsexuals (those who actually make the change in their sex as a result of the gender identity disorder) as about one in 30,000 men and one in 110,000 women in America. The Hijaras of India are probably the largest organization of transgender, gender dysphoric, transvestite people (around 300,000 individuals) who have had their genitals surgically altered.⁸³ Slijper (1997) quotes Money (1986) and thinks that the majority of the Hijaras are either effeminate men or transsexual men who have had both the penis and testicles removed.⁸⁴⁸⁵

The rapid population increase has resulted in a growing number of transsexuals. Even though they remain a tiny percentage of the population (less than 0.02 percent), their numbers have increased to the point that they have been able to organize support groups in our cities and make their voices heard in subjects of concern to them. Leo pointed out that it is the fourth great rights movement after the feminists, blacks, and homosexuals.⁸⁶ Erin K. Swensen, PhD, ThM, was able to convince the Presbyterian authorities that he should retain his ministerial position even after he had the male-to-female surgery in Atlanta. Atlanta had thirty-five people in their transsexual support group in the year 2000. San Francisco became the first city in the nation to pass a measure that would make the city pay for employees’ sex-change operations.

The term gynemimesis was coined in 1984 to differentiate the male-to-female transsexual who stops short of surgical sex reassignment and lives full-time, or episodically, as a lady with a penis. There are several cultural variants of this type of individual. The name in the Arab culture of Oman is xanith (pronounced “HAN-EEth”); in India, the Hijras show the trait; in Africa, they are called serrer; in the Mohave American Indian culture, it is alyha or nadle. In French, it is berdache, and in Tahitian, it is mahu (Money, 1988, pp. 97–99). There is also the “true” hermaphrodite: those rare cases of individuals who have a complete set of both male and female sex organs, like the thirty-one-year-old Karl Holzer of Frankfurt, Germany. Holzer got himself pregnant and gave birth to a four-pound, seven-ounce boy on June 12, 1992.⁸⁷

⁸¹ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (April 24, 1990).

⁸² Money, Gay, Straight, and In-Between, 83, 96.

⁸³ A. R. Kroeber, “Half Man, Half Woman,” *Far Eastern Economic Review* (March 2, 1989): 76.

⁸⁴ F. Slijper, “Neither Man Nor Woman: The Hijras of India,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26, no. 4 (August, 1997): 450–454.

⁸⁵ J. Money, J. Devore, and B. Norman, “Gender Identity and Gender Transposition: Longitudinal Outcome Study of 32 Male Hermaphrodites Assigned as Girls,” *Journal of Sex & Marital Therapy* 12 (1986): 165–181.

⁸⁶ John Leo, “Sex Change Issues are Psychiatric, Not Political,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 10, 2001): A6. Also, *U.S. News & World Report* (March 12, 2001): 20.

⁸⁷ *Weekly World News* (July 7, 1992).

Drag queen is the street term for the male who feels like a woman, acts like a woman, and dresses like a woman in spite of having a penis between the legs. Shakespeare is given the credit for the first use of the term drag to describe an actor who dressed as the opposite sex. Looking beautiful is extremely important to drag queens. They endure pain and sacrifice for this by electrolysis, breast implants, and hormone shots. Many become prostitutes.

Several attempts have been made to ascertain the causes of gender identity disorders, and some progress has been made mainly in understanding the female-to-male transsexual (FMT) type of disorder. Perkins (1981) found that the “transsexual-like” women with narrower hips, taller stature, broader shoulders, and more muscular mass were the most psychosexually dominant.⁸⁸ Meyer-Bahlburg (1979) found three of seven studies reporting testosterone elevation in one-third of their samples of untreated FMT.⁸⁹ Futterweit et al. (1986) and Kula et al. (1986) reported similar findings.⁹⁰

Bosinski et al. (1997) mentioned the other studies and found similar conditions in their own sample of fifteen FMTs, 42.9 percent of whom showed manly proportions in six of fourteen bodily measurements. Bosinski et al. also found significant hormonal differences between their FMTs and a sample of healthy women with similar backgrounds: FMTs were significantly higher in testosterone and androstenedione, but dehydroepiandrosterone sulfate and sex-hormone binding globulin tended to be lower in FMTs. Body mass index also tended to be higher in FMTs.⁹¹

One shocking case that illustrates the dire consequences of the transsexual desires in some individuals is that of the Unabomber, Theodore Kaczynski, who bombed and killed three people and injured twenty-eight others over a period of nearly twenty years. In 1966, he had visited a psychiatrist to discuss his desire to become a woman, and it became a turning point in his life, which set him on a path to becoming a killer, when his desire was frustrated. Kaczynski was a brilliant mathematics professor from Harvard University who resigned and became a recluse in the Montana hills.

Rehman et al pointed out that a review of postoperative cases concluded that transsexuals who underwent the surgery were many times more likely to have a satisfactory

⁸⁸ M. W. Perkins, “Female Homosexuality and Body Build,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 10 (1981): 337–345.

⁸⁹ HLF Meyer-Bahlburg, “Sex hormones and Female Homosexuality,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 8 (1979): 101–119.

⁹⁰ W. Futterweit, R. A. Weiss, and R. M. Fagerstrom, “Endocrine Evaluation of 40 Female-to-male Transsexuals: Increased Frequency of Polycystic Ovarian Disease in Female Transsexualism,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 15 (1986): 68–78.

⁹¹ H. A. G. Bosinski, Inge Schroeder, M. Peter, R. Arndt, R. Wilie, and W. G. Sippell, “Anthropometrical Measurements and Androgen Levels in Males, Females, and Hormonally Untreated Female-to-Male Transsexuals,” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 26 (1997): 143–157.

outcome than transsexuals who were denied this surgery. They found that overall sexual adjustment closely tracked the outcome of the genital surgery.⁹²

Two of the books published in 1998 that dealt with much more detailed information on intersex and hermaphroditism were: *Lessons from the Intersexed* by Suzanne J Kessler (New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press) and *Hermaphrodites and the Medical Invention of Sex* by Alice Domurat Dreger (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press). These books were reviewed in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* (March 24 and 31, 1999, pp. 1137–1139). The A&E television channel aired a program in their investigative reports entitled *Series on Transsexuals* on March 15, 2000. Another one-hour program, *What Sex Am I*, on the Discovery channel was broadcast February 25 and March 8, 2001, which claimed 300 groups of these people were active in America.

In Valeria Finucci's 2003 book *The Manly Masquerade* (Duke University Press, p. 216), she quotes Ambroise Pare's book *On Monsters and Marvels* as saying there are four types of intersexuality: the male hermaphrodite, who possesses a functioning penis but inactive female organs; the female hermaphrodite, who has functioning female organs and periodic menses, but only a rudimentary penis; the hermaphrodite in which neither the male nor the female organs are functional; and the hermaphrodite in possession of functional male and female organs.

Children who meet the DSM-IV criteria for GID invariably display an array of pervasive and persistent cross-gender behaviors such as toy interest, dress-up play, roles in fantasy play, and peer preference. These children also show a marked avoidance or rejection of same-sex stereotypical activities. Central to the GID phenomenon is distress about being a boy or girl, which is often expressed verbally with repeated remarks about wishing to become a member of the opposite sex. The first behavioral signs of GID typically appear in late toddlerhood to preschool years.⁹³

Historically, there are stories of the Amazons of Old Dahomey in West Africa dating between 1727 and 1892. The Amazons were trustworthy warrior women who claimed to be men and carried swords, muskets, or bows and arrows. They were often members of the king's elite guard. There was also the famous woman chief of the early nineteenth-century Crow Indian nation. She was taller and stronger than most women, and personally slew and scalped two of the enemy Blackfoot tribe male warriors.

The transgender community has expanded so greatly that it has even suffered at least one epidemic disease specific to the community. Since 1998, transgendered individuals living in groups that participate in drag balls have been testing positive for a particular strain of tuberculosis. The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention first

⁹² Jamil Rehman, Simcha Lazer, Alexandru Benet, Leah Schaefer, and Arnold Melman, "The Reported Sex and Surgery Satisfactions of 28 Postoperative Male-to-Female Transsexual Patients," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 1 (1999): 82.

⁹³ K J. Zucker, S. J. Bradley, M. Kukis, K. Pecore, A. Birkenfeld-Adams, R. W. Doering, J. N. Mitchell, and J. Wild, "Gender Constancy Judgments in Children with Gender Identity Disorder: Evidence for Developmental Lag," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 28, no. 6 (December 1999): 476.

identified cases of this strain in Baltimore, then in New York City, among young men who were born male but live mainly as women. As of April 2000, dozens of cases have been diagnosed.⁹⁴

Recent research has shown that there are indeed biological mechanisms that make the male-to-female transsexual feel that he is a woman, even though he has a penis and testicles. The nucleus of the hypothalamus in these men is more typical of females than males, and the central nucleus of the stria terminalis. A female-sized nucleus has been found in male-to-female transsexuals.⁹⁵

For many decades the predominant view was that human gender identity and gender role behavior were determined primarily by psychological and social forces. In the past twenty years, however, a growing body of evidence has accumulated to indicate that the androgens play an important role in male gender identity and behavior. This evidence stems from the work of Imperato-McGinley and her colleagues, who showed that genetic males with either of two autosomal recessive mutations that impair androgen synthesis during embryogenesis frequently change gender role behavior to male after puberty.⁹⁶

Wilson identified the specific genes and described many of the details of their mutations and the effects on the endocrine abnormalities, which cause different types and degrees of gender identity dysphoria in the human male. The genes mainly responsible in her article affected the 5 alpha-reductase 2 deficiency so that testosterone was not converted into the more potent dihydrotestosterone, which is essential for many androgenic actions, and 17 beta-hydroxysteroid dehydrogenase 3, which brings the reaction in the terminal step in the synthesis of testosterone in the Leydig cell.

Q. Osphresiolagnia

This is the fetishistic-libidinal attachment to odors, especially those which emanate from some part of the loved one's body.⁹⁷ This attachment is sometimes categorized under the deviant actions of the "renifleur" (sniffer), who receives sexual stimulation from excretory smells—especially that of urine. Individuals with this deviation sometimes come to the attention of the police for annoying women in crowded buses or elevators in the summer when body odors are highest and clothing is thinnest. Other similar

⁹⁴ P. O. Scholz, *Eunuchs and Castrati a Cultural History* (Princeton: Marcus Wiener Publishers, 2001), 295. And J. Steinhauer, "TB Outbreak is Identified Among Transgender People," *New York Times* (April 21, 2000).

⁹⁵ N. J. Zhou, M. A. Hofman, L. J. G. Gooren, and D. E. Swaab, "A Sex Difference in the Human Brain and Its Relation to Transsexuality," *Nature* 378 (1995): 68–70.

⁹⁶ J. Imperato-McGinley, R. E. Peterson, T. Gautier, and E. Sturia, "Androgens and the Evolution of Male-gender Identity Among Male Pseudonermaphrodites with 5 Alpha-reductase Deficiency," *New England Journal of Medicine* 300 (1979): 1233–1237. Quoted from Jean D. Wilson, "Androgens, Androgen Receptors, and Male Gender Role Behavior," *Hormones and Behavior* 20, no. 2 (2001): 358–366.

⁹⁷ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 496.

terms are olfactophilia, osmolagnia, and osmophilia in which sexuoerotic stimulus is associated with the smell of body parts (from the Latin olfacere, “to smell”).

R. Sexual Harassment

Sexual harassment became a legally recognized form of sex discrimination under the Civil Rights Act of 1964. It became common after 1986, when the Supreme Court first ruled that it was a legal complaint, and women entered the work force in greater numbers and varieties of jobs, which were formerly considered male territory, such as in the military services and criminal justice system. It is defined as “any unwelcome verbal, physical, or sexual conduct that is made a condition of employment or advancement, interferes with work, or creates a hostile work place” (by the Association of the Sexually Harassed). A Redbook magazine survey in 1976 found that 88 percent of the 9,000 women who had been questioned reported that they had been thus harassed. Most of them characterized the incidents as “embarrassing,” “demeaning,” or “intimidating.” A few, however, felt “flattered,” while nine out of ten incidents were never reported. The U.S. Merit Protection Board reported that 42 percent of the women in the employ of the federal government had experienced sexual harassment, and 4,800 complaints were filed with the Equal Employment Opportunity Commission in 1987. Charges ranged in seriousness from looking down a woman’s blouse to attempted rape.

Former employee, Linda Dean, sued John McLaughlin, of a syndicated TV talk show, for sexual harassment in 1987 for an unprecedented \$4 million. A former staff member, Kathie Jennings, sued former Florida House Majority Leader Fred Lippman in April 1991. She had been paid \$47,000 in a secret agreement in 1988 to hush her claims, but the episode was made public, and Lippman was forced to resign his leadership post just the same. In October 1991, the nation was riveted to the television display of Anita Hill’s harassment accusations of Supreme Court nominee Clarence Thomas for nearly a week. The Supreme Court suspended former President Clinton’s law license as a follow-up to his law license suspension in his home state of Arkansas because of the Paula Jones sexual harassment investigation.

Secretary of the navy, Lawrence Garrett III, accepted his responsibility for a “leadership failure” demonstrated by the reported sexual harassment of twenty-six women at the naval aviators’ 1991 Tailhook Association convention in Las Vegas. President Bush accepted Garrett’s resignation June 26, 1992, with the statement that “sexual harassment will not be tolerated.” The usual expression of regret was absent in the statement. The navy’s top admiral, Frank Kelso, announced that every sailor would undergo special training in avoiding sexual abuse. If the message does not take, Kelso warned, the man will be drummed out of the service.⁹⁸ The male sex drive has become a major problem to a great many people in this nation in the workplace. The male is hard-wired to respond to the stimuli of the female by his hormones, nerves, and

⁹⁸ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 6 and 27, 1992).

neurotransmitters. When he is placed in close proximity with her on the job, there is bound to be some sexual interaction. It is inevitable that some of this interaction may not be welcomed.

Sir—Were, it not for **The Lancet**, I would not have asked myself whether I have been sexually harassed at work. Now I know; I have been so repeatedly and in clear violation of the Bill of Rights. Often upon entering my workplace I have been assaulted by olfactory stimuli dispersed in a premeditated manner for the sole purpose of pushing me into a frame of mind not conducive to clinical productivity. Such stimuli were regularly followed by acoustic signals and continuous displays of visual messages and movements of my coworkers of the other sex, all combined to arouse an undesirable (to me) state of covetousness. Hair dyes designed to catch my eye, moist lips enhanced with lush colors, vistas of bared necks, arms, shoulders, and legs all had to be endured. Mammary bodies have been brought into my field of vision in their natural condition and in artificial modifications. Along hospital corridors they would walk in front of me employing various muscle groups for the distraction of me rather than for locomotion. A combination of olfactory, acoustic, and visual stimuli in trying to attract the male is universal in the reproductive behavior of mammals. But it is seasonal; only in the human female is the ability and willingness to engage in sexual play and copulation divorced from the capability to conceive. The great myths and epics of mankind are witness that this continuous desire to be attractive is an endless source of conflict. Society has tried a variety of schemes: it sequestered the female, forbade her to look attractive, covered her so that only her eyes were visible, silenced her. But to no avail. In the 20th century, and starting in the U.S., the human female has proceeded to “liberate” herself from being a property, subject to the caprice of the male. She can now, probably for the first time in the animal kingdom, ignore him. Yet she still wants to be attractive to the male—and when he responds, especially at their place of work she sues.⁹⁹

Almost a third of workingwomen say they have been sexually harassed at some time at work, but the majority of male and female workers do not believe there is harassment at their workplaces, a Harris Poll showed. All the reported sexual harassment of women were done by men—mostly by men in senior positions—and most of those who say they were harassed took no action. The nationwide Harris Poll surveyed 782 full-time or part-time workers between February 2 and 6. Eighteen percent of all workers, 31 percent of women and 7 percent of men, say they have been sexually harassed at work. Younger workers are more likely than older workers to report they were harassed. Black and Hispanic workers are more likely to have been harassed than white workers. Almost

⁹⁹ “On Sexual Harassment,” *The Lancet* 342 (November 20, 1993): 1303.

two-thirds of all working people (63 percent) say there is no sexual harassment at their workplace. However, 4 percent say there is “a lot”; 15 percent say there is “some, but not a lot”; and 17 percent say there is “a little.” All the women who were victims say men harassed them. Among the men who were harassed, a majority (59 percent) say they were harassed by women. Most sexual harassment is done by supervisors (38 percent) or other senior people (25 percent). However, some harassment is done by equals (25 percent) and juniors (10 percent). Most of those who were sexually harassed (62 percent) say they took no action. Only 39 percent of the women involved and 32 percent of the men say they took some action. The poll has a margin of error of plus or minus three percentage points.¹⁰⁰

Another major sexual harassment case reached its tearful end on September 7, 1995, when U.S. Senator Bob Packwood, sixty-three, announced he would resign effective October 1st. Senator Packwood had been under investigation by the Senate Ethics Committee for thirty-three months reviewing complaints from seventeen women, most of whom had worked for Packwood in the past, who claimed that he had made unwanted sexual advances to them. The chairman of the investigating panel said, “There was a habitual pattern of aggressive, blatantly sexual advances. The committee has heard enough. The evidentiary record, weighing in, as I said, at 40 pounds and 10,145 pages, is here for everyone to see.”¹⁰¹ Packwood had usually, in his twenty-seven years service as a senator, supported and fought for women and their rights, but they had, in the end, turned on him.

The Civil Rights Act of 1965 makes it illegal to discriminate on the basis of race, color, religion, age, national origin, and sex (42 U.S.C. 2000-2(a)(1)). Title VII of the Act prohibits employers from discriminating on the basis of sex, and sexual harassment is a form of sex discrimination. The guidelines identify two forms of sexual harassment: quid pro quo harassment and hostile work environment harassment. Quid pro quo means “something for something.” This type occurs when an employee is required to choose between submitting to sexual advances or losing a tangible job benefit. Acquiescence or even voluntary participation in sexual activity does not mean that the advances were not unwelcome. Unwelcome means that the person did not invite or solicit the advances. The hostile work environment form of sexual harassment is unwelcome conduct that is so severe as to change the conditions of the claimant’s employment and create an intimidating, hostile, or offensive work environment.

On March 4, 1998, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled unanimously that same-sex harassment on the job can violate the anti-discrimination law. In that lawsuit, Joseph Oncale alleged that three co-workers sexually harassed him in the shower while he worked on an oilrig in the Gulf of Mexico in 1991. Only about 100 same-sex harassment cases in ten years have reached the courts, but in the 1990s, there were over

¹⁰⁰ “Thirty-one Percent of Working Women Were Harassed Poll Finds,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 28, 1994): 1.

¹⁰¹ “Packwood Gives Up Fight,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (September 8, 1995): 1A, 3A.

15,000 heterosexual cases of sexual harassment filed with the U.S. Equal Employment Opportunity Commission each year. The Supreme Court also ruled on three other sexual harassment cases providing important roadmaps for navigating the legal landscape. They ruled school districts need not be held financially liable over teachers' sexual relationships with students, under most conditions. In two other rulings, the Court ruled the Americans with Disabilities Act protected people infected with HIV, even if they were without symptoms, and the act covers disabled prison inmates.¹⁰²

S. Apotemnophilia

Apotemnophilia is a rare paraphilia of the “stigmatic/eligibilic” type in which sexual arousal and attainment of orgasms are responsive to and contingent on being oneself an amputee. The name comes from the Greek apo, “from,” plus temnein, “to cut,” plus philia. An apotemnophile becomes fixated on carrying out a self-contrived amputation or obtaining one in a hospital. The reciprocal paraphilia is acrotomophilia—sometimes called amelostasis—in which orgasm is responsive to and contingent on a partner who is an amputee. The stumps of the amputee partner erotically excite an acrotomophile.¹⁰³ People with these traits frequently have a homosexual or bisexual gender identity. Hirschfeld classified this type of perversion as bodily defect fetishism.¹⁰⁴

T. Sexual Addiction

This addiction is a relative, new term first employed by psychologists and sex therapists in the 1980s to label people who are so obsessed with sex that it interferes with their livelihood and well-being. It is a “compulsively frequent reiteration of highly ritualized usage of the sex organs, under conditions of extreme specificity. The addiction is not to sex, generically, but to a particular animate or inanimate sexuoerotic stimulus that is incorporated into the ritual activity. The activity itself may or may not qualify as paraphiliac.”¹⁰⁵ “Any paraphilia can be conceptualized as an addiction.”¹⁰⁶ The term was first discussed and explained in Patrick Carne’s 1983 best-selling book *Out of the Shadows*. Other terms frequently used are sexual impulsivity, sexual compulsivity, nymphomania, male hypersexuality, satyriasis, and Don Juanism. In 1990, there were four different nationwide support programs for sex addicts boasting a total membership of 20,000 (*Time*, June 4, 1990). Dr. Gene Abel debated sexual addiction

¹⁰² “Harassment Ruling Clarifies Boundaries, Executives Say. Same-sex Harassment Now Mainstream,” *Pensacola[Florida] Journal* (March 5, 1998): 1A and 6A.

¹⁰³ Money, *Gay Straight and In-Between*, 186, 189.

¹⁰⁴ M. Hirschfeld, *Sexual Anomalies and Perversions*, 2nd ed., 6th reprint of original 1938 publication (London: S. Sidder & Son, Ltd., 1966), 572–576.

¹⁰⁵ Money, *Gay Straight and In-Between*, 224–225.

¹⁰⁶ Money, *Lovemaps*, 37.

with Dr. Carnes at the annual meeting of the Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers, in Fort Worth, Texas, November 7, 1991. Abel called it “poppycock” and inferred that it was a way for Dr. Carnes to get high (\$20,000 per treatment) fees. On the other side of the argument, a recent book by psychologist Harvey Milkman and chemist Stanley Sunderwirth titled *Craving for Ecstasy* points out that sexual arousal triggers an increase in neurotransmitters (mainly dopamine) in the brain just the same way that taking mood-altering drugs does. My own view is that it is a matter of degree of one or more of the sex problems mentioned in this book, or even “normal” sexual behavior, which has become habituated beyond the threshold of the individual’s ability to control.

The DSM-IV does not use the term sexual addiction because of the lack of consensus concerning the description of this deviance. The nearest description in this authoritative publication is listed under 302.9 Sexual Disorder Not Otherwise Specified in the following manner: “Distress about a pattern of repeated sexual relationships involving a succession of lovers who are experienced by the individual only as things to be used.” Estimates of the prevalence of problematic hypersexuality vary between 3 and 6 percent of the general population.

Sexual pleasure is a big hook that brings on addiction. The surge of the testosterone in the brain, along with the other hormones and neurotransmitters, produces a thrill at the time of orgasm. With the sexual sadist, the addiction is more likely from the surge of the endorphins, which the pain induces. Very much like morphine, it becomes habit-forming. The brain’s enkephalins and other endogenous neuropeptides bind in the brain with the same receptors in the neurochemistry of sex as they do in the use of habit-forming drugs. Many chemically dependent patients are also addicted to sex. This interrelationship has greatly contributed to the AIDS epidemic. By late 1995, many of the behaviorists agreed that learning and conditioning theories couldn’t adequately account for deviant sexual behavior’s repetitive nature. In fact, some of the aversive conditioning treatments for sex offenders have been found to further victimize the sex addict by increasing his shame that initiated his deviant cycle. Blanchard (1995) has shown that the linkage of high-voltage excitement and sexual fantasies often escalates the level of sexual addiction to produce the lust murderer and his serial killings.¹⁰⁷

“The relationship between abuse of certain substances and sexual compulsivity was further studied by Washton (1989). He found that 70% of cocaine-dependent men and 50% of cocaine-dependent women being treated in a chemical dependency treatment facility also reported compulsive sexual behaviors.”¹⁰⁸ VanNostrand and Tewksbury (1999) reported they found their female customers frequently offered male drug dealers

¹⁰⁷ G. Blanchard, “Sexually Addicted Lust Murderers,” *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity: The Journal of Treatment and Prevention* 2, no. 1 (1995): 62.

¹⁰⁸ David Wines, “Exploring the Applicability of Criteria for Substance Dependence to Sexual Addiction,” *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* 4, no. 3 (1997): 202.

sex in exchange for drugs and that such behavior is generally accepted in the drug economy.¹⁰⁹

Sexual addiction can have dire effects on a man's career as Judge Robert A. Young, fifty-six, of Polk County, Florida, found out. Judge Young admitted in a news release, on June 19, 2000, that he was resigning immediately and that he had "sexual addiction" and would seek professional help.¹¹⁰

U. Mate Swapping

Also called "swinging" or "group sex," mate swapping has been defined as the "exchange of sexual partners among two or more married couples."¹¹¹ One study estimated that a million Americans regularly engaged in mate swapping in 1970.¹¹² An article in the September 2000 Playboy magazine estimated 3 million enjoy "the lifestyle." Another study by Redbook magazine revealed 4 percent of the 100,000 women who were queried admitted having engaged in group sex.¹¹³ This conduct is still punishable under adultery and fornication statutes in several jurisdictions. The 1972 Handbook of Psychiatry listed it as a sexual deviation, but many objected to this characterization as being more in the nature of a social deviation. In 1988 there were at least two monthly newspapers with about thirty pages of photographs, articles, and advertisements for swingers.

Swinging is more properly known as "co-marital sex," and it is the exchange of partners solely for sexual purposes. Jenks has studied this deviance from the societal norm for nearly twenty years and written an exceptionally comprehensive review of the literature.¹¹⁴ He finds the incidence of swinging among married couples in the United States "fairly low," around 2 percent. The majority of swingers fall into the middle and upper middle socio-economic class with the majority (over 90 percent) in the white race component of our society. The mean age of American swingers is about thirty-nine, and the majority fall between twenty-eight and forty-five, and this majority does not attend church regularly—70 percent said they did not currently attend church services in a typical month.

Swinging is perceived by the general public as a deviant activity; and swingers are perceived not only as "specific" deviants but as "general" deviants—that is, deviating in not just one way, but in areas totally unrelated to their swinging. The primary reason

¹⁰⁹ Lise-Marie VanNostrand and Richard Tewksury, "The Motives and Mechanics of Operating an Illegal Drug Enterprise," *Deviant Behavior* 20, no. 1 (1999):72.

¹¹⁰ "Polk Judge Resigns, Admits 'Sex Addiction,'" *Northwest Florida Daily News* (June 21, 2000): B7.

¹¹¹ Bell, (1971b).

¹¹² Bartelli, (1971).

¹¹³ Levin, (1975).

¹¹⁴ Richard J. Jenks, "Swinging: A Review of the Literature," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 27, no. 5 (1998): 507–521.

expressed for swinging is the variety of sexual partners and experiences; variety was named by 26 percent of swingers in one study. The second most frequent response to reason questions was pleasure or excitement ... the “forbidden fruit” well known from Biblical times. There are an estimated 300 swing clubs scattered over twenty-four countries at the present time; ten years ago about 200 existed. The largest organization related to swinging is the North American Swing Club (NASCA) with a mailing list of around 30,000. Attendance at the annual convention reached 3,000 in 1997.

Although many people disapprove of swinging and think the swingers are unhappy, there is no evidence for such a claim. “Swinging is like a two-edged sword—it may swing in the direction of positive consequences or in the opposite direction of negative consequences. The nature of the consequences depends more on the individual who uses the sword than on the sword itself.”¹¹⁵ Jenks found that the biggest disadvantage of swinging is the fear of contracting venereal disease; 33 percent of husbands and 10 percent of wives in one study feared VD. AIDS fear cut back the amount of swinging in the 1980s, but it resumed its trend to increase in the 1990s. Almost 7 percent said they had quit swinging because of the AIDS epidemic, and more than a third said nothing. Not even AIDS would get them to change. Other problems with swinging that Jenks investigated were jealousy, anxiety, fear of public exposure, and time factors. Thirteen percent of the swingers who were questioned reported being jealous of one’s partner being attracted to others and/or having sex with others. Of those who had dropped out of swinging, 24 percent did so because of jealousy. Anxiety stemming from concerns with sexual performance was reported by 25 percent of males who were unable to achieve an erection on a regular basis at swing parties. Fear of public exposure is a problem with swinging because it is a deviant activity to most people, and disclosure must be guarded from their children, neighbors, and employers. Guilt feelings caused 15 percent of those who dropped out of swinging to do so. The time factor is a problem with swinging because it takes considerable time to find the right kind of people with whom to swing that have similar interests and are attractive. Swinging often comes to dominate the person’s life (Jenks, 1998).

One article told of the arrest of thirty-one people in the Athena’s Forum club in Pompano Beach, Florida, on January 17th, and another twenty-four people arrested at the Trapeze II club in Fort Lauderdale, Florida, in February.¹¹⁶ These people faced up to sixty days in jail and a \$500 fine for their lewd behavior. The raids were a response to citizens’ complaints. Lewd behavior in this case was defined as an act committed that substantially infringed on the rights of others. This same paper, on July 11, 1999, wrote about the convention of about 3,000 swingers that had come to the Lifestyles ’99 Reno Rendezvous swinging conference in Reno, Nevada, to do what swingers like to do and attend workshops such as Sex Without Guilt: The Morality of Sexual Pluralism,

¹¹⁵ A. Thio, *Deviant Behavior*, 3rd ed. (New York: Harper-Collins, 1988), 270.

¹¹⁶ Northwest Florida Daily News (February 22, 1999): B3.

and HIV Update. The attendees stood up with their fists in the air and chanted, “No more raids.”

A new book, *The Lifestyle: A Look at the Erotic Rites of Swingers*, was reviewed by Richard Jenks, with more details of the “lifestyle.”¹¹⁷

V. Concubinage

Concubinage (etymology: with plus to lie down) is the state of cohabitation of a man and a woman without the full sanctions of legal marriage. It is defined as “the enduring practice of sexual intercourse between a man and a woman not bound to each other by legitimate marriage” by the Catholic Encyclopedia. I am using this subject in my enumeration of the sex offenses for a number of reasons: 1) It provides a rather good example of the ambivalence of the laws that have been established over the ages concerning sexual behavior; 2) It deepens our understanding of the public attitude toward sexual behavior; 3) It is little discussed today (like my main treatment—castration); 4) It is well documented in the ancient writings of many cultures and figures, prominently in our Biblical heritage; 5) The attitude against it in our own culture today is well known to most readers; 6) Like many of the other “sex offenses,” it seems to have been at one time a natural state of sexual relations. It was to be found in many of the earliest ethnic groups, even though there was no known cross-cultural contact. It was found that only 16 percent of some 850 human societies that were studied practiced monogamous systems of marriage such as we have in the United States. Evidence from anthropology shows that nearly 1,000 of the 1,154 past or present human societies ever studied, including most of the world’s “hunter-gatherer” societies, have permitted a man to have more than one wife.

The Greek and Latin words for concubine are identical and are both directly derived from the Semitic pillages meaning “paramour.” Concubinage could not, however, have been a universal condition of all men in any given society because there would not have been enough females to provide every male with several wives or concubines. The number of male births usually is slightly greater than the number of female births, so there would not have been enough to go around. As a consequence, in all the early cultures, it was only the highly placed, the powerful, and the most aggressive males that could attain and hold more than one woman. At the lower levels of civilization, only the old and influential men—the best hunters, the bravest warriors the head-men—had concubines; at the higher levels of civilization, only the kings, sultans, chiefs, men of rank, the rich, and the influential had concubines. It was all the younger, poorer, weaker men could do to gain and hold one wife, so they were, perforce, monogamous. Comparable polygynous mating behavior is also found in the higher apes, man’s closest

¹¹⁷ Richard Jenks, *The Journal of Sex Research* (May 2001): 171–174.

relatives in the mammalian hierarchy. The biggest, strongest males have the largest group of females in their harems.¹¹⁸

The practice of concubinage probably originated in neolithic times along with slavery and castration of male slaves. Male captives in raids or wars were also likely to be slain or sacrificed so they could not be a future threat. Women and children captives were most generally made slaves, secondary wives, or concubines—although they were sometimes sacrificed, eaten, prostituted, or sold. The primary wife was usually chosen from the native women of a man's own rank, and the concubines were usually foreigners or of a lower rank. Polygyny has gradually given way down through the ages to monogamy in most highly civilized societies. At first, concubines, either legally or illegally, would be combined in some manner with the wife's duties, but eventually complete monogamy won out in the Christian world. The historical records of concubinage are extensive and worthy of review. The *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, edited by James Hasting, is my reference for most of the following information:

1. The earliest recorded laws were in the Code of Hammurabi (c. 2285 BC) and regulated the Babylonian concubinage: A king might have several wives and several concubines; the son of one of the king's concubines might be nominated as successor to the throne; any man might take a concubine if the first wife became ill or was childless; a concubine might be put away, but her marriage portion must be returned; the children of concubines might share the goods of the father at his death, but only if the father had acknowledged them as being his; concubines must wear a stone engraved with her name, the name of her master, and the date of their union. In the same region of the world, at a later period (about 2000 BC down to about 612 BC), Assyrian kings and rich men might have several concubines in addition to having a regular wife.
2. Among the Hebrews, the laws concerning concubinage were somewhat similar to the Babylonians. Reference is invited to Deuteronomy 21:10 ff. (c. 1635 BC); Genesis 16, 25:6; Exodus 21:7–11; Leviticus 25:44 ff.; and Numbers 31:9–20. The kings of Israel had several concubines; it is recorded that David had ten, Solomon (1 Kings 11:3) had 300, and Rehoboam had sixty. Solomon made a test of pleasure and classified concubines as “man's delight” in Ecclesiastes 2:8.
3. In China, from about 1766 BC down to the communist take-over in the 1940s, it was legal to take secondary wives, or concubines. The first wife must be of the husband's rank, and a marriage ceremony must be gone through. Raising a concubine to the rank of wife during the lifetime of the wife was illegal, but a man whose wife reaches the age of forty without having any children must take a concubine for the sake of the ancestral cult. The first wife calls the man “husband,” while the secondary wives call him “master.” The first wife is not expected to

¹¹⁸ Tim Halliday, *Sexual Strategy* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1980), 143.

show jealousy of the concubines and should provide for their comfort although they are of inferior station. They are mainly a luxury of the rich, as they are usually purchased. Poor parents could freely sell their daughters—either directly to the rich men or to others who trade in concubines and who educate them and resell them at a higher price. A man might repudiate his concubine without any formality, or sell her again. Children of concubines had the same legal rights as the children of the wife, as long as their mother had been received into the house. They were regarded as the wife's own children, not the concubine's; they lavished expressions of affection and respect on the first wife while they treated their own mother with contempt. The mandarins of Korea in the same time period were obliged by custom to have more than one wife and several concubines.

4. In India, the Vedas (c. 1500–590 BC) and the book of Manu (c. 200 BC–AD 100) indicate the practice of concubinage by the rulers and wealthy, although the bulk of the people lived in monogamy. By law, a Hindu may marry as many wives as he chooses and, by custom, keep as many concubines as he may choose, although certain tribes and subcastes prohibit it. The high caste Brahman might have four wives, but the first wife must also be a Brahman. The first marriage was regarded as more sacred, being contracted from a sense of duty rather than mere self-gratification. The rich Kshatriyas were permitted the loosest forms of marriage and often had lesser wives or concubines. Even devotees of some of the religious cults who had taken vows of celibacy sometimes had concubines under various pretexts. The priestesses and dancing girls of the Siva and Vishnu cults were sometimes concubines of the temple Brahmans. Concubines are entitled to maintenance when the connection with them has been of a permanent character, and their children may receive a minor part of the inheritance.
5. In Egypt, from earlier times down to about 730 BC, monogamy was the general rule, but there were few restrictions on concubinage. Monogamy was binding upon the priests, but some of them appear to have had concubines. Kings had one chief wife (the queen or “great spouse,” often a sister), many lesser wives, and innumerable concubines (foreign women, hostages, captives, or slaves). From about 730 BC down to about AD 643, when Muhammadan law took over, marriage contracts are found in which a wife has a clause inserted that insists on the husband making her a payment in the event of his taking another wife or concubine.
6. Among the ancient Persians, from about 539 BC to about AD 600 including the Parthians (c. 200 BC–AD 300), the king had several wives and many concubines, whom he had a right to take from any part of his kingdom. In war, the king frequently made presents of women to his bravest warriors. The wealthier classes of Persians and Medes would imitate the king and take several concubines and wives. The first wife would have to be of the husband's rank.

7. Among the ancient Greeks, concubinage was based upon slavery. In Homeric times (c. 800 BC), a man might have a regular wife and a purchased or captured slave girl. The sons born of the slaves were bastards and not considered proper citizens of Greece, but the father often brought them up with his lawful children. In Athens in later times, it was no discredit to a man to marry a foreign woman who had been bought as a slave, but the children remained bastards, could not enjoy the rights of citizenship, and could not receive more than 1,000 drachmae of the paternal inheritance. About 445 BC, no legalized system of concubinage existed in Athens, but a man might kill with impunity a lover whom he found in the company of his cohabiting slave woman.
8. In ancient Rome, down through the time of the Republic (449–31 BC), the moral rigor prevalent repudiated every other sexual relationship besides the legal wife. Even though a sexual relationship might exist between master and slave girl, they did not achieve as favorable recognition as in Greece due to the downtrodden condition of Roman slaves. Any children of such a liaison were the responsibility of the mother only and did not share in the father's inheritance. During the period of the Empire (31 BC–AD 326), a slave girl living in intimate relations with her married master was considered his mistress, and any offspring were considered to follow the status of the mother. Although the relationship was not illegal, the wife might require an indemnification. A somewhat different situation existed for the Roman soldiers because they were forbidden to marry during the period of their active service. The women with whom legionnaires cohabited had the status of concubines, and their children were not entitled to citizenship even though the concubine became a legal wife after the period of the enlistment. Septimus Severus removed these restrictions about AD 200, and soldiers were allowed to marry during their period of active duty.
9. The Christian emperors of Byzantium from Constantine (AD 313–324) onward endeavored as a rule to suppress concubinage and to legitimize the children of these unions. The Church gave its sanction to the type of concubinage that was permanent and substantially like marriage, and tolerated it even among its clergy for a time. From the beginnings of the Christian Church there were two distinct movements regarding sexual union—one elevating and sanctifying the family, the other glorifying celibacy and virginity. The words of Christ, quoted by Matthew in¹¹⁹verse 12, chapter 19, and the words of St. Paul in his first letter to the Corinthians in chapter 7 were interpreted to support celibacy.
10. In Roman law, the concubine differed from the wife in that 1) she brought her husband no dowry; 2) she was not raised like the wife to the rank of her husband;

¹¹⁹ Imperato-McGinley, Peterson, Gautier, Sturia, "Androgens and the Evolution of Male-gender Identity," 1233–1237.

and 3) her children were not legally the relatives of the father but cognates of the mother. In the fourth century ad, Constantine the Great ruled that the marriage of a concubine should legitimate her children as heirs to her husband, provided that there were no existing legitimate heirs. In the eleventh century, the councils of Rome suspended men from communion if they had a wife and a concubine at the same time. In 1241, the Jutland Code of Valdemar II provided that a concubine kept openly for three years should thereby become a legal wife; this section of the code remained in force until 1582.

11. Koranic law permits a man to have not more than four wives at any one time. Where a Muslim harem contained more, the excess over four were rated as concubines. A wife was entitled to a widow's dower, but the concubines were not. By the sixteenth century, Ottoman sultans seldom took wives; all his women had the status of concubines or slaves. Concubinage in China was rather similar. The marital status of the Chinese concubine hardly differed from that of the legitimate wife, and her children were legitimate. In actual practice, most concubines throughout history were taken simply for sexual pleasure and were not intended to share the rank and status of their men, although many of them did so. At the Council of Nicaea (AD 325), a law concerning celibacy was voted down, but the Synod of Elvira, a few years later, insisted on celibacy for three higher grades of the clergy. In the Church of the East, however, marriage was always allowed in the clergy, although priests could not marry a second time. The Church did not make any positive statement against concubinage for the laity for nearly 400 years.
12. Constantine's law of AD 320 forbade a man to have a concubine if his wife was living. The First Synod of Toledo in AD 400 marks a positive turning point from the practices of old Rome. It declared that a Christian having a believing wife and a concubine should be excluded from the Church. The Third Synod of Orleans in 538 forbade the ordination of a man who kept a concubine. The Roman Council of 826 forbade a married man to have a concubine. The Roman Council of 1059 established the strict procedure against all priestly marriage or concubinage. The Council of London in 1102 laid down the most stringent laws against the secret marriage or concubinage of priests and monks, yet these rules were repeatedly broken down to the time of the Reformation. Adrian IV (1154–1159), the only English pope, was the son of a monk of St. Albans. The Bishop of Ely's concubine, Maud of Ramebury, made a valiant defense of his castle at Devizes in 1139 until the raiders threatened to hang her son.
13. John of Paris in his tracts (about 1330) questioned whether the law of celibacy should be withdrawn, in view of the fact that it was so poorly observed. The General Council in Basel (1432) demanded that all priests "shall put away their concubines," but about 1452, de la Bere, bishop of St. David's, drew 400 marks

a year from priests for the privilege of having concubines. In 1500 in the diocese of Bamberg, five gulden were paid by the priests for every child born to them, and about 1,500 such children were born annually. The income of the Swiss see of Constance from this source is said to have been 7,600 gulden in 1522. A report of the Council of Trent in 1562 reported that in Bavaria, of a hundred priests, scarcely three or four could be found who did not live in concubinage. The council strictly defined marriage as a sacrament, repudiated divorce, and made all forms of concubinage unlawful and “sinful.”

14. The attitude of the Protestant Churches of the Reformation repudiated all concubinage as an adjunct of marriage or a substitute for it. Luther took the ground that marriage is the natural state ordained by God and that it had a dignity above the celibate state, and he urged nuns and monks to marry rather than indulge concealed passion. The Articles of Henry VIII (1491–1547) really came down heavy on the priestly concubinage! They punished it, after the first offense, by death.
15. With the ancient Mayas, Mexicans, and Chifchas (c. AD 300–1000), a titular monogamy prevailed, especially among the poor. The rich and powerful practiced polygyny on a large scale. Besides the first, lawful wife, whose children alone inherited, there were lesser wives and numerous concubines. Nobles had as many as 800 concubines, and they were counted in the thousands in the palaces of the monarch. Concubines were war captives or sold as children by their parents, and they were often sacrificial victims.
16. In Mohammadan countries across the Middle East and North Africa, from about AD 590 down to the present day, a man may have four wives and, if he can deal with them “with equity,” as many slave concubines as he pleases, according to the law of the Koran (iv. 3), provided they are not his sisters or otherwise related in a way that would prevent his marrying them. Concubines may be war captives, offspring of a female slave, or women given as a gift, but most often they are purchased. When the father acknowledges the child of a concubine, that child enjoys the same privileges and inheritance as the child of the free wife. Emperor Moulay Ismail (D. 1727) of Morocco is reported to have fathered 1,056 children by concubines. He was the most prolific parent in human history according to the Guinness Book of Records.
17. The Germanic and Scandinavian people of ancient times were generally monogamous, but the kings, emperors, nobles, and the rich also had concubines down well into the Christian era. Concubines did not have the rank of a wife, and their children had no claim to the succession unless the mother had been a concubine of twenty years standing.

18. Among the Celts and Gauls down to the sixth century, concubinage was quite usual, especially among the higher classes. Concubinage was provided for as a recognized institution in the Brehon Law of the ancient Irish.
19. In ancient Japan, beginning about AD 710 down to about the beginning of the twentieth century, concubinage was legalized, the law specifying the number of concubines a man might have according to his rank. The children of the concubine were equal in law to those of the wife. In modern twentieth-century Japan, concubinage ceased, being regarded as incompatible with civilization.
20. In Peru, from about AD 1200 to 1533, the Inca had at his disposal all of the women of the kingdom, and it was a signal favor for them to be chosen for the royal harem. They were honored and maintained in high state when he dispensed with them, and they returned to their homes. The royal seraglio often numbered several thousands, dispersed throughout the different palaces.
21. A common form of concubinage, which dates from the first contact of white men with savage or primitive races, was for the white man to live with the native women in different parts of the world.
22. In the 1980s, Prince Sihanouk of Cambodia and his father had many wives and concubines until the Communist regime took over that country. Several of the nobility, royalty, or chieftdom in many Arab countries and black African nations continue to keep concubines down to the present day.

Inasmuch as the old, wise, experienced, rich, aggressive men were the ones who could afford concubines and the poorer, weaker could not, down through the ages, our species has greatly improved as a result. Certainly many more offspring have inherited more tendencies for greatness in a biological way and through an environmental way since many children of concubines were raised in the richer environments of their wealthy fathers. Rat and flatworm genetic studies have shown that a certain amount of intelligence—learned behavior—is also inherited. Concubinage must have been a major factor in the improvement of races. Now that it is fading from vogue, we find the rich are having fewer offspring and the poor are having proportionately more. The priesthood is sworn to celibacy, which makes matters even worse. Their intelligence and high character are not passed down if they have no offspring. The feminist and religious demands for monogamy are overruling the law of survival of the fittest. Medical science, too, is exerting itself to the utmost to assure the survival of the unfit, the diseased, the mentally deficient, the lazy, and the slackers.

@@@

Each succeeding generation in our monogamous society is composed of the children of lower and lower intellects as a result—we headed for an inevitable eugenic disaster

when we outlawed concubinage. We should learn from our observations of the other mammals where monogamy is a rarity. We should learn from the evidence of our human physiology, which permits the insemination of thousands of women by one man from age fifteen to ninety-five or more—the fertile years of women being less than one-third that long (age thirteen to forty-five). We should learn from the records of human history (roughly outlined above) that at least 75 percent of the world's cultures were polygynous or polygamous, and, although the losses from disease and incessant warfare were much higher than today, the quality of the races definitely improved. We see many alarming trends in monogamous countries today that well may be a result of the experiment with monogamy: 1) The high school dropout rate has been increasing steadily and stood at 25 percent in 1987, and will progress to 40 percent by the year 2000 if the trend continues. 2) Our youthful American (age fifteen to twenty-four) suicide rate has increased 300 percent in the past thirty years. 3) Our illiteracy rate is high, at about 13 percent of our population. 4) Crime has increased to the point where our prisons and jails cannot hold all the felons and misdemeanants. 5) About half of our marriages end in divorce. The divorce rate doubled between 1960 and 1986.

Evolution is a tyrant whose inexorable laws cannot be flaunted without serious penalties. Let us hope that our present propensity for furthering the survival of the unfittest will quickly fade from custom, and we will bring our civil and religious laws concerning sexual behavior more into harmony with those of evolution.

The last great flowering of the odalisque (female slaves and concubines in harems) began in Byzantium and flourished throughout the Ottoman periods. During Suleiman's reign, there were about 300 women in the royal harem, but by the time of his grandson Murad III, the number had risen to 1,100 or 1,200.¹²⁰ Abdul Hamid was the last of the Ottoman sultans to inhabit the grand seraglio. Today, tribal leaders in Nigeria still have harems, which typically consist of three wives or concubines. Bigamy, being married to two people at the same time, is an allied sex offense. It became a sin in Christianity in 1563 after about 400 years of permissiveness and another 1,160 years of ambivalence.

Concubinage is an important subject in this book, which seeks to elucidate a fairly comprehensive understanding of castration. One of the main uses of human castration down through the ages has been to make eunuch harem attendants. The earliest records I can find of such use of eunuchs are the pictures and carvings of concubines being attended by eunuchs on the walls of the tombs of the third Egyptian Dynasty (2686—2494 BC). This use of castration still continues in some of the Muslim countries down to AD 1997 ... 4,683 years! Life magazine showed a picture of ten pretty women of the Harem of Brunei, a tiny, oil-rich nation in Southeast Asia. These women were probably concubines of the sultan's brother, Prince Jefri Bolkiah.¹²¹

¹²⁰ Peter Tompkins, *The Eunuch and The Virgin* (New York: Clarkson N. Potter, Inc., 1962), 90.

¹²¹ *Life* (December 1997): 30

W. Polygamy

Polygamy is somewhat similar to concubinage except that the multiple spouses are legally married and generally have equal status; it is marriage in which a spouse of either sex may possess a plurality of mates at the same time. In general usage, the term bigamy refers to a husband with many wives, and the term polyandry is reserved for the practice of having more than one husband at a time. Polygyny is another term for a plurality of wives, and exogamy means “marriage outside of a specific group.” King Solomon had 700 wives and 300 concubines about 580 BC, according to the Bible in I Kings 11:3. Polygyny was, and still is, the rule in many African tribes.

Polyandry, although relatively rare, is still practiced by the Lepcha people of north-eastern India because food and shelter resources are so scarce there. A single woman there legally marries two men—usually brothers—in order to guarantee their offspring’s survival.

The Church of Jesus Christ of the Latter Day Saints, commonly called the Mormon Church, authorized polygamy from about 1830 when the sect was first formulated but rejected the practice by the “Manifesto” of their president, Wilford Woodruff, in 1890. Today, however, there are more than 30,000 men, women, and children in American polygamous communities. One of these sects is known as the Fundamentalist Church of Latter Day Saints. It has thousands of adherents and dominates the Twin Towns of Hildale and Colorado City, Arizona.

At one time, polygamists were hunted down and jailed for flouting the laws against bigamy and cohabitation, but Utah authorities have not undertaken such raids since the 1950s. Today, they generally ignore the practice of bigamy. Utah Attorney General Paul Van Dam said prosecution is not worth it. “When you consider the difficulty of prosecution, the social disruption, and the constitutional considerations[of freedom of religion], it all adds up to an allocation of resources that many of us feel would literally deplete our ability to prosecute more harmful crimes,” he said (Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, May 20, 1990, and repeated on television on November 8, 1999).

A two-hour program on the A&E television channel’s Investigative Reports series on November 8, 1999, titled “Inside Polygamy,” featured several families consisting of one husband, three or four wives, and many children. Although they all appeared to know that polygamy was against the law of the land, they seemed to be generally happy with the arrangement. Some of the problems they mentioned were feeling isolated from mainstream society, financial difficulty maintaining very large families, and jealousy on hearing the husband making love to another wife in the next room. The husbands in the program felt that a man needs more than one wife for variety, each wife contributes her special value to the family, and the first amendment to the U.S. Constitution guarantees free exercise of religious freedom, so they are protected by the law. Another A&E TV program, Investigative Reports, March 17, 2000, told about a man who was sentenced to five years in prison for bigamy. Another case was reported in the

newspaper on March 19, 2000,¹²² about Bobby Joe Sexton, sixty-two, pleading guilty to felony polygamy in Monroe, Michigan, for a reduced sentence of two to eight years. In still another case, Warren Allen Carskaden was arrested for bigamy at the home of his fourth wife in Jacksonville, Florida, on September 1, 2000. Charges were pushed against him by wives numbers two and three.

One article claimed that “more Americans than you might think are practicing polygamy but what adherents now prefer to call ‘polyamory,’ loving more than one person simultaneously and openly.”¹²³ Today, there are perhaps 250 polyamory support groups, mostly on the Internet but some that meet for potluck suppers. The four-year-old child of one of these threesomes was removed from the mother by a court order resulting from a petition by the mother’s paternal grandmother, which argued that the threesome’s relationship revealed such depravity that it could endanger the morals or health of the child. Others have argued that people are biologically polyamorous, and even in countries where it is punished by death, polyamory still continues.

On August 24, 2001, Tom Green, fifty-three, was sentenced to five years in prison in Provo, Utah, for polygamy. Green lived in the remote Utah desert with his five wives and thirty children, but he had been quite outspoken on the practice of polygamy. He was on several television shows to defend his lifestyle, and that was probably the reason he was singled out for prosecution. Stephen Chapman wrote an article¹²⁴ on the Green case contending that polygamy is no reason to throw someone in jail if they are living openly. On the other hand, the guy who will leave one wife and marry another, without first getting a divorce, or pretend to be a faithful husband to each of two women living in separate cities, deserves to be punished. The June 10, 2003, *National Enquirer* told of bigamist John Carman, sixty-two, with four wives who had served more than three years in prison for bigamy.

X. Cohabitation

Cohabitation is the term used to describe the act of a man and woman living together as husband and wife usually without a legal marriage having been performed. According to the U.S. Census Bureau, the number of unmarried couples living together in 1960 was 500,000. In 1970, the number was 523,000, and in 1991, the number was 3 million. As of March 1997, there were 4,130,000 couples living together. According to the 2000 census, 5.4 million households have unmarried partners. Once considered a sin, a crime, or an abnormality, cohabitation has become almost normal. Some couples are choosing to test their relationships by living together before getting married. Others, fearful of the marriage penalty on federal income tax, simply see it as a financial issue. In most countries in the Western world, a surviving live-in partner has no automatic

¹²² “Man Pleads Guilty to Polygamy,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (March 19, 2000): B7.

¹²³ *Time* (November 15, 1999): 90.

¹²⁴ *Northwest Florida Daily News* (September 4, 2001): 6.

inheritance rights, but children born out of wedlock have the same inheritance rights as other children.

Marcus and Swett reported the results of two studies that showed that cohabitation tends to increase the violence experienced by college-age couples. One study showed a prevalence of violence increasing approximately 50 percent for each relationship stage from casual to cohabiting. The other study comparing violence prevalence rates showed 20 percent for dating, 36 percent for married, and 40 percent for cohabitating couples.¹²⁵

Y. Satyriasis

Satyriasis is an exaggerated desire for sexual gratification on the part of a man. The term comes from the mythical satyrs of ancient Greece, which were depicted as half man and half goat and given to lecherous revelry in their dedication to the god Dionysus. Satyrs are also mentioned in the Bible: “Wildcats shall meet with hyenas, the satyr shall cry to his fellow; yea there shall the night hag alight” (Isaiah 34:14). In the rare cases of the pure form of this sexual variation (estimated at less than 1 percent of the population), sexual hunger overshadows all other activities, and once aroused must be fulfilled, regardless of consequences. Satyriasis is sometimes labeled “insatiable sexual desire” or “excessive sex drive” in those individuals who have a dozen or more orgasms daily. “It may be an outgrowth of a physiological condition, but more often the basis is psychological” (Auerbach, 1968). Physiological conditions that are thought to cause satyriasis are hypergonadism and the XYY genotype. Psychological conditions can arise in the classical learning-theory etiology. Dr. John Money classifies it as a hyperphilia and compares it to another form of compulsive cruising, which he calls “polyterophilia,” the multiple repetition of an erotosexual practice with many partners as an essential prerequisite to one’s own orgasm.¹²⁶ Julio Iglesias, forty-five, popular Spanish singer, who is said to have made love to 3,000 women, may typify this condition.

The term for insatiable sexual appetite in women is nymphomania, from the nymphs of Greek mythology who were personified as beautiful forest maidens. Nymphomania was listed in the 1953 DSM-I as a form of mental illness, but it was deleted in the 1980 DSM-III. Kathy Willets, thirty-three, was arrested July 23, 1991, in Ft. Lauderdale, Florida, for selling her body for \$50 to \$150 a session, and her husband was charged with sharing the up-to-\$2,000-a-week profits. Nymphomania, allegedly caused by the drug Prozac taken for an earlier condition of depression, was their court defense by their lawyer, Ellis Rubin. The case was featured in the March 1992 Playboy magazine with two nude photos of Kathy and on national television September 7 and 9, 1992, on CNN’s Sonya Live and ABC’s A Current Affair programs. When police

¹²⁵ Marcus and Swett, *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* (May 2002): 572.

¹²⁶ Money, *Destroying Angel*, 188.

arrested the Willets, they confiscated a notebook containing the names of over fifty of their clients, including prominent officials. All of these people's lives were nearly ruined. Doug Danzyer, the Ft. Lauderdale vice mayor who was known for his anti-vice campaigns, resigned July 30th because his name was mentioned. Similar symptoms when coupled with sleep disturbance, hyperactivity, agitation, excessive spending, and indiscriminate sexual solicitation may also indicate manic depression, temporal lobe disease, or substance abuse.

Z. Promiscuity

Promiscuity is generally defined as the participation in sexual intercourse with many people on a more-or-less-casual basis. Another term is Don Juanism, after the mythical Spanish libertine, Don Juan, who was popularized by Byron and other seventeenth through nineteenth century writers. Studies of promiscuous people have shown that their sex drive, as such, was no stronger than the general populace, and many of them have shown other personality problems.¹²⁷ Promiscuity is often regarded as a threat to the institution of marriage and to the physical and mental health of those involved. Hunt (1974) gathered data on the number of sexual partners in a sampling of the active members of the "singles scene" and found that those who were called promiscuous had a median of six premarital sexual partners.

A well-known case is that of John Holmes, pornographic film star and magazine model in the 1980s. Holmes was an average-sized man who possessed a penis that measured fifteen inches when fully erect and allegedly had over 8,000 different sexual partners. When he died of AIDS in 1988, it was feared that he might have infected as many as 1,000 women with the deadly disease.

Another well-publicized case was that of Nushawn Williams, twenty, who was infected with the HIV. Williams continued to have unprotected sex even after he knew he was HIV positive. He infected at least nine women in the little town of Mayville, New York, in 1997. By late 2001, at least thirty states had enacted laws making it a felony, punishable by up to eight years, for HIV-positive persons to knowingly expose others by engaging in unprotected sex.

Another term entered into the consideration of the promiscuity phenomenon in the late 1990s was hooking up.

George Will is a very intelligent writer who accurately defined promiscuity as the central problem of the AIDS plague:

In Africa, AIDS is transmitted primarily by heterosexual sex. The problem is promiscuity. This underscores the primacy of cultural factors, including

¹²⁷ Kirkendal (1961); Safer (1949); Lion (1945), and Scarf (1980).

the notion that calling attention to promiscuity reveals a racist's obsession with the supposedly unmastered sexuality of black men.¹²⁸

More than 12 million sub-Saharan Africans have died of AIDS. Almost 23 million people in the same area carry HIV, the AIDS-causing virus—more than in any other part of the world. “Casual sex with multiple partners in the midst of an AIDS pandemic amounts to suicide on a continental scale. What is to be done?” Castration can stop promiscuity.

The Greek Orthodox Church in Athens, Greece, announced on February 5, 1999, that sex before marriage is indeed a sin. This was an effort to fend off accusations that the Church had been promoting promiscuity in a campaign to attract young people. The church said it would publish an encyclical to spread the word against premarital sex.

Promiscuity is like an errant vine. It often grows where it is not wanted. Vines put out tendrils and cling to other plants, houses, and windows, climbing over more useful and beautiful plants and blocking the life-giving sun from them. The powerful fertilizer of testosterone feeds human and mammalian promiscuity. Testosterone is an exciting hormone, pushing the vine of promiscuity into areas where it is not wanted, making many kinds of bad acts, as well as the necessary reproductive family behavior.

AA. Priapism

Priapism is sometimes confused with satyriasis. It is named for the fertility cult god, Priapus, of classical antiquity. Priapus was frequently shown in artworks as a misshapen man with a large, erect, red-painted phallus. Medically, priapism is a painful, persistent, and abnormal erection of the penis, which is not necessarily accompanied with sexual excitation or desire. Approximately 1 in 40,000 men suffer from priapism. It is a physical condition of the penis due to complex vascular and neurologic abnormalities. It is frequently seen in cases of sickle cell anemia, which is a genetically determined disease found almost exclusively in the black race. Priapism may be minor (infrequent and lasting less than three hours) or stuttering (episodes lasting less than three hours and occurring several times a week for four weeks or more). For stuttering and recurrent minor priapism, some researchers are using diltiazem, a calcium-channel blocker ... Major priapism (which lasts for more than one day) calls for emergency exchange transfusion and possibly verapamil, an agent that can reverse sickling, along with good hydration and major analgesics. The selective serotonin inhibitors Prozac and Zoloft have also been used to reduce priapism. Fibrosis of the penis can develop

¹²⁸ George Will, “AIDS Crushes a Continent—Every Minute 11 People Worldwide Are Infected with HIV. Ten Are in Sub-Saharan Africa,” *Newsweek* (January 10, 2000).

within a few days, so prompt surgical decompression is needed if priapism persists longer than forty-eight hours.”¹²⁹

Drug addicts who apply cocaine powder to their penis in their sexual activities sometimes induce a condition resembling priapism. The drug is rapidly absorbed through the skin and closes the venous drainage to the erectile tissue, keeping it filled with blood. The erection is often so intense that it is painful and can last for twenty-four hours.¹³⁰

In early 1995, several drugs were under development for erectile dysfunction (formerly known as “impotence”): injections into the penis of Caverject, Edex, or Invicorp; oral medications such as Viagra, Spontane, or Vasomax; and urethral suppositories like Muse. Some of these resulted in priapism in vulnerable men. Priapism of more than six hours can cause permanent damage to the penis. Once an erection is established, very little fresh blood enters. The blood stagnates and can clot. The oxygen drops and requires that a needle be inserted into the corpus cavernosum to draw out the stagnant blood. As the pressure abates, the veins can be opened again to drain the remainder.

Foucault (1986) quotes the ancient writer Aretaeus of Cappadocia (c. AD 285) concerning satyriasis or priapism: “It is a disease in which the patient has erection of the genital organ. It is an unrestrainable impulse to connection; but neither are they at all relieved by those embraces, nor is the tentigo soothed by many and repeated acts of sexual intercourse. Spasms of all the nerves, and tension of all the tendons, groin, and perineum, inflammation and pain of the genital parts.”¹³¹ Foucault also quotes the physician Galen’s (c. AD 131–200) treatise : “Priapism is an increase in the length and circumference of the male genitalia without sexual desire and without the acquired increase in heat which some people experience in the recumbent position. Other physicians describe it in the following manner, which is a shorter definition: a persisting increase of the external genitals or a persisting swelling.” He also quotes Galen as saying this kind of disease is found in men who “have too much sperm” and “abstain from intercourse.” Foucault was using priapism as an example to the ambivalence and the dichotomy of sexual activity, which is a source of therapeutic effects as well as pathological consequences. Batra and Lue reported that about one-third of all cases of priapism were ideopathic, 21 percent were related to drug or alcohol abuse, 12 percent were related to perineal trauma, 11 percent were related to sickle cell disease, 8 percent were related to inflammatory disorders of the urogenital tract, and the remainder were related to sexual overactivity, diabetic autonomic neuropathy,

¹²⁹ Hamre, Harmon, Kirkpatrick, et. al., “Priapism as a Complication of Sickle Cell Disease,” *Journal of Urology* 145, no. 1 (1991).

¹³⁰ Gay and Sheppard, “Sex-Crazed Dope Fiends: Myth or Reality?” *Drugs and Youth* (1973).

¹³¹ Michel Foucault, “The Care of the Self,” in *The History of Sexuality*, part 3, trans. Robert Hurley (New York: Pantheon Books, 1986), 114.

or impairment of the detumescence mechanism.¹³² Priapism has also been caused by anti-psychotic drugs, mainly thioridazine (mellaril) and chlorpromazine (thorazine).

BB. Triolism

Triolism is also called “three way” or “menage a trois.” It is the sharing of a sexual partner with a third person. It may also involve two or more couples having sexual relations within sight of one another. Dr. John Money coined the word autagonistophilia, in 1984, to categorize those individuals whose sexual arousal is contingent on being observed by others while engaged in sex acts. The scientific literature sometimes uses the term extradyadic sex for sex involving more than two persons.¹³³

On February 24, 2001, in Spotsylvania, Virginia, Cathy Turner, thirty-six, stabbed her live-in boyfriend in the chest, belly, and collarbone with a kitchen knife when he suggested a threesome with another woman. On August 28, 2001, Turner pleaded guilty to unlawful wounding, and the judge gave her five years in prison, but suspended the sentence and let her off without penalty.¹³⁴

CC. Gigolos

Gigolos are men who provide sexual services to women for pay. They are seldom arrested, and there is almost no data on them since there are very few official complaints on them. Most women would not admit to the need of hiring a man for such services.

DD. Hubris

Hubris is a very old Greek word meaning “overweening pride, self-confidence, arrogance, insolent, wanton or violent.” To the Greeks, hubris referred to someone who possessed considerable gifts and presumed that, because he had those gifts, he could take advantage of other people. If you are rich and powerful, human nature and testosterone being what they are, you are likely to commit an act of hubris, overstepping normal moral bounds.

In Sophocles’ (c. 495–406 BC) play *Trachiniae*, Hercules, son of Zeus, destroyed a city, killing all the men, in order to get a young girl for his mistress. This hubris is followed by a second, when he sends the girl to live in his wife, Deianeira’s, house. Aescylus (c. 525–456 BC) mentions in his *Oresteia* the common belief that the gods grudged human greatness and sent infatuation upon a man at the height of his success

¹³² A. K. Batra and T. F. Lue, “Physiology and Pathology of Penile Erections,” *Annual Review of Sex Research* 1 (1990): 259.

¹³³ *Journal of Sex Research* 32, no 4 (1995): 313.

¹³⁴ Northwest Florida Daily News (August 30, 2001): A2.

and so brought him to disaster. But this infatuated act was one of impiety or pride (hubris), for which his downfall could be seen as a just punishment.¹³⁵

The press and TV used the words hubris and hubristic in January 1998, with reference to the alleged sexual goings-on at the Clinton White House. The addition of Monica Lewinsky's name, to those of Paula Jones and Jennifer Flowers, on the list of the president's alleged libidinous indiscretions—and hints that there might be still others unnamed—has led many Americans to a disturbing suspicion of hubris. Popular writer, John Leo, pointed out that President Clinton may have had the “alpha male syndrome”—strong leaders are victims of their hormones, which go along with political success, and leadership and libido are linked.¹³⁶

EE. Saliromania

Saliromania is a sexual disorder found primarily in men that is characterized by the desire to damage or soil the body or clothing of women. Hostility is symbolically expressed by throwing acid, tar, ink, or excrement on a strange woman or statue, or sometimes, by cutting or tearing women's clothing or paintings. The 1980 disfigurement of Michelangelo's *Pieta* in Rome was the act of such a man. Saliromaniacs usually become sexually excited and sometimes ejaculate while performing their acts of destruction.

FF. Gerontosexuality

Gerontosexuality is also called “gerontophilia.” It is a variance in which a young person has an abnormally strong erotic preference for persons of advanced age. It is not illegal, provided the younger gerontophilic partner is no longer a legal minor. In gerontophilia, a young adult is compelled to have a partner old enough to be a parent or grandparent. Although rapes of women over age fifty are rare (about 3 percent of all rapes), they are usually more violent and more often result in murder.

GG. Klismaphilia

Klismaphilia refers to erotic pleasure from taking enemas. The research that has been done on this subject shows that it develops early in the anal stage of the Freudian psychosexual developmental cycle and becomes fixated as an obsessive-compulsive neurosis. Some cases have shown that the paraphilia was caused by the repeated enemas that had been administered with a particularly zealous regularity in childhood. It is also

¹³⁵ Encyclopedia Britannica. (1968). Vol. 1, p. 219.

¹³⁶ J. Leo, “My Libido Made Me Do It,” U.S. News & World Report (March 2, 1998): 18.

associated with enemas administered with a highly aroused sense of genital titillation. Being given an enema by the partner is, for the klismaphile, superior to penovaginal conjunction.¹³⁷ In recent years, thriving businesses have developed that cater to this deviance, known in the trade as “water sports,” by selling special newspapers, books, magazines, videotapes, and paraphernalia. Their special “toys” consist of such items as various sizes and shapes of syringes, butt plugs, rubber bags, and lubricants.

HH. Nudism

Nudism is regarded as a sexual variance by a large segment of the population because they connect it with voyeurism or exhibitionism. Others, however, rationalize the practice of living unclothed with full exposure to the sun and fresh air with good health. Nudism is disallowed in the general public, except at certain isolated special camps, farms, or beaches. It seems to have gained a certain level of popularity and acceptance in some communities. “Party Naked” bumper stickers may be seen on automobiles in some parts of the country.

Nudity is a criminal offense in many locations. People who sunbathe in the nude have been arrested and fined for disorderly conduct at some beaches. At Navarre Beach, Florida, sheriff’s deputies arrested seventeen nudists on April 10–12, 1999.¹³⁸ The penalties ranged from fines of \$35 to \$500.

II. Erotolalia (Obscene Phone Calls)

Obscene phone calling is usually considered a nuisance to the women receiving such calls from a man who makes obscene suggestions or describes his masturbation over the telephone. Since about 1984 there has been a regular, paid, “call girl” business using 900 numbers and providing women who will talk “dirty” and respond appropriately with obscene talk for a fee. Coprolalia is another term that refers to the deriving of sexual stimulation from obscene talk, particularly street words referring to feces. Scatalogia and scatophilia are other words referring to similar subject telephone calls. Coprophra-sia is another term from the medical literature, and narratophilia is an allied term for receiving sexual gratification from listening to sexy stories. Telephonicophilia is the term applied to the making of obscene telephone calls, which has risen in frequency or intensity to the level of a paraphilia. According to Weir, the dial-a-porn industry is a multimillion-dollar business.¹³⁹ The New York Telephone Company earned about \$15 million a year from the obscene telephone industry, according to Brown.¹⁴⁰ Approxi-

¹³⁷ Money, *Lovemaps*, 20, 35, 165.

¹³⁸ “Navarre Strips Beaches Nudity,” *Northwest Florida Daily News* (April 13, 1999): A1.

¹³⁹ S. Weir, “Thrills On The Line,” *New Society* 81 (1987): 17–18.

¹⁴⁰ P. Brown, “For a Good Time Call ...,” *Forbes* (March 28, 1983): 46.

mately 1.5 million sexually intrusive phone calls are reported to authorities annually in the United States.

JJ. Koro

Koro is an acute anxiety reaction with sudden onset in Malayan and Southern Chinese men that consists of the fear that the penis will disappear into the abdomen and that death will ensue. To prevent this, the patient grips his penis firmly, and when he gets tired, his wife, relatives, and friends help him. The Chinese have a special wooden clasp constructed for the purpose.¹⁴¹

KK. Couvade Syndrome

The Couvade syndrome affects about 10 percent of expectant fathers who manifest symptoms of a pregnant woman such as vomiting, nausea, and toothache.¹⁴² The word couvade means “cowardly inactivity” and also refers to a primitive custom in which when a child is born, the father takes to bed as if bearing the child.

LL. Paraphiliac Coercive Disorder (PCD)

PCD is a new, controversial sexual disorder, proposed to describe a subgroup of rapists with at least a six-month history of fantasies and sexual urges involving forced sexual contact. With such people, the coercive nature of rape—not signs of suffering as in sexual sadism—is the stimulus for sexual excitement.¹⁴³

MM. Autassassinophilia

Autassassinophilia is stage-managing one’s own masochistic death by murder or assassination. Money defines it as “a paraphilia of the sacrificial/expiatory type in which sexerotic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to, and dependent upon, stage-managing the possibility of one’s own masochistic death by murder (from Greek auto, “self,” plus assassin, plus philia).¹⁴⁴ Police generally view

¹⁴¹ S. Arieti and J. M. Meth, “Rare, Unclassifiable, Collective and Exotic Psychotic Syndromes” in *American Handbook of Psychiatry* (New York: Basic Books, 1959).

¹⁴² M. D. Enoch and W. H. Trethowan, *Uncommon Psychiatric Syndromes* (Bristol, England: John Wright Sons, 1979).

¹⁴³ A. K. Fuller and A. E. Fuller, “Paraphiliac Coercive Disorder,” *Journal of Sex Education and Therapy* 16, no. 3 (1990): 164, as quoted in *Medical Aspects of Sexuality* (February 1991): 25.

¹⁴⁴ Money, *Lovemaps*, 89, 258.

it as homicide or suicide, depending on the evidence at the scene of the event or from witnesses.

NN. Sexual Trauma

Beginning about 1991, this term came into general use to describe the results with some people of various types of sexual molestation as children. It is allied clinically with PTSD (post-traumatic stress disorder) by doctors, psychiatrists, psychologists, and social workers employed in treating mental and criminal behavioral problems. A large percentage of pedophiles and other sex offenders were the victims of “sexual trauma” as children mainly arising from rape, incest, or ritual sexual abuse. Cameron reports that:

According to a review by Goleman (1992), these studies have shown that wartime trauma had generated a series of neurobiological changes that left these veterans with an altered brain metabolism. Three major change areas were evident: First, the brain’s noradrenaline system seemed to have been reset—making these veterans prone to adrenaline surges decades later (p. 65). Anything reminiscent of the original trauma could trigger fight-or-flight alarm. The result might be an anxiety attack that seemed totally unwarranted. Second, the brain circuit linking the hypothalamus and the pituitary gland responded to crisis by triggering CRF—a stress hormone. This, in turn, secreted a chemical (ACTH) that activated a stress reaction, compounding the effects of adrenaline surges. The response of veterans with too much ACTH was exaggeration of perceived danger; they experienced the body reactions (sweat and pounding heart) and emotions (fear, anger) of their past trauma. The third brain area that showed change in veterans with PTSD was the opioid system, which blunts pain during injury. It produces chemicals, such as endorphins, which act like opium to dull pain while evoking a “pleasant, detached dreaminess” (p. 66). This may explain the walking wounded in battle, who continue to function while they are dying. Change in the opioid system may also clarify the “downers” of PTSD—emotional numbness, apathy, lack of zest—which may alternate (or run side by side) with “uppers” like jumpiness, nightmares, and irritability ... These three changes in the brains of trauma victims reinforce each other, producing the major symptoms of PTSD—re-experiencing, numbing and arousal.¹⁴⁵

Vietnam veterans and survivors of child sexual abuse evidently have much in common.

¹⁴⁵ C. Cameron, “Veterans of a Secret War—Survivors of Sexual Trauma Compared to Vietnam War Veterans with PTSD,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 9, no. 1 (1994): 119, 120.

OO. Computer-Driven Sexual Exploitation

This exploitation was recognized as a special problem by postal authorities in approximately 1992. At the second national Colloquium of the American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children at Cambridge, Massachusetts, May 4 to 7, 1994, an hour-long lecture was scheduled on this subject. The use of computers in sexual exploitation had been known for some time prior to this, however. Police had found computer-dating lists for prostitutes, child molesters, homosexuals, and sado-masochists for some years. It became necessary to develop special techniques in order to develop computer-driven search warrants in order to avoid civil and criminal liability. U.S. Postal Inspectors become involved under the Child Protection Act of the federal statutes when child pornography is involved.

Yossi Vardi and his son, Arik, sold their high-tech business in 1998 for \$407 million. The company, founded by the Israeli and three friends, created the instant-message program ICQ (I Seek You), which lets people find each other on the Internet and chat.

The Newsweek magazine, March 19, 2001, cover story was a special report on the "Darkest Corner of the Internet: How the Web has fed a shocking increase in the sexual exploitation of children." The article explained how, before the Internet came along, pedophiles were lonely and hunted individuals. Authorities formerly had child pornography under control, but today, networks of child abusers are proliferating worldwide by clever usage of the Net. Now, pedophiles can use their own computers to make copies of pictures and send them to like-minded men around the world. Child pornography can be made with film-free digital cameras without the need to risk exposure at a photo shop. Thousands of children around the world have been abused to create the pornographic pictures, and the demand is burgeoning on the Internet. One child-porn Web site, known as the Tajik Express, was found to have recorded 147,776 hits from Internet users and had a download of 3.2 million images in one month in the summer of 1999. Officials generally agree there is a link between the child-porn voyeurism and the sexual abuse of children. The number of people incarcerated for sexual assault against juveniles increased 39 percent between 1991 and 1997, from 43,500 to 60,700. This was the same period that saw an increase in child porn on the Internet.

Internet pornography has become very profitable. The commercial sites charge for access to pornographic materials with videotapes and other "adult" merchandise for sale. In 1997, the revenues for adult entertainment on the Internet were estimated to be \$137 million (Encyclopedia of Criminology and Deviant Behavior, 2001, vol. III, p. 63). In June of 1999, George and Tracy Miller, a married couple in Scottsdale, Arizona, operated a sexually explicit Web site, which charged 22,000 members \$14.95 a month to watch them have sex.¹⁴⁶

¹⁴⁶ Playboy (February 2001): 45.

PP. Cybersex

Similar to the above in that it is mainly a personal computer phenomenon, cybersex goes considerably further in problematic sexual activities, frequently leading to addictive behavior, adultery, and the breaking up of homes and families. The computer technology and burgeoning growth of the Internet or Web offers a “Triple A Engine” of access, affordability, and anonymity, which combines to accelerate and intensify on-line sexual interactions. Flirtation and innuendo rapidly escalate into sexual discussion and proposals on the Internet. An estimated 9 to 15 million people access the Internet each day, and this appears to be growing at a rate of 25 percent every three months. Internet users spend an average of 9.8 hours per week visiting the more than 200 million Web sites now in existence. Cybersex compulsives spend an estimated average of fifteen to twenty-five hours per week pursuing online sexual material.

In a special issue of the journal *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* (vol. 7, no.1 (2), 2000), the dark side of the cybersex force was elucidated in eight major articles. One of the studies estimated that 8 percent of the 57 million Web computer users fit the description of being addicted to cybersex (p. 143). This equals a staggering 4.5 million persons. In another study, cybersex addiction was a major contributing factor to 22.3 percent of the respondents who were separated or divorced, and several others were seriously contemplating leaving. One or both partners had lost interest in their relational sex in 68 percent of the couples. Some couples had had no sex in months or years. Partners felt hurt, betrayed, rejected, abandoned, humiliated, jealous, and angry.

In February 2000, *Time* magazine published an article, “Are You with Anyone” by Michele Orecklin, that listed eight organizations that specialize in online dating: Match.com, AmericanSingles.com, Matchmaker.com, Jdate.com, Blacksingles.com, Webwoo.com, XseeksY.com, and Saferdating.com. Matchmaker.com claims over 1 million members, over 1,100 marriages, and at least forty-four babies.

QQ. Autonepiophilia

This is “a paraphilia of the stigmatic/eligibilic type in which sexueroetic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and contingent on impersonating a baby in diapers and being treated as one by the partner (from Greek *autos*, “self,” plus *nepon*, “infant,” plus *philia*).” Dr. John Money had one correspondent who had been in seven adult diaper clubs and had corresponded with some 300 men who love diapers, too.¹⁴⁷ The Diaper Pail Friends (www.dpf.com) is a national organization that claims a membership of more than 15,000.

¹⁴⁷ Money, Gay, Straight, and In-Between, 142, 190.

RR. Self-Injury

Cutting, bruising, burning, or puncturing of the body for the relief of sexual tension was fairly common in the gay and S & M population as the twentieth century drew to a close. These are generally people who have a sensitive nature and react strongly to emotional stress. Turning to drugs, cigarettes, alcohol, over-eating, or starving are probably more common in the general population as stress relievers, but self-injury is used by a segment of the population. Favazza and Rosenthal classify it as self-mutilation and identify three types:

1. Major Self-Mutilation

The most extreme and uncommon form of self-injury consisting of infrequent destruction of major amounts of bodily tissue (castration, limb amputation). About fifty cases of genital self-mutilation are reported in recent psychiatric literature. Often associated with psychotic or acute intoxication.

2. Stereotypic Self-Mutilation

Fixed, rhythmic patterns of injury such as head banging, eyeball pressing, and finger biting. Often seen in autistic people or those with Tourette's or Lech-Nyhan syndromes.

3. Superficial or Moderate Self-Mutilation

Less injurious with relatively little tissue damage, often occurs sporadically and repetitively. Needle sticking, cutting the skin with a razor, scratching, and burning are some of the examples.¹⁴⁸

Self-injury (also called "self-harm," "autoaggression," and "deliberate self-harm") provides a release from overwhelming psychological distress and tension and can be a symbolic substitute for masturbation. Self-injury has been described as "addicting" by many of those who engage in it. The inability to resist the impulse is the cornerstone of the repetitive self-mutilation syndrome. Apparently, the body's own narcotics and the endogenous opiates (mainly beta-endorphin) provide the pleasant effect that makes it addictive.

The true prevalence of self-injury is unknown but was estimated to be 750 cases per 100,000 persons per year by Favazza and Conterio (1988).¹⁴⁹ In a study of psychiatric in-patients by DiClemente et al., 61 percent of them had cut themselves at some stage in their illness.¹⁵⁰ Occasional superficial or moderate self-mutilation is common today in teenagers and people in their twenties and is believed by some to be on the rise along with the increase in depression in this age group. The more socially acceptable forms of

¹⁴⁸ A. R. Favazza and R. J. Rosenthal, "Diagnostic Issues in Self-Mutilation," *Hospital and Community Psychiatry* 44, no. 2 (1993): 134-140.

¹⁴⁹ A. R. Favazza and K. Conterio, "The Plight of Chronic Self-Mutilators," *Community Mental Health Journal* 24 (1988): 22-30.

¹⁵⁰ R. DiClemente, L. Ponton, and D. Hartley, "Prevalence and Correlates of Cutting Behavior: Risk for HIV Transmission," *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry* 30, no. 5 (1991): 735-739.

self-mutilation—pierced noses, tongues, ears, tattoos, and brandings—are being seen in the schools and on the streets more frequently than a few years ago.

There are many other aspects of self-injury that might be considered, but they are usually disassociated to some other category of classification such as castration, circumcision, masochism, flagellion, transsexualism, scarification, stigmatophilia, and apotemnophilia. Castration (orchietomy, eunuchizing, sterilizing, gelding, emasculation) has been used since about 6000 BC down to the present day by ardent religious men to purify themselves of sinful sexual desires. The ancient cult worshipers of the Great Mother goddesses, from the most ancient times down to about AD 350—Byzantines, the Essenes, the Hijras, the Skoptsi, and the Heaven's Gate cult—are some of the other cults. There were also individuals who heeded the Bible's teachings in Matthew 5:27–30, 6:29–30, 18:8–9, 19:12; Mark 9:43–47; and Romans 7 and 8 and castrated themselves for the Kingdom of Heaven down through the past 2,000 years of our Christian history. Most of the religious castrates would not refer to their condition as “self-injury” but rather “purification.”

Circumcision has been used in many cultures from as early as 4000 BC for religious and disease prevention purposes. The tomb of Ankh-ma-hor at Saqqhara in Egypt, dating between 2400 and 2300 BC, has a scene on the wall of a boy being circumcised. The Old Testament called for it in Genesis 34:14–24; Exodus 4:25–26, 12:44, 48; Joshua 5:2–8; 1 Samuel 14:6, 18:25–27; Isaiah 36:41, 52:1; Jeremiah 4:4, 6:10–11, 9:25–26; Ezekiel 28:10, 32:10–24; and Maccabees 1:15–60, 2:46, 6:10. Debates about the use of circumcision continued in the New Testament in Luke 1:59, 2:21; John 7:22–23; Acts 7:8–9, 11:2–3, 15:1–24, 16:3, 21:21; Romans 2:25–29, 3:1, 3:30, 4:9–12, 15:8; 1 Corinthians 7:18–21; Galatians 2:3–12, 5:2–15, 6:12–16; Philippians 3:3–6; Colossians 2:11–13, 3:11; and in saying #53 of the Gospel of Thomas. As the twentieth century drew to a close, more than half of American hospitals routinely performed the surgery on newborn males unless they had a genital anomaly like hypospadias, an objection by the parents, or a family history of hemophilia. Many other religions, cults, nations, and tribes, particularly in the equatorial regions, still practice circumcision—some of them on female as well as male children.

Masochism (algolagnia) is the tendency to take pleasure in physical or mental suffering inflicted by oneself or by another person or in the practice of extreme self-denial or self-punishment.

Flagellation (beating, whipping, flogging, scourging) has been a practice in several religious groups since the twelfth century as a religious rite. People who respond sexually to being beaten by or to beating another person also employ flagellation.

Transsexualism (also called gender dysphoria and gender identity disorder) is a disturbance of gender identity in which the affected person has an overwhelming desire to change his or her anatomic sex stemming from the fixed conviction that he or she is a member of the opposite sex; such persons often seek hormonal and surgical treatment to bring their anatomy into conformity with their belief. Although the prevalence of

the disorder is unknown, an estimated 3,000 to 6,000 adult Americans had the surgical reassignment therapy in 1979.

Scarification (cicatrization), the making of scars or a number of scratches and small incisions on the skin or mucus membrane, is the mode of self-injury often used by the youngest and is usually classified as superficial self-mutilation. Stigmatophilia. Apotemnophilia is a paraphilia in which orgasms and sexual arousal are responsive to amputations of the limbs of one's partner or oneself.

SS. Thrill Seeking

Thrill seeking is another sex-hormone-associated phenomenon somewhat similar in its chain of causations to self-injury. A number of extremely dangerous sports like BASE jumping (an acronym for building, antenna, span[bridge], and earth[cliffs]), mountain climbing, extreme skiing, snowboarding, parachute jumping, race-car driving, etc. BASE has one of the sporting world's highest fatality rates: In its eighteen-year history, forty-six participants have been killed. Yet the sport has never been more popular, with more than a thousand jumpers in the United States. Snowboarding now boasts nearly 5.5 million participants. Mountain biking, skateboarding, and scuba diving are also increasing at a rapid rate. Boxing, wrestling, football, and soccer are as popular as ever. In 1997, the U.S. Consumer Products Safety Commission reported that 48,000 Americans were admitted to hospital emergency rooms with skateboarding-related injuries. Visits to the emergency room due to snowboarding injuries increased 31 percent; mountain climbing injuries were up 20 percent. Americans are participating in and injuring themselves through adventure sports at an unprecedented rate.¹⁵¹ Even our social behavior has tilted toward the treacherous, with unprotected sex on the upswing and hard drugs like heroin becoming the choice of the chic as well as the junkies. Scientists have pointed out that thrill seeking is associated with the brain chemical messenger dopamine, and dopamine is increased in effectiveness by testosterone, our principle male sex hormone.

Thrill seeking has led many men into dangerous sports that frequently cause traumatic brain injury. In the United States, an estimated 1.5 to 2 million people incur these concussions each year, principally as a result of sports injuries, acts of violence, falls, and vehicular accidents. More than twice as many of these injuries occur in men than in women. The estimated rate is 100 per 100,000 persons, with 52,000 annual deaths. The highest percentage of incidence is among young persons aged fifteen to twenty-four years.¹⁵²

Traumatic brain injury is one of the chief causes of the intellectual disabilities that underlie some of our most problematic behavior crimes. These injuries are poorly recog-

¹⁵¹ "Life on the Edge," *Time* (September 6, 1999): 28-36.

¹⁵² NIH Consensus Development Panel on Rehabilitation of Persons with Traumatic Brain Injury, "Rehabilitation of Persons with Traumatic Brain Injury," *JAMA* (September 8, 1999): 974.

nized and poorly treated by most of our medical professionals. It has long been known that people with intellectual disabilities are also the most difficult to rehabilitate. A large number of studies have consistently demonstrated the high incidence of intellectual disability in offender populations in the United States.¹⁵³ It is only in recent times that there has been recognition of the processes of stigmatization and segregation that have contributed to the marginalisation of people with an intellectual disability. These people are significantly more vulnerable to the criminal justice system since they are more likely to have their crimes detected, to confess, be victimized in the prison system, and have harsher punishments imposed. Thrill seeking is another factor that causes brain injuries and contributes to our huge prison population. It is also amenable to the castration treatment.

One of the viewpoints concerning thrill seekings has to do with the feeling of power and dominance that a man gains when he overcomes someone else in a contest. Schultheiss et al. showed that the results of several studies provided ample evidence of the link between these feelings and testosterone levels. Both men and animals showed an increase in testosterone when winning and in anticipation of winning and a decrease when losing.¹⁵⁴ Rosenblitt et al. reported several studies that showed an association between sensation seeking and men's levels of testosterone and cortisol.¹⁵⁵

TT. Stripping

Stripping by professional dancers has long been a profitable enterprise by both female (mainly) and male dancers, and there is extensive research literature on it.¹⁵⁶ Research on amateur stripping is a relatively recent development. Unlike professional strippers, amateur strippers voluntarily remove their clothing in public in hopes of winning prizes, which they may or may not win, so they engage in the practice mainly for fun. Alcoholic drinks enhance this sex-stimulating entertainment for both the audience and performers. We are reminded of Salome, the daughter of Herodias, who was rewarded with the head of John the Baptist by King Herod in first century AD for her excitatory dance (Matthew 14:1–12; Mark 6:14–29).

¹⁵³ O. C. Schultheiss, K. L. Campbell, and D. C. McClelland, "Implicit Power Motivation Moderates Men's Testosterone Responses to Imagined and Real Dominance Success," *Hormones and Behavior* 36, no. 3 (December 1999): 234–241.

¹⁵⁴ Glaser and Deane, "Normalization in an Abnormal World: A Study of Prisoners with Intellectual Disability," *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 43, no. 3 (September 1999): 338.

¹⁵⁵ J. C. Rosenblitt, H. Soler, S. E. Johnson, and D. M. Quadagno, "Sensation Seeking and Hormones in Men and Women: Exploring the Link," *Hormones and Behavior* 40, no. 5 (2001): 396.

¹⁵⁶ J. A. H. Cannon, T. J. Calhoun, and R. Fisher, "Amateur Stripping and Gaming Encounters: Fun in Games or Gaming as Fun?" *Deviant Behavior: An Interdisciplinary Journal* 19, no. 4 (1998): 317–337.

The inflammatory effects of booze and broads at today's American strip joints have resulted in many after-hours altercations, accidents, and jail sojourns. The "stripteasers" are often prostitutes who get an extra high price because their provocative stripping and dancing, along with booze and drugs, has excited their customers beyond reticence and rationality. Strip joints are often located near military bases where large numbers of single, healthy men in uniform provide the main clientele for these "impure performances."¹⁵⁷ Professional strippers are elusive fugitives whenever the police seek them because they usually do not stay in one place longer than three or four weeks. They move from place to place, and few of the stripper's co-workers get to know her very well, so they can't provide much information to the police. Erickson and Tewksbury found professional stripping was one of the most studied components of the sex industry and that patrons were mostly white men, but blacks were slightly over-represented (21 percent in a city that was 17 percent black). Most of the patrons at stripping shows were "detached lookers" at 56 percent; others were "bold lookers" at about 23 percent and "lonely" men at about 10 percent.¹⁵⁸

Topless dancers frequently have police records for petty theft, disorderly conduct, dealing in stolen property, etc. Most communities where strippers operate have special ordinances trying to minimize the increased crime inside and around the clubs. Indianapolis, Houston, Phoenix, and Pensacola have similar ordinances running to eighty pages in draft form. Pensacola has 303 licensed dancers, forty-six of whom were arrested in a fourteen-month period.¹⁵⁹ A male stripper hired to perform for a group of teenage girls faced lewd conduct charges for allegedly fondling at least four of the girls during his routine on October 30, 1998, in Pleasanton, California.¹⁶⁰

On December 2, 1999, the Tampa, Florida, city council held a meeting of strippers, clergy, spectators, and protesters bearing signs such as "I Want My Lap Dance." The council members were considering an ordinance requiring at least six feet of space between dancers and strip-club patrons. They had rented a large room at a convention center because they expected a large crowd, but the room wasn't big enough. About 1,100 people showed up. The adult-club owners claimed that the "lap dance" ordinance would hurt the tourist business. In a lap dance, clothed customers pay \$20 to have a naked or nearly naked woman sit in their lap and rub against them. The police said the ordinance against this was needed to fight crime, prostitution, and the spread of disease at strip clubs. The dancers said the ordinance would violate their constitutional right to freedom of expression. The city officials said illegal acts—simulated sex, masturbation,

¹⁵⁷ K. Mullen, "The Impure Performance Frame of the Public House Entertainer," *Urban Life* 14, no. 2 (1985): 181–203.

¹⁵⁸ D. J. Erickson and R. Tewksbury, "The 'Gentlemen' in the Club: A Typology of Strip Club Patrons," *Deviation Behavior* 21, no. 3 (2000): 271–293.

¹⁵⁹ "Majority of Local Topless Dancers Have No Criminal Record," *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (November 10, 1998): 5C.

¹⁶⁰ "Mom, Stripper Face Charges After Girl's Party," *Northwest Florida Daily News* (November 27, 1998): A3.

oral sex, and intercourse—were taking place in clubs like Mons Venus, Club XS, Lip Sticks, and Pink Pony and at least fifteen other clubs in Tampa.¹⁶¹ On December 17, city officials sued five strip clubs for violating the new ordinance. Mayor Dick Greco said, “You have to draw the line somewhere.”

UU. Bareback Sex

Peyser, Gauthier, and Forsyth brought still another sexual deviance out of obscurity with their description of this and the allied “bug chasing” deviance.¹⁶²¹⁶³ They defined bareback sex, or barebacking, as unprotected sex and bug chasing, in which HIV-negative gay men seek to become infected with the deadly virus that causes AIDS. Barebacking occurs in several levels: 1) If the partners are married heterosexuals, little or no social disapproval occurs. 2) If the partners are unmarried but romantically involved heterosexuals, social censure increases. 3) When the behavior occurs between heterosexual partners who are not romantically involved, censure increases further. 4) When barebacking occurs with homosexual male partners, it receives serious social censure because this is the principle route for the transmission of AIDS and other STDs. 5) The censure of homosexual male partners varies from: a) mild for barebacking when both partners are HIV positive even though there may be an infection with the other STDs or another, more virulent strain of HIV, which frequently hastens death; b) moderate for those uninfected men who have sex with known HIV-positive men with the purpose of bug chasing and wanting to become infected; c) serious when the infected person purposely infects an uninfected person, which has been defined as murder in some states, punishable by death.

For some of the bug chasers, barebacking is an erotic experience filled with excitement and danger. The thrill of barebacking makes the sex hotter when they flirt with death for some of the bug chasers who may border on the sadomasochistic category. Dangerous sports like skydiving have been linked to similar sexual excitement; danger can be erotic. For other bug chasers, their past fears of infection have interfered with their perceived quality of life, and they do not want to be afraid of the man they love even though he is infected with the deadly HIV. They want to live life in a more uninhibited fashion than practicing safe sex. Peyser quoted some of the gays: “If someone has AIDS or HIV, that kind of lionizes them. It’s heroic, like fighting the battle.” “When you get with someone who has HIV, it’s like being with someone greater than you are.” That attitude may be a by-product of the high-profile AIDS publicity.

¹⁶¹ “Lap Dance Proposal Attracts Interest,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 3, 1999): 5C and (December 19, 1999): B7

¹⁶² M. Peyser, “A Deadly Dance,” *Newsweek* (September 1997): 76.

¹⁶³ D. K. Gauthier and C. J. Forsyth, “Bareback Sex, Bug Chasers, and the Gift of Death,” *Deviant Behavior* 20, no. 1 (1999): 85–100.

Saurez and Miller¹⁶⁴ mention several other factors that influence men who have sex with men (MSM) to engage in the barebacking activities. What they term AIDS burnout results from years of coping with HIV and changes to their natural sexual behavior patterns. Hope that HIV may be cured or effectively maintained long-term can lead to increase in risky behavior. Barebackers sometimes report fatigue with safe sex and lack of meaningful prevention programs. It is even possible that improved treatments work synergistically with burnout to produce risk behavior in MSM. Media accounts of barebacking may serve the same purpose. The relatively positive media attention given barebackers has the potential to shift others away from safe-sex norms.

VV. Hookups

Paul et al. (2000) investigated another specific risky sexual practice common among contemporary college students called the hookup. Hookups are defined as sexual encounters, which may or may not include sexual intercourse, usually occurring on only one occasion between two people who are strangers or brief acquaintances. Hookups usually last no more than one night and are spontaneous (i.e., something that “just happens”); they are often referred to as “casual sex” or a “one-night stand.” Paul, McManus, and Hayes found that 78 percent of their sample college students had experienced a hookup, and 47.7 percent of the males in this group had engaged in sexual intercourse, but only 33.3 percent of the females experienced intercourse in the hookup. Eighty-one percent of those that had sex reported using a condom, and 25 percent reported using some other form of birth control. Only 12 percent of the hookup participants indicated that the event had evolved into a romantic relationship, and the average duration of the romance was four months. The majority of hookup experiences included alcohol use by both parties.¹⁶⁵

WW. Groupies

Groupie is a term usually used to refer to a young woman who follows rock groups around on tours. DesBarres¹⁶⁶ tells of her days of chasing the stars and living life in the fast lane. Many of her encounters with these stars ended in sexual exploits. The groupie subculture also surrounds professional athletes, with each sport having specific

¹⁶⁴ Troy Saurez and Jeffrey Miller, “Negotiating Risks in Context: A Perspective on Unprotected Anal Intercourse and Barebacking Among Men Who Have Sex with Men—Where Do We Go From Here?” *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 30, no. 3 (2001): 287–300.

¹⁶⁵ E. L. Paul, B. McManus, and A. Hayes, “‘Hookups’ Characteristics and Correlates of College Students’ Spontaneous and Anonymous Sexual Experiences,” *The Journal of Sex Research* 37, no. 1 (February 2000): 76–88.

¹⁶⁶ P. DesBarres, *I’m With the Band: Confessions of a Groupie* (New York: Jove Books, 1988).

names for these women. Baseball players refer to them as “Annies,” hockey players call them “puck bunnies,” and rodeo cowboys use the term “buckle bunnies.”

Gauthier and Forsyth¹⁶⁷ explain that rodeo cowboys are awarded specially engraved belt buckles when they win an event. Also, some of them are given leather jackets with their names on them. These make it easy for the girls to identify the “winners” at the nightclubs, which are the most common place for the cowboys to encounter the buckle bunnies after the rodeo. Women are seeking to acquire the best cowboy, whose sexual “conquest” will be viewed as a form of status attainment. Bull riding is considered the most exciting and dangerous rodeo event. Bull riders are glamorized in the movies and on television more than other contests, so the bunnies are particularly interested in them as the most macho men. It’s like the biker gangs of the 1960s and 1980s. Women in these gangs initiated sex most often with the most macho men.

XX. Erotic Tourism

Erotic tourism is a deviant industry described by Evans, Forsyth, and Wooddell¹⁶⁸ as providing sexual experiences for male tourists either as voyeurs or participants in sex acts with females. There are also other types of erotic tours established specially for homosexuals and pedophiles. Erotic tours occur mainly in two general locations: Southeast Asia and the Caribbean; to a lesser extent, erotic tours also occur in the Netherlands. In Thailand, the main source of foreign money is tourism. Although prostitution has had a long history there, it got a big boost in 1967 when the Thailand government and the U.S. military signed a treaty to allow U.S. soldiers stationed in Vietnam to come there on rest and recreation (R&R) leave. When the Vietnam War ended, there was an economic need to keep this industry going, and erotic tourism filled the need.

The origin of erotic tourism in the Caribbean is related to poverty and the expansion of foreign investment in the region. The Panama Canal building (1890–1914) and maintenance brought U.S. commercial and military presence to the region, which precipitated the growth of the sex industry. The subsequent withdrawal of the military was similar to the cycle in Southeast Asia, and the erotic tourism industry evolved to fill the gap. In the case of the Netherlands, the country’s reputation as a sex mecca created a legend that has sustained the sex tours there. There was a company called The Amsterdam Red Light Tours in 1999. A growing number of customers are using the Internet to arrange erotic tours in the year 2000.

¹⁶⁷ D. Gauthier and C. J. Forsyth, “Buckle Bunnies: Groupies of the Rodeo Circuit,” *Deviant Behavior* 21, no. 4 (2000): 349–365.

¹⁶⁸ R. D. Evans, C. J. Forsyth, and G. Wooddell, “Macro and Micro Views of Erotic Tourism,” *Deviant Behavior* 21, no. 6 (2000): 537–550.

YY. Hate Crimes

Many of the crimes labeled “hate crimes” by the police and press are, in fact, sex crimes in their etiology. Sexuality can be one of the most venomous poisons that stirs up enmity and hostility. Sex is the explosive fuel for one of our most powerful biological attractions and repulsions. Often, we instinctively dislike someone and don’t quite know why. Sometimes we have been brought up to loathe certain behavior like sodomy or child molestation, and we are trained to hate the perpetrators of such acts. Sometimes we automatically abhor and recoil from repugnant sex. In any case, when we are confronted with some sexual act that is particularly abhorrent to us, we hate the perpetrator and often want to harm him. According to a report issued February 23, 1999 by the Southern Poverty Law Center in Montgomery, Alabama, the number of hate groups increased from 474 in 1997 to 537 in 1998. The report blamed the use of the Internet by middle-class, college-bound teens for the increase. I blame the hormones, which surge in the teen years of puberty and early adulthood.

The March 8, 1999, issue of Newsweek reported about 8,000 hate-crime incidents in 1997 and showed that about 70 percent were race or ethnicity motivated, 17 percent biased by religion, and 14 percent (>1,100) by sexual orientation. The 1998 data showed about 16.3 percent of hate crimes were attributed to sexual orientation. The federal government has been required to keep data on bias crimes since the passage of the Hate Crimes Statistics Act in 1990. The annual numbers recorded have since varied between about 6,000 and 8,800. In spite of strong lobbying by the NAACP and homosexual organizations, the federal hate crimes law never was passed, but forty states do have such laws. However, these laws apparently have little preventive effect.

In early 1999, gay outrage and sensational publicity over two murders of homosexuals and one murder of a black man caused lawmakers in Washington, DC, to renew their campaigns for an expanded federal hate crime law. Tammy Baldwin (D-WI), the first openly gay woman elected to Congress, was one of the sponsors of the Hate Crimes Prevention Act of 1999. Senator Charles Schumer (D-NY), Connie Morella (R-MD), and John Conyers (D-MI) were some of the other co-sponsors. Reverend Troy Perry and the Reverend Jesse Jackson continued their campaigns for full enactment of the federal Hate Crimes Prevention Act through 1999 by gathering signatures from American religious leaders. Opponents of the new law that would increase the punishment for the ideology of hatred felt that punishing people for their ideas was reminiscent of the “thought police” of several oppressive, old, foreign regimes and should be resoundingly rejected.

Another aspect of the sexually motivated “hate crimes” is that they are justified and even encouraged by our Biblical teachings. We have been taught to hate evil, and some of the sex crimes and deviancies are certainly evil of the worst sort as I have outlined above. The New Revised Standard Version of the Bible (1990) tells me as follows: “The Lord loves those who hate evil” (Psalm 97:10); “Do I not hate those who hate you, O Lord?” (Psalm 139:21); “I hate them with perfect hatred; I count them my enemies”

(Psalm 139:22); “The fear of the lord is hatred of evil. Pride and arrogance and the way of evil and perverted speech I hate” (Proverbs 8:13); “You have loved the righteousness and hated wickedness; therefore God, your God, has anointed you” (Hebrews 1:9).

Some of the ways hatred comes out are shown in the following subsections.

1. Homosexuality

As we have seen above, much hatred is generated in the heterosexual community for homosexual activities. The well-documented fact that male homosexuals have an unending series of fleeting sexual relationships increases their dislike by others. Eighty percent of these men reported that more than half of their partners were complete strangers. Most of these men prefer quick and immediate biological sexual gratification. The high frequency of impersonal sex with a large number of partners leads to the epidemic of sexual diseases, robberies, extortions, and beatings—expressions of the general societal acrimony felt against this behavior.

Ninety percent of gay men report having been a target of verbal abuse or threats, and more than 30 percent of them claim to be survivors of violence related to their homosexuality. Ever since the 1969 three-day riot at the Stonewall Inn bar in Greenwich Village, New York, gave birth to the modern gay rights movement, several major incidents have served to increase homophobia in the United States. On November 27, 1978, the murder of Harvey Milk, San Francisco’s first openly gay supervisor, touched off another riot in “Sodom by the Sea,” and more than 160 people ended up in the hospital.

Headlines across the nation and counter-demonstrations by the KKK occurred in 1998 and 1999. On October 7, 1998, Matthew Shepard, twenty-one, a gay college freshman, was pistol whipped, tied to a fence, and left in the cold in Laramie, Wyoming. He died October 12th. Shepard had allegedly “come on” to two young men in a Laramie bar at about ten o’clock in the evening. Then, after drinking a few beers, he went out of the bar and got in their car with them. Russell Henderson, twenty-one, was sentenced to death in March 1999 for the crime. On February 19, 1999, Billy Jack Gaither, thirty-nine, was beaten to death with an axe handle and burned outside the small town of Sylacauga, Alabama, apparently because he was gay. Steven Mullins, twenty-five, and Charles Butler, twenty-one, confessed to the crime, recounting how they had planned to assault Gaither because he made a pass at one of them. At 6:35 pm, April 30, 1999, a bomb exploded at the gay Admiral Duncan pub in London, England, killing two young men and injuring more than seventy. The White Wolves, a right-wing extremist group, called the BBC two hours later and claimed responsibility.

In March 1999, the Society for the Scientific Study of Sexuality announced research grant awards to students for the study of hate crimes against gays, lesbians, and bisexuals. Homophobia is the term for hatred of homosexuals, and biphobia is the prejudice against bisexuality. Biphobia is believed to exist in both the heterosexual and homosexual communities. Also in March 1999, Texas Governor George W. Bush was quoted in the U.S. News & World Report (April 5th, p. 43) as saying he does not

support special rights based on sexual orientation: "I've always said all crime is hate crime."

On April 6, 1999, President Clinton threw his weight behind the federal Hate Crimes Prevention Act of 1999 by asking Congress to extend coverage of offenses based on sexual orientation. If passed, this law would make prosecution of hate crimes easier. At that time, more than forty states had hate crimes legislation, but only twenty-one covered sexual orientation.¹⁶⁹ For the eleventh consecutive year, the Democrat-led New York State Assembly pushed legislation to increase punishments for crimes motivated by bias against gays.¹⁷⁰

Franklin (2000) studied anti-gay behavior among non-criminal young adults and found that one in ten admitted physical or threatening violence against homosexuals, and another 24 percent acknowledged name-calling. The young people were found to be motivated by peer dynamics (35 percent), anti-gay ideology (15 percent), thrill seeking (7 percent), and self-defense (6 percent), despite their relatively tolerant attitude toward homosexuality. In her sampling, Franklin found that men were 64 percent of the perpetrators, and the gap between men and women grew wider as the behavior became more violent. Male respondents committed 64 percent of the name-calling, 79 percent of the threats of violence, and 92 percent of the hitting, kicking, and beating.¹⁷¹

2. Pedophilia

One of the most stigmatized sexual activities at the present time is the type of sexual variation wherein adults derive erotic pleasure from relationships with children. Public outrage against pedophiles is stronger than that against rapists. Pedophiles are frequently sentenced to life in prison, whereas twenty-five years is the norm for rape.

3. Abortion

Much of the hatred and resultant murders at abortion clinics, the bombing of abortion clinics, and the mailing of anthrax and threats to abortion clinics is generated by hatred for the "baby killers" who work there.

4. Interracial

Many of the hate crimes stem from interracial sexuality as described above. In one of the most gruesome racial hate crimes in the United States since the civil rights movement, John William King, twenty-four, of Jasper, Texas, was found guilty of murder on February 23, 1999. He was sentenced to death two days after his conviction for tying a chain around James Byrd's (a black man) legs, and then King and two of his friends dragged Byrd three miles behind their pickup truck.

Why did King hate black men so much? He had lived with them all his life in the small town of Jasper, which was about 40 percent black. King was a smallish, 5' 7", 130-pound, eighteen-year-old boy when, in 1995, he was first thrust into Texas's Beta, a prison where most of the inmates and staff were black. He had been assaulted

¹⁶⁹ "Shades of Gay," *Newsweek* (March 20, 2000): 49.

¹⁷⁰ "Assembly Passes Hate Crimes Bill," *New York Blade News* 4.

¹⁷¹ K. Franklin, "Antigay Behaviors Among Young Adults," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 15, no. 4 (2000): 339-362.

within hours of his arrival. The common practice there was for two or three of the big inmates to jump on the new arrival to see if he would fight. If he didn't fight or pay them, the new arrival would become someone's "girl." The usual custom was for these "girls" to be sold off to other inmates when their "owner" became tired of them. King's defense council told the jury at his trial about these conditions, but they had been overwhelmed by the prosecution's garish descriptions of the murder of the black man and the extraordinary publicity the trial was getting and could not cope with an understanding of the old, hidden prison experiences that had activated King's hatred. King had ample reason for his hatred beyond even his own understanding.

The 1996 book *The Coming Race War in America*, by Carl T. Rowan, complains of the 1978 novel *The Turner Diaries*. "Almost every page reeks with talk of 'depraved blacks raping white women.'" On page 95, Rowan, who is black, attacks Newt Gingrich for saying that 800 babies a year are found in dumpsters in Washington, DC—a predominantly black city. Rowan goes on to blast social scientists for relating white men's sexual insecurity to the large size of black men's genitals (page 146). On page 147, he states that "there has always been the danger of miscegenation, with white women being lured by the talk of what great lovers the 'savage' with the huge penis could be." Rowan continues on to complain that blacks are deemed to be a public health threat because of their higher rates than whites in tuberculosis, AIDS, sexually transmitted diseases, and promiscuity. Rowan is an example of the many black authors who appear to be inflaming the hatred of blacks for whites and whites for blacks through sexual examples. Keith B. Richburg is another black author who elucidates the black race's sexuality and the AIDS plague: "One of the reasons the pandemic has spread so far and so fast in Africa is the rampant prostitution and the African's free-and-easy attitude toward sex. Sex with prostitutes and sex with neighbors, co-workers, or anyone is almost a way of life, especially in many of Africa's sprawling urban centers."¹⁷²

5. Jealousy

Reference the information on jealousy in the previous chapter. Jealousy is one of the most inflammatory seductions to the hate crimes. The most violent rage sparked by jealousy results in attacks and murders and ironically takes place in casual settings and times of sexual intimacy or while out for a good time in a tavern. In two-thirds of the case studies by Wolfgang, the offender and/or the victim were drinking when the homicide occurred. The fact that men in America commit about 80 percent of criminal homicides shows the contribution of the male hormones to this crime.

I know the feeling of jealousy. Like most men, I have had the experience myself. My wife for a long time had a certain young, black man come and do the heavy gardening work around our house. He was big and strong. He cut the brush and trimmed the azaleas in the heat of the sun, his body glistening with sweat, and I could see that she was attracted to him. I could also see and feel his attraction to her. I know now

¹⁷² Keith B. Richburg, *Out of America: A Black Man Confronts Africa* (New York: Basic Books, 1997), 123.

about the pheromones and how sweating amplifies their power over our ancient animal attractions. I believe this was part of her attraction to him, even though he had a criminal record.

6. Pyromania

As described earlier, pyromania often has a sexual basis but is tagged as a hate crime by the criminal justice system and press, as in cases like the Ballinger case. Jay Scott Ballinger, thirty-six, of Yorktown, Indiana, was arrested February 21, 1999, and he confessed to setting thirty to fifty church fires between 1994 and 1998 in seven states. In another case, Frank Palermo, thirty-two, was sentenced on February 23, 1999, to twenty years in prison under the Louisiana hate crime law for trying to torch two cars belonging to black motorists.

7. Satanism

Under the heading of Satanism, I pointed out that much of the evil behavior blamed on this is of a sexual etiology. Church burnings across the nation have been blamed on hate crimes as being racially motivated, but several of those who have been apprehended for burning the churches were Satanic adherents. Jay Ballinger and Angela Wood (his stripper girlfriend) admitted on February 20, 1999, to setting between thirty and fifty church fires in eleven states between 1994 and 1998. Satanic books and about fifty contracts signed in blood by teenagers who agreed to give their souls to the devil and do all types of evil in exchange for wealth and sex were found in Ballinger's home in Muncie, Indiana. About 17 percent of the hate crimes were attributed to religious animosity. Down through history up to the present day, religion has been the cause of devastating wars, feuds, murders, and assaults. The sixteenth-century Reformation failed to change people's hearts, and hatred got worse. On March 13, 1999, Donald Hansard, twenty-four, was sentenced to four and a half years in prison for beating a video store owner in Hollywood, Florida, because the owner was Jewish. Hansard was a member of the White Separatist hate group, and the video store sold "exotic" videos. The hate group was alleged to believe that it is permissible to attack Jews because "they control" media outlets.

ZZ. Other Paraphilias

Paraphilias are primary sexual disorders characterized by persistent, repetitive, socially deviant sexual arousal with adverse psychosocial consequences. As Dr. Money has pointed out, the number of paraphilias varies according to the specificity with which subtypes are separated and named. The number also varies with the knowledge and experience of the classifier. I will not attempt to second-guess these experts by assigning them to categories but will simply add Dr. Money's and Holmes and Holmes' descriptions from their books, *Gay, Straight, and In-between* (1988) and *Sex Crimes* (2001), respectively, in alphabetical order.

1. Acrophilia

Sexual arousal from heights or high altitudes, sometimes associated with thrill seeking.

2. Agonophilia

Sexual excitation from a pretension that one's partner is involved in a struggle to be free.

3. Agoraphilia

Sexual arousal from open spaces or having sex in public.

4. Agrexophilia

Sexual arousal from knowing that others know you are having sex in public.

5. Albutophilia

Sexual arousal from water.

6. Brachoproctism

Insertion of the arm into the rectum of another person for sexual pleasure.

7. Catheterophilia

Sexual arousal contingent on having a catheter inserted up into the urethra (from Greek catheter, "catheter," plus philia).

8. Chrematistophilia

Arousal contingent on being charged or forced to pay, or being robbed by, the sexual partner (from Greek chremistes, "money dealer").

9. Coitobalnis

Sex in a bathtub.

10. Coprography

Writing obscene words, usually in public places.

11. Cynophilia

Arousal from sex with dogs.

12. Dacrylagnia

Arousal from seeing tears in the eyes of a partner.

13. Dacryphilia

Arousal from seeing his or her partner cry.

14. Dymorphophilia

Arousal from mentally impaired partners.

15. Entomophilia

Arousal from insects or from using them in sex play.

16. Eproctophilia

Arousal from flatulence.

17. Formicophilia

A variety of zoophilia in which sexual arousal is contingent on the sensations produced by small creatures like snails, frogs, ants, or other insects creeping, crawling, or nibbling the genitalia, perianal area, or nipples (from Latin formica, "ant").

18. Gynemimetophilia

Sexual attraction is predominantly toward a gynemimetic (a "lady with a penis") or a male-to-female transsexual before he has been surgically transformed (from Greek gyne,

“woman,” plus mimos, “mimicking”). Andromimetophilia is the term for the attraction toward a female-to-male transsexual.

19. Hybristophilia

Aroused by a partner who is known to have committed an outrage or crime (from Greek *hybridzein*, “to commit an outrage”). The partner may have served a prison sentence as a convicted criminal, or may be instigated to commit a crime and so be sent to prison.

20. Hyphephilia

Sexual stimulus is associated with the touching, rubbing, or the feel of skin, hair, leather, fur, and fabric, especially in the proximity of erotic body parts—a touchy-feely fetish (from Greek *hyphe*, “web”).

21. Kleptophilia

A paraphilia of the marauding/predatory type in which sexuoerotic arousal and orgasm are responsive to, and dependent upon, illicitly entering and stealing from the dwelling of a stranger or potential partner (from Greek *kleptein*, “to steal,” plus *philia*, “loving”).¹⁷³ It is also known as “kleptomania” (mania = madness), which deals more with compulsive stealing, usually of objects that have symbolic significance but not intrinsic value to the thief. It is also sometimes referred to as “kleptolagnia” (from the Greek *lagneia*, “lust”).

There were over one million shoplifting “events” reported to law enforcement in the United States in 1986, and the numbers grew. They jumped 45 percent between 1986 and 1996, while other types of theft dropped. In the year 2001, more than 29 million were reported. The value in 2000 was some \$13 billion.¹⁷⁴ About 5 percent of shoplifters are kleptomaniacs: people, mostly women, who steal because they can’t stop themselves.

“No matter how much a kleptomaniac tries to resist, she repeatedly takes an emotional roller-coaster ride. First comes a building sense of tension, then a growing urge to steal and unbearable anxiety if the impulse is resisted. Theft brings a flood of pleasure and release, a thrill described in terms commonly reserved for the highs brought by drugs or sex.”¹⁷⁵ One kleptomaniac said: “And toward the end, the euphoric highs didn’t come anymore. It took more and more stealing to satisfy.”

Psychiatrist Eric Hollander and others have associated kleptomania with low serotonin levels. Hollander said: “Men whose serotonin levels are low are more likely to gamble, intermittently explode, or beat their wives, act out sexually, or set fires. Women are more likely to have kleptomania, compulsively shop, or binge-eat.”¹⁷⁶ Prozac and Zoloft are serotonin-reuptake inhibitors that raise the levels of the neurotransmitter in the brain and have been successful in stopping kleptomaniac shoplifting. Castration

¹⁷³ Money, *Lovemaps*, 264.

¹⁷⁴ “The ‘Thrill’ of Theft,” *Newsweek* (February 2002): 52, 53.

¹⁷⁵ James Morgan, “Uncommon Thieves: What Makes Kleptomaniacs Steal?” *Health* (September 1997): 104.

¹⁷⁶ *Ibid.*, 105.

also raises serotonin levels and lowers the neurotransmitter dopamine, helping to curb this deviant behavior.

22. Narratophilia

Arousal responsive to using words and telling dirty, pornographic, or obscene stories (from Latin narrare, “to narrate”). The same term is applied whether reading, listening to, or telling such material.

23. Nepiophilia

Similar to pedophilia except the age range of the victim is restricted to infancy (from Greek nepon, “infant”).

24. Nudomania

Arousal from nudity.

25. Ochlophilia

Arousal from being in a crowd of people.

26. Ophidiophilia

Arousal from snakes and ophidicism—the use of snakes, sometimes for sexual purposes.

27. Peodeiktophilia

Arousal and orgasm are contingent on evoking surprise, dismay, shock, or panic from a stranger by illicitly exhibiting the penis (from Greek peos, “penis,” plus deiknunain, “to show”). Also known as exhibitionism.

28. Pictophilia

Erotic arousal contingent on viewing pictures, movies, or videos of activities commonly classified as pornographic (from Latin pictus, “painted”). Several similar terms are: pornophilia, erotographomania, statuophilia, and pygmalionism (falling in love with an object made by oneself as the statue made by the Greek sculptor Pygmalion).

29. Polyiterophilia

Arousal only after having sex with a series of partners.

30. Pygmalionism

Desire to have sexual contact with inanimate objects such as statues or mannequins. Pygmalion was a sculptor who fell in love with a statue he had created. Agalmatophilia is sexual attraction to a statue, doll, or mannequin. Inflatable dolls with usable genitals are available through mail order or adult bookstores.

31. Rhabdophilia

Arousal from being flagellated.

32. Somnophilia

The sleeping princess syndrome in which erotic arousal is contingent on intruding on and awakening a sleeping stranger with erotic caresses, without force or violence (from Latin somnus, “sleep”).

33. Stigmatophilia

Arousal is contingent on a partner who has been tattooed, scarified, or pierced for the wearing of jewelry, especially in the genitalia (from Greek stigma, “mark”). The same term applies to the reciprocal paraphiliac condition in which the self is similarly

decorated.¹⁷⁷ In 1991, the piercing of the ears and nose for jewelry in the homosexual and punk rock milieu expanded to wearing rings in the nipples and genitals. One California business reported over 600 such piercings in the month of April. Their clients included a bank president who had his nipples pierced and many housewives who had their genitals pierced. “It became cool; it became fashion,” they said.¹⁷⁸ Piquerism, the obtaining of sexual satisfaction from piercing, cutting, or stabbing, is a related deviation.

The comments of other authorities on the subject of sex offenses are added here for further background.

1. Ellis referred to sexually motivated stealing as “kleptolagnia”¹⁷⁹ and listed it under “eonism.”
2. Krafft-Ebing defined kleptolagnia as “sexual arousal through stealing” and reported some case histories, mostly of stealing women’s fetishistic articles.¹⁸⁰
3. Karpman wrote: “Kleptomania is looked on as a symptomatic act, the motive of which is unconscious. Steckel’s thesis is that ungratified sexuality is an etiologic factor. Kleptomania may be related to frustrated love, jealousy and rivalry, to impotence, frigidity, to homosexuality, sadomasochism, fetishism and other fixed ideas. Occasionally cases have been found in which the act is followed by orgasm. The presence of secondary emotions, anxiousness, excitement, somatic tension and release, suggests the presence of the sexual situation. Frequently delinquency is substituted for sex activity. Thus stealing may be an outlet for sex tension.”¹⁸¹
4. McCary (1978) quotes Alexander (1965): “Kleptomania is compulsive stealing, usually of an object that is of no value to the thief except for its sexual symbolism or its association with sexual gratification. The kleptomaniac is typically an emotionally disturbed woman beset with feelings of being unloved and unwanted.”¹⁸²
5. Morneau and Rockwell (1960) wrote: “A kleptomaniac is a person with an uncontrollable desire to steal. What is frequently not understood is there are a series of emotions associated with theft and these may be manifested as a form of emotional excitement ... The thought of use or value is missing in the act of theft. The theft is, however, associated with a number of emotions—anticipation, tension, fear, and satisfaction. The satisfaction comes from the thrill which we describe as

¹⁷⁷ Money, *Lovemaps*, 270–271.

¹⁷⁸ U.S. News & World Report (June 3, 1991).

¹⁷⁹ Henry Havelock Ellis, *Eonism and Other Supplementary Studies* (1928).

¹⁸⁰ Krafft-Ebing, *Psychopathia Sexualis*.

¹⁸¹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 138.

¹⁸² McCary, *McCary’s Human Sexuality*, 357.

sexual because it is tension-releasing and therefore makes the thief feel good ... The intellectual part of his personality is overcome; he acts irrationally, hoping to gain at least temporary release from his tensions.” The authors also mention that most kleptomaniacs are menopausal women or very young women perhaps affected by the pre-menstrual syndrome.¹⁸³

6. Money: “Paraphiliac predation by stealth is exemplified in its most undiluted form in kleptophilia, the paraphilia in which stealing induces sexueroetic arousal and excitement. Kleptophilia is the sexueroetic counterpart of kleptomania, the nonsensueroetic manifestation of apparently senseless, irrational, and compulsive stealing.”¹⁸⁴
7. Money: “... Erotosexual stealing is kleptophilia, which is akin to kleptomania, though not all kleptomania is erotosexual in its symbolism ... Kleptophilia may be indiscriminate or promiscuous in its manifestations, as when a youth steals all the brassieres he can find ...”¹⁸⁵
8. DSM-IV: The essential feature of kleptomania is the recurrent failure to resist impulses to steal items even though the items are not needed for personal use or for their monetary value (criterion A). The individual experiences a rising subjective sense of tension before the theft (criterion B) and feels pleasure, gratification, or relief when committing the theft (criterion C). The stealing is not committed to express anger or vengeance, is not done in response to a delusion or hallucination (criterion D), and is not better accounted for by conduct disorder, a manic episode, or antisocial personality disorder (criterion E).¹⁸⁶

¹⁸³ Morneau and Rockwell, *Sex, Motivation, and the Criminal Offender*, 68, 70.

¹⁸⁴ Money, *Lovemaps*, 55.

¹⁸⁵ Money, *Venuses Penuses*, 465.

¹⁸⁶ American Psychiatric Association, *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Diseases*, 612.

VIII. What Do We Know?

A great deal is known of the sex offenses and the variations of the normal sexual behavior that causes unnatural and offensive behavior, but this knowledge is spotty and not widely disseminated in the population. Our Puritan heritage, religious scruples, political system, and educational establishment all combine to restrict the free flow of the knowledge of this most powerful and ubiquitous force of our life. There is much that is ill defined about the sex urge that causes injustice, error, and suffering. In many aspects of daily life, both males and females are subtly influenced by the filter of their sparse sexual knowledge to see situations and people differently than they really are. I know that I am unduly influenced to favor good-looking women more than men because of my sex drive. I can see it at work in the criminal justice system at all levels: police apprehension of suspected criminals, considerations by the courts and penal sanctions. Use of sexual favors is rampant in many industries and businesses, especially show business, and it is far from unknown in education and even religious organizations (the Jessica Hahn case comes to mind—she posed nude in the November 1987 Playboy magazine, even though she loudly proclaimed that she was no “bimbo”). People tend to vote that way, too. They will vote for the best-looking candidates, particularly if they create a good overall impression. Ninety percent of what we learn comes through our eyes. “Seeing is believing.” “You’ve got to show me.”

We “know” a great deal more than we take the time to put into words. We seldom verbalize “felt” fears, yet they cause us to act and react in predictable ways. Whenever there is a particularly atrocious crime in a neighborhood, there will be many changes in the behavior of the populace as a result. Some of the people will move away from the area, some will install added security devices on their home and car, some will stop going out after dark, some will stop walking in certain areas, and some will stop sleeping in bed and lie instead on the floor. The quality of life is deteriorated in dozens of ways. Now, should the atrocious crime be one of the more serious sex crimes like lust murder or rape, the sensational, titillating nature of the news coverage spreads information on it much further and faster and more emphatically than with other types of crime. The result is that the sex crimes tend to instill more visceral fear in more people and have longer-lasting effects on the populace than many other types of crime.

Another, not inconsequential, evil result of male sexuality is the lifetime of pain, disease, insanity, shame, suffering, or privation that millions of women have had to endure as a result of broken love affairs. Many millions have borne children out of wedlock as a result of a few moments of yielding to the insistent pressure of the male sex drive. Most of them were in their teens and innocent of even the most rudimentary

knowledge of birth control or abortion techniques. A very large percentage of these resulted from wartime military dislocations of the young men away from the usual restraints of their parents, school, and church.

We know a great deal. More books and journals are involved with this subject in a year's time than any other single subject today, an average of over eighty books and six journals a year. Two new periodicals came out in August 1996 alone. There are over 4,000 books in the Library of Congress on the subject of sex, according to George Mair.¹ In spite of this mountain of information and misinformation, we know precious little about how to control our sex drive, and we know very little about the results of a gonadectomy. The results of what we do not know are plain to see in the escalating problems of sex crimes and diseases. I hope by the writing of this book to shed some light on these dark corners. Something further must be done!

After more than six years of research of violence in six different areas of the United States, the U.S. Department of Justice made their report to Congress in 1999: "The most powerful predictors of violent criminality are gender and age. Boys in adolescence and young men are much more likely to be serious high-rate offenders than girls and older men. Further, studies have consistently found greater involvement of African Americans in violent offending than Caucasians."²

"The South Carolina homicide study found that 88% of the juveniles who committed homicide were male." The mean age at the time of the offense in the homicide group was 15.8 years. Youths in the assault and battery group averaged 15.6 years, and youths in the other serious offenses group averaged 15.1 years. The total population of South Carolina is approximately 30 percent African American. The South Carolina homicide study found that 82 percent of the juvenile homicide offenders were African American. These are the individuals and ages in which testosterone levels generally are at their maximum surge. The incidence of violent crimes and testosterone levels tend to decrease with later ages.

¹ Mair, *Sex Book Digest*, 21.

² U.S. Department of Justice Programs, Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention, *Report to Congress on Juvenile Violence Research* (July 1999): 5–6.

IX. Comments on the Offenses

I have now named and described more than 100 crimes, problems, and deviations that are wholly or in large part caused by the sex hormones. This discussion has revealed the extent of the universe of nastiness, which can be averted by the elimination or reduction of these hormones. As President George Bush phrased it in 1988, “a kinder and gentler America” is possible through the use of the castration treatment.

Dr. Money et al. has made a good case for the combination of physiological predisposing factors and learned influence in paraphilia formation.¹ Although his book deals with one particular paraphilia (asphyxiophilia), it has underlying implications for most of the others. He defines this as “a sexual peculiarity in which sexueroptic arousal and facilitation or attainment of orgasm are responsive to and dependent upon self-strangulation and asphyxiation up to, but not including, loss of consciousness.” He tells of one particular patient’s childhood:

The memories of this period reveal evidence from an early age of unusual brain functioning which existed probably from birth, and which might be of either genetic or some other intrauterine origin. It manifested itself as auditory images (screaming head noises) and visual images (hoards of jostling, fighting creatures on walls and ceiling) resembling hallucinations. At night they prevented sleep unless counteracted by rhythmic, side-to-side rocking movements reminiscent of the stereotyped movements of childhood autism. In sleep there were very vivid dreams, some terrifying, and some accompanied by sleep paralysis of the transient type known also as one of the symptoms of the brain disease narcolepsy. In addition to these various signs of brain functioning that had been atypical since prenatal life, there is also evidence of the same early origins of immunological dysfunction, namely a lifelong history of asthma, a malady known to be related to the immune system. The significance of asthma for asphyxiophilia is that both are characterized by paroxysmal breathing blockage. Whereas paroxysmal asthma attacks are not erotic, the paroxysmal discharge of the orgasm is. It is the paroxysmal nature of both that allows the two to become associated. Though no statistics are yet available, it is apparent from the reports of parents who have lost a son to autoerotic self-asphyxiation that many of them had a history of asthma.

¹ Money, Wainwright, and Hingsburger, *Breathless Orgasm*, 19.

Money's patient had in early childhood "... the experience of breathlessness[which] became associated with bondage, for he was tied down to his crib, to prevent wandering. Bondage and breathlessness became associated when, with a 'pee hard,' he would not be heard calling to be untied, and so would have to wet the bed."

If we thought about it long enough, many of us might find that, even though we consider ourselves "normal," we find that some of the descriptions above fit us to some degree. Let us be reassured that it is only when we act out on some of these strange impulses and they become repetitious that we could be tagged with the "paraphiliac" label.

Another consideration when dealing with the sex crimes is the era and context of the sex act. Sodomy, for example, considered deviant and dangerous for transmission of disease in the homosexual milieu, is more frequently referred to by a slightly more respectable term anal intercourse in the normal heterosexual milieu. According to Dr. June Reinisch, director of the Kinsey Sex Research Institute, in a Sally Jessy Raphael television show, September 8, 1993, four out of ten married couples have tried anal intercourse and half of those did not enjoy it, but approximately 20 percent engage in it regularly. Dr. Reinisch also mentioned that nine out of ten married couples have tried oral sex, and some of the women enjoy engaging in this form of sexual interaction. Where a large percentage of the population engage in a sex act, it can no longer be termed deviant but assumes the cloak of normality. Even here, however, it can also be considered wrong and even criminal, depending on the individual situation and presence of disease.

Walters (1997) and others have shown us that paraphiliacs usually do not restrict themselves to a single paraphilia and tend to increase the number of paraphilias as their seriousness increases. Aggressive sex offenders were twice as likely to be associated with another paraphilia as to be the sole condition. Sadism was three times more likely to be associated with another paraphilia. Multiple paraphilias are the rule rather than the exception. Some experts believe that many paraphiliacs suffer from a generalized deficit in behavior control that may actually grow with experience—somewhat similar to the drug addict who starts on marijuana, then goes on to cocaine and finally to heroin or a combination of the drugs and in increased dosage and frequency.²

There are other, somewhat more problematic, types of disorders that involve sexuality that the castration treatment might be used in treatment for. Kluver-Bucy syndrome comes to mind in this respect. Heinrich Kluver (born 1896) and Paul Clancy Bucy (born 1904) were American neurologists who showed that bilateral temporal lobectomy produced bizarre behavior because it destroyed important limbic structures, principally the amygdalae. The syndrome is characterized by unselective sexual and ingestive behavior toward objects not usually associated with such activity in normal individuals.

² Glen D. Walters, "The Paraphilias: A Dialectically Informed Review of Etiology, Development, and Process," *Sexual Addiction Compulsivity* 4, no. 3 (1997): 231.

Another whole realm of “sex crime” is opened to treatment by castration if we accept Karpman and Thompson’s definition: “A sex crime is any criminal act in which some type of sexual satisfaction is the motivating force for the crime.”³⁴ Many of the crimes commonly labeled as “breaking and entry,” “burglary,” or “theft” are perpetrated for sexual satisfaction more than monetary gain. The transvestites and fetishists who break into homes and stores to steal panties or shoes are in this category. Some of them experience a sexual thrill from going through a window. The act of going through the window may symbolize rape to some men. At least 22 percent of robberies are committed more for the “thrill, rush, power, revenge” or anger than for money.⁵ Car jacking provides a similar thrill. Most of these motives require testosterone for their maximum effect, and castration lowers the thrills to the point that they are no longer fun. The kicks from illegal drugs and alcohol are also lowered by castration. About half of all robbers in the Erickson survey said they were high at the time they did their crime.

As vast, frightening, and bewildering as this panorama of crime and evil is that I have sketched out here, there are indications that there are many more problems caused by the male sex urge that are not so obvious. Most of the foregoing is well known and has been the subject of considerable scientific literature over decades of time. Lycanthropy was one of these. Now there is Satanism or devil worshiping.

Geraldo Rivera hosted a television program, October 25, 1988, entitled “Devil Worship: Exposing Satan’s Underground” (parental discretion was advised), which showed the evidence of the Church of Satan consisting of thousands of people whose beliefs are directly opposite to those of the Christian churches. They believe that evil is good and good is evil. The show told of sexual rituals and the sexual abuse of children. “It is a religion to some. A chance to do evil by others.” They mutilate people and animals and drink the blood of those in ceremonies. They robbed graves in southeast Louisiana and defaced a dozen legitimate churches in Maine.

Thomas Sullivan, a fourteen-year-old boy in Jefferson Township, New Jersey, butchered his mother with his Boy Scout knife and then slashed his own wrists. Sean Sellers is in prison, condemned to death by lethal injection. He was twelve years old when he murdered three people as a sacrifice so that he could get powers from Satan. He had a “hatred for society” and wanted to break all Ten Commandments, including “Thou shalt not kill.” The woman who killed her children because she wanted to punish her husband for seeing another woman and seeking to divorce her, would not have done so if her husband had not been led astray by his sex hormones. Her anger

³ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 5.

⁴ G. N. Thompson, *Preliminary Report of the Subcommittee on Sex Crimes* (California Legislature Assembly, 1950), 167.

⁵ The Athena Research Corporation (Seattle, WA) surveyed 310 convicted robbers in twenty prisons in three states in the largest study to date according to the Gannett News Service account printed on page 1A of the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (April 2, 1996).

and revenge would probably not have reached such an extreme level if it were not for the sexual jealousy factor.⁶

⁶ “Illinois Mother is Convicted of Murder,” Northwest Florida Daily News (December 20, 2001): A2.

X. Famous Sex Criminals of History

A. Background

More evidence supporting the contention that sex crimes include the most heinous of all crimes remains in the historical record. The foregoing information still does not convey the full depth of their wickedness, so I will outline some of the cases in the historical record of the most famous of these to demonstrate and support my contention. As you will read, the record goes far back in history, and there are pathways that indicate linkages between some of these famous criminals. It may be that there is some kind of progression working to make this horrendous behavior more frequent and worse as time goes on. This is a very old and very unresolved argument. My own feeling is that there is some kind of progression working in the sex crimes, but in only about 30 percent of the cases in most categories. Hopefully, by laying out a historical panorama, we can come to grips with this question.

Mankind has come by his history of savagery and violence naturally, honestly, and normally by the laws of inheritance and evolution. Tens of thousands of years ago, aggression was necessary for survival. Today, we note that there is a tendency toward more violence in those individuals whose bloodline is closest to the less-civilized racial stock. Blacks and Indians are higher in their crime rates than whites and Orientals. We cannot change the inheritance of millennia of successful coping with our savage nature by wishing it or by passing laws. Laws concerning sexual behavior change with the winds of every passing legislature. They are bewildering to the professionals in criminal justice; the lesser educated among us cannot be expected to keep up with the changes in the laws, much less to be able to change our behavior to keep up with them. Sex crimes are motivated by the strongest drives to which humanity is heir. Indeed, some of us believe that they are the strongest drives in the entire animal kingdom. Self-preservation, procreation, and preservation of our species involve the very stuff of life itself. These drives have brought mankind to his present stage of development through the eons, while dozens of more powerful, but less sexy creatures have died out. The rule of survival of the fittest, it would seem, is also the rule of the survival of the sexiest. Given this great power of the sex drive, it is not incongruous that it can also be deviated to cause horrid and grotesque crimes. Even the Nephelium and angels were not immune (Genesis 6).

Only very brief reference to these types of crimes have been found in the ancient Chinese, Greek, and Biblical writings, and it is really not until the Roman Imperial

period of history that one finds very extensive detailed records. Suetonius, Petronius, and Juvenal were three of the principle authors who detailed the orgies of the emperors and their families as well as lesser figures of the times. Gilles de Rais, one of the worst sex fiends of history, probably got some of his ideas for his horrid crimes from reading the works of some of these authors.¹

B. Sex Criminals

1. Tiberius Caesar

Caesar (AD 14–37) was a homosexual lecher who took pleasure in witnessing atrocious tortures and executions. A trick of his own devising was to have men drink wine excessively and then suddenly knot a cord tightly around their genitals, which cut the flesh and prevented them from urinating. His wife, Julia, was a nymphomaniac who took hundreds of lovers. She would take her post by the statue of Marsyas in the Forum, which was a well-known prostitute resort. She turned away no man, and no desire, however degraded and vicious, was permitted to go unfulfilled.² She was sometimes compared to Cleopatra who, according to legend, had fellated 110 Roman legionnaires in one night.

2. Caligula

Caligula, Roman emperor from AD 37–41, declared himself a god and demanded to be worshipped accordingly. His passion for torture and executions exceeded even that of Tiberius, and his erotic lusts were gargantuan and aberrant. His preferred method of execution was to inflict numerous small wounds, avoiding vital organs, and his familiar order: “Make him feel that he is dying!” soon became proverbial. It was his habit to commit incest with his three sisters, and he was accused of homosexual relations, both active and passive, with various well-known men of his day (Masters, pp. 39–41). Both Caligula and Nero were chosen by a 1981 poll of the faculty of the Catholic University of America as being among the worst villains of all times.

3. Claudius

Claudius, Roman emperor from AD 41–54, would have stood out in history as a monster had he not been sandwiched between Caligula and Nero. His wife was the nymphomaniacal Messalina, whose name has achieved the status of a clinical term for lust, cruelty, and thirst for power. Claudius had the Roman incest law changed to allow him to marry his brother’s daughter, thus touching off a wave of uncle-niece marriages. When witnessing executions, he required that the victim’s face be turned toward him so that he could observe the change of expression at the moment of death. Messalina would often masturbate herself while witnessing the executions and tortures.³

4. Nero

¹ Krafft-Ebing, *Psychopathia Sexualis*, 83.

² Masters, *Perverse Crimes in History*, 34–38.

³ *Ibid.*, 42.

Nero, Roman emperor from AD 54–68, exhibited the extraordinary cruelty and viciousness that was to characterize his life, even as an adolescent. He would prowl the taverns and streets, attacking and stabbing men and dropping their bodies into the sewers. He had his mother, Agrippina, killed after five unsuccessful tries after she became critical of his activities. He then ordered the womb torn from her cadaver so that he could see where he came from. Nero would cover himself with the skins of wild animals and attack the private parts of men and women who were tied to stakes. He killed his pregnant wife, Poppaea, by kicking her in the stomach. At one of his garden parties, he used captive Christians as human torches. Mercifully, he committed suicide at the age of thirty-two (Masters, pp. 49–53).

5. Heliogabalus

Heliogabalus was Roman emperor from AD 218 to 222. “I quote in elegiacs all the crimes of Heliogabalus, in conics I can floor peculiarities parabolous” (The Pirates of Penzance, act I, “General’s Song”). He changed his name, while still a boy, to Elagabalus after an erotic Phoenician deity. After ascending the throne, he celebrated obscene rites involving the slaughter of young boys. Their phalli were removed and tossed on a blazing pyre as sacrifices to the deity. He was very good looking and would often appear at night in rich, seductive, feminine dress and solicit strangers for fellatio and anal intercourse (Masters, pp. 47–48).

6. Justinian I

Justinian (AD 483–565) is credited by Procopius’ book *The Secret History* with ordering the commission of more murders than any of the previous Roman emperors. Although he is credited with a major codification of the law, he gratified his bloodlust by executing heretics and political opponents. His wife, Theodora, had been a prostitute and an actress since childhood and liked to attend the whippings and executions of those who had offended her. To be her lover was usually fatal; as her ardor cooled, the lover would find himself accused, beaten, and castrated. One such man took refuge in a church where she found him and had his penis chopped off. She stood by and watched while he bled to death. Justinian and Theodora plotted against and murdered many loyal Romans. She would often masturbate herself while watching the castrations and executions (Masters, p. 49–53).

7. Gilles de Rais

Gilles de Rais (1404–1440) was a handsome, well-dressed, wealthy baron of great estates and castles in the Brittany and Anjou region of France. He was a hero who raised an army and fought valiantly alongside Joan of Arc in the ousting of the English from French soil. The king rewarded him with the rank of marshal when Gilles was only twenty-five years old and with the rank of lieutenant general when he was thirty-three. His life seems to have changed abruptly, however, when he committed his first documented sexual assault and murder of a twelve-year-old boy in 1432, the year his grandfather died. By the time he was finally hanged on October 26, 1440, he may have murdered as many as 800 children (Masters, p. 28). Jean Benedetti, who has researched all of the available literature, reveals that his usual method was to hang the

child by a rope around his neck on a hook and cut his neck so that it bled profusely or otherwise wound him.⁴ Gilles would then masturbate himself, thrust his penis between the child's thighs, and rub his penis on the child's belly until he ejaculated. Afterward, he would dismember them, or have one of his henchmen do it, with a special weapon for the purpose: a short, thick, double-edged sword called a "braquemard." Gilles was said to have taken more pleasure in the murder of the children than in having carnal knowledge of them. He would take delight in seeing their bodies cut open, viewing their internal organs, and seeing their heads separated from their bodies, their blood flow, and their dying. He often laughed for joy at the sight, and would preserve the prettiest of the heads and kiss the ones he liked most. The victims' clothing and bodies would be burned in the large fireplace of the room in the tower of the castle where the murders were committed. The bones were disposed of in the cesspit, moat, or other hiding places. Approximately forty sets of these remains were removed from each of three different castles. Gilles was formally accused with more than 140 victims. Benedetti (186) believes this is a reasonable number and lists the names of thirty-seven of the boys, ages seven through twenty-six, who were known victims (p. 196). He refutes the social theory of causation of Gilles's sexual deviation as being due to childhood feelings of guilt and inferiority because Gilles was endowed with more love and attention than most other children in history. My own belief is that Gilles de Rais was probably a sadist from childhood. The ritual manner of his murders is characteristic of this sexual perversion. He was also a homosexual, but not exclusively so, because he married and sired a baby. He had sexual relations with several males in his retinue, and five or six of them were directly involved in the murders of the children by procuring his victims and disposing of their remains. I believe that Gilles's final descent into the preoccupation with serial killing was initiated by the removal of the last familial restraint on his deviant behavior when his grandfather died. He was then in a firm position that was above the law; he became a law unto himself—free, just as the deviant caesars before him, to indulge himself every evil whim that fantasy might conjure up. Much of his religious restraint had been alleviated earlier when the Church sentenced Joan of Arc for heresy and burned her at the stake on May 30, 1431. Gilles built himself a church, appointed himself a bishop, and staffed his religious retinue with homosexuals, thereby justifying himself reminiscent of what is being done in America today in the gay liberation movement.

8. Countess Elizabeth Bathory of Transylvania

The countess (1560–1614) was a beautiful, highly born sadist and murderess of 650 girls and young women, according to the official transcript of her trial in Bytca, Czechoslovakia, dated January 7, 1611.⁵ Her Aunt Klara was also a notorious torturer and corruptor of young girls; an uncle was a sorcerer and worshiper of the devil; her brother, Stephan, was a lustful monster of depravity, and she, herself, was subject

⁴ J. Benedetti, *The Real Bluebeard: The Life of Gilles de Rais*. (New York: Dorset Press, 1971).

⁵ McNally, *Dracula Was a Woman*, 79.

to periodic fits of rage and uncontrollable behavior. Elizabeth believed the blood of girls had a powerful cosmetic effect on her flesh; accordingly, she arranged to bathe fully and regularly in their blood. Emerging from the tub, covered with human blood from head to toe, she had herself licked clean by girls. If such a girl displayed her disgust, she was beaten to death. Hundreds of girls had been kept over the years in the dungeons of her castle and milked of their blood. They would be bound by ropes and tourniquets, causing the blood to gush forth with great pressure when their flesh was slit with knives. Some of the victims were brought to the countess's bed where she bit their breasts until they bled. Authorities found eighty cadavers and several dozen girl prisoners in various stages from excellent health to near death from being repeatedly pierced with knives, when she was finally apprehended (Masters, pp. 12–24). Olga Antal, fifty-nine, of Bucharest, Romania, killed at least forty girls and bathed in their blood just as Bathory did.⁶

9. The Marquis de Sade (Compte Donatien Alphonse Francois de Sade)

The marquis (1740–1814) was a short, 5' 2", grossly fat, French libertine and author, whose scurrilous writings and acts gave us the word sadism. He was a thief, liar, and cheat! He was also an atheist of the most virulent sort, the very synthesis and smell of evil. His first major work, *The 120 Days of Sodom*, was self-proclaimed as the “most impure tale ever told,” and describes eating of vomit and shit, and dozens of other obscenities.⁷ Sodomy was his favorite sexual practice. He horsewhipped a shopkeeper's wife, inflicted hundreds of scalpel wounds on another woman, and poisoned three others with Spanish fly.⁸ He was convicted of forcible flagellation, debauchery, poisoning, sodomy, and other acts of violence and sentenced to prison many times, serving a total of over twenty-seven years of incarceration during his lifetime. No sooner would he be set free or escape one sentence and he would resume his scandalous behavior that would return him to prison again. He wrote twenty-nine published plays, pamphlets, and novels while in prison. Another thirty-six plays, histories, articles, and novels were destroyed or never found. One of these, *Les Journees de Florbelle*, was contained in over 200 manuscript notebooks, which were burned by the police at the request of, and in the presence of, Sade's son, Donatien-Claud-Armand.⁹ Scarcely a page of the thousands he wrote does not contain some reference to sex offenses. Could this awful outpouring of poisonous ejecta be a product of his imprisonment? I believe it was. He would not have had the time nor the inclination to produce such a volume if he had not been incarcerated. Sade's writings, and the writings of others whom his writings had influenced (Beaudelaire, Swinburne, Kafka, Dostoevski, Guillaume Appollinaire, Maurice Nadeau, Simone de Beauvoir, Havelock Ellis, Freud, and dozens of others)

⁶ Weekly World News (January 4/11, 1994): 18.

⁷ A. Wainhouse and R. Seaver, *Marquis de Sade. The 120 Days of Sodom* (New York: Press, Inc., 1966), 183.

⁸ Michael Howell and Peter Ford, *The Beetle of Aphrodite* (New York: Random House, 1985), 254.

⁹ Wainhouse and Seaver, *Marquis de Sade*

have had an incalculable influence on sexual aberrant thought and behavior during the past 200 years.

10. Sargeant Bertrand

Bertrand (1822–1855) was a soldier in the French army who exhumed human bodies and killed domestic animals, which he mutilated with a knife and dismembered. He would cut the abdomens, tear out the entrails, and dismember the human bodies, having coitus with the female corpses and masturbating.¹⁰

11. “Jack the Ripper”

This is a name given an unknown murderer who terrorized London from 1887 to 1889 with the murders of nine women, mostly prostitutes in the White Chapel section. It is probable that he first cut their throats then ripped open their abdomens and groped among the intestines. In some instances, he cut off the genitals and carried them away; in others, he only tore them to pieces and left them behind. He does not seem to have had sexual intercourse with his victims, but likely the murderous act and subsequent mutilation of the corpse were the equivalent for the sexual act.¹¹ Many books and articles have been written about the “Ripper,” as have movies and television programs such as the July 9, 2000 Discovery program, titled Jack the Ripper, an Ongoing Mystery. Roy Hazelwood, an ex-FBI profiler, commented on the program that these were “sexually motivated crimes.”

12. Vacher the Ripper

Vacher (1869–1901) assaulted a small girl in 1889. In 1893, he wounded a girl because she refused to marry him, and he attempted suicide by shooting himself in the head. The shot left him partly deaf and paralyzed on one side of his face. He was treated in an insane asylum and dismissed as cured in 1894. He then traveled up and down France killing and mutilating. In March 1894, he strangled a twenty-one-year-old woman, cut her throat, trampled her abdomen, tore out a portion of her breast, and copulated with her corpse. In November, he strangled a thirteen-year-old girl and committed similar acts, except for copulation. In May 1895, he killed another girl, seventeen years of age. In August, he strangled and then ravaged a fifty-eight-year-old lady. In the same month, he cut the throat of a sixteen-year-old girl, strangled a fifteen-year-old boy, cutting off the genitals and sexually assaulting the corpse, and strangled a seventeen-year-old boy and ripped open his abdomen. In March 1896, he attempted rape on an eleven-year-old girl but was driven off by the police. In September and October, he killed two teenage girls and cut off the genitals and carried them away. In May of 1897, Vacher cut the throat of a fourteen-year-old boy. In June, he murdered a thirteen-year-old shepherd boy and committed pederasty with the corpse.¹²

13. Dr. Herman Webster Mudgett

¹⁰ Masters, *Perverse Crimes in History*, 116–123.

¹¹ Krafft-Ebing, *Psychopathia Sexualis*, 90.

¹² *Ibid.*, 91–94.

Mudgett (alias Henry Holmes, H. H. Holmes, Herbert A. Henderson; 1859–1896) was a charming, polished, handsome, well-educated murderer of an admitted twenty-seven people in one confession and 133 in another. The actual total was probably over 150 and may have topped 200.¹³ At one point in his career, he was married to six women under different names in various extortion schemes. In 1887 and 1888, he built a 105-room mansion at 701-3 63rd Street in Chicago, which was a veritable factory for murder. It had secret rooms, passages, and trap doors, a quicklime pit, and an incinerating furnace in the basement for the purpose of disposing of the bodies of his victims.¹⁴ The most obvious motive for his murders was financial gain, but there is no doubt that most of them were also sexually stimulating, exciting, and enjoyable to him. His first murder was in August 1871 when he was only eleven years old. He struck his boyhood chum in the head with a spiked board and killed him, experiencing a powerful erection and a feeling of euphoria. His second was in July 1884 when he drowned Dr. Leacock, his accomplice in an insurance fraud, and ejaculated in his pants in the excitement (Eckert, p. 8). In April 1888, he smothered seventeen-year-old Jennie Thompson to death, made necrophilous use of her body, cut the flesh from her bones, and sold her skeleton to a medical student. In April 1891, he pushed Calvin Williams to his death from an eight-story building and masturbated. In December 1891, he chloroformed Julia Connor and posthumously raped her body. In December 1892, he smothered Emeline Cigrand to death, raped her body, and dissected and sold her skeleton. During the 1893 Chicago World's Fair, he murdered as many as 100 visitors to the fair for their money and disposed of their bodies in his incinerator furnace, quicklime pit, and Lake Michigan. Shortly before he was hanged on May 7, 1896, he sold the story of his murders of twenty-seven people to the William Randolph Hearst News Corporation for \$10,000. The lengthy story was headlined the "Holmes Confession" and published in newspapers all over the country (Eckert, p. 490). Jacksonville University Professor Bob Stanton and four of his former students published another book on Mudgett's life of crime in the year 2000. Creative Arts Book Company published the book, *The Devil's Rood*.

14. Albert Fish

Fish, in our country's history, is described by the prison psychologist Dr. Frederick Wertham, who examined him, in an absorbing book, *The Show of Violence* as follows. Fish was in his sixty-fifth year when he was brought to trial in New York in March of 1935 for the murder of ten-year-old Grace Budd. He was the father of six children, and, despite what would appear to have been an ample outlet for his sex needs in marriage, throughout his adult life he had gained sexual satisfaction through torturing children. He was a small, gray-haired man with a gentle, benevolent facial expression from a distinguished family. There had, however, been some seven incidents of mental illness and eccentric behavior in his branch of the family. Fish probably would never have been stopped in his sadistic career, short of his natural death, had he not been

¹³ A. W. Eckert, *The Scarlet Mansion* (Boston: Little, Brown and Co., 1985), 499.

¹⁴ *Ibid.*, 51–61.

impelled to let Grace Budd's parents know what had happened to their child. As a result, he was easily tracked down, and when he was in custody, he readily gave the details of the murder and led police to the spot where he had deposited what was left of Grace's body. He described the murder and cannibalism with a dreadful kind of relish. After arrival at a remote cottage, Fish had gone into another room and removed his clothing. When he appeared before the child naked, she cried out that he was bad and she would tell her mother on him. Then he strangled her, cut up her body, and cooked her flesh "with carrots and onions and strips of bacon." During the nine days following the murder, he ate the flesh in a state of intense sexual excitement.

Fish gave Dr. Wertham full details of the ways in which he had preyed on at least a hundred children: either by seducing, bribing, or forcing them. His trade of house painter, which he contrived to carry on in public buildings as much as possible, gave him an excuse to dodge away to cellars or garrets. He wore nothing under his painter's overalls, so he could dress and undress quickly. After a particularly brutal abuse of a child, he would move to another location and never return to the old neighborhood. He lived in twenty-three different states in the course of his life, "and I have had children in every state." Sometimes he would gag them, tie them up, and beat them, although he preferred not to gag them, circumstances permitting, for he liked to hear their cries. He would sometimes cut or insert needles into their genitals. He felt that he was ordered by God to castrate little boys. Dr. Wertham estimated that Fish had murdered at least five children. The detective who worked on the case stated that Fish had killed four in New York, and the judge put the number as high as fifteen. Fish had actually been arrested for one of the New York child murders but had been released because of his age and innocent appearance. When he was asked how he had managed to escape detection for so long—though he had been in the hands of the authorities at least eight times and twice he had been sent to psychiatric hospitals for observation, yet no one had spotted him as being dangerous—Fish replied that "it never came out. Children don't seem to tell. I always manage to cover it up." He was finally executed January 16, 1936.¹⁵

15. Peter Kurten

Kurten, the Vampire of Dusseldorf, began his killing at the age of nine by pushing two of his playmates off a raft into the Rhine River and holding them under the water until they drowned. At approximately fourteen years of age, he tried to strangle a girl. At age sixteen, he was jailed for arson and theft. At thirty, he strangled and cut the throat of a ten-year-old girl. From age forty-one to forty-five, he set fires and assaulted people. Finally, at age forty-six, he killed four girls by stabbing them and letting the blood run from their wounds into his mouth. At his trial, he was pronounced sane but "a veritable king of sexual delinquents." Sadism, masochism, fetishism, and pyromania

¹⁵ G. D. Schultz, *How Many More Victims?: Society and The Sex Criminal* (New York: J. B. Lippincott Co., 1965), 64–72.

were listed among his disorders. At age forty-eight, he was convicted of nine murders and guillotined in Cologne, Germany, on July 2, 1931.

16. Bruno Ludke

Ludke, who confessed to the murders of eighty-five women between 1928 and 1943, was executed in Vienna, Austria, April 8, 1944.

17. William Heirens

Heirens was already a practiced burglar and arsonist when he was arrested on the north side of Chicago at age thirteen. He would steal women's panties and experience orgasm when he put them on. Women were killed after surprising him in their homes, and he was convicted on September 5, 1945, of three murders and twenty-six counts of robbery, burglary, assault, and arson, and sentenced to life in prison. As of 1992, he was the longest-tenured prisoner in Illinois.

18. Yoshio Kodaira

Kodaira (c. 1952), called the "Japanese Bluebeard," raped and murdered ten women.¹⁶

19. Albert DeSalvo

DeSalvo, known as the "Boston Strangler," is believed to have strangled and stabbed eleven women from June 1962 to January 1964, and left their sexually mutilated bodies in garish postures. Although he boasted of assaulting as many as 2,000 women, he was never put on trial as the Boston Strangler. With F. Lee Bailey as his lawyer, he was convicted of merely breaking and entering, assault and battery, and lascivious acts with four women. He confessed to the murders in 1965 and was sentenced to life in prison. DeSalvo met his end by being stabbed to death by his fellow inmates at the old Walpole State Prison in the latter part of 1973.¹⁷

20. Juergen Bartsch

Bartsch ranked second only to Adolph Hitler as the leading twentieth-century German criminal, according to a 1969 poll taken by the magazine *Stern*. He was convicted of murdering four children.¹⁸

21. Jerry Brudos

Brudos, the "Shoe Fetish Slayer," became fascinated with women's high-heeled shoes at the age of five, when he found a pair in the dump. He brought them home and clumped around the house in them in spite of his mother's harsh punishment. He was arrested in 1956 at the age of twelve for trying to force a young girl to disrobe. Brudos began stealing high-heeled shoes and women's undergarments at about age sixteen. When he was twenty-eight, he killed a young woman who came to his door selling encyclopedias in Portland, Oregon. He severed her left foot, slipped it into a glamorous shoe, and stored it in his locked freezer. Her body he disposed of in the

¹⁶ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 558.

¹⁷ Brownmiller, *Against Our Will*, 200-206.

¹⁸ *Newsweek* (February 23, 1970): 87.

Willamette River. Burdos pleaded guilty to three murders and drew three consecutive life sentences.

22. Richard Speck

Speck broke into a nurses' home in 1966 and killed eight of the nurses, some of whom he also raped and sodomized. He was shown on A&E TV programs *Investigative Reports* on March 6, 1999; December 10, 1999; and February 23, 2000, in replays of the filming of some of our prison problems. Speck had been videotaped with his black cellmate and "love," rolling marijuana cigarettes and sniffing cocaine. He had been reported earlier in 1991 by Eric W. Hickey (*Serial Murders and Their Victims*) to be contentedly watching television in an Illinois penitentiary at the taxpayers' expense. Speck had been originally sentenced to death but had been able to have that sentence commuted to life in prison. He died of a heart attack in prison at age fifty.

23. Edmund Kemper

Kemper dismembered six young girls in 1972 and 1973.

24. Dean A. Corll

Corll (1940–1973) and his accomplice, Elmer Wayne Henley (1955–present), tortured, sodomized, and murdered twenty-seven boys with a specially built torture chamber and plywood "torture board" at Corll's home in Houston, Texas, from February 1970 to August 1973. The victims were found buried in three locations: a Houston boat shed, a pine forest north of Houston, and a Galveston beach. Henley killed Corll in August 1973 and was later convicted of murdering six of the victims himself. These crimes were labeled "the worst serial murder case in modern U.S. history" by the press until the Gacy case broke in 1978.¹⁹

25. Juan Corona

Juan Corona, thirty-seven, was arrested on May 26, 1971, after the bodies of nine men were found in shallow graves in a peach orchard near his home in the Sacramento Valley of California. All were stretched out face up, waxy arms above the head, and with shirts pulled up over their faces. Some of the men had their pants pulled down and bore evidence of recent homosexual activity. Further searching found sixteen more bodies. Corona was convicted of twenty-five counts of murder in January 1973 and sentenced to twenty-five concurrent terms of twenty-five years to life and was still in prison in 1992.

26. John Wayne Gacy

Gacy (1942–1994) told the Chicago police in March 1979 that he had killed thirty-three young men and boys after having homosexual relations with them. Twenty-nine skeletal remains were found buried under his house and in the yard, and three bodies were found in the river. Gacy had been paroled in 1971 after serving eighteen months of a ten-year sentence in an Iowa prison for sodomy with a sixteen-year-old boy. Gacy had been arrested several times.²⁰ He was finally executed by lethal injection May

¹⁹ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 23, 1978 and June 28, 1979).

²⁰ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 25, 1978; January 1, 1979; and March 18, 1979).

9, 1994, after fourteen years of legal appeals all the way up to the Illinois Supreme Court. Gacy said on a TV tape played January 28, 2000, on the A&E channel that he was bisexual not homosexual. He had been married twice and sired three children. An autopsy by Dr. Morrison showed nothing detectably wrong with his brain.

27. Theodore R. Bundy

Bundy (1947–1989) confessed in the final hours before his execution January 29, 1989, to the murder, rape, and torture of twenty-eight women. Robert Keppel, the Washington State investigator who worked many years on Bundy's case, believes that he may have killed as many as 100 and probably began when he was as young as fourteen years of age. I was a graduate student in criminology at the Florida State University at Tallahassee when Bundy struck on the campus. Within a half-mile of the criminology building, he entered the rear door of the Chi-Omega Sorority house at 3:30 am, Sunday, January 15, 1978. He went from room to room bashing four of the coeds with a heavy stick as they lay sleeping. Bundy had been in the custody of the police at least twice before, but was released. He was convicted in July 1979 for the February 9, 1978 murder of a twelve-year-old schoolgirl, Kimberly Leach, and sentenced to death. The sentence was appealed three times and stays of execution delayed pending the hearings, so Bundy outlived the judge who had sentenced him. At least five books, countless news articles, a movie, and a television show have been written about him. It has been estimated that he cost the state of Florida at least \$6 million. He was handsome, athletic, and brilliant. He was of an engaging and popular personality. A woman fell in love with him and married him during his long trial, but behind his facade lurked one of the worst monsters of the century. Oddly enough, he had been arrested in Pensacola, Florida, February 15, 1978, by the merest stroke of luck: because an alert policeman noticed his stolen license plates. He nearly slipped through the hands of the police on this occasion as well. Ironically, a neighbor complained of "police brutality" as a result of the police scuffle to subdue Bundy.

28. Kenneth A. Bianchi

Bianchi (1951–present) confessed to murdering twelve young women in the notorious "Hillside Strangler" cases, which terrorized the Los Angeles area between October 1977 and February 1978. Angelo A. Buono (1934–present), Bianchi's cousin, was implicated by the confession in ten of the murders. Buono was charged with sixteen felony counts of rape, sodomy, pimping, pandering, oral copulation, and conspiracy. Bianchi told investigators that Buono strangled five of the victims himself, raped all but one, and sodomized some of them. Buono hired a high-powered, six-attorney team to defend him against these charges, so the trials dragged on for two years and two days—one of the longest trials. They both avoided execution.²¹

29. The "Yorkshire Ripper"

²¹ Eric Brazil, Bob Partlow, Sue Smith, and Gannet News Service. Articles in the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 13–18, 1980.)

The Yorkshire Ripper murdered twelve women in the northern part of England in a four-year period and remained at large until 1982, in spite of the most extensive manhunt in British history. Over a million pounds sterling were spent to get the public's support in finding him. His first attack was in Leeds, October 30, 1975 when he killed a prostitute named Wilma McCann. Since then, eleven other women, eight of them prostitutes, were murdered in Bradford, Huddersfield, Manchester, and Preston. Most of the victims were attacked on the street at night by a hammer blow to the head and then stabbed and ripped open with a butcher knife. This modus operandi was similar to that of the infamous Jack the Ripper of London in the late nineteenth century. The "Ripper" also referred to himself by that name in a tape-recorded message that he sent to Assistant Chief Constable George Oldfield, holder of the Queen's Police Medal and the chief investigator assigned to the case.²²

30. The "Green River Killer"

This killer's list contains twenty confirmed murders of prostitutes and a total of as many as forty-nine probable young women between 1981 and 1985 in the Pacific Northwest of Washington state. This killer remained at large in spite of the best efforts of a police task force of up to fifty-eight full-time investigators who spent hundreds of thousands of man-hours and over \$16 million in their attempts to apprehend him. Hundreds of suspects, including one man whose blood type, hair, and saliva matched samples taken from some of the crime scenes, were questioned in this case by the police. A two-hour, nationwide television program on December 7, 1988, was dedicated to producing leads in this case, but the killer remained unknown until November 30, 2001, when Gary Leon Ridgeway, fifty-three, a married man, was arrested for four of the murders.

31. Henry Lee Lucas

Lucas, fifty-two, calmly answered questions on television on May 28, 1989. He told how, at age ten or twelve years old, he already had fantasies about killing people. He said that he had his first sex with a schoolgirl in 1951 when he was fourteen years old, and he strangled her to death afterward because he did not know what else to do. Somehow "sex is not right" to him, he said. He grew to dislike prostitutes for "selling themselves," and he said he could tell that they were prostitutes just by the way they looked. He raped, tortured, and killed them, and the desire became "stronger and stronger." Several times the police had come close but "they couldn't catch" him because of his extremely mobile lifestyle. When he was finally caught and imprisoned, he began to tell of his many murders.

At first, the police did not believe him. Such wild talk about hundreds of murders might make law enforcement look silly. Eventually, he proved to have detailed knowledge of large numbers of unsolved murders, which only the murderer would know. His memory was surprisingly good for a poorly educated person. Memory is best for those

²² Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, June 27, 1979; ABC TV Program 20/20, December 6, 1979; and Life, April 1980, p. 64.

events that give the greatest pleasure and excitement. Special Agent William Hagmaier, of the FBI's serial murderer special study group, now believes that he was involved in the killing of twenty-three to twenty-four people. One hundred sixty-two homicides in twenty-seven states have been attributed to Lucas and cleared. The debate still continued into the year 2000 about the true number of his victims.²³ Lucas died of an apparent heart attack at age sixty-four in March 2001, in a Huntsville, Texas prison.

32. Larry Eyler

Eyler, the Interstate Killer, was thirty-one years old in 1983 when police in Indiana and Illinois suspected him of a string of murders of young men whose sexually violated and tortured bodies were found along the highways between Terre Haute, Chicago, and Greencastle. Eyler was a suspect because he had been arrested in 1978 for stabbing a young hitchhiker, and he was known to cruise the gay bars in the region. He was freed on bond and murdered a fifteen-year-old boy seven months later. He was sentenced to death, confessed to another murder, and offered to plea bargain a life sentence for telling about twenty more killings. The state refused, and he was still on death row in 1992.

33. Patrick Wayne Kearney

Kearney confessed in 1977 to killing thirty-two men, many of whose dismembered remains were dumped in trash bags along Southern California highways. He was convicted of twenty-one of the so-called "trash bag" or "jigsaw" murders and sentenced to life in prison.

34. Dennis Andrew Nilsen

Nilsen was born in Fraserburgh, Scotland, November 23, 1945. By the time he was arrested early in February 1983, he had murdered and cut up into small pieces a number of young men that he had met in London pubs. Intelligent and verbose like many of the other homosexual killers who were caught with the clear evidence of their murders, he said of his victims (fifteen or sixteen since 1978), "I'll tell you everything." And he did. He also said, "I wished I could stop, but I could not. I had no other thrill or happiness."

35. William Bonin

Bonin, also known as the "Freeway Killer," was convicted of murdering fourteen boys and young men. He abandoned their bodies near freeways in Southern California in 1979 and 1980 after having sex with and robbing them.

36. Wayne B. Williams

Williams, twenty-three, was convicted in 1982 for the slaying of two black men who had disappeared along with twenty-nine black children and young adults in the black section of Atlanta, Georgia. In a twenty-two-month period between 1979 and 1981, Williams, an eloquent, homosexual black man, terrorized the area. He was sentenced to two life sentences, but has made strong, attention-getting legal appeals and media accusations against the criminal justice system, racism, and the KKK. Up to the year

²³ S. Egger, *Serial Murder: An Elusive Phenomenon* (New York: Prager Publishers, 1990), 157.

2000, two made-for-TV movies were made on his case tending to show that Williams was innocent of the murders and wrongly convicted. One two-part CBS documentary film was aired in 1985 and the other on the Showtime channel July 16, 2000.

37. Richard Ramirez

Ramirez was convicted September 20, 1989, and sentenced to death for eighteen “Night Stalker” killings in Southern California in 1984 and 1985. Ramirez was a believer in Satanism and a macho figure. Hundreds of young women asked permission to visit him in prison, but most of them were turned away because his jailers could not handle the large numbers of requests.²⁴ There is a strong fascination to sex slayers like him that has been well documented in such recent books as Sheila Isenberg’s *Women Who Love Men Who Kill* (NY: Simon and Schuster, 1991) and Rosemary Daniell’s *Sleeping with Soldiers: In Search of the Macho Man* (Holt Rinehart, and Wilson, 1984). On February 24, 1999, the A&E television channel’s *American Justice* program aired a one-hour program titled “Richard Ramirez, the Night Stalker.” This program told how Ramirez “got an erotic thrill from killing” most of his victims with a .22 caliber revolver. Most of his victims were women whose homes he had broken into, some of whom he raped and mutilated. He cut one woman’s eyes out and took them home. He would also ransack their homes and take the most valuable items that he could carry. He used cocaine and sold the stolen articles to buy his drugs. Phil Carlo wrote a book, *The Night Stalker*, that told how Ramirez was a fan of heavy metal music and Satanism, which may have been instrumental in leading him to murder.

38. Christopher Wilder

Wilder, a rich, intelligent man, tortured and killed young women in several states in 1984.

39. Jeffrey L. Dahmer

Dahmer, thirty-one, was arrested on July 23, 1991, at his dingy, fly-infested apartment in Milwaukee, where police found boxes filled with genitalia and other body parts from eleven young men and boys of various races. Dahmer had been convicted of sexually assaulting a thirteen-year-old boy, had served ten months in prison, and was on a five-year probation sentence. His female probation officer had never visited his home, as is required for felons, because of her workload and because Dahmer’s home was in a high-crime neighborhood. Had she done so, the overpowering stench of the decomposing remains might have alerted her to the gruesome situation. Another example of how inept the justice system is in dealing with these sex criminals occurred on May 27, 1991: A naked, fourteen-year-old Laotian boy, bleeding from wounds on his buttocks, was allowed to go back to his apartment after Dahmer convinced police officers that it was “just a domestic dispute” between two homosexuals. The boy became Dahmer’s seventeenth victim and was tortured, killed, and partly eaten just as the others were. The three police officers who were involved were suspended as a result of a national furor over this crime.

²⁴ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (July 25, 1991).

Dahmer was caught red-handed with the gory evidence of his crimes and so confessed at great length and in vivid detail to each of the seventeen mutilations and killings. We stand to learn much from these confessions. He pleaded guilty but insane in an effort to obtain a lighter sentence. Expert defense witness Dr. Fred Berlin, director of the sexual disorders clinic at Johns Hopkins University, told the court that Dahmer had a “cancer of the mind” and lacked the willpower to control his horrendous behavior. Dr. Park Dietz, forensic psychologist, said, “His orgasm is more valuable[to him] than your life.” Judith Becker, another psychologist, aided the defense plea of “not guilty by reason of insanity” by telling of Dahmer’s distressed childhood fascination with the insides of animals. The three-week sanity trial ended February 17, 1991, with the jury deciding ten to two that Dahmer was sane. He was sentenced to fifteen consecutive life terms in prison and would not be eligible for parole for 936 years. Dahmer, along with another notorious Wisconsin killer, were bludgeoned to death at eight o’clock, Monday morning, November 28, 1994, while they were cleaning the gymnasium at the 600-man Columbia Correctional Institution. Christopher Scarver, a black, twenty-five-year-old inmate killer, with “borderline intelligence,” confessed to a guard that he did it because “God told me to do it.” Corrections Secretary Michael Sullivan announced on June 20, 1995, that four prison guards were suspended for the security breakdown after the investigative panel found that Scarver acted alone. One guard had left his post and another was on the telephone for twenty minutes, failing to monitor the inmate as required.

Such was the notoriety of the Dahmer cases, due to the sensational revelation of the horrendous details of the murders, that it was still national news in May of 1996.²⁵ The lawyer of eight of the eleven families of Dahmer’s victims planned to auction off hundreds of Dahmer’s belongings, and a group of Milwaukee business leaders tried to come up with the million dollars to buy the lot and burn it in an effort to erase the memory of his serial killings. The lawyer planned to give \$75,000 to each of the families and keep the remaining \$400,000 for his fees and expenses. The lawyer, Tom Jacobson, said, “We saw what Camelot brought: \$34.5 million. Dahmer’s the flipside of Camelot.” Jacobson was referring to the auction by Sotheby’s in New York of President Kennedy’s wife Jackie Kennedy Onassis’ belongings, which was held in April 1996.

On July 14, 1997, on the Learning Channel television program *To Kill and Kill Again*, a full hour was devoted to Dahmer’s life. It was revealed that much of his killing ideation had come from detective magazines. This is very similar to the story of the early youth of Ted Bundy, another notorious serial killer who had told in the last hours of his life before execution in Florida how at age twelve he had masturbated to these detective magazines. There are at least six of these magazines that have been on display at the corner drugstore for at least fifty years, which usually show sexy women on the cover being threatened by a man with a knife, gun, or club. Fear usually shows on the faces of these women victims of male aggressors. Psychologists believe

²⁵ “Dahmer Plans Rile Milwaukee,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (May 9, 1996): 2A.

that the urge is ignited in certain men for power and dominance over their victims, but I believe the rush of the hormones, testosterone, and adrenalin cause the high of dopamine level that gives these killers the feeling of power and sexual excitement. The sexual basis of Dahmer's necrophilia, lust murders, and cannibalism were again brought out in another hour-long television broadcast in prime viewing time June 17, 1996, on the A&E channel. Dahmer said he "couldn't control his urge." A larger segment of the American population should now be aware of the horrors that the sex drive can produce. This broadcast showed how the sex drive works to increase the addiction to the excitement of killing and bizarre horrors in men of a certain type of behavior in their early years, bringing ever more serious acting-out progression.

40. Andrei R. Chikatilo

Chikatilo, fifty-six, a Russian language teacher and grandfather, also known as "Citizen Ch," was captured in Rostov-on-Don, Russia, in November 1990. Chikatilo gouged out some of his victims' eyes, cut off their breasts or genitals, ate some of their flesh, and raped some of them before their death and some after their death. His actual victims probably number more than 100, but his signed confession lists fifty-three: twenty-one boys, fourteen girls, and eighteen young women. His killing began in 1978 with the murder of a nine-year-old girl, whom he had tried unsuccessfully to rape. Soviet officials did not release any information on his killings or warn the public that a killer was loose in their area for more than five years. At the time of the murders, the government policy was that serial murder was a capitalist phenomenon and was not supposed to exist in the Communist legal system. Ideology was placed above public safety in importance.²⁶

Some fifty-five investigators worked on this case for more than ten years. Often as many as 400 officers were involved in stakeouts, and the total number of suspects named in the case ran to more than 25,000. At one point, a paroled convict who had been seen in the vicinity of one of the murders was arrested, tried, convicted, and executed before the authorities realized that they had the wrong man.²⁷ Psychiatrists in the case said that Chikatilo acted out of rage stemming from sexual inadequacy. He was unable to obtain orgasm without the extra excitement that the mutilations, violent death, and mangled corpses gave him. Like Dahmer, Chikatilo revealed several of the details of his killings so that it became much clearer to the general public that these were sexually motivated crimes that could have been controlled by castration. Chikatilo was executed on February 14, 1994.

41. Danny Rolling

Rolling killed four coeds and one of their male companions in August 1990 in their dormitories at the University of Florida in Gainesville. He confessed and wrote out the details of his breaking into their quarters late at night, cutting them up, and having sex with their bodies. The Globe paid \$20,000 for these writings and published them

²⁶ Northwest Florida Daily News (April 25, 1992).

²⁷ Weekly World News (May 19, 1992).

in a three-part series in September 1994. Five years later, the case still dragged on, and although he was sentenced to death in April 1994, the first legal brief in Rolling's appeal was in December 1995. Rolling again returned to court July 11, 2000 to fight his death sentence.

42. Andrew Philip Cunanan

At 8:43 am, July 15, 1997, Cunanan, twenty-seven, twice shot Gianni Versace, fifty, the famous clothing designer, in the head with a .40 caliber pistol at point-blank range in front of Versace's Miami Beach mansion. Both men were homosexuals. Cunanan had been on the FBI's Most Wanted List since May for the killing of two ex-lovers in Minnesota, a developer in Chicago and a cemetery caretaker in New Jersey. His mother had described him as being a high-priced gay prostitute of above-average intelligence, fluent in French, Spanish, Filipino, and Italian.

The nation's newspapers and magazines published major articles about the murder, and the stories became "curiouser and curiouser," according to Larry King in three full-hour TV programs devoted to the case. Motives for his murders mentioned were: jealousy, notoriety, con man, manipulator, thrill, bizarre, sadomasochism, AIDS, money, etc. Forensic psychologist Park Dietz, an FBI consultant, said, "Whatever point[the killers] are trying to make ... is more important to them than the lives they take. They want to be told that they're the best."²⁸

To me, Cunanan's behavior fits the description of pique. Cunanan may have learned that he was infected with HIV in November 1996, and in fact, he was quoted as saying, "If I find out who did this to me, I'm going to get them!" On April 29, 1997, Jeffrey Trail, twenty-eight, was found murdered, and four days later, another former lover, David Madson, thirty-three, was found shot in the head with .40 caliber bullets.²⁹ Police who later searched Cunanan's San Diego apartment found a trove of S & M gear, clamps, harnesses, and videos featuring sex with animals. The clothing designer Versace had featured an array of leather bondage dresses in his fall 1992 collection.

At 3:30 pm, July 23, 1997, the caretaker of boats parked along the Miami Beach waterfront about two and a half miles north of the mansion where Versace was gunned down and about a mile from a motel that Cunanan had lived in, heard a shot in the upstairs bedroom of a two-story houseboat belonging to the owner of a gay bath house. About 8:30 pm, police found Cunanan's body on a bed and a .40 caliber handgun in the master bedroom of the \$250,000 houseboat.

After Cunanan's suicide, the search for the causation and meaning of his murders continued to escalate. Dr. I. Townsend Dann of the Florida Psychiatric Institute shed some light when he was quoted as saying, "When I see patients who are homosexual ... the pathology is much more serious. This is not to say that just because someone is homosexual that he is crazy." Even some of the members of the South Beach gay mecca were quoted as saying that excessive behaviors are all too common in the

²⁸ U.S. News & World Report (July 28, 1997): 34.

²⁹ Time (July 28, 1997): 32.

homosexual milieu. This appears to touch on the heart of the matter. Gays are high-testosterone people loaded with the hormones and neurotransmitters that exacerbate lustful emotions and aggression into the deadliest forms of pique. One of the difficulties of getting to understand the meaning of gay murders is that much of the key information is shielded by the purposeful actions of homosexuals, their friends, and organizations. More than a week after Cunanan's body was found, authorities were researching whether to release information that he had the AIDS virus. A person's AIDS status is confidential under state law, and they were trying to determine whether a dead person had any privacy rights ... Versace's body was cremated soon after his death, so his AIDS status was protected by destroying the evidence. On the March 9, 1999, NBC Today TV show, Maureen Orth said she had learned that Versace was HIV-positive from lead investigator Paul Scrimshaw. Maureen was a Washington journalist who had written a book claiming Versace had the virus.

Although Cunanan's HIV status was not disclosed by the medical examiner's office because of the Florida law that prohibits disclosure of test results in most cases unless a court order is obtained, the Miami Herald reported August 1 that law enforcement sources said the autopsy showed that he did not have the virus. The rumors that Cunanan's slayings were motivated by "AIDS rage"—the compulsion to lash out and seek revenge against those who might have infected him—still persist however.³⁰

Bill Hagmaier, chief of the FBI's Serial Killer Unit, said Cunanan had begun as a "spree killer"—murdering his first victims in a rush, motivated by rage or vendetta. But he had evolved into a "classic serial killer." After the first few times, killing gets easier. The killer begins to feel "absolute power over human beings." Serial killers become intoxicated by their celebrity status and have to kill again to maintain the "euphoria of murder." Like addicts, they eventually become strung out.³¹

43. Gerald (Jerry) Stano

Stano, forty-six, was executed on March 23, 1998, for killing a seventeen-year-old hitchhiker in December 1973 and dumping her body in a drainage ditch in Florida. Stano was arrested in Daytona Beach on April 1, 1980, after attacking a prostitute with a can opener. Before the day was out, Stano had confessed to the murder of Mary Carol Maher, twenty, a former swimming star, and he later confessed to a total of forty-one murders of women across three states.

44. Denis Roy Yancy

Yancy, twenty-seven, of Truth or Consequences, New Mexico, was arrested April 9, 1999, for the sexual torture and death of Marie B. Parker, twenty-two, who disappeared in 1997. A bloody, naked woman had been found on the road March 22nd wearing only a steel, padlocked collar, and she told the police she had been sexually tortured. The woman was able to implicate others in lust murders, and the investigation was extended

³⁰ "he Missing Meaning of Andrew Cunanan—Turning a Killer into a Symbol," U.S. News & World Report (August 4, 1997): 23.

³¹ Newsweek (July 28, 1997): 30.

across ten states. David Parker Ray, fifty-nine, and Cynthia Lea Henry, thirty-nine, were also charged with numerous sexual abuse crimes.

45. Charles Ng

Ng, thirty-eight, was convicted February 28, 1999, in Santa Ana, California, for killing six men, three women, and two baby boys in a 1984-to-1985 spree of bondage and sadism. Ng and co-conspirator Leonard Lake incriminated themselves with videotapes they made while tormenting the women they held as sex slaves before killing them in Northern California. The Orange County jury saw these scenes during the trial. Lake killed himself with a cyanide capsule after police arrested him. But Ng was tried in a emotional court case that lasted seven months and cost \$12 million. The ABC television program 20/20 of January 21, 2000, showed some of the Ng torture tapes and interviewed five of the women jurors who were so disturbed by the horrors of the tapes they had to be treated for post-traumatic stress syndrome after the trial.

46. Louis Alfredo Garativo

Garativo, forty-two, confessed in October 1999, to killing 140 children during a five-year rampage in fifty-nine towns around Pereira, Columbia. He was apprehended in April 1999 for attempting to rape a twelve-year-old boy. He had lured his victims with a myriad of disguises—a cripple, a monk, a beggar, a priest, a charity worker. Garavito gained his victims' confidence by offering them money and soft drinks.

47. Javed Iqbal

Iqbal, forty, of Lahore, Pakistan, confessed to killing 100 children in a letter to the police December 2, 1999. In the letter, Iqbal said he sexually assaulted the children before killing them. He said he was a chemical engineer and used chemicals to dispose of the bodies. The police found the remains of two bodies in a large, blue barrel in a home in Lahore and a lot of children's clothing. Parents and relatives of fifty-seven missing children recognized clothing of missing boys and girls. Pictures and stories about the children dominated the front pages of Urdu-language newspapers December 4, 1999. Iqbal was arrested December 30th, as he wrote another confession in the Jang newspaper office in Lahore. He was sentenced on March 16, 2000, to die in the way he killed the 100 children—strangled, dismembered, and his remains dissolved in acid at a Lahore park in front of his victims' parents. Pakistan is a signatory to the human rights convention, which does not permit this kind of execution, so the government planned to challenge the judge's sentence. Under Pakistani law, family members are allowed to kill a convicted murderer in the same manner as their relative was killed, so the legal battle was likely to take some time.

48. Tommy Lynn Sells

Sells, thirty-five, was arrested in his trailer home near Del Rio, Texas, January 2, 2000, for slitting the throat of a thirteen-year-old girl New Year's Eve 1999. He confessed to the rape and slaying of another thirteen-year-old girl in Kentucky and twelve murders in at least five other states. Sells told investigators that he had committed his first serious assault when he was thirteen and first killed someone when he was about seventeen. He offered no explanation for his crimes but said, "Sometimes it's like a

pressure cooker. He's about to blow up ..."³² Sells was convicted of capital murder September 18, 2000, and faced life in prison or lethal injection when sentenced.

49. Larete Patrocínio Orpinelli

Orpinelli, forty-seven, was arrested January 14, 2000, in Rio Claro, Brazil, and confessed to killing at least ten children over a twenty-year period. His victims were both boys and girls, ranging in age from five to eleven. Orpinelli said he was driven to kill the children after he was unable to perform sexually. "I got angry when I was not able to have sex," he told police. "So I hit them and strangled them." Orpinelli had been arrested in 1996 for attacking two children and had been committed to psychiatric hospitals five times between 1967 and 1993.³³

50. Herbert Baumeister

The A&E television channel broadcast the story of this bisexual man (Investigative Reports' "The Secret Life of a Serial Killer") on the evening of January 28, 2000. Baumeister had lived in a million-dollar mansion in the country outside Indianapolis with his wife and two children. In 1995, he would go into the city and pick up men in the gay bars, bring them to his mansion, practice sexual asphyxia, kill them, and bury them behind the house. Skeletons of seven men were found there in 1996, but Baumeister committed suicide before he could be arrested and tell the details of his crimes.

51. Rory Conde

Conde, thirty-four, was sentenced to die March 7, 2000, in Miami, Florida, for the last of his six strangled victims. Known as the "Tamiami Strangler," he had strangled and raped at least five prostitutes. Conde's lawyer had testified that Rory was raped from age six to twelve by an uncle, but the court rejected the psychological testimony on the explanation of his behavior.³⁴

52. John Eric Armstrong

Armstrong, twenty-six, admitted to as many as thirty murders worldwide after being charged on April 18, 2000, with the murder of five Detroit-area prostitutes. Police said the 300-pound Armstrong told them he strangled young prostitutes after having sex with them, all to get back at a woman who scorned him in high school.³⁵

53. Robert Lee Yates, Jr.

Yates, forty-seven, was arrested by sheriff's deputies April 18, 2000, in Spokane, Washington, and charged with the murder of one of four prostitutes that matched the DNA profile of semen on her body with blood drawn from Yates after his arrest. The NBC TV Dateline program of June 21, 2002, told of his confession to eighteen other similar murders of prostitutes in Washington state, from 1990 to 1998, to avoid the death penalty. The inquiry into this innocuous-appearing father of five children has

³² Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 14, 2000): 6A.

³³ "Murder Suspect Confesses to Killing 10 Children Over 2 Decades in Brazil," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 26, 2000): 4A.

³⁴ "Serial Killer Sentenced to Die," Northwest Florida Daily News (March 8, 2000): B4.

³⁵ U.S. News & World Report and Newsweek (April 24, 2000): 31, 65.

widened to include unsolved murders of twenty-six prostitutes near U.S. Army bases in Germany, where he was stationed earlier.³⁶

54. Michael Swango

Swango, forty-five, pleaded guilty to killing three patients and was sentenced to life in prison September 6, 2000, in the Central Islip, New York court. Prosecutors read from Swango's handwritten journal evidence that Swango killed for pleasure. "He liked doing it," Assistant U.S. Attorney Gary Brown said outside the court. A best-selling book, *Blind Eye: The Terrifying Story of a Doctor Who Got Away with Murder*, suggested that Swango might have killed as many as thirty-five patients as he moved from hospital to hospital.

55. Nathaniel Bar-Jonah

Bar-Jonah was charged December 20, 2000, in a Great Falls, Montana courtroom with kidnapping a ten-year-old boy, raping, then butchering and eating him. Bar-Jonah's history of violence against children dated back decades. In 1975, he had received a year of probation after pleading guilty to choking an eight-year-old boy in Webster, Massachusetts. Bar-Jonah served two years in prison for choking two boys near Charlton, Massachusetts. He also faces charges of sexually assaulting boys and dangling one from a ceiling with a rope.

56. Saeed Hanaei

Hanaei, thirty-nine, confessed July 27, 2001, to killing sixteen prostitutes after having sex with them in Mashhad, Iran. Strangely enough, many hard-line supporters of the regime publicly cheered the murder spree as a moral cleanup campaign. "Who is to be judged?" demanded the conservative newspaper *Jomhuri Islami*. "Those who look to eradicate the sickness[like the killer] or those who stand at the root of the corruption[like the victims]."

57. Dr. Harold Shipman

Shipman was convicted in February 2001 of killing fifteen elderly women and given fifteen life sentences in London, England. The fifteen murders placed Shipman among Britain's worst serial killers. He was accused at his trial of killing because he "enjoyed exercising the ultimate power of controlling life and death." Police said they had sufficient evidence to prosecute Shipman for an additional twenty-three murders. However, the Crown Prosecution Service decided against further trails, concluding that it would not be in the public interest. A judge in London announced July 19, 2002, after a year-long investigation, that Shipman had killed at least 177 women and forty-four men, ranging in age from forty-one to ninety-three.

58. Paul Frederick Runge

Runge, thirty-one, was charged June 15, 2001, with murdering six women and an eleven-year-old girl in a string of Chicago-area sex attacks between 1995 and 1997. Police said that Runge confessed to all seven killings. DNA linked him to two of the

³⁶ "The Spokane Murders," *Time* (July 17, 2000): 41-44.

crimes, the deaths of the child and her mother. Police said his victims were bludgeoned to death or strangled. In some cases, their bodies were dismembered.

59. Lawrence Singleton

Singleton, seventy-four, died of cancer, December 28, 2001, at the North Florida Reception Center Prison in Starke, Florida. He had raped fifteen-year-old Mary Vincent and cut off her forearms with an axe in 1978. After serving eight years in a California prison, he had been paroled in 1987. Then in 1997, he stabbed to death thirty-one-year-old Roxanne Hayes and was sentenced to death.

60. Cary Staynor

Staynor, forty, known as the “Yosemite Killer,” pleaded guilty to killing a female nature guide in Yosemite National Park in California and three female tourists. After his arrest, Staynor told the FBI that killing the tourists made him feel “like I was in control for the first time in my life.” He said he sexually assaulted one of the women after killing the other two and that she had begged him to end her misery.

61. Cory Morris

Morris, twenty-four, admitted involvement in five deaths of prostitutes found dead near Phoenix’s red light district between July 2003 and April 2003.

62. Joel Tiller

Joel Tiller, fifty-one, pleaded guilty August 28, 2003, to the rape and murder of a Ft. Lauderdale woman and was sentenced to life plus forty years. Tiller had raped and murdered at least four other women dating back to 1968. He raped and killed a twenty-eight-year-old Atlanta woman when he was sixteen and said a voice in his head named “Judah” commanded him to do it. He served twenty-three years and after release had raped and murdered at least four more women.

X. Comments

America is the most violent nation in the developed world with some 1,250,000 violent crimes a year being recorded by the police; some 20,000 of these are murders. Dozens of reasons have been given for our shamefully high murder rate: “We have a fascination with guns and are heavily armed”; “We become angry because of our frustrations” (the frustration/aggression hypothesis); “We learn to act out this violence from our vivid entertainment and news media”; “We have too many mentally disturbed people out there who are walking time bombs”; etc., etc. No doubt there is a kernel of truth in each of these reasons given, but there has got to be something more. Something we are missing, or maybe something that we really know about but are not given sufficient recognition of for some reason.

I hope that now there is no doubt whatsoever left in the reader’s mind that the sex crimes include the most heinous of all of the crimes known to man. My personal experience at the scene of the Ted Bundy Chi Omega Sorority girls murders was my original motivation to write this book. Here, surely, are the worst of all of the crimes;

yet paradoxically, we will not recognize the obvious sex-drive motives for most of them and apply the near-perfect castration treatment. Tragically, our pundits espouse other cures.

It should not go unnoticed that in the above list of the more notorious sex killers, about 45 percent of them were either homosexual or bisexual. This is much higher than the estimated 1 or 2 percent of homosexuals in the population at large, thus lending credence to my contention (above) that there is a stronger propensity for gays to fold over their perversion into the most serious of crimes.

Our understanding of lust murder is tragically flawed. Our criminal justice system makes horrendous mistakes over and over again in dealing with this wicked crime. As Professor Elliott Leyton said April 3, 1992, in his keynote address to the First International Conference on Serial Murder in Windsor, Canada: "The present tools are too crude for the task of investigating the darkest areas of the human heart." None of our academic disciplines seem to have the answer. Professor Leyton named the "twelve pillars" of current wisdom and commented that each has its strengths and weaknesses, but we need to "demolish the Berlin Wall that presently separates these disciplines."

As bad as the errors are that are revealed in understanding and prevention of these heinous crimes in the United States, that's not the worst of it. The whole world looks to us in the United States. The failure to deal effectively with lust murder has worldwide implications. This worst of all human behavior must be stopped, but instead of its stopping, what we apparently have is an increase. Reams of data have shown the futility and great expense of policies depending on deterrence. We must recognize that the hormones of sex and aggression are the fuel that drive these engines of destruction. We must learn to recognize the lust murderer at an early age and cut off his testosterone-fueled acts through the simple and inexpensive castration treatment.

In spite of the excellence of most of the thousands of articles and dozens of television programs and books that have been produced about these sexual killers, no one has been able to really move a substantial portion of the public to feel the stark horror of the acts of these poisonous snakes in human form. On the contrary, teams of lawyers—mostly from the American Civil Liberties Union—spring to the defense of these fiends. Their lives are extended interminably; they are photographed, interviewed repeatedly, and quoted for years, educating, in this process, other fledgling sadists in the foibles of our fumbling criminal justice system. John Wayne Gacy, in spite of the irrefutable evidence of twenty-nine bodies buried under his house and garage and his confession of sexually sadistic torture and excruciatingly painful murder of thirty-three boys and young men, had a television set and a telephone in his cell and a 900 number playing his recorded protestations of innocence for pay. The teams of lawyers appealed for him on four major cycles over a fifteen-and-a-half-year period before he was finally executed by the humane and painless injection of drugs into his right forearm in the Stateville penitentiary of Joliet, Illinois, May 10, 1994. Charles Manson, sixty-five, lived on in prison in 2003, appearing on television programs regularly and receiving lots of fan mail and phone calls.

Several religious organizations have been preaching that there are many signs that we are becoming eviler and there are warnings, like the AIDS plague, that the Lord is punishing us for this. There is even a British Broadcasting Corporation documentary scheduled for airing on March 1, 2003, Newton: The Dark Heretic, that shows that the great Sir Isaac Newton has predicted from Bible studies that the world will end in 2060. I maintain that there is one treatment that will stop the sinning and disease that forebode such a catastrophe, if only people will listen and use the castration treatment as Christ advised in Matthew 19:12.

VOLUME II – The Solution

I. Background

What we have had in the United States prior to about 1965 was mostly no treatment at all to rehabilitate sex offenders. Only in a small percentage of cases of those arrested—less than 5 percent—was there sufficient money and talent available to give significant treatment. There was a great awakening in the decade of the 1980s to the pervasiveness of the sex crimes and their far-reaching consequences. In the early 1980s, the increased awareness centered on the crime of rape, and in the latter 1980s, it centered more on sexual offenses against children. Thousands of people have become involved on a full-time basis in rape and child abuse crisis centers. These two sex offenses have received considerable study, and billions of dollars have been expended in efforts to control them. From 1986 to 1990, the Safer Society Program's listing of specialized sex offender program providers increased from 642 to 1,167. Most of these are in community-based outpatient settings (77 percent), and about 56 percent of them are provided by the private sector. Although some modest successes have been reported, the rape and child-sexual-abuse rates seem to have increased rather than decreased. There has been an increase in the media coverage of these crimes and an outcry for more and more severe sentences for offenders. More political action has been taken to affect a solution, but sensational news items still tell of rapists and murderers who have been imprisoned, treated, and released only to rape and kill more victims.

On Sunday, November 24, 1996, the Attorney General's Office convened a national summit entitled "Promoting Public Safety Through the Effective Management of Sex Offenders in the Community," in Washington, DC. Approximately 170 representatives from a variety of agencies and groups interested in the prevention and control of sexual assault met for two and a half days to begin to formulate a systematic approach to this problem. It was a highly diverse group, which included state legislators, judges, prison representatives, attorneys, police chiefs, and offender treatment specialists. Their top-level administrators represented a number of the federal agencies. In spite of this and similar indications of the concerns of the administrators, several signs appeared to indicate that nothing was really working to the required degree of effectiveness. Quinsey et al. (1998) evaluated a thirteen-year treatment program that used a variety of behavioral treatments and found that 38 percent of the graduates had recidivated within an average forty-four-month period. Quinsey's results were similar to other evaluations of behavioral programs, yet they continued to be the main ones used. Seven states passed laws calling for the chemical or surgical castration of repeat sex offenders between 1996 and 1998, but by the end of 2000, less than a dozen men had been surgically castrated. Some of the inmates who had asked to be surgically castrated

still had not had the surgery.¹ More than 1,000 had received the chemical castration, mostly with medroxyprogesterone acetate (Depo-Provera).

In order to affect a cure for the problem of deviant sexual behavior, we should first understand in great detail what causes it in each individual case, just as a doctor studies the patient with a medical ailment in order to ascertain the cause before he tries to prescribe medication. Many books have been written about human behavior. Rows and rows of books have been written, regular libraries assembled, categorized, and filed by the library science all dealing with the general subject of human behavior. Every one of these books has some insight into why we behave as we do. If a person were to start reading all of these books, he would soon discover that many of the authors placed their ideas of why we do certain things in direct opposition to the ideas of other authors, yet they would all have some aspect of the truth in them.

“How can this be?” you might ask. A good question! The answer is that people are so extremely variable that what is right for one person at a given time may be wrong for another person, or even the same person under different conditions. We are all different, as is shown by our fingerprints, our handwriting, and our very genes and DNA.

Another reason for various theories is given in the old German professor’s saying: “as mann Weiss, mann sieht,” meaning that “what a man knows, he sees.” If I had read all of the books by Sigmund Freud and his contemporary Havelock Ellis, plus all of those other books by people who have written about psychoanalytic theories of behavior, then I could develop a pretty sound idea of what caused a given individual to do a given sex crime. Once I had a clear idea of why he did it, I could prescribe a treatment that would have a chance of deterring him from doing it again. Similarly, if I had read all of the works of Carl Jung or Alfred Adler, together with the books and articles of all of their adherents, I would get another idea of the causation of the same crime and be able to prescribe a treatment that might work.

There are dozens of theories in the psychological realm. There are several genetic theories, there are many hormonal theories, there are sociological theories galore, and there are religious theories, mystical theories, and so on. An adherent of any of these various theories of behavior and personality will probably be able to describe a different theory of etiology. The array is truly bewildering. Each expert in each field will see the given sex crime and its treatment in a different light. The psychiatrist, the psychologist, the sociologist, the criminologist, the biologist, the medical doctor, the lawyer, the priest, and all of the other learned experts, together with others in each individual branch of their discipline, will see a given sex crime somewhat differently.

So, as we come to grips with the variations in the bewildering array of treatments, we would do well to keep Murphy’s tongue-in-cheek Laws of Experimentation in mind as we go forward. 1) If anything can go wrong, it will. 2) No matter what the result,

¹ V. L. Quinsey, A. Khanna, and P. B. Malcolm, “A Retrospective Evaluation of Regional Treatment Centre Sex Offender Program,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 13, no. 5 (1998): 621–644.

there is always someone eager to misinterpret it. 3) No matter what occurs, there is always someone who believes it happened according to his pet theory. 4) Nature always sides with the hidden flaw. 5) When left to themselves, things always go from bad to worse. 6) In any collection of data, the figure that is most obviously correct—beyond all need of checking—is the mistake.

There are other problems of the sex crimes that tend to complicate their treatments. First, most sex crimes do not result in apprehending the criminal because these crimes are poorly reported by the public, and, when they are reported, the rate of catching the offender is low. Second, if the sex offender is apprehended, the rate of prosecution is relatively poor. If he is prosecuted, it is usually for a less serious version of the crime. The average expense of these types of crimes is generally higher than other types of crimes. Third, when there is a conviction for a sex crime, the sentence is often mollified in some manner, such as being placed on probation, parental supervision, or outpatient care. Fourth, where the sex offender is sentenced to incarceration, it is usually to some prison or mental hospital where there are no special programs for rehabilitating him. Fifth, sex offenders are a major custodial problem wherever they are incarcerated, regardless of whether there are special programs for sex offenders. And sixth, in those institutions where there are special programs, the programs are voluntary, and many who need the treatment do not volunteer. Some institutions screen the inmates so that only those “easy” cases, which are quite certain to be successful, are entered into the treatment. Often, the tough cases of fixated sex criminals who are not likely to be successfully rehabilitated are not offered the treatment. Some states have “indefinite” sentences for sex offenders to allow their being kept locked up until they are “cured.” Unfortunately, mistakes can be made in the judgment of the therapists, and sex criminals released as cured can recidivate to their crime. When this happens to be one of the more serious sex crimes, the resultant media coverage can be devastating. Such was the case of Willie Horton in Massachusetts, whose recidivism influenced Governor Dukakis’ losing the presidential election in 1988.

The following information is offered by way of substantiating some of these machine-gun-like accusations, first with regard to sex crimes being poorly reported. A YWCA study in 1974, in Baton Rouge, Louisiana, reported that the number of rapes was four to nine times the number of rapes that were reported to the police. Only a third of the cases that were reported resulted in an arrest, only 3 percent of those arrested were prosecuted, and only 16 percent of the prosecuted cases resulted in a conviction (Center for Women’s Policy Studies Report, 1981). The LEAA’s (Law Enforcement Assistance Administration of the U.S. Department of Justice) monthly newsletter for August 1978 reported that 100,000 children are sexually molested in the United States each year, and yet only 16.5 percent of boys and 43 percent of sexually abused girls reported it.

Shame, fear, disbelief by parents, and lack of willingness to discuss it are among the principle reasons given for not reporting. The National Crime Survey for the years 1973 through 1979 reported that 39.9 percent of rape victims reported the crime to the

police. Reasons for not reporting were fear, shame, and futility. The Florida Annual Crime Report announced that the police cleared 52.5 percent of forcible rapes on their records in 1978. The principle reason for the low arrest record was that victims are often slow to report to police. In 1994, there were 12,586,227 offenses known to the police. Only 21.4 percent were cleared by arrest.²

Another reason that sex crime is often unreported, unprosecuted, unpunished, or untreated is an observable phenomenon that I call “polarization.” By this, I mean the natural concentration of groups of individuals at opposite poles on interests, mores, lifestyles, and principles. Artists and other Bohemians have their art colonies, Africans have their “quarters,” Chinese have the Chinatowns, heroin addicts have their “shooting galleries,” religious cults have their Jonesboros, and sex criminals have their modern equivalents of Sodom and Gomorrah. A sex crime that will be viewed with disgust and diligent prosecution in Plymouth, Massachusetts, or Salt Lake City, Utah, will scarcely cause an eyebrow to be lifted in parts of San Francisco, California; New Orleans, Louisiana; Key West, Florida; or New York City. The large homosexual population in San Francisco, for example, is not so much homegrown as imported. Gays are driven out of areas where a common Saturday night pastime of the rednecks is “beating up on queers.” Conversely, the gays will be attracted and even solicited to go to places that have gay bars and baths. Gay newspapers (over 200 known) and clubs spread the news of “safe” locations, and the gays drift to these locations. The police in these safe havens can’t arrest half of the sex deviant population; indeed, even if they did, they might find themselves on the carpet explaining to the city fathers, who themselves are sex perverts. I believe that the polarization phenomenon causes sex crimes to be poorly reported in many areas and probably causes this type of crime to proliferate.

Another phenomenon similar to polarization is mobility. Many serious sex crimes go unpunished because the repeat offender is able to keep moving from city to city and state to state. Albert Fish, Theodore Bundy, and Henry Lee Lucas were able to avoid capture for extended periods of time in this manner. The “Green River” murderer of an estimated forty-nine women on the West Coast was still at large after more than ten years of intensive police investigations costing over \$16 million.

Another factor that sometimes makes sex crimes poorly reported and poorly prosecuted is the natural embarrassment and reticence associated with these matters. Sometimes the attitude of the police also comes into play here. They tend to be less than diligent when some kind of a sex pervert is robbed, beat up, or killed. They will not pursue their assailant with the same zeal that they might if the victim were an upstanding citizen.

Secondly, with regard to the prosecution of those sex offenders who are apprehended, the LEAA newsletter of May 1978 reported that half of felony cases in thirteen jurisdictions were dismissed because of poor evidence or problems with witnesses, 62 percent did not go to trial because of heavy workload problems, and less than 10 percent of

² National Institute of Justice Journal (July 1998): 4.

arrests resulted in trials. Of those cases that involved sexual assault and were tried in court, only 22 percent resulted in a conviction of the same charge. The rate for other crimes in the same jurisdictions at the time was between 30 and 35 percent. In another study, 52 percent of decisions to decline prosecution and 40 percent of decisions to dismiss cases were due to problems with witnesses, such as alcoholics who might not show up to testify or people whose close relationship with the defendant made them ineligible to testify.

Many convictions for aberrant sexual behavior are disguised under such broad charges as “murder,” “assault,” “kidnapping,” “disorderly conduct,” “public nuisance,” or even “vagrancy.” This leads to erroneous conclusions by those who study the statistical data on convictions. There is a strong relationship between sex offenses and alcoholism. Eighty-five percent of convicted sex offenders in the Hartley and Parker study of 1980 also had alcohol and/or drug abuse problems. Another study reported that about a third of the inmates had drunk heavily—more than 4 ounces of alcohol—just before committing their crime, and about 25 percent had drunk heavily almost every day for an entire year before their incarceration.³ It is not so surprising, therefore, that some sex crimes are concealed under the behavior associated with drunkenness.

Americans spend vast sums of money each year on their health and criminal justice protection. In 1985, healthcare spending consumed \$425 billion, the highest level in history up to that time, equivalent to 10.7 percent of the value of all goods and services produced in the nation—\$371.4 billion was spent for personal healthcare and \$53.6 billion for public healthcare. Approximately \$40 billion was spent in 1987 on the criminal justice system, escalating to \$74 billion in fiscal year 1990 and an estimated \$200 billion by 2005, with an additional \$20 billion for private security protection systems. One news report estimated \$450 billion for the criminal justice system and \$300 billion for defense in 2001. According to the *Nisle Bulletin* for January 1980, the average larceny arrest cost about \$747, the average robbery arrest cost \$1,234, and the average crime-against-the-person arrest cost \$15,973. The average guilty plea cost about \$312, and a jury trial cost \$2,125. By the end of 1987, the state of Florida had spent \$6 million, mostly in legal fees and expenses, on only one serious sex offender: Theodore Bundy. The McMartin preschool molestation case trial, which lasted nearly three years and cost \$13 million, was the longest, costliest criminal trial in U.S. history. The jury deadlocked on eight counts, and these were again tried over again in 1990.

Thirdly, only about one-fourth of offenders under correctional supervision are actually incarcerated. The remainder are in the community on probation or parole.⁴ Studies of the PROMIS system of records of crime in Washington, DC, showed that chances of a person serving prison time after being arrested for a felony was one in ten, and the odds of being sentenced for more than two years was only one in twenty-five. At one time, before the *Furman v. Georgia* court decision (408 U.S. 238, 1972), the death

³ U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics, *Prisoners and Alcohol* (1983).

⁴ James K. Stewart, Director of the National Institute of Justice, January 1987.

penalty was frequently inflicted for the more heinous sex crimes. Today, almost no death penalties are carried out for these crimes, and prisoners languish in prisons for many years at great expense to the public. Some of them have been paroled to once again commit their despicable crimes.

Fourthly, a 1964 survey found that about 10 percent of the 122 hospitals receiving sex offenders provided some special treatment for them, 71 percent of them treated the sex offenders with their psychotic patients, and 19 percent of the hospitals treated the sex offenders as mentally disturbed patients. Typically, most sex offenders were handled like other inmates in our hospitals and prisons, and they were released on parole under the same conditions as other inmates. More treatment programs specially designed for sex offenders have been inaugurated in recent years. By 1985, more than half of all mental hospitals and prisons provided some kind of treatment. Mental hospitals and prisons have different goals. The hospital seeks to restore mental health, while the prison usually seeks to reduce recidivism.

Recidivism remains a serious problem, however. According to the U.S. Bureau of Justice Statistics' 1979 survey, almost 95 percent of persons entering state prisons were repeat offenders. Although the numbers of special programs for sex offenders mushroomed across the nation in response to a growing concern in the public consciousness, there were still three states—Alabama, Arkansas, and Mississippi—at the middle of 1990 with no juvenile sex offender services, and three states with only one program (New Mexico, Oklahoma, and West Virginia, also Washington, DC). In 1990, the situation was almost as bad for adult sex offenders, with no services in one state, Mississippi, and only one service in four states, Alabama, Delaware, Rhode Island, and West Virginia.⁵ Another factor bearing on the treatment of sex offenders was the attitudes of correctional officers investigated by Weekes, Pelletier, and Beaudette (1995). Weekes, Pelletier, and Beaudette found that sex offenders were viewed as more dangerous, harmful, violent, unpredictable, aggressive, immoral, and irrational than were nonsexual offenders; they were also viewed as mentally ill, unchangeable, and bad. Offenders who committed sexual crimes against children were rated as significantly more immoral than those who offended against women. Only 20.7 percent of the officers felt that sex offenders were treatable.⁶

It may be well to pause at this point and reflect on just what is—legitimately—the best objective of treatment. Is it to punish? To make the good people feel better? To satisfy an indignant group in our society? Is it to deter other people from committing crimes? Is it to be the most cost effective? Various treatments for criminals use different measures of offender improvement. Some use general adjustment to the community at large. Some use personality or attitude changes, adjustment to prison life, educational achievement, vocational success, or recidivism. All of the measures of effectiveness of a

⁵ Fay Honey Knopp and Ferree Stevenson William, *Nationwide Survey of Juvenile and Adult Sex Offender Treatment Programs* (Orwell, VT: Safer Society Program, 1990).

⁶ J. R. Weekes, G. Pelletier, and D. Beaudette, "Correctional Officers: How Do They Perceive Sex Offenders?" *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 39 (1995): 55–61

treatment program have, to be sure, some virtue. I believe that the overall best measure of effectiveness is the recidivism rate (the rate at which offenders return to crime). Even this measure is often flawed by methodological inaccuracies and misunderstandings, however. For example, where in the criminal justice system do you measure recidivism? Is it at the time of the recommitting of the same or a different crime? This is usually not the case because, in the majority of cases, there is no record since there may be no complaint, confession, or apprehending. There is no record of a relapse into crime until there is a complaint and/or an arrest. Even at this point, many researchers will not accept the data that is recorded because it is not proven that the individual is guilty—in America, a man is considered innocent until proven guilty. Furthermore, the record is flawed for research purposes because it is incomplete and lacks descriptive particulars. So it is, then, that we find most of the recidivism data is taken at this later point in the criminal justice process, after the individual has been found guilty or confessed and is incarcerated or is on probation or parole. Voluminous records are available on him at this point, and the individual himself is readily available for an interview by the researcher.

The criminal justice system is far from perfect or even uniform in its various jurisdictions, and a defendant may drop out of the system at any point. Particularly in the case of the sex crimes, we often find inadequate prosecution because the victim, family, or witnesses do not want to suffer the moral taint and public exposure that is part and parcel of the trial. Because of inadequate testimony, the defendant is found not guilty, and all records are expunged. Sometimes, even when found guilty, the judge will release the defendant to medical treatment, psychiatric treatment, outpatient care, parole, family supervision, or social worker supervision. Still, the rate of recidivism to incarceration is used and represents the best and most frequently used measure of the treatment's effectiveness that we have. In 1989, the average conviction rate was 83 percent of those brought to trial for serious felonies in Florida. The success rate for the individual state attorney's districts varied from a high of 92 percent to a low of only 55 percent.⁷

Another of the compartments of the leviathan of the criminal justice system that leaks is the pretrial area. In 1992, 48 percent of the rapists who were apprehended were released, on bond or otherwise, before disposition. About a third of those released were rearrested on a new charge, failed to appear in court as scheduled, or committed some other violation that resulted in the revocation of their pretrial release. Eight percent of these absconded from the criminal justice system entirely.⁸

Fifth, sexual aggression is very prevalent in the milieu of the correctional institutions and correctional literature. Books about notorious criminals add to this picture. Daniel Lockwood's 1980 *Prison Sexual Violence* and Vincent Bugliosi's *Helter Skelter*, a best seller about Charles Manson, for example, tells how Manson held a razor to another

⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 30, 1990).

⁸ Bureau of Justice Statistics Executive Summary, NCJ 151860 and NCJ 148818 (November 1994).

prisoner's throat while he sodomized him. Within the next eight months, Manson sexually attacked three other prisoners. He later committed the infamous and atrocious Sharon Tate murders.

For a large percentage of the prison population, being deprived of their normal sexual release with women is the biggest single deprivation and punishment that prison imposes. Many strategies have been employed by prison authorities to mollify the aggressive behavior resulting from this deprivation. Some jurisdictions have permitted conjugal visitations as a reward for good behavior; others have imposed extra, heavy physical labor to meet the threats of violent behavior among prisoners. A relatively new problem is the epidemic of AIDS (Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome) in New York, New Jersey, California, and Alabama prisons resulting from homosexual rape and consenting homosexual activity. AIDS is presently incurable and deadly, usually resulting in death within four years once developed. Another problem is the high suicide rate of young sex offenders in prison due to their guilt and fear complexes resulting from hazing and rape by other inmates. Constant surveillance must be kept up in order to avert suicides.

Sixthly, the prestigious Panel on Research on Rehabilitative Techniques reported in their summary in 1979 to the National Research Council and National Academy of Sciences that after hundreds of studies, there was no known program or method of rehabilitation that could be guaranteed to reduce the criminal activity of released offenders.

Cohen, Garafalo, et al. reported in 1979 that 36 percent of dangerous sex offenders incarcerated under Massachusetts' sexual psychopath laws were found responsive to psychotherapy. After six years, 36 percent of them were still confined. It is largely because of the loud hue and cry of the public, which resulted when sex offenders repeated their horrid crimes within a short time of being released from confinement, that several states enacted laws that provide for incarceration for indefinite periods until cured.

In the United States in the 1990s, the incidence of crime was so frequent that plea-bargaining became a necessary evil. In spite of the addition of more judges and prosecutors than there had ever been before, they simply could not keep up with the demands to try all of them in open court without use of the plea bargain.

Plea-bargaining is the process that allows a criminal defendant to plead guilty to a lesser crime than the one charged, and the prosecution and the defense come to an agreement to resolve the case. More than 95 percent of cases are settled without a trial. They are decided by negotiated pleas.⁹ The criminal justice system would be paralyzed without plea-bargaining. The U.S. Constitution provides that "in all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy trial," but in truth, criminal trials have largely disappeared in the United States and have been replaced by coping

⁹ Ralph Slovenko, "Consulting Editor's Editorial: Plea Bargaining," *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 42, no. 2 (June 1998): 108-113.

a plea. Some view plea-bargaining as a procedure devoid of values in the disposition of criminal cases because it does not meet any of the traditional objectives of the criminal law. It does not serve the goals of retribution, deterrence, incapacitation, or rehabilitation.¹⁰

Doesn't it seem that we are doing something terribly wrong in America? On average, we are more prosperous than ever before. We have more and better schools and more and better information-sharing systems. We know more, we are healthier, we live longer, and we are better fed, housed, and clothed. We are freer to travel, to come and go, yet crime increases, mental health problems proliferate, and new and deadly diseases (e.g., AIDS) appear and take their deadly toll along with alcohol, drug addiction, and suicide in ever-increasing numbers. Quo Vadis? Where are we headed? Crimes of violence are increasing. At the end of 1988, we were at an all-time murder record in several of our major cities, and the bloody pace showed no sign of abating. In New York, homicides were up 18 percent, in Houston 44 percent, and in Washington, DC, 65 percent. Whither goest thou America? We had better give ear to some new proposals. The following will offer a new approach to the treatment of some of our most serious crimes precisely where it is most desperately needed.

The Journal of Interpersonal Violence for March and April 1999 published a series of articles on sex offender treatments in Europe. These stemmed from two major conferences on this subject, the first of which was held in Utrecht in September 1995. The second meeting was held in Prague in October 1996. A major study of crime in many of these countries was published in Dutch, and an English version is available (two volumes).

One recent study across several countries showed the most important predictor of high crime rates was the percentage of the population who are young males, ages sixteen to twenty-nine.¹¹ This is the time in most men's lives when their testosterone peaks, making them more lustful and aggressive and prone to commit crimes.

All of the countries are greatly concerned about the sex offender problem. Most of them rely most heavily on their criminal justice systems and punishment as their primary treatment, but there is considerable interest and use of all sorts of other treatments, including castration. Czechoslovakia appears to be the main user of castration with eighty-four of the worst types of sex offenders castrated in the past ten years with zero recidivism. Next in line for number of castrations is Germany. The political upheavals in several of the countries (reunification of Germany ... splitting of the Soviet Union ... Balkan wars) were major factors affecting sex offender treatment. Expense was also a factor, reducing psychological treatments and CPA use also.

¹⁰ G. B. Palermo, M. A. White, L. A. Wasserman, and W. Hanrahan, "Plea Bargaining: Injustice for All?" *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 42 (1998): 117.

¹¹ "Piecing Together the Cross-national Crime Puzzle," *National Institute of Justice Journal* (January 2000): 37.

II. Punishment

Punishment will be considered as a treatment, and it will be considered first among our panoply of treatments because it has been used since the dawn of recorded history and because its objective of preventing recidivism is really the same as most of the other treatments. Also, we need to examine it to some extent in order to round out our comparisons, and, of course, punishment is universally the principal modality employed with sex criminals. In 1994, the number of Americans doing time behind bars or under “correctional supervision” was 5.1 million.¹ In 1995, it was 6.3 million, 2.8 percent of American adults.² In 1996, the total was 5.5 million.³ In 1997, 2.8 million arrests of persons under age eighteen were made.

Where are we with punishment? We are on the same endless merry-go-round that we have been on for thousands of years—cycle after continuous cycle. The endless arguments go on about whether punishment deters people in general from committing crimes, or whether it works to deter special people who are weighing the pros and cons of committing a crime, or whether it deters one who has received punishment from committing a crime again, and so on. One thing we can say for punishment is that it makes the punisher feel good. Revenge is sweet. Exacting retribution gives the “good” people, and the population as a whole, a lift—a feeling of moral rightness, of being justified.

Over thousands of years, the chief priests have enacted penances for sins and codified them into the canonical laws. National governing bodies have developed their civil and criminal laws to do the same—“Lex talionis,” an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth—much like the rest of the animal kingdom.

The earliest written records of punitive laws and actions come down to us from the cuneiform impressions in clay tablets in the Sumerian civilization dating back to about 4500 BC. The oldest legal code surviving intact is from Hammurabi, king of Babylon from 2076 to 2025 BC.

Does punishment really do anything to prevent crime or recidivism? The answer is no, or at best, it is very iffy: if it is sure that the punishment will inevitably result from any given crime, if it is severe (the pain of the punishment must outweigh any pleasure that the crime might give the criminal), and if it is swift (right away, immediately after

¹ “Criminal Population Tops 5 Million,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 28, 1995): 1A.

² Bureau of Justice Statistics Report, released June 30, 1996. Reported in the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (July 1, 1996): 2A.

³ “Record Number of Adults on Probation,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (August 15, 1997): 3A.

the crime, not at some uncertain future time). It was said that in the days of Genghis Khan (AD 1162–1227), punishment was so sure, severe, and swift that a virgin could walk at midnight with a bag of gold down any street in the city without fear. We do not have that kind of justice today, and we have not had it for many centuries, except very briefly in limited areas, in spite of major efforts with all the ingenuity that civilization could muster. The more serious of the sex crimes seem to have an even worse record than the other categories of crime with their characteristic resulting swiftness, surety, and severity of punishment. In 1992, the average number of days between arrest and conviction for felony cases disposed by state courts was 173—almost a six-month delay.⁴

B. F. Skinner proved with scientific experiments that organisms respond to both reward and punishment, but not equally. He found that behavior is very strongly determined by various schedules of rewards, but moderate punishment does not permanently eliminate the operant behavior it follows. Punishment only temporarily decreases the frequency of the behavior. Another complication to the consideration of punishment as it relates to the sex crimes is that what might be considered punishment to the ordinary person might be a pleasure to the sex criminal. The homosexual can find a happy hunting ground in prison. The sadomasochist may derive pleasure from his punitive sufferings of prison. Albert Fish eagerly helped the executioner affix the electrodes to his body, anticipating “the one big thrill that I haven’t tried yet,” as he said before they threw the switch that ended his long, grisly career.

James K. Stewart, director of the National Institute of Justice in 1985, reported, “There is perhaps no judicial function more profound in impact than the power to punish. Thus, it is not surprising that issues of sentencing and punishment are subjects of intense public debate.” Arguments about these complex issues reflect the varying purposes assigned to punishment by our society and our criminal justice system. One view emphasizes protecting society through incapacitation of offenders, preventing them from committing additional crimes while they are incarcerated. Another view focuses on deterrence—that the severity of the sanction not only curbs future crimes by the sentenced offender, but also acts as a threat to dissuade other would-be criminals from breaking the law. Punishment as retribution is still another viewpoint in which the gravity of the crime primarily determines how severe the sentence should be, rather than considerations of incapacitation or deterrence.

Paternoster and Piquero reviewed several studies of deterrence and concluded that formal sanctions may lead to further offending.⁵ Punishment frequently backfires and produces defiance rather than deterrence. Defiance is the result of unacknowledged shame for the one punished. When punishment is imposed without procedural fairness, their data showed that it could backfire. In the absence of substantive fairness, as with disadvantaged youths and African youths in some jurisdictions, defiance frequently

⁴ National Institute of Justice Journal (July 1998): 4.

⁵ R. Paternoster and A. Piquero, “Reconceptualizing Deterrence: An Empirical Test of Personal and Vicarious Experiences,” *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency* 32, no. 3 (1995): 281–282.

overcomes deterrence. Spence generalized even further: "Punishment cures nothing. Punishment does not free us of crime. It only creates it ... crime will end when punishment ends."⁶

In spite of the ineffectiveness of most of the punishments, they have been made more threatening with new laws. In 1996, prominent new laws to punish and control sex offenders were passed. Megan's Law legislation was passed in most states, which required that local residents be warned of the presence of a sex offender. In 1997 and 1998, civil commitment of violent sex predators became law in nine states, and at least nineteen state legislatures had such measures pending as of March 31, 1998. Treatment and other costs of keeping sex offenders under civil commitment cost the state of Washington \$5.5 million for sixty-four offenders (\$859,375 per prisoner).

On a moral level, we are taught by the Bible, "Judge not, that ye be not judged," "Vengeance is mine, saith the Lord" (Deuteronomy 32:35), "To err is human, it is divine to forgive," and the Golden Rule, "Do unto others as ye would have them do unto you." These and many others, like pieces of the ancient wisdom, as well as modern scientific studies affirm that revenge, vindictiveness, and vengeance do not work in rehabilitative strategies. Many people daily pray to be forgiven for their sins, yet they are constantly demanding the extraction of evermore severe sanctions from those unfortunate enough to be caught, but these sanctions simply do not work. As Jeremy Bentham deduced in 1789, since all punishment involves pain and is therefore evil, it ought to be admitted only "so far as it promises to exclude some greater evil."

On a philosophical level, we find wide differences of opinion that affect how punishment is applied. Disparities exist between urban, suburban, and rural jurisdictions, which can be attributed to the local legalities and religious norms and practices. Even within a single jurisdiction, the individual philosophies and views of judges and prosecutors result in widely varying disparities of sentencing for similar offenses. Minorities have long been discriminated against in this manner. The criminal justice system's operations are further varied by the deliberations and discretionary judgments of parole and probation boards, which further modify judicial sentences in many cases. Sentence lengths vary widely from state to state, as well as within the state, for similar crimes and similar circumstances. In Florida in 1983, a person sentenced by a judge to serve life in prison actually served an average of seven to twelve years. There have been many studies of sentence length effects, but the results are so variable that it is impossible to relate sentence length to recidivism rates.

The recidivism rate remains around 63 percent for most crimes. One deduction that could be made from this surprising fact is that if the public can accept this high risk of the criminal repeating his crime after release from prison, then money could be saved in the prison system by early release or short sentences.

Efforts have been made to eliminate the injustice of sentence length disparity by standardizing sentences ... a kind of computer justice that would eliminate philosoph-

⁶ G. Spence, O. J.: *The Last Word* (New York: St. Martins Press, 1997), 237, 239.

ical differences between judges. Florida enforced such sentencing guidelines between 1983 and 1986 to correct the obvious discrepancies. In January 1987, standard sentences were scorned by judges, mocked by politicians, maligned by prosecutors, and considered by the Florida Supreme Court for major overhaul, elimination, or changing to a list of non-binding suggestions to judges. The guidelines were originally designed to create “truth in sentencing” with offenders serving close to their full terms, but they failed to do this because of generous “gain time” provisions and prison-crowding problems. Judges stayed within the guidelines 81 percent of the time, levied lighter sentences 12 percent of the time, and demanded heavier penalties 7 percent of the time.

The time actually served also varies widely. A report released in January 1999 by the Justice Department’s Bureau of Justice Statistics showed that on an average, violent offenders freed in 1997 had served 54 percent of their sentences. In 1993, they had served 47 percent. About 18 percent of those released in 1997 served full sentences compared to 13 percent in 1990. More than 90 percent of prison admissions for violent offenses were in states requiring that at least 50 percent of the sentence be served. About 70 percent of prison admissions were in states requiring violent offenders to serve at least 85 percent of their sentences. Federal legislation passed in 1994 authorized the government to reward states with grants that set the 85 percent minimum. Twenty-seven states followed the U.S. government’s guidelines in this respect.

In the late 1990s, it became apparent that the deprivation-of-liberty model of punishment was once again giving way to the “penal harm” movement. Penal harm advocates contend that the incarceration experience should inflict pain and make conditions of confinement as harsh as possible. Vaughn and Smith list several references demonstrating the various aspects of the penal harm movement, including the diminishing of the commitment to treatment, healing, and rehabilitation by prison medical personnel.⁷ This has been considered unheard of by the general public and goes directly against the normal commitment of doctors to the Hippocratic oath “to at least do no harm ...” Whipping of prisoners was formally abolished in 1972 in the USA, but torture of prisoners was still epidemic worldwide in the 1980s, with more than half of the countries using the practice.⁸ Remote-controlled, electroshock stun belts that inflict shocks of 50,000 volts for eight seconds are commonly used on defendants in some American courtrooms.⁹ Shariah, the Islamic legal code derived from the Koran, has called for flogging and the amputation of limbs for 1,400 years. Shariah law allows flogging for certain sexual offenses and drinking of alcohol.

⁷ M. Vaughn and L. Smith, “Practicing Penal Harm Medicine in the United States: Prisoners Voices from Jail,” *Justice Quarterly* 16, no. 1 (1999): 175–231.

⁸ R. Laurence, “Part I: Torture and Mental Health: A Review of the Literature,” *Issues in Mental Health and Nursing* 13 (1992): 301–310.

⁹ J. Welsh, “Electroshock Torture and the Spread of Stun Technology,” *The Lancet* (April 26, 1997).

Robert Martinson's monumental study¹⁰ of 231 studies of attempts at rehabilitation of criminals between 1945 and 1967 was the first really comprehensive review of the voluminous research literature on treatments designed to rehabilitate prisoners and prevent recidivism. He concluded that, with few exceptions, these attempts had no appreciable effect on recidivism. Further continuing studies of work on rehabilitation after Martinson's have led to similar conclusions. In spite of the fact that Martinson identified castration as one of the very few treatments that worked more reliably than any others, he downgraded it with the hope that policy implications of its success would be found "distinctly limited." He apparently saw castration as a treatment to be imposed forcibly as punishment on convicted offenders, thus becoming so draconian that the moral conscience of a democratic society would be offended.

Dr. James L. Mathis points out in his 1972 book *Clear Thinking About Sexual Deviations: A New Look at an Old Problem* (p. 210) that sexual deviants are undesirable patients for psychiatrists, and they have generally avoided sexual deviants in the past. He further points out that the traditional methods of psychiatric treatment have not been good answers to their severe personality disorders. Responses come painfully and slowly, if at all ... Nevertheless, in spite of the demonstrated futility of most of these other treatments, I consider it essential we enumerate as many of these treatments as we can find descriptions for in order to give as complete a picture as possible of all the options.

¹⁰ R. Martinson, "What Works? Questions and Answers About Prison Reform," *The Public Interest* 35 (1974): 22-54.

III. Capital Punishment

I feel we must consider the death penalty in some detail under the heading of punishment, because it is considered the ultimate of all punishments. It is the only one that compares in effectiveness with castration. It is the one punishment that is nearly 100 percent certain of preventing any given criminal from repeating his crime. Even here, however, there is not perfect unanimity of opinion among the experts. Some may consider the ultimate punishment to be burning in hell for eternity. Others may consider the ultimate punishment to be breaking on the rack, dismemberment, being pulled apart by horses, or some other gruesome process. It can be said, however, that some progress has been made over the centuries in the search for the most expeditious and painless methods of execution such as by electric chair or narcotic overdose. The other “ultimate” punishments are seldom heard of today.

The Old Testament of the Christian Bible calls for the use of the death penalty in Genesis 9:6; Exodus 21:12–25, 22:18 and 20, 31:14 and 15, and 35:2; Leviticus 20:2, 9–16, and 27, and 24:11–14; Numbers 1:51, 3:10, 15:32–36, 18:7, and 35:15–33; Deuteronomy 13:6–11, 17:12, 1:8–13, and 21:18–21; and Proverbs 20:20. The death penalty is called for mostly for the crime of murder, but also for worshipping the devil or other gods, profaning the Sabbath, dishonoring parents, human sacrifice, adultery, incest, homosexuality, and bestiality. Even though murder was the most frequently mentioned death penalty crime, only four of the twenty-four murderers identified in the Old Testament were actually executed. The New Testament generally accepts the legitimacy of the Old Testament teachings, but it does not contain any overt endorsement of the death penalty.

Death by stoning, burning, decapitation, and strangulation were mentioned in the first five books of the Bible written between 1513 and 1473 BC. Burning, hanging, drowning, being buried alive, and decapitation were prescribed by the Roman Twelve Tables written about 451 BC, and the Greek Athenian law of 400 BC added being thrown off a cliff and binding to a stake to die slowly in public (an early form of crucifixion) to the other forms of capital punishment already mentioned. Joan of Arc was burned as a heretic in 1431. Slow death and instant death were in use at that time. Capital punishment increased in Tudor, England, from 1450 to 1555, but declined again by 1650. The first execution in New York State took place at The Commons in City Hall Park in 1700. The long-drop-gallows method of executing prisoners was adopted in 1783. The guillotine was first used in France in 1793. The first execution by electrocution occurred August 6, 1890, at Auburn Prison in New York. Gee Jon was the first to be executed in a gas chamber in 1924 in Nevada. Twenty thousand people

at Owensboro, Kentucky, witnessed the last American public execution in 1935. Public executions ended in France in 1939. On January 17, 1977, Gary Gilmore became the first man executed by firing squad in Utah since capital punishment was reinstated, and Velma Barfield was the first woman executed after the reinstatement in 1984. She died by lethal injection in North Carolina. In 1989, New Zealand became the first country in the world to ratify the United Nations Protocol on Civil and Political Rights Abolition of the Death Penalty Act.

The quest for the most “humane” way to execute prisoners went on in 1998. The *Lancet* quoted a prisoner on death row in Pennsylvania as saying, “From hanging to the electric chair to lethal injection; how much prettier can you make it? Yet the prettier it becomes, the uglier it is.” Since its introduction into law in 1977 and its first use in 1982, questions have been raised about the efficacy and humanity of lethal injection and the issue of physician involvement in such executions. The American Medical Association has clearly stated that it is not the role of doctors to take part in executions, but doctors have continued in spite of these guidelines to administer sedatives and perform physical exams at executions. A report by Amnesty International, published in January 1998, surveyed the use of lethal injection and debunked some of its myths. The report cited executions lasting as long as seventy minutes and cases in which the prisoner showed signs of extreme distress during the administration of the lethal drug.¹ As of January 1, 2000, thirty-four states were using lethal injection to execute their death-row inmates. In some states, the entire procedure takes a couple of minutes. In others, it can last thirty minutes. Generally, an inmate is pronounced dead within five to ten minutes after receiving the injections. The procedure usually begins with an injection of sodium thiopental, an anesthetic to render the inmate unconscious. This is followed by injections of pancuronium bromide, a muscle relaxant that paralyzes the muscles, and then potassium chloride, which stops the heart. A common problem is finding viable veins, especially in inmates who have been drug users since frequent injections cause scarring of the blood vessels.

At one time in eighteenth-century England, some 200 crimes were punishable by death. The incidence of these crimes was not noticeably reduced by even this dire punishment, however. In the United States, crimes punishable by death have included first-degree murder, treason, espionage, rape, kidnapping, robbery, arson, train wrecking, bombing, piracy, using a machine gun in the commission of a felony, large-scale drug trafficking, mutiny, looting, and desertion in the face of the enemy. In Communist countries, other crimes punishable by death include counter-revolutionary activity, plunder of public property, organizing armed bands, destruction of important economic installations, sabotage, failure to work, violence against an official, destroying a building, endangering rail or ship travel, and failure to observe construction regulations by an official.

¹ “The Medicine That Kills,” *The Lancet* 351 (February 1998): 441.

The sentencing of a Louisiana man August 28, 2003, for raping an eight-year-old girl reopened the debate about whether crimes that do not involve killings may be punished by death. Between 1930 and 1964, 455 men were executed for rape in America, almost all in the South. Four hundred five of them were black, and almost all were charged with raping white women.

Beginning about the time of Caesar Beccaria's famous *An Essay on Crimes and Punishment* (1764), governments began an abrupt about-face in their policies of imposing the death penalty for relatively frivolous crimes, and many countries drastically reduced the number of executions. Finally, many of the countries abolished the death penalty entirely: In Luxembourg, the last execution was performed in 1822, in Venezuela it was in 1863, Portugal in 1867, Denmark in 1892, in the Netherlands the last execution (except for a few wartime instances) was in 1860, in Belgium the last peacetime execution was in 1863, in Sweden in 1910, in Great Britain in 1965, and in France in 1980. Also, Spain, Canada, Mexico, Switzerland, and Brazil have abolished capital punishment. By 1998, more than 100 countries had stopped using capital punishment. Italy and Germany not only allow no executions, but they will not permit an exchange of prisoners with other countries if they believe they will be executed as a result. It still continues in the United States, China, Russia, India, and South Africa. In 1997, China executed about 3,000 people. In 1996, there were 4,367 executions in China.²

For a long time, there has been considerable debate about the execution of mentally retarded prisoners, and most of the American states do not execute men with less than a 70 IQ (intelligence quotient). As of late 2001, only twenty states continued to execute this type of person. The United States is nearly alone in the world in this practice. Only the United States, Japan, and Kyrgystan have carried out such executions in recent years. The European Union opposes capital punishment in all circumstances and supports its universal abolition. Execution of the mentally retarded who are least able to defend themselves and may be the most likely victims of judicial error, offends against standards of decency throughout the world. On June 20, 2002, the Supreme Court voted six to three that executing mentally retarded murderers is unconstitutionally cruel.

In the United States, we had a ten-year moratorium (between 1967 and 1977) on the death penalty as a result of the Supreme Court's five-to-four decision in the famous rape case *Furman v. Georgia*. Thirty-three of the states reformulated their death penalty laws around the Supreme Court guidelines and resumed the practice of putting certain types of criminals to death. From 1977 to May 2001, 711 were executed. Of those, 56 percent were Caucasian, 35 percent African, and 7.1 percent Hispanic. On December 18, 1998, the 500th inmate was executed since capital punishment resumed.³ In 1991, 2,482 death-row inmates awaited a similar fate. California allowed the death penalty,

² Northwest Florida Daily News (September 4, 1998): 2A.

³ "Capital Punishment," Bureau of Justice Statistics Bulletin, NCJ 150042 (December 1994): 2.

but had no executions for twenty-five years, until 1992. As of June 2002, twelve states still had no death penalty. New Hampshire lawmakers were the first to vote to repeal their death penalty law May 18, 2000. The year for the highest number of executions was 1957 with sixty-five executions, and in October 1997 there were fifty-seven. The youngest executed since 1976 was Scott Carpenter, twenty-two, of Oklahoma; the oldest was Anthony Antone, sixty-six, in Florida.

The *Furman v. Georgia* case was over African men raping a Caucasian woman and being sentenced to death, and the appeal showed that a disproportional number of African men had been executed for this crime. Africans were about 12.5 percent of the population, but 35 percent of those executed. It was headline news when a Caucasian man was executed June 6, 1997 for the 1981 murder of a nineteen-year-old African man in Mobile, Alabama. This was the first execution of a Caucasian-on-African murderer in Alabama in eighty-three years. The Alabama Department of Corrections had 149 men and four women on death row at the time —eighty-nine Caucasians, sixty-three Africans, and one Asian.

Although at least 65 percent of Americans favor the death penalty (82 percent did in a June 2001 survey by *Parade* magazine), there is a vocal opposition. The main opposing organization consists of more than 50,000 people who have taken the Declaration of Life pledge. Former New York Governor Mario Cuomo and U.S. Representative Carolyn McCarthy are members, and a Roman Catholic nun from Brooklyn, Sister Camille D'Arignzo, started the pledge in 1994. Democrats, liberals, and moderates tend to oppose the death penalty. Republicans, conservatives, Caucasians, males, married persons, and members of high social classes with more education are much more supportive.

The American Bar Association called for a temporary halt to executions in 1997, and in 1999, the United Nations followed with a proposal for a worldwide moratorium. Pope John Paul II made a strong appeal to the United States to do away with the death penalty, and by 2001, many protestant churches. Judaism and other religions became more vocal against it. The pace of executions, however, rose in the 1990s, pushed by laws that limited the number of appeals. Forty-six people were executed in the first five months of 1999.⁴ Eighty-five prisoners were executed in the United States in the year 2000.

Judging the effect of the death penalty by the crime statistics of jurisdictions with comparable demographics with the death penalty against those who do not have it, it is impossible to determine what the deterrent effect actually is. This country continues to have one of the highest serious crime rates of all developed nations, but the majority of the populace still believes in the death penalty. A 1986 *Parade* magazine survey of 40,000 readers showed that 80 percent believed there should be capital punishment, and only 20 percent did not. Forty-six percent of those who supported capital punishment believed there should be a minimum age for the death penalty, and about 54 percent

⁴ "National Support for Executions Wavering," Northwest Florida Daily News (May 31, 1999): A1.

believed there should be no minimum age. The 1984 and 1986 Associated Press Polls showed comparable results. Eighty-six percent supported the death penalty, 56 percent supported it only in certain cases (such as the murder of children, police officers, or multiple victims), 51 percent supported it for rape, 33 percent supported it for child molestation, 20 supported it for treason, and only 11 percent said there should be no death penalty at all. A July 2000 Harris poll found only 64 percent supported the death penalty, down from 75 percent in 1997.

During those periods in which death penalties were legal, there has been a marked ambivalence in modern times in carrying out the sentence. In England between 1900 and 1949, 1,210 persons were sentenced to death, but only 632 were actually executed. In France, between 1900 and 1913, 4,388 convictions for capital homicide were judged, but only 338 had death sentences imposed, and only seventy-eight were actually executed. Again in France from 1919 to 1938, 6,969 death sentences were imposed, while only 555 were executed. In Florida, the death penalty was reinstated in 1977, and in the following fifteen years, 454 men and women were sentenced to death, 316 death warrants were signed, and thirty-six were executed. That was more than any other state. The courts later reduced the death decisions to lesser sentences for 126 of these; six were granted clemency by the governor and cabinet, and seven were freed entirely.

Gerald Stano, convicted murderer of ten women in Florida and confessor of thirty other murders in two other states, was one of those executed. The governor signed death warrants on him on two occasions, but Stano still remained alive on appeal for eighteen years. Stano was finally electrocuted on March 23, 1998. Theodore Bundy was another multiple-murderer who avoided the death penalty three times. There are innumerable last-minute stays of execution, and the courts are burdened with heavy backlogs of appeals and retrials. Every inmate has a thorough due process, averaging about eleven years. The justice system is clogged as a result, and the process has become very expensive. Appeals alone can run as high as \$3 million, according to Michael Radalet of the University of Florida. Amnesty International reported that it costs at least \$500,000 to convict, house, and execute an average prisoner under sentence of death.⁵ Florida's death-row inmates will stay there an average of 9.7 years pending appeals. Nationwide, fifty-six murderers were executed in 1994. The average cost was about \$2 million per person executed.

On January 31, 2000, Governor George Ryan of Illinois declared a moratorium on Illinois executions and appointed a commission to see whether the legal process for handling capital cases in his state needed to be fixed. Four other states set about doing the same thing, acting in the wake of the Illinois case. Governor Ryan was acting in response to the Anthony Porter case, which had been just two days shy of lethal injection for a pair of 1982 murders when another man confessed to the crime. Eleven other men had been freed from death row in Illinois when Porter, who had an IQ of 51, was freed, and several articles had been published in the Chicago Tribune showing the

⁵ USA Weekend (August 31–September 2, 1990).

dangerously sloppy way that the death sentences had been handed out. The Newsweek cover story of June 12, 2000, told that DNA tests and new evidence had saved eighty-seven prisoners from execution in the past twenty-five years, even though most of the nation's 3,600 death-row inmates are probably guilty as hell. The article also showed that the death penalty is far more expensive than life without parole. The difference is in the up-front prosecution costs, which are at least four times greater than in cases where death is not sought. California spends an extra \$90 million on its capital cases beyond the normal costs of the system.

On April 19, 1995, Timothy McVeigh bombed the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City, killing 168 innocent men, women, and children. He was arrested shortly afterward, tried, convicted, and sentenced to death. At 7 am June 11, 2001, he was executed by lethal injection in Terre Haute, Indiana, with considerable publicity. In spite of the magnitude of his crime—the largest number of victims known in the history of the country—there were considerable numbers of people who raised an outcry against the execution, saying it was a “failure of human rights leadership at the highest levels of government ... The U.S. has allowed vengeance to triumph over justice.” Members of another human rights group, Hands of Cain, demonstrated in front of the U.S. Embassy in Rome, Italy, even though McVeigh was the first man executed by the federal government in thirty-eight years.

A local newspaper headline blared, “Study: Death Penalty Dying,” on Monday, June 12, 2000. The article quoted a study by Columbia University Professor James Liebman of 4,587 appeals from 1973 through 1995, two-thirds of which were successful. Most of the cases were so seriously flawed that they had to be done over again. Only 5 percent of the 5,760 death sentences imposed in that period were carried out. A state or federal court threw out the conviction or death sentence in 68 percent of the cases. The main reasons appeared to be incompetent defense attorneys and misconduct by prosecutors. There were 642 executions between 1977 and June 2000.⁶

So it is then, even with this ultimate penalty, we still do not have the necessary requirements for effectiveness. The death penalty is neither sure nor swift in the manner of its administration. It has been steadily losing whatever deterrent effect it may have had to prevent other crimes for more than a hundred years. Capital punishment in America is a paper tiger. In the eighteen years after the Supreme Court allowed states to resume the death penalty, only about 2 percent of the 3,000 death-row inmates were executed. It is pretty clear that executions as performed in the United States do not deter homicides, and they may actually increase them. Thompson (1997) traces the brutalization effect and the increase in homicides in the twelve months following an execution.⁷

⁶ “Study: Death Penalty Dying,” Northwest Florida Daily News (June 12, 2000): A1.

⁷ Thompson, *Homicide Studies* (May 1997), 110–128.

IV. Prison

The use of imprisonment as a criminal sanction in the United States has generally been justified as serving one of four purposes of the criminal justice system: rehabilitation, deterrence, punishment, and incapacitation. For a long time, rehabilitation and deterrence were the primary goals, but in the past fifty years, a major shift has been necessary in the ideology concerning the purposes of incarceration; the penal and retribution purposes of incapacitation have assumed much greater importance. Support for the rehabilitative ideal began to decline in the 1970s¹ along with the realization that it was a failed experiment, and the data showed that there was very little deterrence inasmuch as a large percentage of criminals who had been incarcerated returned to prison for new crimes. About two-thirds of all felons released from state prisons were rearrested within three years.

In the United States, crime and incarceration rates have long been the highest among modern societies. They are six to eight times higher than other industrialized countries. In 1993, there were 948,881 prisoners confined in state and federal prisons and reformatories. If you include the city and county jail inmates (426,479 in 1992), the total was 1,375,360. In 1995, the total figure jumped to 1.6 million. In June 1997, it was more than 1.7 million; in December 1998, it was 1.825 million and estimated to be 2 million in the year 2000. With the over-55,000 annual increase in our prisoner population, we are unable to keep up with the demand for new prison space. Prison is by far the most expensive form of punishment. We can't appropriate money and build prisons fast enough. More than 1,000 were built between 1980 and 2000. Overcrowding has become a serious problem. Trends for the future indicate that the number of these prisoners is expected to increase even more. Our county and city jails house even greater numbers of prisoners, and there is a similar bleak forecast for their numbers to increase.

Studies of the yearly intake of prisons, jails, and reformatories in the United States and Europe show that from one-half to two-thirds of those imprisoned have served previous sentences in the same or other institutions. This fact reveals two important facets of the crime problem: one is that the criminal population is made up largely of those for whom criminal behavior is habitual, or a way of life; the other is that penal institutions do little to correct the basic behavior patterns of their inmates. The average prison stay is under three years for some 98 percent of all prisoners. Generally,

¹ K. Auerhahn, "Selective Incapacitation and the Problem of Prediction," *Criminology* 37, no. 4 (1999): 704.

the longer an offender is confined in prison and the more times he has been committed, the higher is the probability of his continued criminality. Prison contributes very little to “correction.” “We’re going to have to face up to it—the prison system doesn’t work.”²

Men are over eight times more likely than women to be incarcerated in prison at least once during their life. Among men, Africans (28.5 percent) are about twice as likely as Hispanics (16 percent) and six times more likely than Caucasians (4.4 percent) to be admitted to prison during their life.³ The century-old custom of protecting young, child inmates from contact with adults has been destroyed, and an attitude of “tough on crime” toward juveniles now prevails. In some states, there is no age minimum. In Wisconsin, the minimum age is ten, and in Oregon it’s twelve to incarcerate them in adult prisons.⁴

Prisons are warehouses full of mentally ill, aggressive, crafty, and antisocial people. They serve only to concentrate together all that is bad, violent, and destructive in humanity, thereby communicating, spreading, educating, and fostering counter-cultural and immoral lifestyles among their inmates. As Oscar Wilde, who was imprisoned in 1895 for “... committing acts of gross indecency with other male persons,” wrote in his famous *Ballad of Reading Gaol* (emphasis mine):

The vilest deeds like poison weeds,
Bloom well in prison-air;
It is only what is good in Man
That wastes and withers there:
Pale Anguish keeps the heavy gate,
And the Warder is Despair.
... And they scourge the weak, and flog the fool,
And gibe the old and grey,
And some grow mad, and **all grow bad**,
And none a word may say.
Each narrow cell in which we dwell
Is a foul and dark latrine,
And the fetid breath of living Death
Chokes up each grated screen,

And all but Lust is turned to dust

In humanity’s machine.

Incarceration alone often serves to intensify the sex offender’s desire to commit more such crimes.

² E. Cose, “Locked Away and Forgotten,” *Newsweek* (February 28, 2000): 54.

³ U.S. Department of Justice Bureau of Justice Statistics, NCJ 160092 (March 1997).

⁴ “They Finally Found an Answer to Overcrowded Prisons: Smaller Prisons,” *New Yorker* (October 16–23, 2000): 159.

Kruttschitt reviewed Samson and Laub⁵ and noted that job stability and marital attachment explain adult desistance from crime, independent of youthful delinquency.⁶ By contrast, the only observable effect of incarceration appears to be a criminogenic one, in that it serves to close off developmental trajectories of employment in later periods of life. These quantitative findings are buttressed by a qualitative analysis.

In addition, a tendency to spread crime, disease, and drug abuse exists in the prison environment. Tuberculosis is twenty times more frequent in prison. Hepatitis C afflicts 20 percent of U.S. prisoners (a U.S. News & World Report, August 5, 2002, news item), and AIDS is more than five times the rate in the general population.⁷ At the end of 1997, 0.55 percent of all state and federal prison inmates were reported to be infected with HIV—23,548 in all.⁸ “... Correctional inmates frequently engage in behaviors likely to spread the disease—particularly homosexual activity.”⁹ Prison healthcare expenses are a major burden. The tab in Florida in 1987 was \$85 million. Half the inmates who used a major drug, such as heroin, cocaine, PCP, or LSD, did not do so until after their first arrest, according to a 1986 survey by the Justice Department Bureau of Statistics.¹⁰ “Despite their segregation from society and continuous close supervision, prison inmates still manage to obtain illicit drugs. Such drug use in prison threatens the safety of inmates and staff, contradicts rehabilitative goals, undermines the authority of the correctional institution, reduces public confidence, and ultimately corrodes the safety of communities and neighborhoods to which offenders return after prison.”¹¹

Given the poor conditions that are prevalent in most jails and prisons, it is not surprising that we frequently hear of the eruption of prison violence in bloody rampages of mindless slaughter. The worst of these in modern times broke out September 9, 1971, at the Attica Correctional Facility in upstate New York. Forty-three people, more than in any insurrection since the Civil War, were killed in the rioting there. In spite of the many glaring flaws of prisons, they are improvements over earlier forms of extracting retributive vengeance.

Some of these earlier methods were designed to eliminate the offender by execution, banishment, exile, or transportation; ostracize him by branding, wearing a “scarlet letter,” or putting him in the pillory or stocks; or make him suffer physical injury by flogging, dismemberment, or mutilation. Mercifully, these methods are no longer employed and have been replaced by incarceration.

⁵ Robert J. Samson and John H. Laub, *Crime in the Making: Pathways and Turning Points* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1993).

⁶ Candace Kruttschnitt, “Buddy, Can You Par-a-digm? Three Predictive Models of Deviant Development,” *Journal of Research in Crime and Delinquency* 31, no. 3 (1994): 331.

⁷ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 15, 1988).

⁸ “HIV in Prisons 1997,” Bureau of Justice Statistics, NCJ 178284 (November 1999).

⁹ National Institute of Justice, *AIDS in Correctional Facilities: Issues & Options*, 3rd ed. (April 1988): XI.

¹⁰ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, (July 1, 1988).

¹¹ “Reducing Drug Use in Prisons,” *National Institute of Justice Journal* (October 1999): 11.

There have been many attempts down through the years to improve the prison system. Originally, the main emphasis was on hard labor and strict discipline, which were counted on to correct the errant behavior of the inmates. Later, in the eighteenth century, rationalists believed that solitude would help the offender reflect on his crimes, become penitent, and reform his ways. The more serious offenders were kept isolated in solitary confinement for long periods of time; unfortunately, many went insane as a result. This experiment gave way to another called the "Silent System," which allowed the prisoner to work with other inmates silently during the day, and at night, they were isolated in individual cells. The "Mark System," introduced about 1840, required prisoners to earn marks, or credits, through good conduct, hard work, and study. Marks could be subtracted also for indolence or misbehavior. When a prisoner earned the required number of marks, he became eligible for release. More recently, some of the features of the mark system have been brought into the reformatory movement in the United States, primarily for the treatment of youthful, first-time offenders. The reformatories generally emphasize segregation of various types of criminals, vocational training, academic training, industrial employment, and rewards for good behavior. Contemporary penal institutions are not guided by any one philosophy, and correctional programs are diversified and often experimental. Several of the state prison systems are transitioning toward new philosophies of therapy and rehabilitation. These rapid changes make it difficult to describe modern institutions in general terms.

Near the end of the twentieth century, there was a discernable trend toward a return to the solitary confinement of the eighteenth century. The proliferation of super-maximum security prisons across the country spoke eloquently of the fears about crime held by Americans. The minimum-contact, so-called "super-max" prison concept was epitomized in the formidable United States Penitentiary Administrative Maximum Facility (ADX) in Florence, Colorado. Constructed from the local tawny stone and rosy rock and nestled high in the arid landscape of the remote desert, the triangular, two-story, high-tech ADX is almost invisible. So are its 417 inmates. Many spend twenty-three out of every twenty-four hours locked behind a green steel door and barred grate inside an 8-by-12-foot cell with concrete furnishings and stainless steel toilets and sinks. By 1998, there were about sixty ADX-style state facilities. Most of them, such as the \$73 million ADX were opened after 1990; more were on the way at the end of the century.

Another of the strange quirks of the prison treatment is that there is poor enforcement of the criminal law in the state prisons (Eichenthal and Jacobs, 1991). Prisoners in state penal institutions continue to commit crimes while incarcerated, but despite this serious problem, these crimes are seldom reported. This under-reporting of prison crime distorts the nation's true crime rate and leads the general public to conclude that the number of offenses the inmate would have committed had he been on the streets reduces the crime rate. The offender has not, in fact, been "incapacitated;" his offending merely has been displaced from a setting in which his crime is more likely to be reported.

An infamous case occurred August 23, 2003, when the defrocked priest John Geoghan, a pedophile in a Massachusetts maximum-security prison for molesting boys, was brutally murdered by another inmate, Joseph L. Druce. Druce was serving a life sentence for a gay-bashing murder in 1988 and had told another inmate that he intended to do away with Geoghan. This inmate had warned prison officials that he was concerned about Druce six weeks before the murder, but was ignored. Massachusetts Governor Mitt Romney called Geoghan's slaying "a failure of government ... In jail, we have a particular responsibility because these people are under our direct care" (Northwest Florida Daily News, August 27, 2003, p. A8).

Certain features of prison administration are in conflict with some of the more progressive and promising treatments for the rehabilitation of prisoners. Treatment is a dynamic process that requires the cooperation and active participation of the offender if it is to be successful. Therapy cannot be foisted upon resistive and suspicious prisoners. Primary objectives of any prison administration are the maintenance of control over the inmates and the prevention of escapes and riots. The most grievous difficulty the prison administrator can face is the breakdown of authority due to inmate uprising or conspiracy. Other objectives, such as therapy, are relegated to positions of less importance. Regardless of the verbal support given therapy and related functions by administrators, they usually demanded that it should not interfere with the primary responsibilities for strict surveillance and custodial security.

Prisoners have a code of conduct, which is often directly opposed to the objectives of the administration. The main concern of the prisoner's code is the immediate gratification of inmate desires and objectives. The foremost objective of most inmates is to get out of prison at the earliest possible time. The value attached to release from prison is so great that the greatest violation of the code is to interfere with another inmate's attempts to gain freedom, regardless of the means. The second major commandment in the prisoner's code prohibits any inmate from interfering with the illegitimate activities of others, such as smuggling whiskey and dope into prison or sexual deviance. Treatment is not likely to be successful as long as there are significant contradictions between administrative policies, prisoners' norms of conduct, and treatment methods.

There is some evidence that for youthful offenders who were classified as minimum security risks, a less restrictive custody produced a lower recidivism rate than a highly restrictive one. For older prisoners with a high security risk classification, the degree of security had no observable effect on recidivism. Several other institutional programs have various other features besides security to make every element of the prisoners' environment a part of his treatment. Most of these programs go under the name of "milieu therapy." They are designed to reduce the distinctions between the custodial staff and the treatment staff; to create a supportive, non-authoritarian, and non-regimented atmosphere; and to enlist peer influence in the formation of constructive values. These programs for adults in regular prisons have clearly had no significant effect on parole failure or success rates. Most of these programs for youthful offenders also showed no significant improvement over controls, but one program, called the Marshall Program,

did show improvement for youths who had not previously spent time in regular institutions. For juveniles under age sixteen, the celebrated Highfield's Experiment, with a highly supportive environment, has shown improvement in recidivism rates over control groups in a regular reformatory. Other programs for juveniles have not shown significant improvement.

Severe overcrowding in jails and prisons has lent an even greater urgency in recent years to the debate about the purposes and effectiveness of incarceration. In 1983, the state and federal prison population was 438,830, and the city/county jail population was 223,551. In 1985, the state and federal prison population jumped to 490,041. By the year 2003, it reached two million. In 1986, the rate of prison population growth was such that nearly two new 500-bed prisons per week were required to simply keep pace with the expanding inmate population. The average cost of construction in 1986 was \$50,000 per bed. By 1991, the cost in some states was as high as \$110,000 per bed.¹² Overcrowding was generally agreed to be the number one criminal justice system problem in 1986, as well as several subsequent years. Policy makers can no longer avoid some of the central pragmatic concerns: How should limited resources be allocated to achieve the greatest degree of public safety? How do the benefits of incapacitating more offenders for longer periods of time balance against the problem of finite prison space? Will the public support the fiscal burden required to expand prison and jail facilities, or will they accept the risk of incarcerating few offenders? A special program on the McNeil-Lehrer TV show of December 23, 1986, brought out the following information: \$5 billion was being spent per year building new prisons and jails, and it still was not enough to hold all those who were convicted. We had one million people in prisons and jails in 1994. About one in twenty adult males will spend some time in jail was the forecast. Those jurisdictions that have the most people in prison do not have a better crime rate than those who have a lower percentage. (Washington, DC, has the highest percentage of its population in jail.) The principal reason for the large numbers in prisons now is that prosecutors and judges are asking for ever heavier prison sentences ... They, in turn, believe that they are responding to a public (or at least a media and politician) demand for heavier penalties to keep criminals off the streets.

All reforms that have been tried do not seem to work, yet searches are still underway for a better way. Experimental prison programs are still being tried, all at great expense. The National Institute of Corrections said we spent an average of \$15,974 a year to keep someone behind bars. The average annual cost per inmate rose to more than \$22,000 by 2003. The cost at mental health facilities where many sex offenders are committed, such as St. Elizabeth's Hospital in Washington, DC, is about \$99,680 a year.¹³ Prison activist Jerry Miller criticized the prison system for "spending a lot of money to destroy people." He also compared the probation and prison systems to the cures of aspirin and lobotomy. Former Governor White of Texas said that building

¹² National Institute of Justice, *Research in Action Bulletin* (September 1991).

¹³ USA Weekend (September 2, 1990).

more prisons was “like buying more mops to clean up the mess rather than fix the leaking pipe that caused it.” Judge Donald McCallum of Oakland, California, thought that it was “the Administration of Justice Industry that was a great vested interest” and was the driving force in the demand for more prisons. Between 1985 and 1996, annual expenditures on state prison activities more than doubled, going from under \$13 billion to over \$27 billion.

Although we cannot expect research alone to deliver final answers on these and other thorny issues, the growing body of sound research findings is helping to untangle some of the complexities and guide necessary revisions in policy and practices.

The past few years have seen a major movement for creating more rational sentencing practices. Sentencing guidelines are examples. They are judicial tools for reducing sentence disparity and making explicit a jurisdiction’s sentencing policy. Sentencing guidelines have been incorporated into the sentencing practices of a number of states. From the legislative sector comes another mechanism intended to enhance the consistency of mandatory sentences and similar laws aimed at strengthening penalties for major crimes and limiting judicial discretion in imposing sentences for those crimes.

One concept that has emerged from the research is selective incapacitation, an approach that attempts to increase the public’s protection by incarcerating predatory criminals for longer terms, while imposing shorter sentences on offenders who do not pose a serious threat to the community. In Florida, the average percent of sentences served by inmates was 31 percent in 1990 and 74 percent in 1998.¹⁴ For now however, the approach remains a provocative concept. The task is difficult—to establish whether we can safely predict the career paths of different types of offenders and to make judicious sentencing decisions that will reduce crime. Just as views differ about the purposes and application of punishment, so, too, there are divergent views on the concept of selective incapacitation of career criminals. Dr. Peter W. Greenwood wrote:¹⁵

The concept of selective incapacitation is based on recent research findings concerning the effects of imprisonment. For many years the principal theory that guided our use of imprisonment was rehabilitation. We locked up serious offenders for indeterminate terms until a parole board decided they were reformed and could safely reenter society. It was presumed that criminal behavior was caused by various deficiencies of the character or training that prison officials could fix. However, a large number of evaluations during two decades of studies have consistently refuted this notion. To the best of our knowledge, prison programs do not lead to lower recidivism rates, nor, as some have argued, do they make offenders, on the average, any worse. It is now generally accepted that the only means by

¹⁴ “State’s Prisoners Stay Longer Behind Bars,” Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (June 5, 1999): A1.

¹⁵ NIJ, January 1984.

which prisons affect crime rates are deterrence and incapacitation. Deterrence refers to the inhibiting effects of sentencing patterns on all potential offenders, while incapacitation refers to the direct crime-reduction effect of removing active offenders from society. Unfortunately, the magnitude, or even the existence, of any deterrent effects cannot be estimated, due to a variety of methodological problems. Nor is there any agreement about how different types of offenders are likely to respond to particular sentences. Therefore, deterrence theory offers little guidance in establishing sentencing policies. Incapacitation effects, on the other hand, can be estimated directly from information about patterns of individual criminal behavior. The higher an individual's rate of offending while he is free, the greater the incapacitation effect if he is incarcerated ... If offenders only committed one or two crimes per year, then the marginal incapacitation effects of sending additional offenders to prison would be quite small. If, on the other hand, offenders committed hundreds of crimes per year, the incapacitation effect of incarcerating these offenders could be substantial ... We estimated that a more selective incarceration policy for convicted robbers in California could reduce the robbery rate by 20% with no increase in the total number of robbers incarcerated.

Professor Andrew van Hirsch of Rutgers University responds to Dr. Greenwood's study as follows:

Sentencing on grounds of potential future criminality has been a familiar theme in American criminal justice. Proponents of the traditional rehabilitative ethic have long contended that, while curable offenders should be treated, those who are bad risks should be identified and isolated from society. In the last decade, however, doubts were raised about the accuracy of forecasting techniques and about the fairness of gauging offenders' punishment by their expected future crimes. It has long been known, since research on prediction of criminal behavior began in the 1920s, that a limited ability to forecast risk of recidivism exists. Numerous studies have found that by using the offender's criminal history, age, employment record, and drug history, one can identify subgroups of offenders having a higher-than-average likelihood of returning to crime. Examination of such studies has shown, however, that the association between those predictive factors and subsequent offender behavior has generally been low (around 25%). With such weak associations, a high rate of error could be expected. The errors were of two types. The first was that of failing to identify offenders who did subsequently offend again. Even though the predictive instruments spotted some recidivists, they missed many others: the rate of persons mistakenly identified as good risks has remained substantial. The second, and more

disturbing type of error, was the reverse: “over prediction” of recidivism. The rate of mistakenly predicting recidivists was found to be particularly high, more than 60%, when forecasting serious criminality.

Auerhahan¹⁶ also found that the error in predicting re-offense was very high, with most schemes having false positive rates of greater than 50 percent.

Often criminals come out of prisons unrepentant and likely to commit crimes again. This is especially true with the sex criminals. Prison punishment often increases the sex offender’s pathology so that he comes out with worse fantasies and personality problems than before his incarceration. Sex offenders come out with more violence and anger, and their crimes often escalate with more harm to their victims. Prison often reinforces the tendency toward sex crimes by increasing the offender’s guilt, shame, blame, and grief that are so often basic to his deviancy. Even in those few prisons that have some sort of therapeutic sex offender treatment program, the “great rolling momentum of the imprisonment experience overwhelms and overshadows the relatively brief therapeutic contacts and nullifies their emotional impact.”¹⁷

A recent government report based on nearly 300,000 prisoners released in fifteen states in 1994 showed that 67.5 percent were rearrested within three years. Another study of 1983 releases estimated that 62.5 percent recidivated. The evidence was mixed regarding the question of whether spending more time in prison reduces the recidivism rate (Bureau of Justice Statistics Special Report, NCJ 193427, June 2003)

Also, our prisons leak. In spite of the vast sums spent on building and maintaining them, they are far from secure. In Florida, for example, some 1,700 prisoners escaped confinement in 1988—about 4.9 percent of the prison population that year. Most of these merely walked away from the work-release jobs, but others engineered innovative and spectacular escape plots. Raymond Huntly, thirty-nine, a sex offender, was one of these. He pole-vaulted over the twelve-foot-high fence at the Lake Correctional Institution. The superintendent of the prison, Ronald Holmes, said, “That was about the time of the 1988 Olympics, and we got a lot of teasing about that” (news item). Work release has been used since the early 1920s in an effort to help inmates obtain jobs. About 56 percent are termed “successful,” 13.5 percent “moderately successful,” and almost 30 percent “unsuccessful.”¹⁸ The Kissimmee Community Correctional Center gave new meaning to the term revolving-door prisons. Between 1996 and 1998, police there recorded at least twenty-three escapes. On February 28, 1998, two work-release inmates escaped, purchased beer, returned to their dorm, and drank, then left again. They were captured four days later and linked to the murder of a Haines City police officer.

¹⁶ K. Auerhahn, “Selective Incapacitation and the Problem of Prediction,” *Criminology* 37, no. 4 (1999): 709.

¹⁷ Brodsky and West. (1980).

¹⁸ S. Turner and J. Petersillo, “Work Release Recidivism and Corrections Costs in Washington State,” National Institute of Justice Research in Brief (December 1996).

It is precisely to the sex offenders, for whom we are herein proposing the almost-perfect treatment of castration, that much of the blame for our worst prison problems belongs. Overcrowding, uneven treatment, disease, and prison crime are all exacerbated by our failure to recognize and use this cheap and effective treatment. In Florida and some of the other states, sex offenders are not eligible for incentive and other gain-time factors for early release and so remain in prison far longer than most other types of prisoners. Prison assaults and murders are much more frequent among the sex offenders because they are so hated by the other prisoners. On February 14, 1980, the New Mexico State Penitentiary near Santa Fe was the site of one of the most brutal prison riots in U.S. history, with a sadistic display of violence primarily against “baby rapers” (pedophiliacs) that included: beheading, torching, hanging, and rape. In the end, thirty-three inmates were dead, and the prison was almost destroyed. In spite of major expenditures, endless hand-wringing publicity, and hundreds of scientific studies, severe problems continue to harass our prisons, and the crime problem continues to get worse.

In addition to all the depressing aspects of our prison system enumerated here, new ones are constantly emerging. The Northwest Florida Daily News of October 23, 1994, (p. 2B) headlines another concern: “Frustrated State Prisoners Becoming More Dangerous.” The article quoted the Florida statistics that:

Inmate-on-inmate assaults and other violent crimes increased more than 20 percent, from 1, </quote>437 in 1992 to 1,749 in 1993. “It’s been steadily rising, and every day it’s been getting worse,” said Corrections Secretary Harry Singletary. In a state with the nation’s highest crime rate, few people seem to care about the problem. The problem, for most politicians, is figuring out how to lock up the worst felons for as long as possible and make prison life tougher. The legislature voted earlier this year to remove cable TV and other recreational amenities that those who work inside the razor-barbed wire rely on to keep inmates in line. “You take TV out of jails, that’s good for a local jail where somebody’s doing 364 days,” said Thomas Barnes, a prison guard who had been injured by prisoners. “But you get somebody doing twenty to thirty years, that’s your babysitter in the evening. We control it. You try to take the weights away that burn out a lot of stress and anxiety. The only other way to burn it up is either on another inmate or on one of us,” he said. In 1992, there were fourteen, but in 1993, there were fifty-four inmate injuries. Deaths in 1992 were 222; in 1993, there were 437. Thirty-nine inmates were shot to death by guards in California prisons between 1990 and 2000. Eighty percent of these deaths were unjustified.¹⁹

¹⁹ “Prison Issues,” *Playboy* (March 2000): 26.

Among the many other innovations that have been tried out in our prison systems were chain gangs, boot camps, and civil commitment for dangerous sex offenders after they had completed their terms of prison sentences. Alabama was the first state in the spring of 1995 to put leg irons on their inmates working outside the prison in road-repair gangs. They could put some of their most dangerous prisoners to work in this manner. Several states inaugurated boot-camp programs for their younger and less dangerous prisoners from 1994 to 1998. It was believed that the strict regimentation and personal discipline that these training programs required would deter the less hardened criminals from deteriorating into a life of crime. Beginning with Washington in 1990, several states passed laws that would allow sex offenders to be detained in mental hospitals after they had completed their sentences in prison if they were found to be likely to commit more of their crimes if released into the public. In June 1997, the Supreme Court ruled unanimously that civil commitment was an acceptable means to protect innocent people from twisted sex offenders.

The U.S. Department of Justice Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention published a summary of the boot camps for juvenile offenders in late 1997 that showed that the recidivism rate did not improve when compared to a control group who did not go to boot camp. In the Cleveland boot-camp program, 72 percent of those completing boot camp recidivated to new court-adjudicated offenses following release, compared to 50 percent of the youths in the control group from other facilities in Ohio. Of the Cleveland boot camp, 78 percent of the youths were African. In Denver, 39 percent of the boot-camp youths recidivated, while only 36 percent of the control group did. In Mobile, Alabama, 28 percent of the boot-camp youths recidivated, while 31 percent of the control group did.²⁰

In spite of the failure of boot camps to demonstrate the required effectiveness, state and local governments continued the boot-camp approach. By mid-1999, there were at least sixty-five boot-camp prisons serving juveniles and adults. Boot camps were one of the few correctional programs that could be sold to the public. "The visual appeal of seeing young offenders being physically punished through tough regimens and verbally scolded by correctional staff made the job of selling boot camps to the public, policy makers, and court officials easier than traditional rehabilitation programs."²¹ Several other studies that found no evidence that boot camps reduced recidivism are Mackenzie (1991), MacKenzie and Shaw (1993), Burns

²⁰ "Boot Camps for Juvenile Offenders," NCJ OJJDP Program Summary, NCJ 164258, p. 22.

²¹ Peter Wood and Harold Grasmick, "Toward the Development of Punishment Equivalencies: Male and Female Inmates Rate the Severity of Alternate Sanctions Compared to Prison," *Justice Quarterly* 16, no. 1 (1999): 35.

and Vito (1996), and Jones (1996). Despite these findings, boot camps continue to be funded and expanded. There are even indications that boot camps may instill or reinforce macho attitudes and hormones in men who need the exact opposite.

In a study by Wood and Grasmick (1999), inmates who had served in them rated boot camps the most punitive. In descending order of punitiveness, the other sanctions were: county jail, day reporting, intermittent incarceration, halfway house, intensive supervision probation, electronic monitoring, prison, community service, and probation.

Another initiative is called the “three strikes” laws designed to put repeat criminals in prison for a protracted period of time after their third conviction. Washington State passed the first such law in 1993 and had put 121 people behind bars for life without parole by the end of 1998. California was the second state to pass a three-strikes law in 1994, with 40,511 “habitual offenders” in prison at the end of 1998. San Francisco reported that in 1994, the three-strikes laws had resulted in 192 persons “striking out” for marijuana possession, forty for murder, twenty-five for rape, and twenty-four for kidnapping. At a cost of \$21,885 per year per inmate, it cost the taxpayers \$4.2 million per year to keep the marijuana smokers in prison. If they are kept for the full twenty-five years, the cost will be \$105 million. This is clearly exorbitant. If all 40,511 three-strikes inmates are kept for twenty-five years in person, the cost will be well over \$21 billion.

Largely because of the extremely high costs, most of the other twenty-one states that have similar laws have used them but very little. Four of these states have had no three-strikes convictions, and thirteen other states had less than fifteen convictions each at the end of 1998. Florida, Georgia, and Nevada all had over 100 three-strikes convictions each at the end of 1998.

The use of private business firms to operate correctional institutions began in the mid-1980s in an attempt to lower the costs and provide equal or better services to inmates than county, state, or federal governments were able to. In 1987, there were about 3,000 prisoners in these private adult facilities, and by 1996, the number of prisoners in private prisons was more than 85,000. In 1996, the U.S. General Accounting Office (GAO) reviewed five studies of this privatization and concluded that “because the studies reported little cost difference and/or mixed results in comparing private and public facilities, we could not conclude whether privatization saved money” (GAO 1996, “Private and Public Prisons: Studies Comparing Operational Costs and/or Quality of Service,” report to the Subcommittee on Crime, House Judiciary Committee, GAO/GGD 96-158, Washington, DC: US GAO). In April 1999, the U.S. Department of Justice National Institute

of Justice again solicited an examination of privatization in the Federal Bureau of Prisons because studies have failed to develop a coherent model of institutional performance in terms of cost and quality of operations.

The Atlantic Monthly magazine's December 1998 cover story was about "The Prison-Industrial Complex," and the same magazine published a sequel in their June 1999 issue, which showed "how prisons, established to fight crime, produce crime." The article also showed how "locking more people away will ultimately increase the number of sociopaths in our midst" ("When They Get Out," pp. 30–36).

Time magazine, June 21, 1999, (p. 60) featured an article on "Cellblock Seniors," which pointed out the increasing costs of keeping elderly people in prison. This amounted to three times the cost of incarcerating younger men (\$22,000)—about \$65,000 a year per individual over age fifty-five, due mostly to medical expenses. An example cited in the article was John Bedarka, eighty-six, who was sentenced to life without parole for shooting his wife's lover thirty years earlier in Pennsylvania. To keep some of these people in prison for life is purely punitive and serves no advantage to society. Statistically, the risk of recidivism drops significantly with age.

One of the disturbing national phenomena was the explosion of the number of mothers in prison. The population of women in U.S. prisons has risen to more than 149,000 female inmates in the year 2000; 70 percent of them have at least one child under age eighteen. Most of these mothers were the sole providers for their children, and the impact on their kids was devastating. They were sent to foster homes or sent off to live with relatives. Half of the 1.5 million kids with an incarcerated parent will commit a crime before they turn eighteen. By the year 2000, more people had become aware that the penal system was costing a lot of money and was not having the desired effects on the criminal population. Morris (1995) and West (2000) had published books calling for penal abolition and making convincing arguments for abolishing imprisonment and overhauling the entire penal system. They pointed out that the system had failed to achieve any of the stated objectives of deterrence, rehabilitating prisoners, or restoring a general sense of justice.²²²³

In spite of the evidence of problems arising from the practice of "locking down" prisoners in solitary confinement, federal and state governments continued to construct more prisons designed for that and to put more and

²² R. Morris, *Penal Abolition the Practical Choice* (Toronto, Ontario: Canadian Scholars' Press, 1995).

²³ G. West and R. Morris, *The Case of Penal Abolition* (Toronto, Ontario: Canadian Scholar's Press, 2000).

more prisoners in these “super-max” prisons. By October 2000, there were thirty of these, with about 47,000 of the most dangerous prisoners under maximum-security restrictions.

An article in *Playboy* told about some of the problems with prison guards: The number of prison employees has increased from fewer than 100,000 to more than 400,000, and some states have powerful prison-guard unions that strongly lobby the legislatures for building more prisons and paying guards more. In California, senior guards are pulling down salaries of \$52,000 a year, plus ample overtime. Some of these guards earn more than some professors at the University of California. In 1998, the California Correctional Peace Officers’ Association gave more than \$2 million to aid gubernatorial candidate Gray Davis, who, after winning the election, approved more than half a billion dollars for building new prisons.²⁴

Some conservatives are convinced that incapacitation is the reason that crime has decreased over recent years, but many studies have failed to show a direct link between incarceration and crime rates. The huge expansion of our penal institutions has increased Americans’ dissatisfaction with the criminal justice system. Numerous studies have shown that the increased incarceration has neither reduced crime nor made America safer.

²⁴ “Forum,” *Playboy* (January 2002): 49.

V. Probation

Massachusetts established the first statewide probation system in 1880. In America of the 1980s and 1990s, several other systems were employed to help resolve the crime problem and alleviate prison overcrowding. Probation is “a court-ordered disposition alternative through which an adjudicated offender is placed under the control, supervision, and care of a probation field staff member in lieu of imprisonment, so long as the probationer meets certain standards of conduct” (American Correctional Association, Probation and Parole Directory, 1995–1996). James K. Steward, director of the National Institute of Justice, wrote in the June 1987 Research in Brief: “At the same time, there is a growing concern about the 7 out of 10 convicted offenders who are not incarcerated. More than 3 million offenders were on probation essentially free in our communities.”¹

Probation can be regarded as a treatment program in which final action in an adjudicated case is suspended, so that the offender remains at liberty, subject to conditions imposed by the court, under the supervision and guidance of a probation officer trained in social casework. Casework is designed to provide social and psychological services to strengthen the individual by giving him understanding and acceptance, and helping him find the solution to his problems. The success rate for probation is variously defined and reported. The Gleucks reported an 8 percent success rate in one study and a 42 percent rate in another. Still other studies have shown success rates all the way up to 75 percent, depending largely on the probation officer’s caseload, training, empathy, and jurisdiction.

Jurisdictions with inadequate prison facilities tend to put men on probation who should be in prison. A National Institute of Justice report for January 1987 showed that probationers closely resembled those who were incarcerated and that, under intensive probation supervision—with about a thirteen-probationer load for each supervisor—16 percent absconded or had probation revoked. About 38 percent of probationers were rearrested for new offenses within eighteen months of completing their term of probation. The February 1992 U.S. Department of Justice Bureau of Statistics’ special report showed about 60 percent of the 4.3 million adults serving a sentence were on probation. In 1996, 64 percent of probationers were Caucasian, 35 percent were African, and 1 percent was Asian. Forty-three percent were rearrested; 62 percent were either rearrested or had a disciplinary hearing for violation of a condition of their probation.

¹ “Characteristics of Adults on Probation,” Bureau of Justice Statistics Special Report (December 1997): 1.

Sex offenders represent 4.7 percent of all convicted offenders, but receive far more publicity than most other criminals due to the general repugnance for their type of crime.

Probation is a frequent sentence for misdemeanors. The probation departments usually collect the fines, restitution, and fees from the probationers. Probation officers assist offenders in obtaining counseling and often help them get jobs, all with the goal of getting them out of the criminal justice system. These officers oversee offenders who are either on straight probation, house arrest, or jail work release. Electronic tracking devices are attached to persons being monitored in the community confinement programs to make sure they stay in the proper location. Frequent meetings and extensive telephone contacts also help officers account for their probationers. New York has a statute that provides for lifetime probation of recidivist drug offenders [New York Penal Law §65.00[3][a][ii]].

In Florida, probation statistics showed that judges handed out house arrests to 572 felons with two or more “forcible felonies” in the two-year period before November 2001. This was in spite of the Florida law that required those felons to go to prison.

Banishment is another form of punishment that was used at the time of the Code of Hammurabi and down through history to the present day. Legalized exile is largely considered an anachronism, a pseudo-solution that merely makes one’s jurisdiction convict somebody else’s problems. Banishment still persists in Georgia and Kentucky and possibly a few other states. Banishment in Georgia generally is from one county and lasts for the length of an offender’s probation. In Kentucky, one man was recently, in 2001, banished from the entire state. One district attorney in Georgia was particularly fond of banning drug dealers, saying it takes away the customers and contacts they need to stay in business.

VI. Parole

Parole is similar to probation except that an offender is conditionally released after serving part of a term incarcerated in a correctional institution and placed under the supervision of a parole officer. In about half of the states, there is no parole for incest, rape, kidnapping, murder, and other capital crimes. Most jurisdictions limit parole to the first-time-felony offender only. Many modern sex offender programs make use of probation and parole sentences to assure that the offenders will maintain their treatments while living in open society. Probation and parole are facilitators of supplemental programs that can remedy many of the problems and difficulties in the rehabilitation of sex offenders in prisons. They are also vastly less expensive than incarceration. According to the Bureau of Justice Statistics, in 1995, there were 700,000 people on parole in the United States. Success rates for parole are comparable to those for probation. A 1987 Bureau of Justice Statistics study found that 69 percent of 11,300 parolees in twenty-two states were rearrested within six years. In their study of a special program, Josi and Sechrist found that 46 percent of youthful offenders failed parole in their first nine months after their release.¹

A surprising number of parolees returning to prison each year—about half, according to Justice Department officials—have not been convicted of a new crime. Rather, they are sent back for disobeying one or more of parole's rules. Parolees cannot use drugs, stay out past curfew (usually 9 or 10 pm), skip appointments with their parole officers, hang out with anyone who has a criminal record, leave the state without permission, or spend the night anywhere except their approved residences. And so, every day, officers send parolees back to prison for offenses that are not crimes. In 1999, parole violators made up 35 percent of people entering state prisons in New York. A day in a New York City jail costs \$175. The price tag for a year in a New York state prison is \$32,000.

The front-page headline of the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, July 20, 1988, lamented "Paroled Killers Return, Now Face Felony Charges." In two separate incidents, men who had been sent to prison and paroled long before completion of their sentences had once again committed major crimes. Kinsley Melton, a murderer and burglar, had been sentenced to two consecutive life terms plus twenty years. Melton was paroled after (or within) seven years, in 1985. Handy Shade had murdered his wife in 1978 and was sentenced to twenty years in prison, but he, too, was paroled seven years later. Shade stabbed his brother to death at his mother's apartment in February 1988.

¹ D. Josi and Sechrist "A Pragmatic Approach to Aftercare: Evaluation of a Community Reintegration Program for High Risk Youthful Offenders," *Justice Quarterly* 16, no. 1 (March 1999): 73.

Parole Commissioner Maurice Crockett said both men had adjusted well to prison life, participated in self-help programs, and completed work-release programs, but “you can’t really predict what humans are going to do.”

There is widespread common knowledge that both probation and parole bureaucracies are poorly administered, overworked, underpaid, and corrupt. When Harry K. Singletary took over a Chicago parole department in about 1975, he found that probation officers drew paychecks without showing up for work (“Head of State Corrections Breaks Out of Boarding Mode,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal*, May 9, 1993, p. 15A). Jeffery Dahmer killed most of his victims in his apartment, which reeked of the smell of their decaying flesh, but the female probation officer who was responsible for him had not visited him as required by law. She was afraid to because the apartment was in a high-crime section of the city of Milwaukee. Had she done what she was supposed to do, it would have become immediately apparent that something was horribly wrong there, and several victims’ lives could have been spared.

Another case that illustrates a major flaw in the probation/parole system occurred in Fort Lauderdale, Florida, in January 1999. Linda Brown, a twelve-year veteran probation officer, was fired for gross negligence in failing to supervise her parolees. She had failed to do even routine checks on many of them, who committed additional crimes while under her supervision.

Although most of the nation’s prison, probation, and parole departments come under so-called “Departments of Corrections” or “Departments of Rehabilitation,” they do little to correct or rehabilitate criminals. Many of them order their priorities with public safety first, “efficiency” second, and rehabilitation third.

VII. Fines

Fines are other alternatives to prison. A fine is a sum of money imposed as punishment for an offense, a forfeiture or penalty paid to the state or to the injured party. It is one of the oldest forms of punishment, going back in time well before the laws of Hammurabi (c. 1,700 BC). The National Task Force on Corrections reported in 1973 that fines are “less drastic, far less costly to the public and perhaps more effective than imprisonment or community service.” Fines have the advantage of depriving offenders of their ill-gotten gains, contributing to rehabilitation, being financially self-sustaining, producing revenue, and being adjustable to an appropriate level with the seriousness of the crime and the offender’s ability to pay. Fines are flawed for many of the sex offenses, however, because they do not incapacitate the offenders who are risks to the community, are easier for the more affluent offenders to pay than the poorer ones, and are impossible for the indigent offenders who have no money.

VIII. Educational Treatments

The overall objective of the educational treatments under various prison, parole, or probation programs is to prepare the criminal for a mode of life that is better than a life of crime. Four percent of sex offenders have only a fifth-grade education, and 37 percent have only a tenth-grade education or less. Two general classes of educational programs have been widely used: academic and vocational. In the academic programs, the emphasis is on training to improve problem-solving skills. In the vocational programs, the emphasis is to develop job skills so the criminal will not be forced to return to crime to support himself. Some of these programs train for specific jobs and actually place the inmates in those jobs when they complete their confinement term. Studies of results in terms of recidivism to crime have not been encouraging. Recidivism rates of graduates have been similar to those inmates who did not receive the training. Prison industries, which trained the inmates in special job skills that would be useful in life outside the prison walls, have proved to be inefficient enterprises. Bureaucratic bungling and fraud in these enterprises have resulted in financial loss. Labor unions and competing commercial businesses have complained about the unfair use of prison labor and succeeded in eliminating even the best of the prison industry programs.

Low levels in general intelligence of criminals has long been associated with the most obdurate of criminal behaviors. Although there is little evidence that general education programs reduce criminal recidivism directly, they are believed to facilitate the understanding that is essential to the effectiveness of other instruction programs. From the perspective of criminal justice professionals, education has long been thought to be another way to improve the American crime statistics. Professor Durham (1992) wrote:

The hopes expressed in the 1967 report of the President's Commission on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Justice regarding the potential impact of criminal justice education on crime have not been realized. Crime rates continued to rise during the 1970s, and after a brief downturn during the early 1980s, escalated again as the 1980s drew to a close.¹

The Law Enforcement Education Program invested more than \$300 million in the post-secondary educational system, but there is no unambiguous evidence that such

¹ Alexis M. Durham, III, "Observations on the Future of Criminal Justice Education: Legitimizing the Discipline and Serving the General University Population," *Journal of Criminal Justice* 39, no. 1 (1992): 36.

a huge educational effort has had much impact on the incidence or the character of crime.

A. Sex Education

With sex offenders, the primary need is sex education. Most of them are hopelessly ignorant of normal human sexuality, the anatomy and physiology of sex, reproduction, sexual roles, attitudes, and fantasies. These subjects must be taught in any well-conceived treatment course. Americans in general have historically been the poorest educated of any of the modern populations in sexual matters. This has been a national scandal with horrendous results, which we who study the sex crimes have come to realize. As Professor Mantegazza wrote:

Strange and stupid though it will some day appear, our Western civilization, so advanced in other matters, has put a taboo on this supremely vital instruction ... It is this veneer of hypocrisy that makes it difficult for our civilization to come to an understanding of sexual aberrations from which so many suffer.²

Sex education in the 1990s, however, was still flawed by a lack of properly trained teachers and comprehensive instructional materials, according to Barbara Whitehead, vice president of the Institute for American Values. "I believe, as a country, we have not made the appropriate investment in sexuality education," she said.³ Whitehead pointed to the statistics that one million teenage girls become pregnant each year, and some 2.5 million teens have had a sexually transmitted disease as evidence that the "technocratic" approach to sex education has not worked. One of the main reasons cited was the flawed assumption that teenagers make rational decisions about sex. When it comes to sex, people are impulsive, risk taking, and susceptible to "sweet feelings" generated by hormones, rather than cold logic. We have an analogous situation with drug education. Throughout the 1980s, school-age children were bombarded with "Just Say No" anti-drug messages, but, after a few years of lessened drug abuse figures, there emerged clear evidence of increased illicit drug use by teenagers in late 1994.⁴

Congress set aside \$250 million to pay for states' abstinence programs in 1996, and the state of Florida allotted \$10 million to another "abstinence only" sex-ed program in 1999. Many of these programs are taught by Christian organizations and teach children that sex outside of marriage is unhealthy. Teens are taught that even if they had already had sex, it's not too late to try "secondary virginity." The federal "abstinence only"

² Paolo Mantegazza, *Sexual Taboos* (Toronto, Canada: Coles Publishing Co., Ltd., 1980, originally published in 1932), 257.

³ "Sex Experts Disagree: Is Education a Prophylactic?" *Insight* (December 5, 1994).

⁴ "Study: Drug Use Among Teens Rising," *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (December 13, 1994): A2.

sex grants ban program leaders from talking about birth control, although “safe sex” methods are taught in schools and health departments alongside the new programs.⁵

Another facet is that sex education is at the same time highly essential and extremely dangerous. It can prevent us from ruining our lives with unwanted pregnancy or deadly disease. It can also reveal and justify a Pandora’s box of evil behavior. Great debates about it have raged up and down the halls of academia for at least seven decades. We have developed major learned disciplines in sexology and formulated course materials all the way from the fifth grade in public schools up to the postgraduate university level. You can get a PhD in sexology now at several prestigious colleges. Many professional societies have sprung up for the furtherance of sexual studies with regional, national, and international meetings and symposia for sharing new discoveries. The Society for the Scientific Study of Sex (SSSS), The Sexuality Information and Education Council of the United States (SIECUS), and the Association for the Treatment of Sex Abusers (ATSA) are among these. Many learned journals educate the educators: *The Journal of Sex Research*, *Journal of Homosexuality*, *Journal of Psychology & Human Sexuality*, *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, *The Annals of Sex Research*, *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, *SIECUS Report*, and *Journal of Sexuality and Disability* are among these.

We have been desperately ignorant of our sexual nature and equipment for a long time due to the repression and misinformation promulgated by our religious training. With our awakening came the belief it was highly essential that we delve more deeply into the study of our sexuality. And so we did, beginning with Kinsey (1948) and Masters and Johnson (1966). But something very disturbing has happened as we have unearthed the hidden secrets of our sexuality. As we have eroded away the layers of myths and wrong ideas, there has also been an unearthing of something pretty bad and frightening. Our moral assumptions and laws have withered along with the erosion of ignorance. We have revealed a horrible monster, our basic animal nature, and it has snarled and turned and bitten us with poisonous fangs.

Many formerly prohibited sexual behaviors have been revealed to be so widespread in the population that they became statistically normal. First it was masturbation—once believed to be dangerously debilitating, disease causing, and illegal. Masturbation was called the Sin of Onan (Onanism) after the biblical incident where Onan spilled his seed on the ground, incurring God’s wrath in Genesis 38:8–10. When we learned that almost everyone did it, it became okay and no longer a sin, and some even showed that it might be good for you. Then it was fornication, also so widespread as to be the normal thing. Then it was adultery. When we learned how widespread adultery had become, somehow we began forgetting the stern law passed to Moses in thunder and lightening on Mount Sinai: “Thou shalt not commit adultery” (Exodus 20:13). Adultery was a death penalty crime for millennia, but in the 1960s when we learned

⁵ “Just Say No to Sex, State Urges Teenagers,” *Pensacola[Florida] News Journal* (November 28, 1999): A1.

that hundreds of thousands of spouses had extramarital affairs and other hundreds of thousands were co-habiting without the benefit of marriage, we began to forget about all of that.

In the 1970s and 1980s, we learned that homosexuals are “born that way,” and we repealed our laws against sodomy for the gays and granted them special civil rights protection in jobs and housing. What had formerly been a death penalty crime for over 3,500 years (and still punishable by twenty years in prison in some states) suddenly became a protected legal behavior. United States Surgeon General Jocelyn Elders stated in *The Advocate*, a gay monthly, in March 1994, “We need to speak out and tell people that sex is good, sex is wonderful. It’s a normal part and healthy part of our being, whether it is homosexual or heterosexual.” By mid-1994, President Clinton had appointed twenty-seven openly homosexual officials to various important government posts.

As we became more educated in our sexuality, we continued working our way up the hierarchy of heinousness in the sex crimes. More types of perverse and criminal behavior began to “come out of the closet” in the 1990s with public pronouncements, periodicals, and books. The International Lesbian and Gay Association (ILGA) and the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA) were admitted into the United Nations on advisory status where they could influence the decisions of this great organization. The hated and reviled child molester became an attentive presence and voice in international negotiations. We learned that these people were often brilliant, expressive, and ardent advocates for their cause. They had a lot at stake, so they studied very deeply and were motivated speakers or skilled in writing.

Incredibly, the sadomasochists in 1993 and 1994 began to receive more favorable recognition in the “Rainbow Coalition” of political activists. These people who receive sexual pleasure from hurting others and being hurt themselves sought to remove the stigma of sadism by changing the name of their perversion to bondage and discipline (B&D). Then they changed it again to the more inane term dominance and submission. They have recently published a 525-page book titled *Different Loving* by Gloria and William Brame and Jon Jacobs, which goes a long way in justifying the behavior that has been associated with rape and fetishism. We are being “educated” in sexual behavior by people who indulge in the same behavior that has been identified as motivating rape, suicide, kidnapping, and murder.

It seems that the more sex ed we get, the more we begin to see it as less fearsome and more benign. We may even begin to see important benefits from it. Castration, for example, was feared and reviled nearly two thousand years in our heritage. Yet, we see important benefits from it: freedom from sex crimes, immunity from AIDS and other STDs, and cure for prostate cancer.

Sex education shows us something pretty horrific. The more educated we become in sexual matters, the more horrors are revealed to us. The more these horrors are contemplated, the more prone to horrid sexual behavior we become. Enumerating the sex crimes as I have done in the first part of this book and the mere reading of this

Pandora's box of horrors shows us that it is extremely dangerous territory. The less we know, then the more innocent we are. The more we learn of the dark side of sexuality, the more we see of it around us. We may question whether the knowing has increased the amount of what was already there or whether there is an actual increase of the bad behavior in the human population? Certainly we can plainly see that necrophilia, lycanthropy, cannibalism, vampirism, and most of the other described sex crimes and diseases have been in human history for a very long time. Is it only that, or is there an actual increase of this very bad behavior in incidence?

Specialized sex education, such as sexual assault prevention education for college women, was successful in increasing their knowledge about sexual assault, but it was not successful in reducing their incidence of sexual assault.⁶ In spite of many varieties of rape prevention programs educating the vulnerable population, the results of the education have been disappointing, especially when extended periods of time elapse between the education and the sexual assault.

B. Megan's Law

Beginning in the state of Washington in 1990, the legislatures in each of the states started passing laws that would require the registration of sex offenders and notification of the communities in which they lived of their presence. Massachusetts was the last of the fifty states to do so on August 5, 1996. On May 17, 1996, President Clinton signed the amendment to the Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act of 1994, which became known as "Megan's Law" in memory of the rape and murder of seven-year-old Megan Kanka of New Jersey by a recently released prisoner who had come to live across the street from her home.

President Clinton said in his weekly radio broadcast of August 24, 1996, that the registry was to "keep track of these criminals[sex offenders], not just in a single state, but wherever they go, wherever they move, so that parents and police have the warnings they need to protect our children ... Deadly criminals don't stay within state lines, so neither should law enforcement's tools to stop them." The federal law requires that the states maintain the registry or risk loss of 10 percent of federal funding for state and local law enforcement.

After about three years of use, there were 5,003 sex offenders registered up to mid-April 1998, and about eighty-five cases where sex offenders had ignored or broken the law. The penalty was immediate revocation of parole or probation and an added eighteen months in prison. One study in the state of Washington of ninety offenders subject to community notification and ninety not subject showed that offenders in the community-notification group were rearrested sooner than the recidivists in the non-notification group. The level of re-offending after 4.5 years for members of each group

⁶ K. Breitenbecher and M. Scarce, "A Longitudinal Evaluation of a Sexual Assault Program," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 14, no. 5. (1999): 459-478.

was statistically the same. Most of the new arrests were for non-sexually motivated crimes. Most states were still grappling with their effective implementation of the community notification laws and procedures, and on November 13, 2002, the U.S. Supreme Court entered the debate over whether Megan's Law violates the constitutional rule against double jeopardy. By the year 2003, news articles showed that many states could not keep an accurate record. California lost track of more than 33,000 convicted sex offenders, and an Associated Press investigation revealed that the states, on average, were able to account for only 24 percent of sex offenders who were supposed to be in databases (Northwest Florida Daily News, February 7, 2003, p. A1 and Newsweek, February 24, 2003, p. 40).

IX. Prison Furlough

Many state prisons allow limited inmate furloughs, ranging from a few hours to a week when prisoners can look for a job, visit a relative, attend a funeral, or attend to other urgent business. The idea in some systems is that they are eventually going to be released from confinement, so prisoners are released for a short time to get acclimated to living in the community. Other state prison systems use the furlough as a reward for good behavior and adherence to discipline. Still others have granted extended furlough and early release to relieve prison overcrowding. Florida is one of the states that has had an extensive furlough program, granting 5,658 work releases and fourteen compassionate furloughs in one month. Although there is something like a 99.8 percent observance of the rules of the furlough and new crimes are seldom committed, there have been notable failures, which have cost lives and political careers and shattered public confidence.

X. Three Models of Adolescent Sex Offender Treatment

Three models that provide the setting for the treatment of adolescent sex offenders are in use in America today: community based, residential, and prison. By “adolescent,” I mean a person twelve to eighteen years old, and by “sex offender,” I mean a young male who has been convicted of exposing himself, peeping, frottage, bestiality, prostitution, sodomy, incest, child molestation, sadomasochism, rape, necrophilia, lust murder, or any of the other criminal labels that describe similar behavior. There were about 300 public and roughly 100 private programs that had been identified in the United States up to 1986 for sexually abusive adolescents, but they were not divided evenly among the states. Six states contained more than half of the total number, most states had far too few, and three states (Alabama, Arkansas, and Mississippi) had none at all.¹ By 1990, 338 different therapies were being used, and by 1994, there were more than 680 programs for the treatment of adolescent sex offenders. Victim empathy was the most universal approach used.²

Although currently a great deal of attention is being focused on the serious problem of forcible rape, the major emphasis has been on the adult offender. Relatively little attention is being paid to the adolescent male who commits sexual assault. In fact, there appears to be a reluctance on the part of the courts and other agencies to view juvenile sexual offenses as serious or significant. Sometimes, the concern is voiced that such a youngster will be stigmatized and that a conviction will jeopardize his plans for enlistment in the armed services. But more often, it appears that such an offense is regarded merely as sexual experimentation, situational in nature, or as an expression of the aggressiveness of a sexually maturing male.³

Knopp has pointed out that sexual assaults by adolescents have been grossly under-reported, up to 56 percent of assailants at some centers have been under age eighteen; some child molesters have committed their first offense as early as eight years of age, and some rapists as early as nine. The average age is between fourteen and

¹ Fay Honey Knopp, *Remedial Intervention in Adolescent Sex Offenses* (NY: Prison Research/Education/Action Project (PREAP), 1986, 5th printing).

² D. M. Burk, *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 66, no. 3 (2001): 222, 224.

³ Groth, *Men Who Rape*, 180.

eighteen. Thirty-five percent of incarcerated offenders showed progression from less serious crimes to more serious; the average adolescent sex offender affects 380 victims during his lifetime—fifty-five times the number of victims recorded for adult offenders. Chances of success are much better at an earlier age, and treatment is much less expensive.⁴ A self-perpetuating quality, which is peculiar to sex offenses, further underlines the urgency of obtaining adequate treatment for adolescents. A very large percentage of sex offenders were, themselves, victims of sex offenses when they were children. In some studies, up to 80 percent of child molesters and 50 percent of rapists had been victims of sexual assaults when they were younger.⁵ In the total population, as many as 40 million Americans (an estimated 25 to 35 percent of women and 10 to 16 percent of men) may have been sexually abused as children. In some parts of the rural southeast, such abuse is said to have been going on in some families for generations.

The first of the three models of adolescent sex offender treatments is the community-based program, where the offenders are allowed to remain at large in the community and live at home with their parents. Only low-risk offenders with supportive families can be safely treated in this manner. Almost all of the private treatment agencies are in this category. Programs last six to twelve months with the offender attending weekly or twice-weekly sessions of individual or group therapy. The family also attends at least once or twice a month. After a thorough evaluation, the adolescent and his family learn about male and female sexuality myths and realities, how to clarify sexual values, and how to differentiate between appropriate and inappropriate sexuality. They are taught how to be open and communicate about these matters in the group discussions. Offenders are taught various stress control and yoga techniques, relaxation methods, and focused breathing. Role-playing helps the group members to be clear about anger and to find appropriate means and ways to redirect it. They discuss their lack of self-esteem, sadness, and shame. Touching is encouraged to give mutual support. A group hug usually closes each group meeting. Success rates of over 95 percent are reported. Recidivism is very low, and costs average only about \$900 per year per offender.

The second model of treating adolescent sex offenders provides a residential facility, usually several cottages in a rural setting. Most of the offenders are twelve to eighteen years old, have minimum sentences (typically six months), and are relatively low-risk. They come from non-supportive family environments, however. These young offenders attend daily school classes on the grounds with a wide range of subjects and extracurricular activities. Each cottage offers daily sexual health classes consisting of basic anatomy, growth and development, sex roles, and sexual values. Some of the programs in this model utilize various psychological techniques to bombard the members' senses, produce emotional upheavals, and provide an avenue for them to change their deviant behavior. Physical stroking, massage, relaxation, reality therapy, Gestalt,

⁴ Knopp, *Youthful Sex Offender*, 8–10.

⁵ Eugene Porter, *Treating the Young Male Victim of Sexual Assault: Issues and Intervention Strategies* (Syracuse, NY: Safer Society Press, 1986), 4.

psychodrama, verbal confrontation, and primal scream are some of these techniques. The residential model permits reinforcing other techniques with Skinnerian operant conditioning through punishment and reward. Punishments include being restricted to one's room for aggression against a peer or staff member. Rewards for responsible, desirable behavior include more freedom on campus, passes for home visits, later bed-times, and more recreational activities. Excellent rates of success of up to 95 percent have been reported for this type of program. Recidivism of those who have completed the program and been released is very low.

The third model provides the secure, lock-down prison or mental hospital environment for the worst types of adolescent sex offenders. This prison format is the "end of the line" for the excessively hostile and aggressive kids who are highly resistant to rehabilitation. They are those who have been sentenced for serious acts of assault, rape, and murder. "The majority of these boys had previous sexual experiences, an observation that discredits the popular assumption that adolescent sexual assaults constitute merely sexual exploration or experimentation" (Groth, 1979, p. 182). Where special facilities for youthful criminals are available, the sex offenders should be separated from the other youths because they are at the bottom of the inmate hierarchy. Inmates and even the staff tend to treat them very badly. They are frequently assaulted and raped, sometimes murdered, or may commit suicide. Unfortunately, there are still some fifteen states that do not have a recognizable, secure program for the rehabilitation of adolescent sex offenders. This secure environment is the most expensive of the three models, costing up to \$80,000 a year per inmate. In the best of these programs, there is a strong staff of psychiatrists, psychologists, social workers, and teachers who are specially trained in the rehabilitation of young sex offenders. Generally, the same subjects are taught, and the same behavioral-change techniques are used in both individual and group therapy sessions as in the residential model above, but observation and control of the inmate's behavior are much more intense. Inmates—they are never referred to by such a term, but are instead called "students"—are closely screened and assigned to teams of students with similar problems and carefully matched with staff of appropriate personality and training. Knopp⁶ reports that of the ten sex offenders who completed the Closed Adolescent Treatment Program in Denver, Colorado, none are known to have re-offended.

We may safely conclude that special treatment of adolescent sex offenders is urgently needed and that there are three general models available which do provide the graduated staircase of security and control commensurate with the seriousness of the offenses. We should rejoice at the moderate expense, enlightening educational experience, and fine results that have been reported for the first two models in the community and residential settings, but the third model in the prison or asylum shows cause to worry. First, there are not enough of them to handle the large numbers of adolescents who have committed serious sex crimes. Secondly, they are expensive and have inde-

⁶ Knopp, Youthful Sex Offender

terminate results from one tiny sample, so a reliable success rate is unknown. Thirdly, the consequences of releasing a sadist, rapist, necrophiliac, or lust murderer, who may injure or kill again, are abhorrent. The alternative of keeping him in prison for the fifty or sixty years of his remaining life at a cost to the taxpayers of over \$2 million each is only slightly less repulsive. The only option remaining, short of executing these serious sex offenders, is to castrate them. In spite of the proven effectiveness of castration, however, it is not advocated for prepubescent offenders due to the high-pitched, juvenile voice and other bodily effects that may result from the operation if it is performed prior to the completion of puberty. The average age of completion of puberty has been lowering, so it may be safe as early as age sixteen.

Several states had enacted laws in the past fifty years that provided indefinite sentences for sex offenders to allow them to be incarcerated until they were “cured” or until they were no longer a threat to the populace. However, several of those who were released again committed sex crimes within a few months of their release, and there was a public outcry against those who had released them. The dilemma has been that it is difficult to determine when sex offenders are cured of their aberration. Psychologists Faust and Ziskin have recently published an article in *Science* magazine that clearly shows that “clinicians are wrong at least twice as often as they are correct” in predicting violent behavior, so we must not rely on them to determine when it is safe to release aggressive sex offenders from prison. We must have the assurance that castration provides in addition to the psychological counseling mentioned above. What we are really trying to do with sex offender treatment programs is to tame the twin volcanoes of lust and aggression, no easy matter in mankind. With castration, we turn down the heat that melts the magma of the emotions. With psychological and educational treatments, we re-channel the vents from the volcano’s interior so the magma does not erupt.

The closing of juvenile corrections institutions in Massachusetts and Maryland provided an opportunity to evaluate their effectiveness by closely controlled scientific methods. Although these institutions did not specialize in the treatment of juvenile sex offenders alone, useful information on the comparable effectiveness may be drawn from these studies.

The relevant research literature has included several studies of the effectiveness of adolescent correctional programs. Several reviews published in the 1970s uncovered little evidence to support the efficacy of any interventions with delinquent youths (Lipton et al., 1975; Martinson, 1975; Wright and Dixon, 1977). With regard to ... institutionalization versus community-based placement, the early reviews found community-based treatment programs to be cost-effective alternatives to institutionalization.

They found little evidence that either alternative had rehabilitative effects, but community-based treatment was less costly.⁷

The Massachusetts de-institutionalization experience “showed greater overall recidivism for youths committed to the Department of Youth Services following the closing of training schools (Coates et al., 1978; Ohlin et al., 1977).”

The Maryland study showed that treatment of the post-closing group was very different and far less costly in dollars (about \$17,750 per member per year of care and custody for the average post-closing group and \$41,070 for the pre-closing group). The two-and-one-half-year follow-up showed 66 and 69 percent of the institutionalized groups were rearrested, whereas 83 percent of the post-closing group were rearrested, according to the official records. The self-reports of criminal behavior, however, showed that more than 75 percent of each group reported committing crimes against property, and more than 80 percent of each group reported engaging in crimes against persons.

Another treatment modality for adolescents called “boot camps” was used in several states. The idea was to subject these young offenders to a strict military discipline to straighten them out. The Los Angeles County Juvenile Drug Treatment Boot Camp was the longest running camp, and an evaluation in 2001 showed graduates were rearrested at the same rate as a comparison group.

⁷ Denise C. Gottfredson and William H. Barton, “Deinstitutionalization of Juvenile Offenders,” *Criminology* 31, no. 41 (1993): 591–611.

XI. Psychotherapy

Psychotherapy refers to all forms of treatment that rely on interpersonal interactions, including psychoanalysis. It can do much good, or it can do great harm. The results of treatment depend upon the personality of the treating person. Psychotherapy is most effective when the therapist takes responsibility for inducing change in his patient. This may seem like a perfectly obvious and necessary orientation to the treatment process, but it is not a guiding principle for many who practice psychotherapy. So many therapists leave the responsibility for changing to the patient. It is a complete myth that a psychotherapist can remain neutral toward his patient. The doctor must be accepting of the patient but rejecting in relation to the patient's psychopathology. This attitude toward illness is not as pervasive among psychiatrists and psychoanalysts, and certainly not so among many of the varied persons who claim to be psychotherapists, as it is among medical doctors. Some therapists are so disturbed in their own personalities and values that they openly reinforce the patient's illness.¹

The psychotherapies, as well as the religious therapies, have a serious obstacle to overcome in the natural repugnance with which sex crimes are viewed. In order to be effective, the therapists must empathize with the patient, but no one can really empathize with these loathsome practices short of a person who has the exact same sexual deviance. This situation is aggravated today by the large numbers of female therapists who are hormonally and emotionally unable to relate to male sex offenders at a level where they can be really helpful. On the other hand, if therapists are overly sympathetic, they can be seen as supportive of the offensive behavior and become counterproductive to therapy as well. One way to empathize with an offender is to treat him as a victim himself. An estimated 80 percent of sex offenders were themselves victims of sexual abuse.

Sex offenders are a very heterogeneous group. Our society still lacks the understanding necessary to reverse many of their underlying psychological problems. Progress is being made, however, in some categories of sex offenders through a number of approaches involving traditional psychoanalysis along with other treatment modalities. Traditionally, psychoanalysis has been thought of as an individual meeting with a psychiatrist or psychologist on a one-to-one basis, just as with a medical doctor, to investigate the deep-seated problems that were responsible for the offending behavior. This often requires a lot of time (two or three visits a week for several years) and is

¹ Harold Voth, *The Castrated Family* (Mission, KS: Sheed Andrews and McMeel, Inc., 1977), ch. 3.

very expensive (\$40 to \$70 per hour for the skilled counselor). The results of several checks of the effectiveness of the psychotherapies have been mixed, with little change in the rate of parole violations being the norm. In one study, the suspension rate for parolees was two and one-half times higher where therapy was administered by psychiatrists and psychologists than when it was administered by a trained social worker. Knowledge of the psychology of the sex offender, skill in interviewing, and the attitude of the therapist are crucial to the success of the psychotherapies.

Some of the problems of individual counseling are resolved by the use of groups as treatment agents. A variety of therapies are employed—group therapy, guided group interaction, encounter groups, training, and applied human relations are a few of them. By 1994, 86 percent of sex offender treatment programs used the group treatment modality. Costs were reduced to about \$7 to \$12 per hour per member. The belligerent, antisocial rehabilitant is brought into line by his fellows, and the asocial, shy, withdrawn person is drawn into conversation by the peer pressure of the group. In 1990, 84 percent of juveniles and 87 percent of adults were treated in peer groups.² To be most effective, group psychotherapy should: 1) Have all members of the group with a similar problem so that they have a common meeting ground. 2) Have some more frightful alternative such as prison to not entering group therapy as an impetus to participate fully. 3) Consist of people who have adequate intelligence to communicate, conceptualize, and gain insight with others in the group. 4) Be made up of people who have a sincere desire to find the way back to the self-respect needed for full participation in the life of a free community. Results have shown definite improvements in the short term while institutionalized and for a short time after offenders were at liberty on their own, but did not significantly reduce recidivism in the long term (*Journal of Offender Therapy*, August 2002, p. 467). Here again, results depended on the training, warmth, and “goodness” of the groups’ counselors since they have to become role models for the group to emulate. The attitude, mindset, and viewpoint of these people are important to the rapport needed to secure the cooperation of the sex offender. One factor that makes the results of the psychotherapies difficult to assess is their constant state of change. Some institutions change methods as often as every six months.

A. Evaluation

Closely allied with and using similar methods and techniques with the foregoing section on education treatment, is evaluation or assessment of the individual sex offender. Today, the mind is seen as being the seat of deviant behavior. Not so long ago, it was thought to be the heart, the soul, the devil, the stomach, or the spleen that caused bad behavior. Criminal behavior was long believed to be caused by the positions of the stars; indeed, millions of people still believe that the stars control their destiny. But now in this country, the mind is most popularly thought to be the cause. As much as

² Knopp, *Youthful Sex Offender*

possible must be known of the offender's mind in order for some of the psychotherapies to be effective. Nearly every method and technique known to mankind has been used to measure the intelligence, knowledge, beliefs, and mental abilities of the offender at one time or another. New methods are being invented and pressed into service every few months to assay the causes of criminal behavior. As soon as new devices appear on the market, they are converted to serve in this search: videocassette recorders, audio equipment, computers, laser-assisted devices, new drugs, hypnosis, meditation devices, bodily chemistry discoveries, and so on. It is nearly impossible to describe all of the devices that might be used, so only a few can be named here.

Much information is already available on each sex offender by the time he is tried, sentenced, incarcerated, and ready for treatment. The records of the trial, background investigation, hospital treatment, and prison record, etc. already provide voluminous files on the individual offender's behavior. A full autobiography of the offender's life to give the therapist some insight into the offender's family background and character supplements this. It has been found that as a class, sex offenders do not voluntarily reveal all that needs to be known of their sexual behavior. Much of this behavior is denied, rationalized, or hidden by the individual, even from himself. Furthermore, much of this behavior is criminal and would bring him further heavy penalties from society in the form of additional prison sentences or at least social censure and ostracism, if he were to reveal it. Lying and deception are typical.

Autobiographical information is supplemented with various inventories and tests. Self-report inventories of shyness, fear of rejection, social anxiety, and distress are used. The Clarke Sexual History Questionnaire, the Thorne Sexual Inventory, and various specially formulated sexual inventories are used to bring out the individual's psychosexual interests. Psychological and personality profiles are obtained by the aid of various tests, including the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, the Million Clinical Multiaxial Inventory, the California Psychological Inventory, the Adjective Check List, the CAQ Par II, the 16 PF Form c, the Motivational Analysis Test, the Pacht Hostility/Guilt Inventory, the Spence-Helmreich Attitudes toward Women Scale, the Bender-Gestalt Test, the Shipley Institute of Living Scale, the Wechsler Adult Intelligence Scale, and Bem's Androgyny Scale. Other psychological tests and measurements that have been mentioned in the literature as being used to evaluate sex offenders are:

- Abel Cognitive Distortion Checklist
- Abel Assessment for Interest in Paraphilias
- Adult/Adolescent Parenting Inventory
- Alcohol/Drug Assessment
- Alcohol Overview
- Anon Composite Fear Inventory
- Anon Personal Problem Checklist
- Anon Pleasure Inventory
- Anon Thought Stopping Survey
- Beck Depression Inventory

Behavioral Checklist
Bipolar Inventory
Children's Personality Questionnaire
Clinical Analysis Questionnaire
Cognitive Distortion Scale
Cognitive Map
Coopersmith Self-esteem Inventory
Curtis Sentence Completion Test
Derogates Sexual Inventory
Developmental Profile II
Edwards Assessment of Social and Sexual Skills
Elizur Test of Psycho-Organicity
Family Sexuality Scale
Fundamental Interpersonal Relations Orientation
Hare Psychopathy Checklist
Harm Reduction
High School Personality Questionnaire
Hooper Visual Organization Test
Incest Definitional Survey
Jesness Inventory
Johnson Assessments
Kaufman Test
Keymath
Locke-Wallace Marital Adjustment
Lowe and Cautela Social Performance Survey
MAPI
Marital Inventory
Mental Status Examination
Multiphasic Sex Inventory
Novaco Provocation Inventory
Psychological Evaluations
Psychological Screening Inventory
Rapid Assessment Risk for Sex Offender Recidivism
Roberts Apperception Test
Rorschach
Rotter Locus Control
SCL-90
Sexual Abuse Inventory
Social/Sexual Knowledge and Attitude Test
Sex Offender Re-offense Risk Assessment Videotapes
Sexual Responsiveness Survey
Tennessee Self-concept

Violence Risk Appraisal
Vinland Adaptive Behavior Scales
WISC

Most sex offenders will resist voluntary explanations for their deviant behavior and, of course, many are not really aware of why they do some of those horrendous crimes. Typically, they will explain it away. "It's not my fault," the rapist will say, "she asked for it," and the child molester will say, "The kids enjoy it," so they have to be interviewed in depth to draw out or force out all of their deviances and get at the truth of what actually has happened with them. Even the most skillful interviewers must seek verification of what actually happened from victims, family, and police in order to establish the whole truth with the required degree of accuracy for psychotherapy to be successful. The interview process of evaluation of sex offenders is even more critical than for other offenders because the interviewer is usually the person who plays the key role in the determination of the offender's dangerousness. Judges, parole boards, treatment staffs, and prison officials usually rely on his assessment of the offender to determine the required degree of security—whether he can be released from close confinement or not, and whether the offender is to be admitted to the treatment program in the first place.

Evaluation by peers in a group setting is another valuable tool in assessing an offender's progress or recalcitrance. An offender's peers live with him twenty-four hours a day, and the staff only sees him for a maximum of eight hours a day, so his peers know some aspects of his behavior and thinking better than the staff does. Peer-group members are often considered keener evaluators of fellow sexual aggression than professional staff.

One of the most powerful evaluation devices for sex offenders is the penile plethysmograph, such as the Parks Electronic Mercury Strain Gauge or equivalent. It consists of a strain gauge and transducer, which is placed around the penis of the patient, and a recorder, which may be a pen writing on a moving paper tape like a polygraph or it may be recorded digitally as a percentage from zero to 100. The device is capable of measuring male sexual arousal directly by monitoring penile tumescence very closely and accurately. Arousal is a very complex reaction with many physical and mental variables. Physical factors include how well fed, well rested, comfortable, or healthy the individual is; the time of day; time of month; age; and many other circumstances existing at the moment of testing. Mental factors include anxiety, guilt, remorse, educational level, knowledge of the subject, learning experiences, peer pressure, staff pressure and attitude, and all learning experiences: ethnic, religious, familial background, whether urban or rural environment, belief structures, etc. All affect arousal patterns. Many techniques have been designed to control for these variables. An analysis of the offender's arousal pattern can be gained by the technique of describing various sexual scenarios, playing tapes of the same, or showing pictures, slides, movies, or television scenes depicting varying degrees and types of sexual adventures and concurrently measuring the person's response with the plethysmograph. By correlating the types of

sexual activity presented in the films, pictures, or descriptions with the record from the strain gauge, a very clear analysis of the individual's arousal cues is obtained. As of mid-1990, 21 percent of juvenile treatment providers and 32 percent of all adult treatment providers utilized penile plethysmography.³

The success of the plethysmography was open to the question: Can male sexual arousal be voluntarily controlled?⁴ The prevailing view for many years was that tumescence of the penis is completely involuntary. However, the presence of nerves connecting the higher brain centers to the autonomic nervous system shows that penile tumescence may be under some degree of voluntary control. If a man is being accused of pedophilia and undergoing plethysmographic tests for his deviant arousal to child sexual material, his defense is to voluntarily suppress this arousal. This is still a matter of some controversy. In general, the "research to date suggests that while many men are capable of some degree of voluntary suppression of sexual arousal, few, if any, are able to completely suppress arousal to stimuli." On the other hand, without sexual stimuli, almost no man is able to create much of a sexual response.⁵

For many years, the more conventional polygraph (lie detector) was used to detect the truth of detainees' statements. Up to about 1990, the average accuracy of the polygraph was about 83 percent,⁶ and the equipment was quite bulky and required special training to operate, but by the year 2000, it had been reduced to laptop-computer size and was judged to be about 97.3 percent accurate. This computerized polygraph measures heart rate, blood pressure, galvanic skin reaction, and other reactions to questions and is used quite successfully to keep sex offenders honest in their responses to treatments. Probation officers in some jurisdictions use the new polygraphs periodically (two to four times a year) to monitor parolees' adherence to their rules of conduct.

By 1999, the Abel Assessment for Interest in Paraphilias (AAIP) became one of the most widely used devices for evaluating the deviant interests of sex offenders. Approximately 300 sex offender therapists in thirty-six states, two foreign countries, and eight states' judicial systems used the AAIP. This device used self-report of attraction to twenty-two categories of possible sexual stimuli, as well as surreptitious measure of sustained attention to photographs of the stimuli. It also includes a questionnaire regarding sexual behavior. This instrument is conceptually based on the viewing time of pictures, which had been shown to be a measure of sexual interest. Two studies of the AAIP were published in the July 1999 issue of *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* evaluating the reliability and validity of the device. These

³ Knopp, *Youthful Sex Offender*

⁴ S. Abrams, "The Use of Polygraph with Sex Offenders," *Annals of Sex Research*, 4, no. 3(4) (1991): 251.

⁵ D. S. Strassberg, "Male Sexual Response to Stimuli: Can it be Suppressed?" *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* 26, no. 1 (1992): 50.

⁶ Lane Fischer and Gillan Smith, "Statistical Adequacy of the Abel Assessment for Interest in Paraphilias," *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 11, no. 3 (1999): 195-205.

studies found the evidence of the AAIP's reliability and validity weak for adults and even weaker for juvenile offenders.

There is an important principle to be learned from these observations. If sexual arousal is largely beyond conscious mental control, how can the thinking strategies of the psychological therapies hope to control sexual behavior? We control our other bodily functions very poorly and at great risk of damage when we consciously try to suppress them. Eating, drinking, sleeping, urinating, breathing, and defecation are some of these that are similar to the sex urge. Their pressures are mostly beyond conscious mental control. We ought to recognize this and give more thought to changing the body's chemistry to better suppress deviant sexual behavior.

It has been found that about 90 percent of rapists get a sexually deviant arousal in a laboratory setting using videotape assessment. Effectiveness is about 80 percent for pedophiles with the audiotape and about 75 percent with the slides. A typical videotape for rapists consists of twelve sequences: three depicting mutually consenting intercourse, three with nudity, three with a rape attack and three with a physical assault of a woman by a man without sexual activity. Half of the scenes are presented with instructions for the rapist to not try to interfere with his arousal and half with instructions for him to try to suppress arousal and exert self-control. He is also asked to give an estimate of how aroused he was and the maximum arousal he reached. The therapist thereby gets three indications from the rapist: How he responds to various stimuli when he is not trying to control himself, an index of his self-control of his erection response, and an index of his personal awareness of how aroused he was. The rapist will generally show some arousal with the nudity and consenting intercourse but much more from the rape and violent scenes. The most dangerous rapists will show the most arousal from the most violent scenes, and the less dangerous ones will show less. Whatever the individual's peculiar deviant sexual arousal pattern is, it can be quite accurately catalogued and a system of treatment begun to decrease that specific pattern.

Another method, which is even less under the conscious control of the paraphiliac, is pupillometry. During the four to seven seconds after a stimulus is presented, a sexually deviant individual will develop greater pupil dilation, which can be accurately gauged.⁷ Since the pupil of the eye responds to many other stimuli besides sexual arousal (variations in light intensity and movements of the eyelids, jaws, and face muscles, etc.), this method had not been perfected as of 1993.

Hypnotism began to be used in psychiatry as the principal way of probing the unconscious mind toward the end of the nineteenth century. In the past twenty or thirty years, it has been used intermittently in the criminal justice system to strengthen the fading memory of witnesses to criminal events. It is well established that events that cause a great deal of annoyance, disturbance, or distress to an individual are poorly

⁷ G. Abel and J. L. Rouleau, *Sexual Disorders. The Medical Basis of Psychiatry* (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders Co., 1986), 25

remembered, especially after some time has elapsed. These are unique features of many of the sex offenses. By the time the offenders come to therapy, considerable time has elapsed, and the offenders have already suffered considerably from being low-man on the hierarchy of prison inmates. In the prison society, pedophiles and some of the other sexual deviates are thought of as repulsive weirdos whose deviant behavior is so morbid and bizarre that they are ostracized and suffer near-universal censure from the rest of the criminals. As a result, they have deeply repressed memories of their most deviant thoughts and acts. Hypnotism is capable of inducing the phenomenon of hypermnnesia, abnormally vivid or complete memory of impressions long seemingly forgotten and repressed. This remarkable ability permits the recovery of memories otherwise unavailable and makes possible extensive exploration of the developmental aspects of the offender's experiential past.

Pentothal (thiopental sodium for injection, USP) is another evaluation tool that is available for verifying the truth of an offender's statements or probing the disordered reasoning that has led him to commit his crimes. It is an ultra-short-acting depressant of the central nervous system that can produce hypnosis within thirty to forty seconds of intravenous injection. Pentothal is widely used in anesthesia and to a lesser extent for narcoanalysis (psychotherapy under sedation for the recovery of repressed memories and emotions) and narcosynthesis (narcoanalysis which has as its goal a reintegration of the patient's personality) in psychiatric disorders. Only persons qualified in the use of intravenous anesthetics and in a setting where emergency medical equipment is available must administer this "truth serum," as it is sometimes called. It is contraindicated where there is an absence of veins for intravenous administration or in patients allergic to barbiturates or who have status asthmatics, latent Porphyria, cardiovascular disease, hypotension, Addison's disease, renal dysfunction, myxedema, anemia, asthma, or myasthenia gravis. These are some of the considerations that have lessened the practicality of its utilization, but it should be mentioned because conditions may arise that would make its use advisable for the evaluation of sex offenders.

Evaluation of the sex offender is such a key factor in the application of the expensive and time-consuming (up to five years) psychotherapies that most any measures seem justifiable. It is also important to realize that a large percentage of the sex offenders in any given jurisdiction will not be amenable to the treatments that are available there at that time. In the Intensive Treatment Program for Sexual Aggressive at the Minnesota Security Hospital at St. Peter, 83 percent in fiscal year 1981 and 82 percent in fiscal year 1982 of those submitted by the courts were found not amenable to treatment. In the Sex Offender Program at the Western State Hospital at Ft. Steilacoom, Washington, 50 percent of those sent for observation were rejected during the 1981-to-1984 period. In the Transitional Sex Offender Program at the Minnesota Correctional Facility at Lino Lakes, between 1978 and 1983, forty-three out of 174 of those who were screened and found acceptable for the program were dropped or chose to leave before completion because of unsuitability or disciplinary problems. These revelations bear directly on the meanings of the reported treatment success rates of the various programs because

only those sex offenders who were judged to be good prospects for successful treatment were chosen in the first place.

Courts frequently adjudicate criminal defendants as incompetent to stand trial and order defendants to psychiatric hospitals for treatments and education designed to restore the defendant to competence. From 25,000 to 36,000 competence-to-stand-trial evaluations are performed annually in the United States, resulting in approximately 9,000 defendants being adjudicated as incompetent to stand trial. Approximately 15,000 criminal defendants are hospitalized at any given time in the United States. Most of the defendants are incompetent due to psychotic disorder and/or mental retardation.⁸

When we reflect on the sex offender population at large and realize that only a small percentage are caught, tried, found guilty, sentenced to incarceration, and voluntarily enter a treatment program, then find that large numbers of them are further screened out before completion, we come to the stark reality of the meaning of the claimed 50 to 85 percent "success" rates for these various programs. There just does not seem to be anything that really works across the spectrum of sex offenses that is being used in the United States today. We know a great deal and have tried many modalities, and now we need to examine them all and find those that will offer the best chance of cure for each individual sex offender. If a thorough job is done of the evaluation, then perhaps by a combination of treatments we can straighten any given sex offender out and reliably protect society from his further depredations, if we tailor our treatment to his specific series of causative factors.

Further aids to the evaluation of causation factors in sex offenders have been emerging over the past thirty or forty years in the realms of genetics and biology. It is possible for the trained observer to assess the relative contributions of biology and environment on the individual offender's deviant behavior. The tall, muscular XYY genotype, with larger than normal testicles and penis will have a larger than average contribution of androgenic hormonal biological factors to his behavior. The endomorphic individual will have a greater biological tendency to violence than the ectomorphic individual, other factors such as race, ethnic group, family background, lifestyle, profession, and physical activity being equal. One published study indicated that about 50 percent of the sex offenders whom they tested showed brain dysfunction as evaluated by two different methods, one of which used a printout of density numbers generated by a computer from brain tomography scans. The other method used mean blood flow data generated from a Harshaw TASC-5 Regional Cerebral Blood Flow analysis system.⁹

Additionally, the Luria-Nebraska Neuropsychological Test Battery was used to measure the behavioral correlates of brain dysfunction. The data from these type tests may be useful in some cases, at some point in time, for more accurately evaluating the rel-

⁸ S. G. Noffsinger, "Restoration to Competency Practice Guidelines," *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 45, no. 3 (2001): 356.

⁹ Graver, Gartman, et al. *Journal of Forensic Sciences* 27 (January 1982): 125.

ative contributions of a somatic versus an environmental etiology of the sex offender's criminal behavior.

It would be misleading, however, to suggest that we have reached a state of clinical knowledge that ensures the successful rehabilitation of men who rape. As yet, no single method of treatment or type of therapeutic intervention has proved to be totally effective. And, given the wide range of individual differences found among men who rape, it is unlikely that any single treatment approach will ever prove suitable for all such offenders.¹⁰

B. Behavioral Therapies

A large (about 64 percent) subgroup of the psychotherapies utilized in treating sex offenders can be grouped under this heading, which is often called "behavior modification" since they seek to operate directly on the offending behavior (Brodsky, 1977). The rationale is that it was overt criminal behavior that caused the offender to be subject to the authorities. Direct treatment to alter this particular behavior appears to be the shortest route to an improvement. As a concept of psychology, John B. Watson first systematized behaviorism in 1913. The organism is seen as responding to environmental stimuli and biological processes. Most psychiatrists believe that in principle, all behavior disorders originate as psychoneuroses, which are characterized by well-defined neurotic symptoms. One person may develop neurotic symptoms, while another, who is exposed to identical environmental influences, will develop a behavior disorder. One individual may simply be more of an acting-out type, whereas the other may be more of a mental type. All of the following techniques have been tried at one time or another in the treatment of sex offenders.

1. Aversion Therapy

One of the principle behavioral therapies in use for more than thirty years, aversion therapy attempts to eliminate the undesired behavior by pain or punishment judiciously applied in a timely and systematic manner. Noxious or painful stimuli are administered corresponding to the behavior that is to be decreased. Pharmaceutical-strength ammonia fumes or placentaculture fumes administered by smashing and waving a small, net-enmeshed capsule under the patient's nose or by means of a nasal cannula are paired with an erection indication from the penile strain gauge while the patient observes pictures of deviant stimuli. The procedure is repeated over and over many times until the viewing of the pictures no longer produces indications of sexual arousal. General arousal is reduced to less than 20 percent after twenty-five olfactory-conditioning sessions.

Undesirable side effects of labored breathing, nasal pain, headaches, watering eyes, or nosebleeds have been experienced with ammonia fumes after 100 or more sessions.

¹⁰ Groth, *Men Who Rape*, 215.

About 20 percent of men in one of these programs did not respond adequately to noxious stimuli. Those who did not respond were referred to electric shock aversive stimulation (also called aversive galvanic stimulation) and were sometimes given this in conjunction with the noxious stimuli. An electrode is affixed to the arm, leg, or thigh, and a shock is administered whenever arousal is paired with a deviant picture or other stimulus. Some psychologists believe that electroshock is inhumane and does not work very well. In the Safer Society Program survey of mid-1990, 24 percent of juvenile sex offender treatment providers said they used aversive conditioning, and 31 percent of adult treatment providers said they did.

The legal literature lists several cases where aversion therapy was found to be cruel and unusual punishment under the Eighth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. The 1973 *Knecht v. Gillman* (488 F.2d 1136, 8th Circuit) case determined that apomorphine, an emetic drug, administered to inmates at the Iowa Medical Facility as aversion therapy constituted cruel and unusual punishment. The apomorphine had no therapeutic effect, was not an acceptable medical practice, and caused harsh adverse effects. In *Mackey v. Procunier* (477 F.2d 877, 9th Circuit, 1973), the court held that the administration of the fright drug, succinylcholine, to prisoners at the California Medical Facility at Vacaville as aversion therapy could constitute cruel and unusual punishment. In *Nelson v. Heyne* (355 F. Supp. 451, 455, N.D. N.Y. 1972) and *Pena v. New York State Division for Youth* (419 F. Supp. 203, 207, S.D. N.Y. 1976), the federal courts held that standing medical orders to administer psychotropic drugs to maintain order in juvenile homes constituted cruel and unusual punishment.¹¹

2. Covert Sensitization

Covert sensitization is a behavioral technique of an average nature, which is usually used as a stepping stone to more invasive techniques. It involves the covert pairing of the offender's deviant behavior with an aversive scene that is a likely consequence of his deviant behavior, such as his wife divorcing him, his children ridiculed in school, his boss firing him, public ridicule by friends and family, paying a fine, blackmail, going to jail, and so on. These aversive scenes are videotaped or audiotaped and played to the offender at appropriate times, whenever he shows signs of deviant arousal.

3. Systematic Desensitization

Systematic desensitization is somewhat similar to covert sensitization but uses several other techniques that are taught and practiced and paired with deviant arousal stimuli. Relaxation techniques, such as deep breathing exercises, relaxation of muscles, and concentrating on other relaxing situations, and ingestion of relaxing drugs, such as Valium, short-acting barbiturates, methahepation sodium, and carbon dioxide, are used.¹²

4. Flooding

¹¹ E. A. Fitzgerald, "Chemical Castration: MPA Treatment for the Sex Offender," *American Journal of Criminal Law* 18, no. 1 (1990): 35-36.

¹² R. Corsini, *Current Psychotherapies* (Itasca, IL: F. E. Peacock Publishers, 1973), 232.

Flooding differs from systematic desensitization in that no counter-conditioning relaxation is used. The patient with obsessive-compulsive behavioral problems is flooded with appropriate erotic stimuli to the point where he is no longer able to respond inappropriately, and a state of protective inhibition is reached. Masturbation to well past the point of satiation is an example. Another technique called “implosive therapy” has been used, presenting psychodynamic themes in lieu of erotic stimuli to flood the patient to the point of inhibition (Corsini, p. 232).

5. Assertiveness Training

This training—or more accurately, “appropriate expression training”—is pursued through a combination of interventions which lead the patient to feel and act on his right to be himself as long as it hurts no one else in the process. Appropriate sexual interaction is taught and roleplayed repeatedly until the patient feels comfortable with proper sexual interaction to the exclusion of unacceptable acting out (Corsini, CRM Books. Note: Most of the following ten therapies’ information was taken from the same source).

6. Modeling

Modeling and social imitation of other people’s behavior is one of the ways by which we all acquire complex new responses to our environmental conditions. We yawn when others yawn, laugh when others laugh, and run when others run. There are many applications of modeling in therapeutic situations. An offender can acquire a whole new repertoire of socially appropriate responses merely by watching videotape sequences of the desired behavior. One of the crucial variables in successful modeling is the power of the model to attract the interest and respect of the patient. Celebrities and experts of the appropriate age, sex, ethnic group, charisma, and social power to attract the patient are required for maximum effectiveness. In vivo, modeling procedures are always in danger if the therapist is anxious or critical. He could model inappropriate behavior, which could exacerbate the patient’s symptoms. Modeling treatments are used with other types of therapies as appropriate and tend to be relatively inexpensive. Unfortunately, most offenders are placed in institutions where there are large numbers of deviant people, so they have very little opportunity to view socially positive responses. This is very likely one of the reasons our prisons have failed to rehabilitate these people. In addition to viewing socially appropriate behavior, the relearning of the offender must be practiced, and opportunities must be made available for him to perform the activity correctly.

7. Emotive Imagery

This procedure pairs deviance-arousing situations and strong positive ideas such as power, heroism, and protection. It differs from systematic desensitization in that the imagined positive feelings replace relaxations as the new response to be learned in relation to the arousing situation. It employs various means of dramatizing truths and falsehoods so that the client can clearly distinguish between the two. The therapist may employ modeling to show the offender how to adopt new values; role playing to bring out how the client’s false ideas affect his relations with others; humor to reduce

his disturbance-creating ideas to absurdity; and exhortation to persuade him to give up the crazy ideas and replace them with more acceptable and efficient notions.

8. Therapeutic Sexual Arousal

This type of arousal has been used to teach deviant men normal, acceptable, and proper sexual responses. A trained female partner, called a “surrogate partner,” helps the men by talking with them and having sex if it is indicated. A 1974 Time magazine article titled “Trick or Treatment?” described the use of surrogates at the Berkeley Sex Therapy Program as netting the surrogates \$110 per visit. The sexual arousal therapy sometimes is administered without the female partner by using sexual fantasies and masturbation as substitutes.

An experiment with a very similar treatment called “intimacy training” using real sexual contact in the Netherlands was published in the April 2000 *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* (p. 249). The experiment used two male sex offenders. One of the offenders recidivated with a sexual assault similar to his former offenses. This experiment showed that this kind of training alone will not be sufficient and should be followed by other kinds of training.

9. Behavior Rehearsal

Behavior rehearsal is an anxiety-inhibiting technique designed to substitute appropriate behavior for maladaptive behavior in certain social situations. The therapist first plays the client’s role to exaggerate the behavioral errors and then demonstrates the appropriate behavior. The client then replicates the therapist’s verbal and nonverbal behavior. The effectiveness of behavioral rehearsal depends heavily on the therapist’s skills.

10. Playboy Therapy

This therapy is useful in reorienting clients with a deviant sexual inclination to a positive heterosexual orientation. The client uses erotic pictures from Playboy magazine as a stimulus for masturbation to orgasm at home. After successful trials with the Playboy stimulus, the pictures are removed, and the client has to imagine them and then has to imagine erotic, real-life females, whom he knows, engaging in sexual activities with him as an accompaniment to his masturbation. Masturbation techniques are frequently employed despite limited evidence of their effectiveness.¹³

11. Thought Stopping

This involves instructing the client to engage in his obsessive ruminations. When the client indicates that he is thinking the problematic thought or is verbalizing the recurring concern, the therapist dramatically shouts, “Stop!” This is an aversive stimulus and a distracting influence. The patient invariably stops talking or temporarily discontinues the rumination. After several trials with the therapist, the client is instructed to continue the practice by himself.

12. Shaping

¹³ *Hormones & Behavior* (September 2001): 313.

This is a technique in which small, discrete steps toward a larger and ultimate behavioral goal are specified, prompted, and reinforced until the behavioral goal is reached. In shaping a new response, successive approximations of the desired behavior are reinforced by rewards, and unrelated responses are not and are thereby extinguished.

13. Token Economy

Token economy can be used in institutions such as mental hospitals where the offender is under more or less complete control to reinforce desired behavior and extinguish unwanted behavior. The tokens themselves are like money and may consist of poker chips, cards, or marks on a wall chart that may be awarded or withheld in a recognized system of rewards. The accumulated tokens then can be exchanged for privileges, free time, opportunities, and objects. Although tokens can be very effective in a controlled environment, they are somewhat artificial. Socially acceptable behavior is not usually rewarded so tangibly in the outside free society, and the offender must be weaned from the tokens to other reinforcers such as social approval. There is virtually no evidence showing long-term conformity after a deviant's graduation from one of these programs.

14. Contingency Contracting

This may be a verbal agreement such as "if you do X, I will give you Y." But it is better to have a written record specifying in detail exactly what the offender will get in return for and after he has performed certain specific behavior.

15. Hydrotherapy

Hydrotherapy, hydropathy, or "the water cure" are names for various systems of curing diseases by water: both by drinking it and applying it to the body. Spa therapy is based on drinking and bathing in certain mineral waters and is very popular in several European countries. Hydrotherapeutic benefits from the application of heat and massage in whirlpool baths are also beneficial as a means of inducing relaxation.

16. Hypnosis

Hypnosis or "mesmerism," in addition to being an aid in evaluating an offender's problems, can be used as an aid in achieving goals of desired behavior. A willing, cooperative, and interested subject can be taught with the aid of hypnosis to function with increased levels of awareness. Hypnosis is also an aid in achieving relaxation.

17. Operant Conditioning

This conditioning (also known as instrumental conditioning, trial-and-error learning, and Thorndikian conditioning) was greatly advanced by the work of B. F. Skinner, who viewed behavior as controlled by either operant or respondent reflexes. Operant behavior is determined by past conditioning and genetics, while respondent behavior is controlled by classical Pavlovian stimulus/response conditioning. The operant stimulus sets the occasion for behavior, but does not necessarily drive it in the same manner as the classical stimulus. Skinner always felt that punishment is an ineffective and dangerous means of controlling behavior, so he used positive reinforcement much as in the token economy and shaping methods outlined above. He discovered that the schedule of the reinforcing reward is very important. An intermittent schedule of rewards, such

as those which a salesman or prospector receives, is far stronger than a routine schedule, like a weekly wage. As with the other methods of behavior modification, practioners of operant conditioning feel that they can change improper behavior directly in far less time than it takes to diagnose the reasons for it by such time-consuming processes as psychoanalysis.

18. Relapse Prevention

Like all of the therapeutic interventions for sex offenders, relapse prevention shares the same goal of preventing recidivism of the offending behavior and deterring subsequent victimization of other persons. The three detailed parts of relapse prevention are: 1) to increase the offender's awareness of the choices concerning the behavior; 2) to develop specific coping skills and self-control capacities; and 3) to create a general sense of mastery over his life. Relapse prevention includes intervention procedures that are designed to cope with the situations likely to cause relapses and to modify the early antecedents of relapses. Relapse prevention is not a standardized package for everyone, but an individualized program tailored to meet each client's specific needs.

A central premise of relapse prevention is that sexual offenses are rarely impulsive acts. Many offenders carefully plan to make it appear that their acts were unplanned, and others engage in substance abuse prior to offending to make it appear excusable.¹⁴ Relapse prevention is the most popular model for structuring the treatment of sex offenders, but it may be ineffective and even harmful for the majority of sex offenders.¹⁵ The rigorously designed Sex Offender Treatment and Evaluation Project's (SOTEP) controlled study in California found that more of the sex offenders randomly assigned to relapse prevention treatment sexually re-offended than did those who were randomly denied treatment. At the time of this writing, it is the most popular of treatments for sex offenders in the United States and is incorporated with many of the other treatments.

The meta-analysis of twenty-four studies of this treatment by Dowdon, Antonowicz, and Andrews in the October 2003 *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* (pp. 516–528) showed an average recidivism rate of 42.5 percent for the treatment group and a recidivism rate of 57.5 percent for the control group. The relapse prevention treatment was more effective for the young offender population than the older, but was relatively ineffective unless it was combined with other treatments such as cognitive-behavioral/social-learning strategies.

19. Harm Reduction

Within the framework of relapse prevention, the objective of harm reduction was recommended as a more realistic goal than preventing or eliminating relapses to sex

¹⁴ B. K. Schwartz and H. R. Cellini, *The Sex Offender Corrections, Treatment and Legal Practice* (Kingston, NJ: Civic Research Institute, Inc., 1995), 20–3.

¹⁵ Nathaniel McConaghy, "Methodical Issues Concerning Evaluation of Treatment for Sexual Offenders: Randomization, Treatment Dropouts, Untreated Controls, and Within-Treatment Studies," *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 11, no. 3 (1999): 184.

crimes, after about fifteen years of mixed successes with relapse prevention.¹⁶ Another adjunct treatment for the more serious aggressive adult sex offenders has been called the decompression treatment model. The concept of decompression treatment involves the development of clinical programming to gradually lift the individual out of the compressed cycle of extensive discipline. Like divers rising from the ocean depths, these individuals require gradual ascent back to the general population. Criminal recidivism rates improved from 20 to 10 percent in one 2001 study by Caldwell and Van Rybroek at the University of Wisconsin, Madison.

20. Dialectical Behavior Therapy (DBT)

DBT has been used with borderline personality disorder in women with good results. DBT focuses on decreasing interpersonal chaos, emotional lability, impulsiveness, self-confusion, and cognitive dysregulation. DBT is also directed toward increasing interpersonal effectiveness, emotion regulation, distress tolerance, and mindfulness. Essentially, the effort is to change the behavioral, emotional, and thinking patterns that cause misery and distress.¹⁷

C. Psychoanalysis

The term **psychoanalysis** historically has had three different meanings. First, it is a system of psychology derived from Sigmund Freud which stresses particularly the role of the unconscious and of dynamic forces in psychic functioning; second, it is a form of therapy which uses primarily free association and relies on the analysis of transference and resistance; and third, it is sometimes used to differentiate the Freudian from the non-Freudian approaches within the field of psychoanalysis proper.¹⁸

It contrasts with the other psychotherapies in its emphasis on transference. Here this means that the emotional attachments (either love or hate) that a patient had for his parents are transferred to the analyst. The analyst is then able to deduce the origins of the troublesome feelings and point them out to the patient so they can be dealt with. Psychoanalytical therapy is quite the opposite of the behavioral therapies in concept. Where behavior modification works directly on the symptoms displayed in behavior, psychoanalytical therapy seeks out the most hidden unconscious drives and motivations, which have been stored in the innermost recesses of the brain. Several authors seem to feel that the behavioral therapies are superior to these more traditional ones in speed and efficiency of curing various neuroses. Psychoanalysts believe that they are in possession of the most scientific approach to psychology and that their therapy

¹⁶ D. R. Laws, "Harm Reduction or Harm Facilitation?" *Sexual Abuse and Treatment* 11, no. 3 (1999): 2, 3.

¹⁷ Gerald R. Hover, *The ATSA Forum*, XI, no. 3 (Fall 1999): 10.

¹⁸ Corsini, *Current Psychotherapies*, 1.

is the most effective ever devised.¹⁹ Their training is by far the most rigorous of any of the psychotherapists. Most psychoanalysts have a preliminary degree in medicine and many have a PhD in psychology. They are required to undergo personal analysis lasting from two to ten years and complete a survey of the literature, which usually takes some four years of study, then they treat patients under supervision for a number of years before they are certified by the American Psychoanalytic Association and enter into practice on their own.

The method traditionally used by psychoanalysts to encourage the patient to use “free association” (the expression of any thoughts or feelings that come to mind regardless of their propriety, rationality, or logic) is to have them lie down on a couch and relax. The analyst sits out of sight behind the patient and remains silent during the major part of the therapy session. The patient frequently finds himself unable to speak these things freely, and he finds himself consciously withholding thoughts or feelings, and sometimes he simply cannot find anything to say. The inward barriers and conflicts that cause his difficulties with speaking are precisely the points of shame, inhibition, and fear of retaliation that reveal the difficulties in his life. He is aided by the therapist to understand these blockages and to free himself of them so as to enable him to live a new way of life.²⁰ The change process comes about by making the patient conscious of his unconscious conflicts.

The psychoanalytical theory of personality sees each person consisting of three parts: id, ego, and superego. The id is the source of all drives, the reservoir of all instincts—mainly sex, aggression, and bodily functions. Sexual development is seen as passing through five different stages: oral, anal, phallic, latency, and puberty. “The ego is the center of consciousness, the experiential being of the person. It is the sum total of thoughts, ideas, feelings, memories, and sensory perceptions.”²¹ It is the mind of man, which asserts control on his body, resulting in frequent conflict between the id and the ego. The superego consists of moral and social values acting as the moderator between the individual and his environment. It is often seen as the spiritual part of man manifested in his religious beliefs, and is frequently in conflict with the id. Superego is seen as comprised of the conscience, which makes the individual feel guilty, and the ego ideal, which makes the individual feel pleased with himself.

“Psychoanalysis has grown from a medical therapy to a total therapy to an educational approach to a philosophical system which has become one of the dominant philosophies of our time.”²² Its success rate as a therapy, however, has been reported in a rather qualified manner. In the main it has been quite successful with personality disturbances, which fall short of psychoses so disabling that the individual has to be hospitalized, but which still seriously interfere with the functioning in everyday life. With the more serious psychoses, the success rate is very poor. The therapy is

¹⁹ Ibid., 6.

²⁰ *Abnormal Psychology* (Del Mar, CA: CRM Books, 1972), 399.

²¹ Corsini, *Current Psychotherapies*, 93.

²² Ibid., 21.

enormously time consuming; some heroic efforts have taken as much as twenty years of daily sessions to complete a successful treatment for a schizophrenic. The general improvement rate found in a 1968 study by the Southern California Psychoanalytic Association was about one-half to two-thirds. The major finding of a ten-year, follow-up study of the recidivism of sex offenders published in the December 1983 journal *Federal Probation* was that group psychotherapy does not significantly reduce the recidivism rate when compared to intensive probation alone.

Freud's libido theory rests on the following hypotheses: 1) Libido is the major source of psychic energy. 2) There is a developmental process consisting of various libidinal stages. 3) Object choice (interpersonal relations) results from the transformations of libido. 4) The libidinal drives can be gratified, repressed, handled by a reaction formation, or sublimated. 5) Character structure is built on the modes in which the biologically determined instincts are handled. 6) Neurosis is a fixation on or a regression to some phase of infantile sexuality.²³

Freud had been trained as a physician, and he believed that the powerful instincts would be articulated into biology. Alfred Adler and Carl Jung, Freud's main students, were also physicians who recognized the primacy of id.

1. Adlerian "Individual" Psychoanalysis

This psychoanalysis deals more with the individual's social relationships, particularly his family, than the Freudian model. Pathology is more in the nature of discouragement than sickness. Therapy is designed to encourage him to greater social interest. Man is seen as an active initiator of actions, not just a passive stimulus-response mechanism. His actions are not completely determined by heredity and environment. "The important thing is not what one is born with, but what use one makes of the equipment."²⁴ One decides to do a criminal act or sexual perversion.

Adlerian psychotherapy has four aims: a "good" relationship with the patient, revelation of the patient's lifestyle and dynamics, interpretation, and reorientation. A "good" relationship is a friendly one between equals, so the therapist and patient sit on similar chairs at the same level facing each other without an intervening desk.²⁵ Free association and "chitchat" are discouraged, and conversations are goal-oriented. Dream analysis is also a part of the therapy. Adler felt that dreams were the "factory of emotions" which created moods for the next day's activities. Therapists make free use of encouragement and advice as ways to overcome discouragement. Moralizing is avoided, and the talk is about "useful" versus "useless," "effective" or "ineffective" behavior rather than "good" or "bad."

²³ Ibid., 3.

²⁴ Alfred Adler, 1964, 86.

²⁵ Corsini, *Current Psychotherapies*, 54.

Adler believed that prevention of crime and neurosis was better than curing them, so he founded family education centers where parents and teachers could receive advice on child rearing. Thousands of parent education groups have grown out of Adler's original centers. He also established child guidance programs in the school system. Today, educators and counselors are still being trained in Adlerian methods, and many of these people work in hospitals and prisons in addition to the schools. The Reverend Robert Schuller uses Adlerian ideas as well as other upbeat psychotherapies in his weekly Hour of Power television broadcasts.

Some of the failures of individual psychology have been more spectacular than their successes. Several psychoanalysts up to the very end had seen Marilyn Monroe, who committed suicide by an overdose of sleeping pills at her home in Hollywood in 1962. At first she thought that the treatment helped her, but later she was left with the empty feeling of failing to understand. Her mother, grandmother, and grandfather had been committed to mental institutions, an uncle had committed suicide, and she never had a childhood home of her own. With these predisposing factors, she should never have been given the free access to the pills, which were her means of self-destruction. This beautiful person, with every advantage that money, fame, and position could offer, should not have been lost to the world at age thirty-five. Her doctors should have been able to see to that above all else.

2. Archetypal

The archetypal or analytical school of psychotherapy of Carl Gustav Jung differed from that of his mentor, Freud, by minimizing the roles of sex and aggression and maximizing the role of more idealistic and spiritual factors in determining behavior. In Jung's psychology, an archetype is "an inherited idea or mode of thought derived from the experiences of the race and present in the unconscious thought of the individual."²⁶ The archetypes which Jung believed determined the personality were: shadow, persona, ego, anima (passive animal soul), animus (active rational soul), puer (eternal youth), senes (wise old man), trickster, great mother, significant animal, divine child, healer, self, and God. Five of the twenty large books in his Collected Works describe various combinations of the archetypes using the language of alchemy. Neurosis to Jung was "one-sidedness," so the aim of his psychotherapy was to extend consciousness—usually of the ego—to the other parts of the personality. The analysand is taught to do this through dialogues between the different parts of his personality, and by reflecting on his dream images so as to consolidate the parts. The analysis of dreams is at the core of Jungian therapy, but individuals vary considerably in their capacity to remember dreams and recount them to the therapist accurately. The application of the therapy would therefore seem to have a limited population. Mountains of labor, time, money, and pain go into producing a cured mouse. A shocking inefficiency is frequently revealed by the statistics of this psychotherapy.

3. Client-Centered

²⁶ Encyclopedia Britannica (1968). Vol. 19, p. 110A.

The client-centered, formerly called “non-directive,” therapy hypothesis of Carl R. Rogers states that if the therapist is genuinely and emphatically understanding of the patient and has a positive regard for him, then positive personality change will occur in the client. This is seriously questioned as to how this is possible with the sex offender (the necrophiliac, the lust murderer, the rapist, and the child molester). Client-centered theory postulates one motivational force in man; his tendency is toward self-actualization. “This is the inherent tendency of the organism to develop all its capacities in ways in which serve to maintain or enhance the organism.”²⁷ “For Carl Rogers, education is not a mass of facts presented on examination papers, but a becoming process whose goal is ever richer and more meaningful living.”²⁸ This idea is seen as having contributed to the millions of American students who cannot read or write properly and who do not have a clear idea of where the various states and foreign countries are located.

Another assessment of Carl Rogers’s theories is that his ideas were not only erroneous, but that they have been directly counterproductive, in spite of the pleasant, erudite-sounding goals and wishful-thinking hypotheses. No matter how empathetic and congruent, emphatic and understanding, unpossessively caring and confirming a therapist is, his job is to change the neurotic, psychotic, or criminal behavior of the person. That way, he can safely be granted complete freedom in open society. Even in the cases where such behavior is “cured” by the client-centered therapy, the resulting person is liable to be very self-centered, liberal, and radical. He is likely to still be on the outer fringes of society and unable to relate to the mainstream of society in a cooperative way, as well as out of step with the majority of people in productive activity.

4. Rational-Emotive Therapy (RET)

RET and its theory of personality are an outcome of the biologically based beliefs and social upbringing of Albert Ellis. What he called the A-B-C theory of personality is central to his system: the highly charged emotional problem consequence at C follows the significant activating event (A) but is not directly caused by it. Instead, the consequence (C) was caused by B—the individual’s belief system. When an undesirable consequence such as depression or acute anxiety occurs, it can be traced to the person’s irrational belief. When this belief is effectively disputed (at point D) by challenging it rationally, the disturbed consequence disappears (Ellis in Corsini, pp. 167–168). The stimulus (S) does not directly cause the response (R) in humans as it does in lower animals, but the organism (O) intervenes between S and R. All human reactions are therefore influenced by the condition of the organism’s beliefs. Alfred Adler said, “Everything depends on opinion;” Epictetus wrote, “Men are disturbed not by things but by the view which they take of them;” and Shakespeare’s Hamlet said,

²⁷ Carl Rogers, 1959b, 196.

²⁸ Corsini, *Current Psychotherapies*, 125.

“There’s nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so.” RET is the best known of the “cognitive” approaches.

Therapy is conducted in both individual and group settings. Most individual clients are seen on a once-a-week basis for from five to fifty sessions using diagnostic tests of IQ and personality such as Ellis’s Personality Data Form. Tape recordings, filmstrips, videocassettes, role-playing, modeling, humor, and homework are used in both individual and group work. Therapists tend to dress very informally, use down-to-earth language, and do most of the talking in the therapy sessions. Through the A-B-C system, RET teaches the client to understand himself and correct his irrational beliefs. Ellis also believed that rational-emotive education could be applied in a preventative manner and advocated its use in our school system at all levels.

There has been no comprehensive evaluation of all of psychotherapy which would provide an objective effectiveness of RET. Such an evaluation would require many years and cost millions of dollars. It is clear, however, that no therapist is able to help every client all of the time, and therapeutic skills change over time as new discoveries are made. Like the other psychotherapies, RET has had poor results with severe cases of psychoses, mental defectiveness, and chronic shirking where clients will not or cannot work at helping themselves.

5. Gestalt Therapy

The modern German word *gestalt* has no exact equivalent in English, but it is usually rendered in psychology as pattern, configuration, or put together. The chief tenet of this approach is that an analysis of the parts, however thorough, cannot provide an understanding of the whole. A whole that is *gestalt* is not simply a sum of its parts. In a *gestalt*, the parts are fused and interdependent and interacting in a specified manner.²⁹ The term *gestalt* was first applied to a model of psychotherapy growing out of existential philosophy by Frederick Perls, MD, PhD and carried forward by Walter Kempler.

“Gestalt therapy ... is based on principles considered to be a sound way of life. It is first a philosophy, a way of being, and superimposed on that are ways of applying knowledge so that others may benefit from it.”³⁰ The family is taken as the optimal group in the doctor’s office for three interviews of one and a half hours each for three consecutive weeks with follow-ups six months and two years later at the request of the therapist. Group psychotherapy is a second choice to family therapy, and individual therapy is not a recommended modality *per se*. All therapeutic activity seeks the ground level of the immediate and encourages everyone’s most forthright and personal expression. The setting must be comfortable for all concerned. Psychological jargon is discouraged, but vernacular and profanity are acceptable. Psychological testing and historical records are considered diversions of the true situation of the moment. The therapist prefers to see the person and observe his speech, manner, and nonverbal

²⁹ Encyclopedia Britannica. (1968). Vol. 10, p. 370A.

³⁰ Ibid. Kempler Writing in Corsini, p. 273.

cues firsthand. The therapist's intuition is important in reaching through the patient's unhealthy duplicity.

6. Reality Therapy

A series of theoretical principles developed by William Glasser emphasizes the re-education of a person who learns how to behave in a more responsible and productive way. Focusing on the present behavior of the person, the reality therapist helps the individual to evaluate himself more accurately, to confront reality, and to fulfill his needs in a productive way without infringing on the rights of others. The essence of reality therapy is the acceptance of responsibility for a person's own behavior, which enables the individual to achieve success and happiness.³¹

Glasser formalized his theories with the publication of *Reality Therapy* in 1965 and broadened their application in 1969 with the publication of his book *Schools Without Failure*, which basically says to teachers, "Stop boring the kids." Stop grading them. Stop making school a concentration camp. Stop depressing them. Be friendly. Be relevant. Be helpful. Let each student proceed at his own speed. Praise his progress. Learn to listen. Learn how to allow each student to experience a little success every day.

Reality therapy is based on the premise that there is a single basic psychological need that is the need for an identity, to feel that we are separate and distinct from every other person. Reality therapy, except in those few cases of actual brain damage and biochemical disorders, rejects the orthodox concept of mental illness. Schizophrenia, paranoia, and manic-depressive states should be described merely as "irresponsibility," or conceptualized rather as a kind of ignorance and moral failure. The usual concept of mental illness allows the patient to avoid moral responsibility for his deviant behavior, while reality therapy is almost the exact opposite, requiring the individual to acknowledge that he is responsible for his behavior. Free association, analysis of dreams, and non-directive interviews are not used in reality therapy as they are in many of the other therapies. The reality therapist does not permit patients to use unconscious motivations as an excuse for misbehavior. The emphasis is on what the patient is doing or intends to do. There is very little evidence for the existence of the unconscious, and in any case, reality therapists believe that it is not related to doing clinical therapy.

This therapy is frequently conducted in a doctor's office setting with the patient and therapist—frequently with a co-therapist—sitting in chairs directly facing each other. Most therapists see patients for forty-five minutes to an hour on a once-a-week basis for five to fifteen visits; then, after a respite of several weeks or months, another evaluation will follow. In industry, reality therapy has been utilized to deal with organizational problems and improve individual effectiveness by intensive three-day group programs. The Institute for Reality Therapy in Los Angeles and other parts of the United States and Canada teaches social workers, police, lawyers, educators,

³¹ T. Bratter, A. Bassin, and R. Rachin, *The Reality Therapy Reader* (New York: Harper and Row, 1976), 74.

physicians, psychologists, and clergy at the introductory and advanced level special skills for dealing with specific problem areas.

Like the other major psychotherapies, reality therapy has not received an overall impartial comparative analysis of its effectiveness, but it appears to be very effective in dealing with marital conflicts, anxiety, perversions, minor neuroses, and crimes. Reality therapy is a verbal therapy, so it cannot be used with individuals who are unable to communicate, such as the autistic. There is also a serious question of the "Schools Without Failure" results. So much disastrous news on our school systems emerged in the late 1980s. More children are dropping out of school than ever before, and of those that do stay in, lower scores are being made on college entrance examinations, according to the State Education Chart released by the Federal Department of Education in May 1989. What is wrong? Efforts to cure failure and attempts to cure the high drop-out rate seem to be at cross-purposes.

7. Transactional Analysis

This analysis is a very clever system of teaching individuals to do their own psychoanalysis as they interact with other individuals. In this system of explanations for troublesome behavior, devised by Eric Berne, some very complex factors are reduced to the simplest possible terms for easy assimilation. Everyone is seen as having adopted a "life position" that is either "okay" or "not okay." The four possible life positions are: "I'm okay, you're okay," corresponding to a normal healthy lifestyle; "I'm okay, you are not okay," corresponding to a paranoid lifestyle; "I am not okay, you are okay," corresponding to the clinical depressive lifestyle; and "I am not okay, you are not okay," corresponding to the schizophrenic. The position a person places himself in determines the general script he follows in interacting with other individuals. These interactions are further analyzed by the use of readily recognized "ego states"—designated child, parent, and adult. The child recapitulates the feelings and behavior of a child under the age of six years. The parent represents pedantic actions of the tutor: sometimes stern, sometimes doting. The adult is the aspect of the person that is methodical and rational. The interplay of the ego states in "games" and "rackets" that people use in their life-position scripts reveals their strengths and weaknesses.

Transactional therapy is customarily conducted in groups of about eight members who meet once a week for a two-hour period. Seating arrangements are such as to allow visual observation of the entire body of each participant. A blackboard and a tape recorder are usually present as training aids. There is a marked preference for a single group leader without assistants to help reduce confusion and eliminate divisiveness. Bibliotherapy is frequently utilized since there is a wide variety of books to help the patient learn to help himself. A life-script checklist containing items relating to the life position, rackets, and games helps the therapist and patient to get to the point of treatment as quickly as possible.

Since transactional analysis is a contractual form of treatment, the patient specifies what he expects to achieve by the relationship. When the therapist accepts the contract, he defines the endeavors necessary to complete the contract and the objectives to be

achieved. Thus, whenever he determines that these objectives are accomplished, the therapy is legitimately terminated. Transactional analysis thus cleverly carries with it its own measure of evaluation. Success is spelled out in the opening contract and usually achieved to that degree whenever therapy is terminated.

8. Existential Analysis

Existential analysis (sometimes called “daseinsanalysis” from the German word *dasein*, which means “being in the world”) grew out of the theory of introspective humanism, which holds that human existence is not exhaustively describable in either scientific or idealistic terms and relies on an approach that emphasizes the analysis of critical borderline situations in a man’s life.³² Man is a being who chooses, thinks, and contemplates. His thinking makes him free but also causes him to suffer. Freedom is a source of anguish because we cannot know for certain what will be the result of our decisions. “The goal of existential analysis is to help the client understand his possibilities as possibilities and thereby permit them to unfold ... It is not an ... explanation of a problem but an opportunity to experience new ways of living and relating.”³³ Dream analysis, association, and discussion are some of the analytical systems used by existential therapists.

D. Other Sorts of Psychotherapy

As the Ehrenbergs point out, there is now a therapy for every taste, lifestyle, and belief imaginable. More than a dozen new “brands” were added each year between 1976 and 1980, and the numbers of them continue to increase—well over 250 (or 125 according to Geller).³⁴ I have provided only a brief outline of some of the more representative or well known of these in order to give the reader an orientation on the subject. Most of the sex offender treatments used in the United States during the 1980s and 1990s had both a behavioral and a cognitive orientation and used the assertiveness training, social skills training, and life/sex education modalities. Other orientations and modalities are likely to be used less frequently in sex offender therapy, but this is highly variable with different therapists and even with the same therapist at different times. Geller says:

From its inception, the “talking cure” has existed on the elusive boundary between art and science. Patients and therapists often have real difficulty in describing the experiential reality of therapy. When people attempt to learn about psychotherapy by reading academic textbooks they usually come away dissatisfied.

³² Encyclopedia Britannica. (1968). Vol. 8, p. 964.

³³ O. Ehrenberg and M. Ehrenberg, PhD, *The Psychotherapy Maze* (Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc., 1986), 40.

³⁴ J. D. Geller, and P. D. Spector, *Psychotherapy Portraits in Fiction* (Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc., 1987).

There will be those who may get upset for their favorite therapy not being included, but it is my hope that the average reader will be content with this brief review of the therapies.

1. Encounter Groups

Encounter groups consist of ten to fifteen people who meet for several sessions for a short period of time, ranging from a few days to four or five weeks. Their purpose is to provide intense emotional experiences through encountering oneself and others as they really are with all the usual facades stripped away. This permits trusting relationships, which can foster individual growth. Intimacy is an antidote to isolation. Confrontation, caressing, hugging, clapping, and other nonverbal communication methods are preferred to verbal intellectualizing. Encounter groups have been profitable for individuals who need emotional growth, but they have been disappointing and even dangerous for people with serious character or psychotic problems.

2. Eclectic Psychotherapy

This psychotherapy selects what is applicable to any given case from the whole diagnostic and therapeutic armamentarium and rejects the blind application of any one particular orientation. It is well established that no method of psychotherapy is a universal panacea capable of treating all conditions. Psychopathology is much more resistant to modification than is claimed by many of the adherents of single systems of therapy, so the therapist does well to avail himself of what works best for him and his client. One of the unfortunate features of the eclectic approach is that it is more difficult to evaluate since it is constantly changing. It is hard to tell just which of the therapeutic steps brought about which changes in the client. The problem of evaluation, however, is not unique to the eclectic approach. Hardly any of the psychotherapies measure their effectiveness against the hard test of recidivism. Most of them gauge their success by the disappearance of a disturbing emotion, achievement of a specific goal, greater happiness, an increase of self-awareness, freedom to make a fuller life, or similar yardstick.

Another therapy very similar to eclectic (selecting what appears to be the best of various treatments) therapy is called multisystemic therapy (MST). Hundreds of treatments are available, and new books or manuals appear every month. MST stands out in this crowded field. MST is not cheap. The average cost per family is approximately \$4,000 to \$5,000 in 1998.³⁵

3. Vegetotherapy

The Character Analytic Vegetotherapy of Wilhelm Reich places primary emphasis upon breathing in a spontaneous and relaxed way. Deepening the patient's breathing results in an opening up of feelings. The therapist observes the client's naked body during therapy for signs of muscle tension, breathing, and excitation. Therapy works

³⁵ S. W. Henggeler, S. K. Schoenwald, M. D. Rowland, C. M. Borduin, and P. B. Cunningham, *Multisystemic Therapy for Antisocial Behavior in Children and Adolescents* (New York: Guilford Press, 1998). Reviewed by Michael C. Seto in the ATSA Forum XII, no. 1 (Spring 2000): 14

toward mature sexual functioning by helping achieve full orgasm. When potency is established, the excess energy is drained away from neurotic mechanisms, which then collapse along with other stress-induced symptoms, both mental and physical.

4. Bioenergetic Therapy

Bioenergetic Therapy. This is similar to vegetotherapy except that emotional problems express themselves through the body in the form of muscular tension, and clients are allowed to wear leotards during verbal and physical therapy sessions. Several specific exercises are employed that place the muscles in stretch positions that highlight areas of tension. Emotions are bodily events. No person exists apart from his body. We express ourselves through our body in characteristic ways: anger through clenched fists, etc. Suppression of feelings results in chronic muscular tension that is discernible and palpable.

5. Arica

Arica describes itself as an educational experience that can put you in touch with your inner resources, which radiate love, wisdom, and energy. Training involves mind, body, spirit, and emotion exercises, including meditation and a high-protein diet with a special drink called Dragon's Milk.

6. Erhard Seminars Training (EST)

EST is austere and spartan and physically uncomfortable with long hours of high-pressure instruction in proven techniques like Dale Carnegie and Zen. The message is that each person is responsible for his own life, and EST promises a sixty-hour training panacea for transformation to a better life.

7. Primal Therapy

This therapy sees the child's primal needs for food, warmth, physical contact, etc., as being denied by some parents, causing primal pain, which accumulates in various neurotic defenses. The goal of therapy is to release the primal pain by direct talk to the sources. This talk goes beyond verbal to "primal screams" at the father or mother in the re-experiencing of key scenes from childhood.

8. Neuro Linguistic Programming

This is a system of reading a person's system of coping by observing the direction in which the client looks when talking about an experience. People who look to the right and upward when they talk are experiencing a visual image, for example. When the therapist knows what images are involved in any problem situation, it is possible to help the client change and resolve the problem.

9. Yoga

Yoga techniques consist in discipline of the attention by postures, meditation, exercises, attitudes, and breathing control. Such work can lead to the improvement of the psyche and way of living. Improved bodily health, clarity of intellect, and peace of mind are the main objectives of yoga.

10. Journal Writing

This writing is used as an adjunct technique in many sex offender treatment programs to help the client keep track of his progress in overcoming his deviant behavior.

It is an aid both to remembering proper thoughts and behavior and remembering the responses of others to this behavior. Writing lessons down is also a way of learning. The sex offender must learn, for example, how he has crippled his victims in some detail so that the seriousness of his crime becomes very clear to him. It is not easy for most of them to change their habitual way of thinking, and writing is an aid to changing their thought patterns. Keeping a daily journal of experiences allows a person to review his progress and note his weak points. 11. Couple Therapy

This therapy, using various guises and styles, attempts to teach the sex offender the “right” way of relating to the opposite sex. There are extreme variations of viewpoints on this subject, and other titles have evolved for similar treatments; the co-ed group, socio-educational therapy, sexual addiction therapy, sexual/trauma therapy, minimal arousal conditioning, sexual behavior clinics, intimacy training, and seduction training are some of these. The basic idea is that sex criminals have learned their aberrant sexual behavior and need to be taught the “normal” or “healthy” way. The “Tony Brown’s Journal” article in the New York News World, April 18, 1989, expressed shock and disbelief at a \$500,000 U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare grant to the New York State Psychiatric Institute’s Sexual Behavior Clinic for a “Dr. Frankenstein experiment,” which provided prostitutes to help teach rapists the social graces of seduction. As of April 2002, this kind of therapy was still used on a limited scale in the Netherlands.

12. Offending Cycle

The offending cycle program is designed to help the individual sex offender to recognize the early warning signals that precede instances of his particular offense and to thwart or curb that urge.

Neither rape nor child molestation is commonly an act of the moment, rarely performed when all is going well. Rather, the typical offender knows in advance when the “urge” is creeping up on him. He may wake up in the morning feeling restless. As the day progresses, he may find his thoughts turning more and more often toward his “outlet”: his preferred offense. (Dr. Boozer, Sex Offender Treatment Program Director, South Florida State Hospital)

According to the July 1996 journal *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Treatment and Research*, the most popular model for structuring the treatment of sex offenders is called “relapse prevention.” This is an outgrowth of offending cycle research.

13. Social Skills Training

Social skills training is a result of the research that has shown that most sex offenders have been found to be deficient in social skills. Of course, there are many other people who do not rape or commit sex offenses who are also deficient in social skills.

14. Anger Management

This type of management is considered an essential part of the therapy by about three-fourths of the existing programs for rapists and other violent sex criminals. Often

these people express their anger at woman “A” by raping woman “B.” They lack the resources to express their anger in non-deviant ways or to ask for behavior changes in others rather than violently striking out. They are the “walking time bombs” ready to explode at any time, and they need to be defused by learning more acceptable ways to vent or disguise their anger.

15. Relaxation Training

This training has been used in prisons to alleviate inmates’ frustrations, restlessness, and aggression. Many have questioned whether psychologists should help prisoners cope with the manifestly unacceptable environment of the institution. This seems to be defeating the purposes of punishment dictated by the law. Conversely, without appropriate coping skills in prison, the anger, etc., of prison is brought to the free world.

16. Body Language

Body language or nonverbal communication skills training for initiating friendships is often taught in conjunction with other social skills to help sex offenders out of their offending cycle.

17. Meditation

Meditation is another technique that comes from the Eastern religions for combating stress and anxiety. The transcendental meditation variety taught by Maharishi Mahesh Yogi uses a Sanskrit word called a “mantra” for each client. The client focuses his mind on his mantra during meditation until everything else is blocked out. Another variety is called ultra-meditation, which uses audiotapes of ethereal sounds to systematically change the brain-wave patterns of the listener. Another type of audiotape plays music but has messages in the background, which are repeated over and over. The conscious mind may not recognize these subliminal messages, but the subconscious mind does and can respond to help the individual with his particular problem.

18. Chakra Therapy

This therapy, for personal growth and healing, describes the mechanics of the human energy system and the energy flow between people. A chakra is a wheel or a disc representing sovereignty and the sun in the Hindu religion. This therapy is one of those that lie near the conjunction of psychological, religious, and occult schools of thought. There seems to be a reaching out in all possible directions for answers to questions that are disturbing people.

19. Self-Psychology

This is a relatively new and inexpensive way of applying therapy to oneself. Several books, such as *Treating the Self* by Dr. Ernest S. Wolf, *Who Am I and Why Am I in Treatment?* by Robert Freeman Longo, and *Adults Molested as Children: A Survivor’s Manual for Women and Men* by Euan Bear, are designed to permit the individual to conduct his own therapy. The general processes of evaluation, beginning therapy, steps in therapy, dangers to be avoided, and terminating therapy are described.

20. Victim Empathy Training

This is often necessary for sex offenders who have no concept of the nature of the suffering of their victims. The offender must have an understanding of the seriousness of his crime in order for him to devote sufficient energy to his own rehabilitation. Techniques to increase victim awareness and empathetic responses to victims, such as reading, viewing, or hearing the victims' complaints, are believed to be an important deterrent to future offending. However, some sexual abusers (such as sexual sadists) may be sexually aroused by a greater awareness of victim suffering, so caution is recommended in the use of these techniques.

The enhancement of victim empathy is a common component of the treatments for sex offenders. One survey of sex offender therapists by Knopp, Freeman-Longo, and Stevenson in 1992 found that 94 percent addressed empathy building in their procedures. Empathy is the capacity to take on the role of another person, thereby understanding that person's experience. Most sex offenders do not appreciate the harm they do to their victims, so they have to be instructed in this in order to feel sorry for them and stop their offensive behavior. Overall, it is believed that victim empathy helps to prevent offender recidivism, but attempts to measure the amount of help it provides have shown only marginal improvement.

Recent studies suggest that empathy is one of the most vulnerable mechanisms of moral and social behavior to brain damage. Patients with amygdala lesions are usually unable to empathize with the emotions of others and so are resistant to this kind of treatment.

21. Mediation

Closely allied to victim empathy training, mediation seeks to make peace between the offender and the victim as a kind of restorative justice. At least two decades of research on offender-victim mediation have produced three books on the subject: Mark Umbreit's *Handbook of Victim Offender Mediation*, Christopher Moore's *The Mediation Process*, and Robert Baruch Bush and Joseph Folger's *The Promise of Mediation*.

22. Cognitive Restructuring

This restructuring is another term for correcting false beliefs with factual data. In 1994, 38 percent of male adult sex offender treatment programs in America used a cognitive behavioral approach.

23. Milieu Therapy

This therapy manipulates the whole environmental setting as an aid toward the recovery of a person in treatment. The atmosphere in the typical prisons and mental hospitals has often been so unwholesome that any potential good that counseling might do is undone. By changing the environment from the onerous punishment, secure custody, and lock-down to a helping correctional one, the inmate should have a better chance of rehabilitation. The pleasant, even stimulating, homelike buildings and kindly supportive staff with occupational, recreational, and educational programs in the setting actually cost less than the secure type. Martinsen's study, however, showed

that the milieu does not materially improve the recidivism rate or the parole violation rate for serious offenders.

24. Twelve-Step Program

This program is based on the twelve steps of Alcoholics Anonymous (AA), the most successful alcoholism treatment program that has ever been devised. An important step in alcoholic rehabilitation is to get the alcoholic to admit to himself and others that he is one. When he introduces himself to a group, he starts off by saying, "My name is John, and I am an alcoholic." If he has additional problems, he brings them up, too. He may say, "I am an alcoholic and also a drug addict." All this goes under the step that says the way of solving a personal problem is to admit that you have one.

Sex offender programs can follow the same format. There are normally about fifteen persons in a group, and they start each session by announcing their offenses. A speaker might say, "I am James, and I raped my twelve-year-old daughter and got her pregnant. I also molested her three little playmates." Speaking from group experience, the previous sentence would be considered "minimizing" and "objectifying." According to group standards, it should read, "I also raped three other girls who were friends of my daughter." Like the AA program, the person must admit to himself that he is what he is.

Another step of the AA program is that the alcoholic must realize that he is never cured. He must realize that even if he stays away from alcohol a few days, a few weeks, a few months, or even a few years, he can always have a SLIP (Sobriety Loses Its Propriety) and that once he takes a drink, he is apt to go on a binge, and he may never regain his sobriety. He is always a recovering alcoholic; he must live from day to day, using all the techniques and willpower he has to remain sober. AA is the best available program for alcoholics, but as good as it is, there are failures. From time to time, even some of the best-intentioned members have had SLIPS. Sex offender programs following the AA format have similar results, and the sex offender is always a "recovering" sex offender. As applied to compulsive sexual offenses, this type of therapy requires about two years of counseling.³⁶

E. Comments on Psychotherapies

Thus far, a brief outline of the most representative psychotherapies used for treating sex offenders has been presented. However, it should be noted that many professionals—and laypersons alike—are unimpressed with the treatments' effectiveness and seriously question their efficiency. Robert Martinson is one such person. He found in his landmark study of 231 studies of treatments for criminals, *What Works? —Questions and Answers About Prison Reform*, that individual counseling of prison inmates generally produced no or only insignificant improvement in recidivism rates. He classified

³⁶ U.S. News & World Report (July 6, 1992): 65.

the general results with group counseling in prison as “not encouraging” and heavily dependent on the training and “goodness” of the therapists.

On the other hand, as Canning pointed out, many sex offenders don’t respect or trust themselves, so they are unlikely to trust the therapist. They will see the therapist’s warm personal regard for them as manipulation.³⁷

Thomas Szasz, in his book *The Myth of Psychotherapy*, has declared psychotherapy to be a fraudulent treatment. Szasz also says that schizophrenia was invented by the psychologists and does not really exist. In another book, titled *Schizophrenia: The Sacred Symbol of Psychiatry*, E. M. Thornton points out that the father of psychoanalysis was under the influence of cocaine addiction during the entire time when his major theories were formed (in Freud and Cocaine). Dr. Robert Langs demonstrates in his book *The Psychotherapeutic Conspiracy* that therapists offer only fabrications that preclude the realization of the difficult truths that really form the basis of emotional disorders. Other books that tend to debunk the psychotherapies are *House of Cards: Psychology and Psychotherapy built on Myth* by Professor Robyn Days, professor of social and decision science at the Carnegie-Mellon University (1994); and psychologist Terence Campbell (1994).

A well-balanced major article appeared in the May 14, 1993 periodical *U.S. News & World Report*, “Does Psychotherapy Work? The Growing Controversy.” This article listed a glossary of therapies currently in use as follows:

BEHAVIORAL. Focused on symptoms rather than psychic conflicts, behavioral therapies successfully treat phobias and other specific complaints.

COGNITIVE. Psychologist Aaron Beck’s “thinking” therapy teaches clients to recognize and correct faulty logic that can lead to dysfunction and works well in treating depression as well as anxiety disorders and bulimia.

GROUP. Group therapy gives clients the opportunity to observe their interactions with others in a controlled setting and to learn better ways of functioning.

INTERPERSONAL. Patients are encouraged to mourn personal losses and improve social skills. It is effective with depression, and work and marital problems.

PSYCHOANALYTIC. Freud’s revolutionary “talking cure” is still influential in theory, but intensive, “on-the-couch” treatment is now sought out by only a minority. Sessions run three to five times a week for four to six years.

PSYCHODYNAMIC. A broad designation for a wide range of therapies that explore personal relationships and emotional conflicts. Many are

³⁷ M. Canning, “Breaking Through Defenses,” *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* 6, no. 1 (1999): 51.

rooted in psychoanalytic theory or in the humanistic schools of the 1970s. Therapists and clients usually face each other.

SHORT TERM. Such treatments last twenty-five or fewer sessions and use a variety of techniques to help clients attack specific, narrowly defined problems.

The article quotes a forthcoming review of psychotherapy studies by psychologists Michael Lambert and Allen Bergin, who wrote: "There is now little doubt that psychological treatments are overall and in general beneficial, although it remains equally true that not everyone benefits to a satisfactory degree ... More than 16 million Americans seek mental health treatment each year, but the majority of the people who could benefit from therapy never seek help."

Albert Einstein College of Medicine psychiatrist T. Bryam Karasu, who once kept track of new therapies as they emerged, gave up counting at 400. "There are as many therapies as there are patients," he now sighs. Researcher Andrew Christensen says he stopped counting at 450.³⁸ Yet with only a few exceptions, scientists have failed, in study after study, to demonstrate the superiority of any major therapeutic school ... Surveys indicate that as many as half of all therapists now define themselves as "eclectic," employing a pragmatic blend of techniques, or as "integrative," combining precepts from various theoretical schools.

Most of the treatments employed for the sex offenders came under the general heading of psychotherapy in the 1980s and 1990s. Billions of dollars were spent on these programs, and the public wondered if they were getting their money's worth. One of the other problems with the psychotherapies is their insistence on forcing the sex offender and his victim to recall the trauma and relive the emotions of the sex crime. This is liable to be destructive, like lancing a wound that time is already nicely healing. Reopening an old sore is unnatural and dangerous. Professor Lavie argued that repression, rather than revelation, of past traumatic events is the "key to cure." He said, "We should stop all of this nonsense of going back over and over trauma."³⁹ Professor Yudofsky called the psychiatric technique of confrontation "the equivalent of delicate brain surgery performed by a demolition worker using a jackhammer." Professor Seymour Halleck, of the Wisconsin Medical School, also wrote these same ideas in his book *Sexual Behaviors: Social, Clinical, and Legal Aspects* (1972).

Probably the most widely known case of a psychotherapist causing a client to recall memories of childhood sexual abuse that never really happened is that of Roseanne Barr, popular television and movie actress. Her case was featured on the 60 Minutes broadcast of April 17, 1994. She was shown in a recording of her earlier appearance on the Sally Jessy Raphael show saying that her earliest memory of her mother's sexual

³⁸ Insight on the News (August 29, 1994): 8.

³⁹ P. Lavie, "Technion Israel Institute of Technology," Northwest[Pensacola] Florida Daily News (June 24, 1989).

abuse of her was at age six months. Common sense and several scientific studies show that memories of events at such an early age are virtually impossible.

Two university professors, Doctors O'Donohue and Plaud, reviewed the literature and concluded that due to the methodological problems on extant studies, the basis for asserting the existence of relationships between habituation, sensitization, classical conditioning, operant conditioning, and sexual behavior is "TENUOUS."

The criminal justice system is like a big hospital intake section. It acquires the patients although they may be reluctant to admit that there is anything wrong with them. A few may come by referral—someone told on them. But most of them came because someone (mainly law enforcement agents) brought them in.⁴⁰

From the time of Sigmund Freud, at the turn of the century, there has been a prolific blossoming forth of multitudes of psychological treatment modalities. They range from prosaic health practices to ridiculously queer theories and practices, and they each have their own practitioners and followers, their own language and advertising. There are several varieties of quasi-scientific behavioral and operant conditioning procedures oriented toward retraining or reprogramming human behavior. There are methodologies that use biofeedback training, sensate focus therapy, transcendental meditation, primal scream therapy, message, mantra chanting, and swimming pool feelie groups. The Safer Society Press Nationwide Survey of Sex Offender Treatment Programs of 1992 identified over sixty-three different methods utilized by over 1,500 treatment centers nationwide.

Hans J. Eysenck, professor emeritus of psychology at the University of London's Institute of Psychiatry, was quoted in the September 1989 issue of *Psychology Today* as saying:

I think Freud has been a wholesale disaster for psychology, and what we can learn from him is how **not** to do things ... For instance, the "wolfman" whom Freud claimed to have cured was interviewed in Vienna in 1989. He explained that he had been treated throughout his life for the very things Freud had said he had cured. Even at the age of 90, he was still suffering from the same symptoms. The claims that Freud made are simply incorrect, and one really cannot pay much attention to them.

Freud and his psychoanalysis came in for more licks in the *Time* magazine of November 29, 1993. On the cover they asked: "Is Freud Dead?" The main article inside was titled "The Assault on Freud," and a companion article was headlined "Lies of the Mind: Repressed-memory therapy is harming patients, devastating families and intensifying a backlash against mental-health practitioners." The cover of the May/June 1994 *Psychology Today* advised psychologists:

⁴⁰ W. O'Donohue and J. Plaud, "The Conditioning of Human Sexual Arousal," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 23, no. 3 (June 1994): 321–344.

“What you can change ... your face, anxiety, mood, future. What you cannot ... body type, sexual I.D., personality, earthquakes.”

The feature article by Dr. Martin E. P. Seligman said that we are now able to see the boundaries of the unchangeable. He made a rough array of the psychological problems with a statement of their curability as follows:

Panic he classed as “curable”
Specific phobias—“almost curable”
Sexual dysfunctions—“marked curable”
Social phobia—“moderate relief”
Agoraphobia—“moderate relief”
Depression—“moderate relief”
Sex role change—“moderate”
Obsessive-compulsive disorders—“moderate, mild relief”
Sexual preferences—“moderate, mild change”
Anger—“moderate, mild relief”
Everyday anxiety—“mild, moderate relief”
Alcoholism—“mild relief”
Overweight—“temporary change”
PTSD—“marginal relief”
Sexual orientation—“probably unchangeable”
Sexual identity—“unchangeable”

Still another article in Time magazine, of October 12, 1998, pointed out that although Freud’s theories are the foundation on which modern psychology is built, most practitioners no longer adhere strictly to his approach ... Traditional Freudian analysis is now practiced by only a small cadre, overshadowed by drug therapies and short-term counseling more likely to be covered by managed care.”⁴¹ Another famous remark by Karl Kraus that “psychoanalysis is the malady which considers itself the remedy” further denigrates the treatment.

So, now the general public knows some of the limitations and fallacies of psychiatry. Both psychiatry and psychology have been exposed for their weaknesses. The sub-disciplines in academia that looked up to psychiatry for guidance—sociology, criminology, criminal justice, police sciences, social work, education, and the law—are now wondering if it is possible that some of their ideas and programs may have to be modernized.

Another unfortunate aspect of psychiatry and psychology is the revelation of sexual involvement of some of the therapists with some of their patients. A U.S. News & World Report article of March 12, 1990, titled “The Ultimate Betrayal,” quoted studies that indicated 12 percent of practitioners had sexual contact with their patients. This

⁴¹ “A Man and His Couch,” Time (October 12, 1998).

number is almost certainly an underestimate, since most offending therapists will not admit to their actions—even anonymously. The true incidence could be as high as 15 percent or even 25 percent. This is a deep betrayal of trust—akin to incest—and it is being severely penalized in some of the states by fines and prison sentences.

Columnist Ann Landers in her September 13, 1992, release wrote about Doctor Jules Masserman, former president of both the American Academy of Psychoanalysts and the American Psychiatric Association and chairman of Psychiatry at the Northern Medical School. He had injected a patient named Barbara Noel with Amytal, a barbiturate, and had sex with her while she was unconscious. Two other women who had been Masserman's patients and had been sexually molested by him joined Noel's lawsuit. Noel settled out of court for \$200,000, and the other two women settled for \$25,000 each. Dr. Masserman's license in Chicago was relinquished, and Barbara Noel has written a book, *You Must be Dreaming*, published by Poseidon Press, about her case. Several other victims of psychiatrists, psychologists, and other types of therapists appeared on the June 25, 1992, Geraldo television show "Confessions from the Couch" along with Doctor Wayne Meyers of Columbia University. Dr. Meyers had recently written a book on the subject titled *Shrink Dreams*, which listed other cases in which psychotherapists had victimized their clients in a sexual manner. Geraldo Rivera commented, "Some states require hairdressers to be licensed, but not psychotherapists."

Because of the nature of the sex crimes, the titillation, morbid interest, extreme disgust, fear, and loathing engendered in the public, and because of the way that the bureaucracies work in the allocation of funds, it is imperative that there be very little or no recidivism after treatment and release from confinement. Several states have been forced to discontinue their sex offender treatment programs because their funding was cut off by the irate public after a particularly sensational crime was committed by a sex offender who had been through the treatment program.

In an attempt to forestall this perception of failure, many devices have been employed by treatment supervisors. First of all, there have been longer and longer prison sentences imposed for sex crimes. This has resulted in overflowing prisons and hasty and expensive construction of more prison space. Some states have been forced to employ the death penalty in spite of many years of opposition to this measure. Various stratagems have been emplaced to increase the surveillance over the sex offender after release: probation, parole, self-reporting, treatment groups, friends, relatives, fines, restitution to state and victim, etc.

The sex offender treatment program at the Washington State Hospital was discontinued after twenty years because it failed to produce the required rate of success.⁴² Gainesville, Hollywood, and Chattahoochee State Hospitals in Florida also closed down their sex offender treatment programs after service periods ranging from thirteen to twenty-three years. Two similar treatment programs were discontinued on July 1, 1995, in Virginia after only two years of operation, and similar programs have been

⁴² Tacoma[Washington] News Tribune (January 14, 1990).

shut down in four other states. Experts disagreed on whether the offenders could be successfully treated, and the public felt that they were getting a low return on an expensive investment. Furthermore, law had never mandated sex offender treatment. The Florida programs had room for only 133 inmates and cost \$4.5 million a year. At the same time, about 1,400 sex offenders a year were being imprisoned, and there was a total of 4,637 sex offenders on probation, parole, house arrest, or other types of state supervision.⁴³ At the same time that these programs were being shut down, thousands of therapists, social workers, and officials across the country were being trained in the same techniques that had failed to achieve the desired degree of effectiveness. There is something wrong here with these treatments. It is an exercise in futility because the hormones, brain structures, and neurotransmitters, which are the underlying cause of the criminal sexual behavior, are not being altered in most of these treatments.

Vast amounts of time, money, expertise, dedication, concern, conviction, “goodness,” sacrifice, and supervision on the part of the treatment staff are required for the psychotherapies. In addition, severe restrictions, self-revelations, resulting guilt complexes, and problems are imposed on the offender, and still the overall results are tenuous ... not final, not certain. Like the seventy-five-year-old man who shot his thirty-year-old topless dancer lover,⁴⁴ it never stops. The sex drive is powerful and is likely to overcome the learned rules and result in a serious crime whenever that “certain set of conditions” happens to occur.

Quinsey and others reported on several programs using psychotherapies for sex offenders. An Ontario penitentiary program, which ran from the 1970s into the 1980s, reported “no significant differences in the number of convictions for sexual crimes between treated and untreated men in the total sample or among the child molesters. Moreover, there were significantly more arrests for sexual offenses among the treated men.”

Another program in California (Marques et. al., in press) showed “... no difference in sexual recidivism between men who volunteered for treatment (whether completed or not) and control volunteers, although there is some evidence that treatment may delay sexual reoffending” (Quinsey et al., 1993, p. 517). Quinsey et al. also reported on another program as follows:

Outcome data, as Marshall et al. reported, revealed no therapeutic benefit, with 38 percent of the treated and 31 percent of the untreated men being convicted of another sexual offense in the six-and-a-half-year (average) follow-up period.⁴⁵

As mentioned above, no treatment effect was observed in a comparison of treated and untreated subjects matched on two risk-related variables.

⁴³ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal and Northwest Florida Daily News (April 14, 1990).

⁴⁴ Northwest Florida Daily News (October 16, 1993).

⁴⁵ W. Marshall, T. Ward, R. Jones, P. Johnston, and N. Barbaree, “An Optimistic Evaluation of Treatment Outcome with Sex Offenders,” *Violence Update* 1 (1991): 1–11.

Still another study by Quinsey et al., published in 1998, showed that 38 percent of the 483 inmates who were referred to the Regional Treatment Centre Sex Offender Treatment Program between the years 1976 and 1989 recidivated to new violent or sexual offenses and were arrested. This Canadian treatment program had employed behavioral and cognitive approaches to treatment with aversion therapy, covert sensitization, temper control, and biofeedback techniques, along with supportive psychotherapy in both group and individual sessions.⁴⁶

What is going on here? Finally, slowly, the truth begins to emerge from years of obfuscation and wishful thinking. When put to the hard test of recidivism over time, these myriads of “talking therapies” used by psychiatrists, sociologists, religious leaders, criminal justice functionaries, psychologists, “therapists,” and social workers at great expense and requiring years of treatment and follow-up are proving relatively ineffective. To me, it seems well past the time that we should at least conduct some comparative studies of all of the advantages and disadvantages of castration treatment. Apparently the overall recidivism of sex offenders treated by castration is between 2 and 3 percent, while the psychotherapy recidivism appears to be about 12.3 percent.

The most recent and most comprehensive meta-analysis of the recidivism rates of sex offenders (Hanson, Gordon, Harris, Marques, Murphy, Quinsey, and Seto, April 2002). The first report of the collaborative data project on the effectiveness of psychological treatment for sex offenders (*Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 14, no. 2, pp. 169–194) reported that the sexual re-offense rate for treatment groups averaged 12.3 percent, while the comparison groups who had not received the treatment recidivated averaging 16.8 percent.

Another problem was revealed to the public when Jim Towey, secretary of the Florida Department of Health and Rehabilitative Services, pleaded for relief March 4, 1994, from the overburdened system of treating suspects found mentally incompetent or “innocent by reason of insanity” in the criminal justice system. Ninety-four of these suspects were waiting an average of two months in county jails to get into the state’s 795-bed HRS system of forensic hospitals, where it was costing \$80,000 a year to treat one of them. As they languished in jail without proper treatment, Towey said, their mental conditions worsened. “Their brains and lives are rotting away in jail, and there is no room in state forensic units to treat them. This is a problem that’s not going to go away.”⁴⁷

By 1995, forty states had laws on their books that required sex offenders to be registered with the police where they lived. Sixteen states passed such laws in 1994. Attorney General Janet Reno said on February 9, 1995, that “the public deserves a chance to be on guard,” and she pointed out that 40 to 75 percent of convicted child molesters repeat their crime. Reno told her weekly news conference that the

⁴⁶ V. Quinsey, A. Khanna, and B. Malcolm, “A Retrospective Evaluation of the Regional Treatment Centre Sex Offender Treatment Program,” *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 13, no. 5 (1998): 621–644.

⁴⁷ Pensacola News Journal (March 5, 1994): 4C.

1994 federal crime law “encourages all the states to adopt a community notification procedure for violent sexual predators.”⁴⁸ This law’s constitutionality was challenged in New Jersey, but passed the state’s Supreme Court in 1995. The registration of the names and locations of sex offenders was then available to the general public, and this has brought general ostracism to the offender and his family. Several ugly incidents of attacks on their person and possessions have resulted, and the offenders have been forced to leave some areas when they became known. This is reminiscent of the results of the registering of Jews in Nazi Germany. The draconian measure of public registration of sex offenders is stark evidence that prison and all of the existing sex offender treatments in the United States have failed to provide the needed assurance that sex offenders will not recidivate to their despicable crimes.

An article in the 1996 *The Lancet* showed that psychoanalysis was not only expensive and inefficacious, but it was often dangerous and destructive. This article by Professor R. C. Tallis also quoted several other authorities on similar condemnation of Freudian psychoanalysis.⁴⁹ An article in *JAMA* pointed out that psychiatrists are at special risk of threats and assaults because they become enmeshed with their patients’ innermost feelings and thoughts.⁵⁰ Another article in *The Lancet* pointed out that the future of psychiatry is biological.

In the causality of sex crimes, the general reasoning of psychology places greatest importance on learned behavior over the biological actions of the hormones. A case in point happened in Northwest Florida in August 1996. A ten-year-old autistic boy was lost while swimming in a creek and found in the creek four days later, fourteen miles downstream. He was apparently in good health except for scratches. The psychologist said that an autistic child may not worry about going long periods without food because eating is a learned behavior. To most, however, eating is much more—it is a bodily need signaled by the hormones, not something that we “learned” to do, unless we are brain damaged or have some sort of disease like the boy did.

The Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers (ATSA) in the winter 1997 journal Forum asked, “Is It Time for a Paradigm Shift?” They defined paradigm shift as a “dramatic transformation, revolution of thought, leap of understanding, or sudden liberation from old limits” and concluded that there was a sense of urgency concerning the sex crimes that did justify such a major shift. Perhaps the time has come to recognize that castration is the oldest, cheapest, quickest, and most effective treatment for our very worst crimes and diseases.

Another ATSA article pointed out that “one of the most basic phenomena in psychology is the effect of recency which means simply that as time elapses after intervention, a significant effect of treatment is less and less likely to be found ... The effect of the intervention on the treated subjects will diminish, as these individuals forget the details

⁴⁸ “Reno Backs up Sex Offender Law,” Northwest Florida Daily News (February 10, 1995): 2A.

⁴⁹ R. C. Tallis, “Burying Freud,” *The Lancet* 347, no. 9002 (1996): 669–671.

⁵⁰ *JAMA* (June 12, 1996): 1715.

of the treatment ... and as other events interceded in their lives to decrease influence of the treatment program.”⁵¹ This is the opposite of the trend after castration of sex offenders, because the castrate tends to lose more and more of his sex drive as time goes on after the surgery. “Thoughts and feelings are by definition neuronally determined. But the mind-versus-brain dilemma continues to derail modern psychiatry. ‘Psychological’ interventions are labeled unscientific or ineffectual; ‘biological’ remedies are criticized for being dehumanizing and causing physical side effects.”⁵²

Another of the problems of the talking therapies is that the sex offender is required to admit to his crimes in considerable detail so that the psychologists can know how to direct the therapy. Most offenders tend to deny, minimize, justify, and rationalize their behavior. As Cohen phrased it: “... the persistent problems related to the Fifth Amendment privilege against self-incrimination. A crucial element in the newer, especially cognitive-behavioral, treatment is the admission of guilt. Thus, denial is the treatment hurdle for the individual and confused and inconsistent case law on silence and the legal consequences of admissions is the dilemma for the law.”⁵³

⁵¹ H. Barbaree, “Evaluating Treatment Efficacy with Sexual Offenders: The Insensitivity of Recidivism Studies to Treatment Effects,” *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* (April 1997): 116.

⁵² “Mental Illness: Learning from the Foibles of Earlier Generations,” *The Lancet* 351 (February 7, 1998): 457

⁵³ F. Cohen, “The Treatment and Supervised Release Relationship,” *The Sex Offender New Insights, Treatment Innovations and Legal Developments*, eds. Schwartz and Celinni (Kingston, NJ: Civic Research Institute, 1997), ch. 23.

XII. Religious Treatments

Now we briefly consider another class of treatments for the ills, crimes, and sins of mankind, which has, from ancient times, been held to resolve these problems through the spiritual realm. The learned doctors of the mind in the foregoing section on psychotherapies have been so erudite and so positive that they have been the possessors of the utter truth that they have convinced thousands of our nation's leaders to embark on new educational systems, social structures, and cultural norms in vast experiments. Hundreds of billions of dollars and many years have been expended on these programs, and they have been mostly unsuccessful. The 1983 Nation at Risk report found "a rising tide of mediocrity." The 1989 Carnegie Corporation report *Turning Points: Preparing American Youth for the 21st Century* also was highly critical of our educational system. Many are now questioning the results of following the guidance of the psychiatrists, psychologists, and sociologists. Religious leaders are pointing to the widespread moral decay, crime, teen pregnancy, and sexually transmitted disease in our culture as evidence that something is wrong with the emphasis on the power of the mind of man. There is a Greater Power that controls the destiny of all of us, and faith in Him will lead men to do right. Most of us follow, or try to follow, the teachings of our religious leaders. They are also erudite and convinced that they are the possessors of the utter truth. Who would not follow those who are best educated, most ardent, and even ordained by the Almighty Himself?

The Roman Catholic Church, with nearly a billion members worldwide, is like many other Christian groups, teaching that the devil is real, and evil spirits exist that strive to harm humans and occupy their bodies and minds. Fifty-five percent of the respondents in a 1990 Gallup Poll said they believed in the devil, and 49 percent said they believe that people are sometimes possessed by the devil. In a 1984 poll by Louis Harris and Associates, 25 percent said they believed in the power of exorcism. The struggle between the psychologists and theologians for the confidence of the people broke into the open in 1991 when the Roman Catholic Church officials gave permission to the American Broadcasting Corporation (ABC) to film and broadcast an actual exorcism. "It is my ardent hope that this film will be helpful in promoting awareness for the ongoing need for humble prayer and penance to counteract diabolical activity around us," said Bishop J. Keith Symons, of the Diocese of Palm Beach, who gave permission for the filming.¹ This dramatization of the reality of evil in the modern world was the first time that an actual exorcism had ever been shown on American television

¹ Northwest Florida Daily News (April 5, 1991).

(the 20/20 program, April 5, 1991). The program featured half an hour of the six-hour exorcism of a demon named Minga from the body of a sixteen-year-old girl named Gina at a chapel in a house for nuns in suburban Palm Beach, Florida, with several commentaries from psychiatrists and religious figures.

Some preachers have adopted the title of “Pastoral Counselor” and have had some training in psychotherapy in addition to their religious training, but this cannot be taken for granted. Many of them are woefully unequipped to give meaningful advice in the realm of sexuality, especially in deviant sexuality, and they are not trusted as much as formerly. A 1990 poll rated clergy just below pharmacists among the most trusted occupational categories. Most psychotherapists, on the other hand, are poorly equipped to give spiritual advice. Ninety-six percent of the population believes in God, but only 43 percent of psychologists do. Indeed, many psychologists believe that religion is a source of psychological problems in the populace. About half of the mental hospital patients who mutilated themselves in one study (printed in the *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, June 6, 1981) did so because of “religious delusions.” Some people have developed psychoses and some have committed suicide because of guilt feelings brought on by their religious teachers. Psychotherapists confirm that children who learn that sex is dirty or evil are especially prone to sexual desire disorders in later life.² There seems to be some mutual distrust, then, between the leaders in the realms of theology and psychology.

Sex offenders in the 1990s were seen as requiring a highly eclectic and multidisciplinary approach to their treatment. The new disciplines include psychodynamic, behavioral, cognitive, biomedical, educational, and training elements, but they have been slow to incorporate the spiritual elements. Therapists may encourage offenders to connect with a higher power to develop the spiritual side of their lives. True spirituality supports a person’s being responsible for his behavior, but there is a danger of religiosity becoming a defense mechanism for sex offenders, too. The more religiousa (excessively, obtrusively, or sentimentally religious) a prison inmate becomes, the more he is likely to gain special favors and be released from prison early. Religiosity can also be used to avoid dealing with real life issues and problems and as an excuse from personal responsibility. “The devil made me do it” and “I am saved and have been forgiven and don’t need treatment” are statements by offenders that are sometimes heard.

In May 1990, Torianno Carroll, nineteen, was baptized in jail in Birmingham, Alabama, and described himself as a born-again crime fighter. He spoke at churches, schools, and youth groups about the dangers of gangs, drugs, and crime. Carroll was again arrested on February 3, 1991, and charged with the armed robbery and killing of a bystander.³

Some of the causes of sexual deviations lie in our culture. Our religious heritage is an important part of our culture. Religious leaders have been in the forefront of

² U.S. News & World Report (July 6, 1991): 66.

³ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (February 7, 1991).

opposition to better sex education for many decades. The lack of adequate sex education is demonstrably one of the causes of a large percentage of our sex crimes. The churches also stand in the forefront of the shameful hullabaloo against the law that says a woman has a right to have an abortion under certain conditions. Abortion is clearly favored by a majority of the population as a necessary measure against disease, insanity, and overpopulation problems. Preachers and their religious followers have repeatedly broken the laws by picketing, burning, and bombing women's clinics, and even murdering abortion doctors. Their fight against pornography is another area in which religious zealots have broken our property laws and been dishonest about the effects of sexual materials.

The churchly hierarchy itself is riddled with sex offenders who have not been purged from their ranks. Dozens of cases of priestly sex offenders became public in 1987 and 1988.⁴ The churches are giving strong aid and comfort to sex offenders with AIDS, even at the expense of alienating some of the church membership. The Spirit of the Lakes Ecumenical Community Church of Minneapolis became the nation's first openly homosexual congregation to join a mainline church when it was accepted into membership of the United Church of Christ in April 1989.⁵

So it has not been without trepidation that religious organizations have entered the dark and troubling arena of the sex crimes and their treatments. Probably the most notable has been the New York State Council of Churches with their Prison Research/Education/Action Project, which has acted as a focal point for collecting and disseminating information on sex offender treatment programs since about 1980. The U.S. Roman Catholic Church maintains several "House of Affirmation" centers for treating priests, brothers, and sisters with alcohol, drug, emotional, and psychosexual problems at Jemez Springs and Albuquerque, New Mexico; Suitland, Maryland; and St. Louis, Missouri. The Church of the Paraclete in the Jemez Mountains of New Mexico is reported to treat between sixty and ninety people a year for various sexual problems since about 1976. Good success is reported here for pedophilic priests in an eighteen-month program, which has used Depo-Provera in a few cases. About twenty members whose problems have not responded to therapy are kept at the Albuquerque center indefinitely. The St. Luke Institute annually treats sixty to eighty priests, brothers, and sisters for alcohol, drug, and emotional problems. The Catholic Family Services of Hartford, Connecticut, operates a Group for Child Sexual Molesters. The Catholic Welfare Bureau of Trenton, New Jersey, sponsors the Family Growth Program to help families that have sexual problems. The Lutheran Social Service, of Iowa City, Iowa, operates the Johnson County Sex Offender Treatment Program.

On December 6, 1993, in New Bedford, Massachusetts, former priest James Porter, fifty-eight, was sentenced to at least eighteen years in prison for molesting twenty-

⁴ A. L. Gaylor, *Betrayal of Trust: Clergy Abuse of Children* (Madison, WI: Freedom From Religion Foundation Inc., 1988).

⁵ Northwest Florida Daily News (June 10, 1989).

two children in the 1960s. Prosecutors had urged that Porter be imprisoned up to forty years. The victims asked for sentences including life imprisonment, stoning, and castration. The case against Porter drew national attention, and several of the victims appeared on the Sally Jessy Raphael television show, which broadcast nationwide on December 27, 1993. The Roman Catholic Center at the Church of the Paraclete, which had treated pedophile priests, apologized to twenty-five alleged victims of Porter and announced in November that it had settled their lawsuits for more than \$8 million.⁶ The settlement raised a question that worried many who treat sex offenders: Should treatment centers be held responsible when treatment doesn't work? Victims believe the system that put a pedophile back to work in a parish bears part of the blame. "It is one way to hold them accountable," said one of the victims. "I feel they have to make restitution for what they did, for the suffering we've been put through." Under the settlement, the New Mexico Center admitted no wrongdoing. Most of the money, \$5.26 million, would come from three insurance companies if they agree to pay. "They were negligent in the way they treated him, they were negligent in the way they released him, and they were negligent in suggesting that he was anything less than totally unfit for the priesthood," said Jeffrey Anderson, attorney for the twenty-one victims involved in the settlement. "They implied that he had been cured."⁷

One of the best-known programs for the treatment of sex offenders, which is under the auspices of a religious organization, is the Personal Socio-Awareness Program of the Lutheran Social Service of Minnesota in Minneapolis. Founded in 1978, it is a community-based treatment program for sexually disoriented adolescent boys and their families. Some of the stated objectives and premises of this program are to provide growth experiences that will assist in determining values and attitudes regarding sexuality that are grounded in Christian faith, and to celebrate God's gift of sexuality. Sexuality is an innate part of our God-given nature, and healthy sexuality involves an integration of the body, emotions, intellect, and spirit. The ability to fantasize and have sexual feelings are gifts of God, and everyone needs accurate sex information within the context of God's will and love. The general conduct of this treatment program is similar to other adolescent community-based programs as outlined earlier in this book, except that a twenty-seven-hour marathon session is held every two months at an isolated retreat.⁸

There are many other religious programs that administer to all kinds of criminals in general and not only sex offenders alone. Charles Colson's Prison Fellowship Ministries, with offices in every state in the union, is one of the largest of these. Many denominational churches and private citizens support this program with their contributions

⁶ "Pedophile Ex-Priest Gets 18 Years: Porter's Victims Testify to His Cruelties, Their Years of Anguish," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 7, 1993): A4.

⁷ "When Treatment for Sex Offenders Doesn't Work, Can Victims Collect?" Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (January 17, 1994): A5.

⁸ Knopp, Remedial Intervention in Adolescent Sex Offenders

so they can send clergymen into the prisons on a regular basis to administer to the religious training and guidance of the inmates.

This Prison Fellowship (PF) religious program was evaluated in four prisons in New York State by comparing prisoners who had participated in PF with those who had not. It was found that inmates who were most active in Bible studies were significantly less likely to be rearrested during a one-year follow-up period. Fourteen percent of PF inmates in the high participation category (ten or more Bible studies) were rearrested versus 41 percent of their non-PF counterparts. For all categories of participation in the PF program overall, however, there was no statistical difference in rearrests between the two groups.⁹ My February 24, 2001 newspaper told of plans to expand state faith-based programs into federal penitentiaries.

One report said that nearly two-thirds of the nation's 125 medical schools now include coursework on spirituality issues. Eight years ago, only three did. A growing number of hospitals and clinics around the country now offer spiritually based adjunct therapies ranging from prayer and meditation to massage and musical therapy.

More than 200 studies have shown that religious faith strengthens the immune system, speeds recovery from illness, and prolongs life. One study of 1,000 hospitalized heart patients showed that those who were prayed for had an 11 percent reduction in medical complications. The odds that chance might explain these findings were about one in twenty-five. Throughout human history, spirituality, the sense of being connected with a power greater than oneself, has provided a source of strength to people who are coping with illness. Religious devotion promotes social interaction through attending worship services, and being socially connected has proved to have positive health benefits. Religious faith also provides meaning and purpose to life, which contribute to health. When we sit quietly in prayer and meditation, our blood pressure and heart rate diminish, and stress levels decline.

Freedom Village in Lamont, New York, has an Adopt a Teen program for juvenile prostitutes and others in trouble with the law, drugs, or alcohol. This program advertises on the religious TV channels for sponsors to commit themselves to an \$18-a-month payment to support one of these children.

Several other programs of the churches are known as "ex-gay" ministries: Regeneration, located in Baltimore, Maryland; White Stone Ministries, located in Boston; L.I.F.E., located in New York City; Courage of St. Michael's Rectory, located in New York City; Exodus International, located in San Rafael, California; and Desert Stream Ministries, located in Santa Monica, California. Andy Comsky, the director of this program, estimated that out of ten people who inquired about the ministry, six would come to a meeting, and of those six, four would commit themselves to a year-long

⁹ B. R. Johnson, D. B. Larson, and T. C. Pitts, "Religious Programs, Institutional Adjustment, and Recidivism Among Former Inmates in Prison Fellowship Programs," *Justice Quarterly* 14, no. 1 (1997): Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences, 145-166.

program of prayer, psychological counseling, and study. Three out of those four would ultimately be successful in putting their homosexuality behind them.¹⁰

One definite way that religious treatments can be of great help in sex offender rehabilitation is with those cases whose sexual problem was originally caused by religious taboos. Masters and Johnson showed that sexual dysfunction was caused or amplified by incompetent professional advice in 12.7 percent of their cases.¹¹ About 2 percent of these cases were caused by theological consultations: Two were told that their impotence was retribution for adultery, one was told that he was impotent because he had allowed his wife's abortion, and another was told that his symptoms would disappear if he was regular in church attendance for a year. Gebhard et al. reported that 28 percent of sex offenders considered themselves religiously devout.¹² Many young children have been scolded by religiously zealous parents for relatively minor sexual explorations that are the "worst sins they could commit, and God is angry with them." As Professor Oates has so wisely pointed out, pastoral counselors can help by teaching a more wholesome religious point of view on sex and by creative collaboration with other specialists: legal authorities, psychologists, medical doctors, and social workers in these cases.¹³ Ministers do not have the time to devote to the quantity of this sort of work, and they need all the outside help that they can get.

The fact that some of our judges are sentencing sex offenders to community service with religious organizations and to attend church indicates that there is still a strong belief in the religious treatment. Judge Fred A. Kelly sentenced twenty-six-year-old Jacqueline Thomas to attend Sunday school and worship services at the Gallatin, Tennessee Baptist Church for three months for seducing a thirteen-year-old boy. The judge said, "A little religion never hurt anybody; maybe it will help turn your life around."¹⁴ Father Bruce Ritter's Covenant House organization has been taking in up to 16,000 children a year since 1969 from the streets of our cities. Most of these youngsters were homeless runaways who were prostituting themselves to earn enough money to stay alive. Some of them were drug addicts, and about 47 percent were homosexuals. The Covenant House program of religious teaching, psychotherapy, shelter, and good nutrition has been successful in straightening out about two-thirds of those who were taken in; the remainder drifted off again or died.

Our religions formed our sexual morality in the first place and were the most ancient of our treatments for sex offenders. Before Freud, at the beginning of the twentieth century, deviant sexual behavior was almost entirely the concern of the theologian and the legal system. Sex offenses were sinful and immoral provinces of the clergy and law

¹⁰ Christian Science Monitor (March 3, 1988).

¹¹ Masters and Johnson, *Human Sexual Inadequacy* (Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1970), 188–189.

¹² Gagnon Gebhard and Christianson Pomeroy, *Sex Offenders* (NY: Harper and Row, 1965), 41–42.

¹³ W. E. Oates, Professor of Psychology of Religion, Southern Baptist Theological Seminary Louisville, KY. (1972). *Religious Attitudes and Pastoral Counseling* in Resnik and Wolfgang's *Sexual Behaviors*, Little, Brown, & Co. London, p. 237.

¹⁴ Weekly World News (July 25, 1989).

officer. Therapy was punishment, penance, and absolution. Musing upon the current religious treatments for sex offenders, many are disappointed to see that many religious teachers have become the disciples of Freud rather than Christ. They appear to have very little of anything new to offer from the spiritual realm; they harbor sexual perverts in their own ranks and have become crassly commercial in their television ministries. Of the utterances of man and the truths of God there is no real comparison, yet we are mightily confused and often misled by churchly leaders. The truth of God is wider, more comprehensive—including more dimensions than that of man—and we are slow to see it in all its brilliant varieties. For some reason, we cannot expound upon it. The utterances of today's wise men tend to be but single threads out of the whole cloth of knowledge and only a part of the interrelatedness; therefore, these utterances are oversimplified, faulted, and even misleading. Unfortunately, most of the churches eschew or anathematize the one treatment that has the power to cleanse the troubled sex offender of his fleshly yearning: surgical castration.

What a sorry spectacle of our religious leadership we saw emblazoned on the front pages of our newspapers and on our television screens in Jim Bakker. Such a charismatic religious leader groveling like a lunatic under the couch in his lawyer's office and sobbing, disheveled, and shackled in arm and leg chains at the courthouse in Charlotte, North Carolina. He emotionally collapsed in the fourth day of his 1989 trial for fraud and conspiracy, showing that he completely lacked the moral strength to withstand exposure to our legal system, which is notoriously kind to those who are brought before its benches. Many of us are now wondering how a devoutly religious person could come to such a sorry state. Episodes such as this lower the faith of many in the religious treatments.

Many have found that the religions are poorly equipped to help people with sexual problems because there is a poor relationship between piety and pity. Bertrand Russell wrote, "The more intense has been the religion of any period and the more profound has been the dogmatic belief, the greater has been the cruelty and the worse has been the state of affairs." Many point to the long history of wars fought in the name of some god as being particularly vicious. The Israelites "utterly destroyed the men, women, and children of every city" (Deuteronomy 3:6). The eleventh through thirteenth century Crusades and the fifteenth century Inquisition, as well as more recent fanatic Muslim Shiite attacks, were particularly barbaric.

And now it develops that a larger percentage of the most respected levels of clergymen than ever before documented are sexually active deviants. A. W. Richard Sipe documents the perfectly ghastly facts that at least 20 percent of the Catholic priests are homosexuals and 6 percent are child molesters and at least 80 percent masturbate,¹⁵ and predicts that more than 50 percent of Catholic priests will be homosexuals by 2010.

¹⁵ A. W. R. Sipe, *A Secret World: Sexuality and the Search for Celibacy* (New York: Bruner/Mazel, 1990).

In 1993, a Florida newspaper reported that the first program to exclusively treat victims of sexual abuse by members of the clergy was opened in a Milwaukee hospital psychiatric center to treat the growing numbers of people who claim to have been sexually abused by clerics.¹⁶ The center's director psychotherapist, J. Peter Isley, said a priest sexually abused him when he attended high school during the 1960s and 1970s at the seminary near Fond de Lac, Wisconsin. The cost of the treatment by a team of psychiatrists and abuse counselors was \$400 to \$600 a day. One of the major components of the treatment was to examine the spiritual damage done to the victims. "The spiritual aspect of this abuse is a major issue," Isley said. "Perpetrators and protectors use religious tradition and language to fashion it into a weapon. Survivors have such deep conflicts after hearing for so long how they have to forgive and having offenders tell them[the sex] was a good thing that pleased God."

In spite of the magnitude of the millennia of religious teachings concerning sexual misbehaving, very little has been done to impartially evaluate this relationship. One study surveyed 2,964 women from a relatively high social and occupational status to determine the impact of Christian faith on the prevalence and sequelae of sexual abuse.¹⁷ The study suggested that sexual abuse is a trauma-inducing process for women, regardless of their religious orientation. However, the main effect for religious orientation suggests that women who adhere to a religious belief system are less symptomatic than are women who do not practice any religion. Furthermore, women raised by conservative Christians with a high integration of religious values in their family life had a significantly lower prevalence of abuse than did women raised in Christian homes with a low religious emphasis in life (29 versus 41 percent).

Another study reviewed the records of 1,322 clergy and religious sex offenders seen over a twenty-five-year period at the Southdown Treatment Center (Emmanuel Convalescent Foundation) in Aurora, Canada, and reported that: 1) Priests and the religious are very bright, articulate, educated, verbal men for the most part and are notoriously adept at intellectualization and rationalization. 2) Clergy and the religious have an almost pathetic lack of knowledge and sophistication about all matters sexual. In some cases, even knowledge of simple physiology appeared to be totally lacking. 3) The treatment for clergy and religious sex offenders needs to be essentially the same as one would find in any other treatment facility dealing with these issues. 4) Of their sample of 111 age-inappropriate sex offenders, tentative independent verification of recidivism of about forty of them was obtained. Within this group, there was about a 10 percent rate of recidivism that could be documented¹⁸ (i.e., those that admit their crimes are less likely to re-offend).

¹⁶ "Psychiatric Program Geared Toward Helping Victims of Cleric Molesters," Pensacola[Florida] News Journal, (May 16, 1993): A5.

¹⁷ D. M. Elliott, "The Impact of Christian Faith on the Relevance and Sequelae of Sexual Abuse," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 9, no. 1 (1994): 95-108.

¹⁸ J. A. Loftus and R. J. Camargo, "Treating the Clergy," *Annals of Sex Research* 6, no. 4 (1993): 287-303.

Several other books that have been published on the allied subjects in recent years are: Gordon Thomas' *Desire and Denial: Celibacy and the Church* (1986), with a foreword quoting Robert Browning, "Vows can't change nature"; Marie M. Fortune's *Is Nothing Sacred? When Sex Invades the Pastoral Relationship* (1989); James G. Wolf's *Gay Priests* (1989), the first book to examine the issue of gay clergy in the Roman Catholic Church; Jason Berry's *Lead Us Not into Temptation: Catholic Priests and the Sexual Abuse of Children* (1992).¹⁹ All of these publications starkly reveal the fact the Browning's quote was true as often as it was overcome. "Nature is stronger than nurture" in the case of the sex drive; the body is more important than the mind or spirit. Even the best educated, most devout servants of the church have great trouble in overcoming their own sex urges, and large numbers of them have committed some of the most heinous sexual sins, which are serious crimes in the civil law as well as the law of God as is clearly written in the Bible and in church dogma.

Even those in our top civil leadership, who are ostensibly very religious people, have been unable to overcome their hormonal sex drive. On January 21, 1998, the nation learned of the sexual infidelity that President William Jefferson Clinton had committed in the Oval Office of the White House. He had allowed his young, attractive intern, Monica Lewinsky, to fellate him there on several occasions. On March 2, 1999, Miss Lewinsky broadcast to the nation on the ABC television channel program 20/20 how she viewed the president. She said that he is "a very sensual man" who feels conflicted because of his "strong religious upbringing." "I think he struggles with his sensuality because I don't think he thinks it's okay," she said. "I think he tries to hold himself back. And then can't anymore."

Another illustration occurred in April and May of 1994 in Rwanda with hundreds of thousands of grisly murders, which made many people wonder about the strength of some religious teachings. An estimated 85 percent of Rwandans are Christians, yet many of them joined in the massacre of their neighbors. Even some priests were accessories to these murders. Their religion was unable to overcome their tribal bloodlust.

One prison religious program that appears to be working well was established in three prisons in the late 1980s in Israel. These prisons established separate religious wards from the main prison population where prayer, study of the Torah, eating kosher food, and preaching daily were the main activities. Timor reports that only 8 percent of the inmates from the religious wards recidivated after release, whereas 67 percent returned to prison from the general population, which did not get the religious treatment in the special wards.²⁰ Timor mentioned that originally the modern prison system was planned and built by American Quakers in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, as an institution to foster repentance, and accordingly it was called a "penitentiary." Clergy have been observed to have more rehabilitative influence than did other staff members,

¹⁹ The investigative staff of the Boston Globe, 2002, *Betrayal: The Crisis in the Catholic Church*; Rose, Michael. (2002). *Goodbye, Good Men: How Liberals Brought Corruption into the Catholic Church*.

²⁰ U. Timor, "Constructing a Rehabilitative Reality in Special Religious Wards in Israeli Prisons," *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 42, no. 4 (1998): 340-359.

according to Glaser.²¹ Most of the prisoners in the religious wards were not religious before their incarceration. Prisoners were accompanied in different ways by religion for the entire time they were in these wards, and they were rarely exposed to the coercive influence and punitive environment of hardened criminals and staff prevalent in most other prison environments. Religious ward inmates were thus able to construct for themselves a more positive self-image and avoid the usual “pains of imprisonment.” The rabbis and religious students teach the inmates constantly. There is no TV in the religious ward. The lessons of the rabbis and their helpers make the ward’s inmates God-fearing men. They are required to dress like religious people—to wear the skullcap and ritual fringes. Religious ward inmates acquired new spiritual assets, which aided them in leaving their lives of crime behind them without being enslaved by past sins.

There has been considerable stress between the preachers of the religious treatments and the psychiatrists and psychologists for a number of years. Freud, the founder of psychoanalysis, even declared religion to be a form of pathology, an obsessional neurosis. “Spirituality oriented programs are typically viewed as suspect; clients who cite religious views are often considered to be defensive; any psychologists often consider their spiritual beliefs a private matter with no place in therapy.”²² Religious believers point out numerous studies that have shown that religious commitment is good for health, sex life, reduction of drug abuse, and suicide prevention.²³ On the other hand, the practitioners of the psychotherapies say these studies are biased by religious zeal, and point to the string of murders in recent years by allegedly devout anti-abortionists like Paul Hill to show that fanatical religious beliefs can have deadly consequences.²⁴ It has become evident that even devoutly religious men are vulnerable to their powerful hormonal urges, and we need to return to the ancient practice of castrating some of our priests.

On January 29, 2001, less than two weeks after being sworn in as president, George W. Bush opened a new door for religious groups to receive government money for their work in aiding addicts, prisoners, the homeless, and more. He created a new White House Office of Faith-based and Community Initiatives, with five cabinet-level departments that will facilitate competition by religious groups for a share of the billions of dollars that the government pays for social services. The first amendment to the Constitution of the United States says that: “Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion ...,” and most have interpreted this to be an edict for the separation of religion and government. At the Washington-based Americans United

²¹ D. Glaser, *The Effectiveness of a Prison and Parole System* (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs-Merrill, 1964).

²² Jerry Fjeekenstad, “Exploring the Crossroads Between Victims, Perpetrators, and Spirituality,” *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* 6, no. 4 (1999): 338.

²³ D. N. Elkins, “Spirituality—It’s What’s Missing in Mental Health,” *Psychology Today* 32, no. 5 (September/October 1999): 45–48.

²⁴ “Have Faith: Religion Can Heal Mental Ills and Dogmatic Devotion Doesn’t Help, It Hurts,” *Insight Magazine* (March 6, 1995): 18–22.

for Separation of Church and State, the Reverend Barry Lynn called Bush's planned expansion an assault on the constitutional principle.

XIII. The Legal Solution

When the criminal justice system, psychotherapy, religion, and other resources fail, many people turn to their lawyers for a solution. Hiring a lawyer and suing someone for some injury is felt to be helpful in overcoming problems. Lawyers and other professionals often encourage this notion. Occasionally, when the law enforcement and judicial system fail to successfully prosecute a rapist, the victim will hire a lawyer and sue him for damages. Sometimes they win. The vengeance thirst is very strong in some women. Cora Meyers sued the man who raped her in October 1983 and won her revenge to the tune of \$50,000 in a Saskatchewan courtroom in July 1989.¹ Police had arrested the man in 1983 on a sexual assault charge, but the prosecutor later dropped the case because of “inconsistencies” in Mrs. Meyer’s statements. She later hired a lawyer and pursued her attacker in the civil courts. “There was no way I wanted him to get away with it,” she said.

The legal solution requires a lot of time, money, and stress. Oftentimes, the lawyers are the only ones who win in the end. Militant women’s groups have often resorted to hiring lawyers to argue their causes, such as in the famous *Roe v. Wade* Supreme Court case of 1973, which resulted in the legalization of abortion and hundreds of other legal battles for the next seventeen years. Pornography is another sex crime that has seen extensive use of the legal solution by both sides, for and against. Legal battles have raged back and forth incessantly across the country. The side that can afford the best lawyer usually wins these local conflicts. Marc Christian was awarded \$14.5 million in a suit against actor Rock Hudson’s estate in February 1989. Christian had been Hudson’s homosexual lover years earlier while Hudson knew he had AIDS and was contagious. Hudson was found by the court to have been guilty of “outrageous conduct” for not telling Christian of his dangerous disease.

The legal solution was resorted to by a number of parents whose children had been sodomized and fellated by a Catholic priest in the Esther-Henry area of Louisiana when the Church and justice agencies failed to take action. The Reverend Gilbert Gauthier admitted in October 1985 to molesting thirty-seven boys and one girl. As of late 1987, the Catholic Church had paid out over \$13.8 million in damages to the victims and their families as a result of a series of legal actions that resulted. When the family suits against the Church became public, the first family to sue was forced out of business by the community, which felt that it was wrong to “attack the Church in public.”²

¹ Weekly World News (June 13, 1989).

² A. L. Gaylor, *Betrayal of Trust*, 6–8.

When the Times of Acadiana newspaper of Lafayette, Louisiana, published an article critical of the Church's covering up Gauthé's crimes, the local Catholic businessmen boycotted the paper, costing it \$25,000 in lost advertising. The trials revealed that Father Gauthé's bishop had known as early as 1972 that Gauthé had made "imprudent touches" to a small boy. The same bishop had later appointed Gauthé to be chaplain of the Boy Scouts of the diocese where he molested some more of the boys.

... Laws against theft, assault and murder are universal and basically uncontroversial, sex laws vary enormously and are constantly in debate. For example, fornication is not criminal in England and other countries outside the U.S. ... the range of punishments that may be imposed in those states that do punish it ranges from petty fines up to 5 years imprisonment (**Britannica**, 1968, 20–301).

XIV. Civil Commitment

Many states had enacted laws that provided for civil procedures to commit sex offenders to treatment programs instead of sending them to prison when Minnesota passed its psychopathic personality statute in 1939. By the mid-1970s, most states repealed these laws, at least in part, due to doubts about the effectiveness of treatment and the ability to predict dangerousness.¹ By 1999, thirteen states and the District of Columbia had enacted laws authorizing the involuntary civil commitment of dangerous sex offenders, mostly on their release from prison.

The emergence of these civil commitment laws for sex offenders sparked considerable debate among legal analysts on constitutional questions like double jeopardy and doubts as to whether the mental health system was appropriate for use with those who lacked symptoms of major mental illness. The United States Supreme Court did much to resolve some of these questions when they voted five to four, June 23, 1997, to validate Kansas's Sexually Violent Predator Act in the *Hendricks v. Kansas* case. Leroy Hendricks, a pedophile who could not control his urge to molest children, was the first person civilly committed under the Kansas act. He claimed he was being punished twice for the same conduct, in violation of the Constitution's double jeopardy and ex post facto principles.

Schlink and Cohen have considerable firsthand experience and study of civil commitment and have written a book that deals mostly with this subject.² They have been quite honest in pointing out the weaknesses, difficulties, and considerable expense involved in this desperate effort to make up for the failures of dozens of cognitive-behavioral treatments. Kansas's sexual predator treatment program for those in civil commitment has cost between \$60,000 and \$100,000 a year per person petitioned as a sexual predator. Most of the civil commitment laws were passed in states where there had been especially heinous cases and considerable uproar in the press and public over sex offenders who had again offended after release from prison and other treatments.

Three of the thirteen states that had enacted civil commitment laws later added castration laws for sex offenders. California, Florida, and Wisconsin have done this, and at least four of the men under civil commitment in California have asked to be castrated.

Robert Prentky told the Massachusetts Adolescent Sex Offender Coalition (MASOC) meeting April 12, 2001, about the civil commitment laws that are in

¹ A. Schlink and F. Cohen, *The Sexual Predator Law—Policy—Evaluation and Treatment* (Kingston, NJ: Civic Research Institute, 1999), 2–5.

² *Ibid.*

effect in eighteen states since 1990 for sex offenders. He found that the courts had ruled in favor of the laws because certain ex-offenders had shown “an utter lack of power to control their sexual impulses.” These men were diagnosed with a mental disorder (sometimes called psychopathic personality) that required hospitalization and treatment for an indefinite period of time after they had completed their adjudicated prison sentence. As of June 2000, at least 885 of these men had been civilly committed to special, secure mental hospitals, and forty-eight had been released. Over 350 sex offenders were civilly committed to Atascadero, California’s maximum-security mental health facility in 2002.

Prentky quoted Professor Winick’s 1998 comment that the “impulses were not resisted—but they were not ‘irresistible impulses.’” I submit that “impulse control” of a sexual nature is particularly amenable to the castration treatment. Much research with animals and humans has shown that our sexual impulses are caused by the hormone testosterone, and when testosterone is reduced about 95 percent by castration, so is our impulse to engage in sexual activity.

At least six sex offenders in civil commitment in California, and one in Illinois, have asked for the castration treatment, but only one has received the treatment. Larry don McQuay, in Texas confinement, also asked for the castration treatment, but has not received it in spite of considerable national media attention. Why have the corrections officials repeatedly refused to castrate the men who have asked for it? Could it be that they are afraid of losing the money that has been devoted to the more expensive kinds of treatment? Civil commitment requires secure hospital facilities and expensive psychological and psychiatric treatments, which vary widely and are tailored to the individual sex offender crimes. Civil commitment in these hospitals cost from \$10,000 to \$130,000 a year per inmate. Castration costs less than \$3,000 in most parts of the country.

Castration is much more effective than the behavioral treatments. The average recidivism of inmates who have had the castration treatment is only about 2.4 percent, while the behavioral treatments’ recidivism is at least three times more frequent. Perhaps the psychiatrists and other behavioral treatment specialists don’t want to admit that sexual impulses are primarily a hormone-determined phenomenon.

XV. Psychic Considerations

Some of the treatments that have been resorted to in the past and, for all we know, may become popular in the future do not fit well into the categories of psychotherapy or religious therapy or medical treatments. These treatments are not in the realm of the mind or the spirit or the body, but something beyond all of that—in the psychic realm, lying outside the sphere of our present knowledge and physical science, acting on the psyche or self and marked by extraordinary perception, a sixth sense that sometimes guides us in incomprehensible ways to protect us from danger or give us a premonition of a coming event. The paranormal, unusual, and supernatural definition does not come to us frequently, but when it does, it provides a powerful guide for us to do the right thing and could well deter us from performing a sex crime.

The ancients are said to have cultivated this sixth sense in connection with their religious practices and secret knowledge. But the more powerful religious authorities have purposely erased much of this knowledge. The Essenes of the first century before Christ and the Gnostics of the first century after the coming of Christ and all of their successors—the Manichaeans, Paulicians, Bogomils, Cathari, and down to the modern Rosicrucians—seem to have some insight into these mysteries. Perhaps when we transcend the forty-year hiatus between the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls and their full revelations and interpretation, we shall be able to tell more about psychic aids.

Psychic training is for the elect. Lest there is confusion in the reader's mind about why I have mentioned something so far out of the ordinary in this section on treatments for sex offenders, I must hasten to add here that it is for those of us sinners who have passed through the area of condemnation of our sexual actions by our fellow citizens and are no more exposed to the gaze and fellowship of higher beings than the ordinary sex criminal groveling in the squalor of a prison or mental hospital. It is for those of us who want to ascend higher in our search for enlightenment. It is a course in miracles, as Tara Singh would say—an imparting of absolute knowledge more true and infinite than our normal relative knowledge. A comprehension for super achievers. An opening of new spaces at the top, over and above the normal visible spectrum of sexual behavior. It is a placing of the truth and power of the sex drive into new realms of possibility thinking. Extending the spectrum of id, ego, and super ego tangibilities into something beyond. Something that we can but poorly define because it transcends all the others.

Zen comes close to the psychic. It is a school of Buddhism that proposes the awakening of wisdom from the depths of one's own consciousness where it has usually been lying dormant. Zen disavows argument, theorizing, sermonizing, or explanations as

most of our Christian religions are prone to do. On the contrary, it urges the follower to find in himself the answer to any question raised within himself.

XVI. Biologic Treatments

The animal body is a most wonderfully complex machine, even now scarcely understood in all the interrelatedness of its various systems. The human animal is the most wondrously complex of all the creatures because of its larger brain and spiritual and psychic capacities than the lower creatures. The nature versus nurture arguments still fly back and forth between the psychologists, sociologists, and medical doctors, but the nature side has been making more headway in recent years with new discoveries of the physiology of hormones and cellular microbiology of man. Freud had postulated that there was something innate in man that drove his sexual behavior, and it would eventually be found to be in his biology. There may be some simple remedy for deviant sexual behavior, like the recent discovery that aspirin prevents heart attacks. We have suddenly been awakened to the fact that just a tiny bit of aspirin swallowed each day thins the blood to a degree that could have prevented millions of deaths in the past ten years. If we only had known about it and used it!

“For it was you who formed my inward parts; you knit me together in my mother’s womb. I praise you, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made. Wonderful are your works! That I know very well” (Psalm 139:13, 14; c. 460 BC). “Men ought to know that from nothing but the brain come joys, laughter, sports, sorrows, grief, despondency, and lamentations ... and by the same organ men become mad and delirious, and fears and terrors assail us, some by night and some by day ...” (Hippocrates, the father of medicine; c. 380 BC).

The criminal justice system grows sillier and sillier as it ages. Nothing works to rehabilitate the criminal. Crime grows apace, perpetuates itself, expands, increases in numbers and intensity—gets worse. We are on the wrong track. Our great conglomerate of control agencies are like railroad trains, blindly rushing through the night in spite of the rising storm of violence. We have built a mighty machine here that is able to go faster and further than ever before, but it is blinded by erroneous beliefs, and the track is laid down in the wrong direction. We just do not understand well enough our own bodies. We do not know all of the components of how we learn to do violence, how the hormonal cascades impel our violent behavior, how our belief system functions to modulate our most sinful behavior, etc., etc.

By now we should be—indeed are—very smart. We have more knowledge assembled now than ever before. We are better able to process this knowledge and are able to deal with mountains of information in more meaningful ways than ever before. Why is it that we continue to repeatedly arrive at the wrong conclusions? Something is basically wrong. Perhaps it is the ethical and moral judgments that set us on the wrong track.

We tend to filter all information through our emotions. Our emotions rule us. Our morality becomes an emotional thing. Traditionally, morality has been the province of our religion. Our churches, priests, rabbis, ministers, and theologians have provided our moral leadership. Could they be wrong? Yes, that could be it. Today we are seeing as never before the great cracks in the walls of the religious edifice. We plainly see today on the television news in living color, with background music and astutely punctuating commentary, the sins of our religious leaders. Our brain's receptor senses are flooded with impressions, and we rock in amazement, but we are forced to realize the sins of our religious leaders. The knowledge comes that thousands of our priests are sexually deviant, and they are dying of AIDS by the hundreds.

A. Chemotherapy

Radically new and powerful drugs for the mind came into widespread use in the 1950s and 1960s. At that time, particularly in Europe, the new panacea caught on quickly. The old insane asylums emptied out, and many closed down entirely. There was no longer the need to restrain the mentally ill in locked-down padded rooms and cells to keep them from hurting themselves and others. There were drugs that calmed them down and changed their behavior. Those who had been manacled or straight-jacketed were quickly sedated with powerful doses of phenobarbital. The manic-depressive had his wild mood swings smoothed out by lithium compounds. The disoriented schizophrenic was given stelazine or Thorazine to slow his racing mind. The hysterically grieving widow swallowed a Valium to calm her down during the stressful funeral ceremony. There was no need to lock them up as long as they had the sense to take their medication or there was someone who could see to it that they took their pills on time. They could be treated on an outpatient basis and only check in with the doctor from time to time, every month or two, to have their medications altered as needed.

Men had known for millennia in an unscientific sort of way that wine or mushrooms or plants like tobacco, poppies, and hemp had noticeable effects on our thinking and behavior if parts of them were consumed in certain ways. Our ancestors had noted this in their animals: Horses or cattle showed strange and unsettling behavior if they grazed on locoweed at certain times of the year. Men hazily knew that they felt better, had a better outlook, and were less warlike when they were well fed than when their stomachs were empty, but they never thought much about it in a pharmacological way until relatively recently. Now most all of us know that the doctor can give us something or we can go to the store and buy something that will make us feel better. Our televisions and magazines have shown us how to take an Alka-Seltzer for our morning-after headache and upset stomach. And so it is now that we have a very large selection of drugs for just about every mental and behavioral problem imaginable, and this includes aberrant sexual behavior.

B. Anti-Androgens

The anti-androgens are any substance that is capable of inhibiting the biological effects of the androgenic (masculinizing) hormones. The effect is often referred to as “chemical castration.” Dr. Sturup tells us, “Since the beginning of the 1950s, we have occasionally used a female hormone treatment (usually 5 to 10 milligrams of estrogen a week) in order to help some detainee suffering from a strong sex drive.”¹ In 1941, Golla, Hodge, and Spence (*Lancet* 1, 1941, 1006) published a study of diminished sexual activity in men who have received estrogen preparations. In 1950, the Germans Bleuler and Zublin showed through experimentation on animals that sexual hormones from the opposite sex had an effect on the sexual drive. In some cases, the drive was higher, in others, lower. They gave testosterone proportionate to seventeen women, and besides physical changes, they found an increase in sexual drive and slightly euphorizing effects in mild depression. In three men receiving large doses of female hormones, the sexual drive became subdued. In 1959, in Herstedvester, Denmark, Hoeck Gradenwitz used a combination of estrogen treatment and psychotherapy with very fine results. “... Some inmates feel so troubled by their sexual urges at times that they become aggressive and provoke conflicts, and a short period of estrogen treatment may be a great help in such cases.”

All hormones are potent medications with many serious side effects. Dosages must be given in precise amounts, because even small under- or overdoses can have grave consequences. Diabetes, heart trouble, or strokes are among these. Women who take testosterone or men who take estrogen will lose some of their sex characteristics and take on some of those of the opposite gender.

Another problem with the anti-androgens is called “flare.” When a leuteinizing-hormone-releasing hormone agonist is first injected into a man’s body, it paradoxically causes a rise in pituitary leutenizing hormone (LH). The LH rise stimulates the testicles to make more testosterone during the first five to twelve days after initiation of the drug into the body. Flare can precipitate life-threatening symptoms in men with prostate cancer.²

Prentky reviewed the literature and found that the most potent of the anti-androgens were the progestogens, and of the progestogens currently in use, cyposterone acetate had the most pronounced anti-androgenic activity.³ He also listed medroxyprogesterone, chlormadinone, and megastrol in the progesterone category of

¹ Georg K. Sturup, *Treating the “Untreatable” Chronic Criminals at Herstedvester*[Denmark], (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1968), 100.

² Prostate Cancer Research Institute of Marina Del Ray, CA, “Clinical Flare: A Crisis That Can be Avoided,” *PCR Insights* 2, no. 2 (May 1999).

³ Robert A. Prentky, “Arousal Reduction in Sexual Offenders: A Review of Antiandrogen Interventions,” *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 9 no. 4 (1997): 337.

anti-androgens. "Many men discontinue antiandrogen treatment because of diarrhea, although adjusting the dosage may ease this side effect for some men."⁴

Herrmann made a review of the literature on the anti-androgens in 1980 and identified the following effects on sexual functioning:

(1) Penile erection and orgasm are severely impaired depending on the type of anti-androgen, the amount of the dosage, the type of erectile stimulation, time from first dose, and several other factors. Erections were much reduced or disappeared altogether within 1 to 3 weeks, sometimes a month depending on the regime of administration. (2) A marked reduction in aggression, violence, and rage was observed in a variety of patients. Some with brain injuries or temporal lobe epilepsy who had suffered episodic rages were calmed down, and some with XYY chromosomal abnormalities became much less restless. Several younger patients became much less irritable and hostility ceased in others. (3) Sexual behavior—both fantasized and overt—were reduced. Some writers have indicated that the genital physical manifestations were inhibited to a much greater degree than the psychological however. (4) A general tranquilizing, calming-down effect has been noted in some patients with some loss of energy, but no drowsiness, weakness, or fatigue. (5) Sexual arousability—the facility with which we respond to erotic stimuli—as measured by galvanic skin reaction in its initial exposure reaction was not changed by anti-androgen treatment. One cannot speak of total sexual disinterest or indifference in treated patients. (6) None of the observed patients suffered a decrease in activity, and many were more active in their work after treatment. The slight tranquilizing effect mentioned above may be due to the sedative effect of the medications, but there seemed to be an activating effect as a result of the relief from the need to devote large amounts of energy to sexuality. (7) Gender identity—that aspect which involves our sense of masculinity or femininity—has not been changed by anti-androgen treatments. Nor has sexual preference been altered: the homosexual, pedophilic, exhibitionist, or fetishist will not have their orientations changed. Psychotherapy is recommended in combination with drug treatment for these indications. (8) Temporary depression sometimes occurs as sexual excitement decreases and must be guarded against with appropriate counseling.⁵

Several of the chemical substances that have been identified as having various anti-androgenic effects are indicated below.

1. Medroxyprogesterone Acetate (MPA)

⁴ Man to Man News 1, no. 3 (1996): 3.

⁵ W. M. Hermann and R. S. Beach, "Pharmacotherapy for Sexual Offenders," *Journal of Modern Problems in Pharmacopsychology* (1980): 15. Karger, Basel, 182–194.

MPA is a derivative of the female progesterone hormone and is supplied commercially in 2.5 mg and 10 mg pills, and 100 mg/ml and 400 mg/ml concentrations in sterile aqueous solutions for intramuscular injection. A very large portion of the dosage is lost in the digestion process, so it is most practical to take it in the injectable form so that it is induced directly to the bloodstream where it is distributed throughout the body to its target organs. The Upjohn Company furnishes most of the supply in the United States under the names Depo-Provera and Provera. The recommended dosage for sex offenders is 300 to 400 mg every ten days, depending on the patient's physique and weight. The Depo-Provera acts on the hypothalamus and on the anterior lobe of the pituitary gland to inhibit its release of the gonadotropin hormones LH and FSH. The production and secretion of testosterone by the Leydig cells of the testicles is under the control of LH. The testosterone in conjunction with the FSH acts on the Sertoli cells to produce sperm. The net result is to reduce the production of the male hormones from the normal 550 ng/ml of plasma to about 250 ng/ml. Gagne reported a reduction in plasma levels to 25 percent of the baseline level in most cases.⁶ Money and Laschet have also suggested that there is an effect of the Depo-Provera on the central nervous system by way of the hypothalamus to reduce the libido.⁷

Herrmann, Money, Groth, and others have pointed out that it is a generally held view that while surgical castration often produces little or no immediate reduction of libido for months, anti-androgen therapy has a much more immediate effect in ten to fifteen days, depending on dosage and several other factors. Depo-Provera acts on the organs, which are upstream in the cascade of hormones, and the testicles are further downstream. MPA also reduces testosterone by accelerating metabolic clearance through induction of liver testosterone- α -reductase.⁸ Chronic treatment with depot MPA may induce or exacerbate osteoporosis in both men and women, though such negative effects on bone density are not seen with natural progesterone.⁹ Other nonsexual side effects are drowsiness and weight gain. Prentky reviewed the literature and found the additional side effects of Provera were cold sweats, hot flashes, nightmares, shortness of breath, hyperglycemia, reduced testicular size, hypertension, thrombotic disorders such as phlebitis, cerebrovascular disorders, pulmonary embolism, renal thrombosis, and fluid retention.¹⁰ "Thus it can place those with epilepsy, migraine, asthma, and cardiac or renal dysfunction at some potential risk" (Bradford, 1983).

There is another channel from the upstream organs to other organs that also produce androgens and are not directly affected by castration. The pituitary is the master

⁶ P. Gagne, "Treatment of Sex Offenders with Medroxyprogesterone Acetate," *American Journal of Psychiatry* 138 (1981): 644-646.

⁷ John Money, *The Therapeutic Use of Androgen-Depleting Hormone in Sexual Behaviors* (Boston: Little Brown Co., 1972), 358.

⁸ Theresa L. Crenshaw and James P. Goldberg, *Sexual Pharmacology: Drugs that Affect Sexual Function* (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1996), 92.

⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁰ Prentky, "Arousal Reduction in Sexual Offenders," 338.

gland, which puts out some nine other hormones besides LH and FSH. One of these is the adrenocorticotrophic hormone (ACTH), which controls the production of the corticosteroid in the adrenal glands. These steroids include both the weak and potent androgens and androstenedione and testosterone in concentrations about 5 percent of the normal adult male. With castration, the normal production of inhibin, which controls the release of gonadotropins by the pituitary, is lost, and there is less limitation to the amounts of androgens that the adrenals may produce in the closed-loop control system. The composite recidivism rate of European sex offenders who were castrated is 2.4 percent, an approximation of the percentage of androgens remaining in their bodies.

One objection to medroxyprogesterone acetate as a permanent solution to the sex offender's deviation is that it must be administered by painful needle injections every week or two. It is asking too much of the frailness of human nature to keep up this sort of punishment indefinitely, and eventual backsliding is almost a certainty. The procedure is also painful to the pocketbook. Dr. Money and others have developed systematic courses of therapy, which reduce the requirement for the administration of the shots as the patient is influenced through psychotherapy to alter his deviant behavior. This plan may be adequate with some of the less serious offenders, but cannot be counted on with sufficient reliability in patients who have become fixated in the more serious sex offenses.

According to the Safer Society Program survey of 1990, 7 percent of the juvenile sex offender treatment providers in twenty states and 18 percent of the adult sex offender treatment providers in thirty-three states used Depo-Provera.

Another objection to the use of Depo-Provera is that it does not mitigate the violence of those sex offenders whose behavior reflects primarily aggressive rather than sexual arousal (Walker and Meyer, 1981; Walker, Meyer, Emory, and Rubin, 1984). Zumpe et al. (1991) have demonstrated that Depo-Provera actually increases male-male aggression threefold in monkeys while decreasing male-female aggression and sexual interaction. In spite of these observations, Depo-Provera has been used in violent epileptic patients.¹¹

Women use Depo-Provera and Provera for a number of purposes. Joseph Lederer wrote in the June 1983 *Psychology Today* magazine that one injection prevents ovulation and conception for at least three months. Some 11 million women in eighty countries have used it, but it was barred as a contraceptive in the United States. Its possible licensing was the nation's big contraceptive controversy in 1983. Women in the forefront of the controversy argued that it caused tumors, put on weight unnecessarily, and caused mood swings, loss of libido, body hirsutism, scalp hair loss, acne, rashes, somnolence, and nausea. Others warned that it sometimes caused fluid retention, which aggravated epilepsy, migraine, asthma, and diabetes, and sometimes caused a recur-

¹¹ D. Blumer, H. W. Williams, and V. H. Mark, "The Study and Treatment on a Neurological Ward of Abnormally Aggressive Patients with Focal Brain Disease," *Confinia Neurologica* 36 (1974): 164.

rence of psychic depression in those predisposed. Proponents pointed out that it had been used in some countries for twenty years or more with no recorded deaths and that the bad effects could be largely avoided by combining it with other hormones like estrogen. Both proponents and opponents agreed that Provera caused disturbed menstrual patterns. It is also useful for controlling menstrual bleeding and pre-menstrual syndrome nervous tension, anxiety, confusion, forgetfulness, bloating, palpitations, breast tenderness, and instability. Depo-Provera was finally granted FDA approval in late 1992, and the Upjohn Company began marketing the controversial drug January 4, 1993 as a contraceptive for women after three decades of testing and debate.¹²

Meyer, Walker, Emory, and Smith carried out the most extensive study of the MPA side effects on men and discovered that after taking 300 to 400 mg dosage per week for an average duration of 18.1 months, there was a five-time higher risk of diabetes, an average increase in weight of eleven pounds, an increase in gallbladder complaints (gallstone formation), and increase in blood pressure.¹³ When the treatment was stopped, the adverse side effects, with the exception of the diabetes, disappeared. Robinson and Valcour found, after injecting MPA (150-500 mg weekly) in sixty-one clergy for nine months, an increase in weight gain, irregular liver enzyme levels, abnormal blood sugar levels, and blood pressure elevations.¹⁴

Depo-Provera was taken off the market in 1969 for use with animals. Two out of ten cases would result in endometriosis and deterioration of the breeding capacity of the cat or dog on which it was used. Progesterone is the hormone that keeps the ovum from being aborted during this period. There are other commercial preparations of this hormone, such as Ovaban, that can be used with animals if it is desired to delay the heat of the female a few months of the hunting season or for show purposes.

2. Cyproterone Acetate (CPA)

CPA is a synthetic, progestational anti-androgenic compound administered orally, which was first synthesized by Weichert in 1961 in Germany. It is used predominantly in Europe, while Depo-Provera is used mostly in America. CPA (trade name Androcur, Schering Pharma) has never been licensed for general use in the United States. Results of dosages of CPA have been reported as follows:

50 mg/day

Sexual interest and activity lowered, attitude unchanged. One patient became depressed after three days.

100 mg/day

¹² "FDA Approval Fails to Cool Depo-Provera Controversy," Northwest Florida Daily News (January 18, 1993): C1.

¹³ W. J. Meyer, P. A. Walker, L. E. Emory, and E. R. Smith, "Physical, Metabolic, and Hormonal Effects on Men of Long-term Therapy with Medroxyprogesterone Acetate," *Fertility and Sterility* 43 (1985): 102-109.

¹⁴ T. Robinson and F. Valcour, "The Use of Depo-Provera in the Treatment of Child Molesters and Sexually Compulsive Males," *Sexual Addiction & Compulsivity* 2, no. 4 (1995): 288.

Hyper-sexuality inhibited within ten to fourteen days. Significant decrease in neuroticism. Mood more stable. Initial reaction to sexual pictures unchanged, but length of reaction shorter after four months.

50–150 mg/day

All three patients tested reported tranquilizing effect. Two patients had a suppression of sexual responsiveness; one patient's libido remained unsuppressed.

100 mg/day

Libido and potency fully gone in five sex offenders in eight to fourteen days.

100–200 mg/day

Suppression of sexual urges within a few days. One patient remained resistant for four months before the drug took effect.

300 mg/day

Reduced sexuality in nine male sex offenders.

CPA competitively inhibits the effects of androgen by taking its place at the receptors of the target organs, thus creating resistance to the effects of the various androgens. Furthermore, it is a strong progestogen, which inhibits the production of the gonadotropins, which would normally greatly increase with the target organ demands. The tranquilizing effects of CPA on the central nervous system have been clearly demonstrated with the electroencephalograph. Brainwave patterns of men who were administered oral doses of 750 mg of CPA showed a large increase in the slow beta activity, about the same sedative effect as a .1 mg/kg oral dosage of diazepam. These calming properties may well contribute to the general effect on sexuality.

After sixteen years of widespread use in Europe, the German Federal Institute for Drugs issued Schering, the manufacturer, a notice of intent to withdraw the license because of published reports that CPA caused DNA changes in rat and human hepatocytes.¹⁵

Several warnings on the use of CPA belatedly appeared in the medical journals in 1994 and 1995. The European Union Committee for Proprietary Medicinal Products recommended that any products containing 50 mg or more of CPA should carry a warning of liver damage similar to this: "Direct hepatic toxicity ... has been reported in patients treated with 200 to 300 mg. Most reported cases are in men with prostatic cancer. Toxicity is dose-related and develops, usually, several months after treatment has begun."¹⁶ A degree of gynecomastia may develop with this treatment.¹⁷ Other side

¹⁵ The Lancet 344 (August 27, 1994): 603.

¹⁶ The Lancet 345, no. 8944 (1995): 247.

¹⁷ L. Gooren and H. Delamarre-van de Waal, "The Feasibility of Endocrine Interventions in Juvenile Transsexuals," Journal of Psychology and Human Sexuality 8, no. 4 (1996): 73.

effects are osteoporosis, dry skin, fatigue, depression, weight gain, and varicose veins. In spite of these problems, experimentation has continued in the Netherlands with subdermal CPA implants designed to last up to six months. Results have been mixed.

3. Norhydroxyprogesterone Caproate

Norhydroxyprogesterone caproate is another progesterone-like substance that has an anti-gonadotropic effect similar to that described for Depo-Provera above. It was tested by Giese and Krause in Germany in 1968 and explained in the *Psychiatric Forum* 20: 189-200.

4. Benperidol

Benperidol is a tranquilizer that has been tested by Tennant, Bancroft, and Cass for control of deviant sexual behavior, as reported in the *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 3 (1974): 261–271. It was also used in the treatment of sex offenders as reported by Field in the *Journal of Medicine Science and Law* 13 (1973): 195–196. It is currently used in England.¹⁸

5. Danocrine

Danocrine, Winthrop Pharmaceuticals' brand name of danazol, is a synthetic androgen derived from ethisterone and was first introduced in 1979. It is supplied in capsule forms of 50 mg, 100 mg, and 200 mg for oral dosage. Doubling the dosage only increases the plasma levels 35 to 40 percent. Two daily doses of 200 to 400 mg have produced sex drive and fertility reductions of up to 85 percent. Danocrine reduces the output of both LH and FSH and inhibits the action of gonadal steroids on target organs by binding to receptors on those organs.¹⁹ The following adverse reactions have occurred in patients receiving Danocrine: acne, hirsutism, weight gain, testicular atrophy, jaundice, depression, headache, sleep disorders, dizziness, and hair loss.

6. Lupron

Lupron, Tap Pharmaceuticals' brand name of leuprolide acetate, is an injectable, synthetic, non-peptide analogue of naturally occurring gonadotropin-releasing hormones with greater potency than the natural hormone. The normal dosage is 7.5 mg per month in the Lupron depot combination, which is administered by intramuscular injection once a month or daily injections of 1 mg of Lupron for those individuals for whom the depot dosage is inappropriate. Lupron is inactive when taken by mouth. It results in an initial increase in circulating levels of LH and FSH, leading to a transient increase in the gonadal hormones in males for the first week or so, but within two to four weeks, castrate levels of these hormones are achieved. These levels are maintained as long as the shots are taken regularly, but will rise to normal levels when Lupron is discontinued. Adverse reactions are: six or seven hot flashes (sudden sweating) per day in 55 to 60 percent of cases, blood pressure changes/ischemia in about 20 percent, pain in 13 percent, edema in 12 percent, loss of strength and energy in 10 percent, and gynecomastia/breast tenderness in 7 percent. The cost of the injections was about \$530

¹⁸ Prentky, "Arousal Reduction in Sexual Offenders," 337.

¹⁹ Physicians' Desk Reference (Oradell, NJ: Medical Economics Co., 1990).

per month in 1991. Lupron was the most popular palliative treatment for advanced prostatic cancer in mid-1991. It is used when orchiectomy or estrogen administration are either not indicated or unacceptable to the patient.

According to a report by Dr. Elmajian et al. (*Hospital Medicine*, 33, no 8, 1997, pp. 48–52), the total cost for orchiectomy was around \$5,000, and for the leuprolide in chemical castration, \$13,000 a year at the University of Oklahoma Health Sciences Center. The report states that bilateral orchiectomy is the gold standard with which all other alternative medical therapies for prostate cancer are compared, and “unfortunately, anti-androgens are rarely effective when used as a monotherapy, because they do not completely block androgen action.”²⁰

7. Flutamide

Schering Corporation’s brand name of flutamide is Eulexin; flutamide is a non-steroid, orally active anti-androgen of the pro-panamide group furnished in capsules containing 125 mg of flutamide. It exerts its anti-androgenic action by inhibiting androgen uptake and binding it in target tissues. The recommended dosage is two capsules three times a day for a total daily dosage of 750 mg. It is frequently utilized concomitantly with Lupron or other drugs used for medical castration in the treatment of stage D2 cancer of the prostate in order to counteract the effects of the androgens that are still produced by the adrenal cortex. The adverse reactions noted above for Lupron are generally slightly increased. For example, the combination of Lupron and flutamide increases the number of patients with gynecomastia from 7 to 9 percent. flutamide is a relatively weak anti-androgen, and it is not anti-gonadotropic.

Moinpour et al., 1998, conducted a study of 739 advanced-stage prostate cancer patients to determine the difference in the quality of life (QOL) between those who had bilateral orchiectomy (surgical castration) plus either flutamide or placebo. They found a consistent pattern of better QOL outcomes at each follow-up for orchiectomized patients who received the placebo. The minimum age of the men was forty-five and the maximum age ninety-two, with the median age of seventy. Twenty-five percent of them were of the African race, and 75 percent were Caucasian. Patients receiving the placebo reported less frequent and less intense pain than those receiving flutamide.

Those who received the flutamide reported significantly increased problems with diarrhea, gas pain, and gynecomastia (affecting their body image). In other studies, pain, fatigue, urinary tract symptoms, patients who were on flutamide had reported psychosocial adjustment and sexual dysfunction problems. In this rigorously designed trial, adding flutamide to orchiectomy reduced the palliative effects of orchiectomy alone for patients with advanced prostate cancer, particularly with respect to emotional functioning.²¹

8. BOMT

²⁰ Donalo Elmajian, Arif Agha, and D. Culkin, “Metastatic Prostate Cancer: An Update,” *Hospital Medicine* 33, no. 8 (1997): 48–52.

²¹ C. M. Moinpour, M. J. Savage, A. Troxel, L. C. Locato, M. A. Eisenberger, R. W. Veith, B. Higgins, R. Skeel, M. Yee, B. A. Blumenstein, E. D. Crawford, and F. I. Meyskens, “Quality of Life

Alpha-bromo-17alpha-methyl-17beta-OH-4-oxa-5alpha-androstane-3-one is a synthetic precursor of the androgens, which acts to block the molecular receptors in the cells of the target organs from being acted upon by testosterone.

9. Estrogen

Estrogen is a generic term for estrus-producing steroid compounds—the female sex hormones. In humans, estrogen is formed in the ovaries, testicles, and adrenal cortex. Its dominant action is in the female reproductive organs, but there are also significant actions in the hypothalamus and the brain, as well as a variety of other visceral organs. Estradiol is the most potent of the naturally occurring estrogens. Most of the preparations used in chemotherapy for sex offenders are the injectable esters such as: estradiol benzoate, estradiol cypionate, e. dipropionate, e. enanthate, e. undecylate, and e. valerate. The estrogens generate their anti-androgenic responses either by inhibition of testicular function via blocking the secretion of LH or by direct suppression of the testosterone synthesis by the Leydig cells of the testis.²² Estrogen and progesterone compounds have been widely used to treat women with menopausal distress and osteoporosis. The findings of a Swedish study, announced August 10, 1989, confirmed that women who took these hormones for six years or more were four times as likely to contract breast cancer as those who did not. Another study, by Dr. Jerry Mann, chairman of the Academy of Family Physicians Drugs and Devices Committee, reported in 1989 that the cheaper generic drugs should not be used with critical doses in preference to the brand names in patients over seventy-five or with depression or any other type of psychosis. The generic equivalents are not as safe or as effective because of the inactive ingredients in many cases.

Estrogen was used in the treatment of sex offenders in the 1940s and 1950s, but became obsolete in the 1960s with the development and application of medroxyprogesterone acetate. The side effects of many of the estrogen compounds were very serious—heart infarction and thrombosis, vomiting, and gynecomastia, which was often the painful type.

10. Prolactin

Prolactin is a naturally occurring hormone in both the normal male and female. Serum prolactin levels are consistently higher in post-pubertal females than in men and pre-pubertal children. It was first purified from sheep pituitary glands and named prolactin in 1932. In 1971, it was first isolated in human pituitary fluids, and in the early 1980s, the gene for human prolactin was isolated, sequenced, and defined. Over eighty-five diverse effects have now been attributed to prolactin in various species. “Despite continuing extensive investigations on the biochemistry and physiology of prolactin, a complete understanding of this hormone is not yet available” (Degroot, *Endocrinology*, 1989, p. 384). In women, its primary function is to stimulate lactation after childbirth

in *Advanced Prostate Cancer: Results of a Randomized Therapeutic Trial*,” *Journal of the National Cancer Institute* 90, no. 20 (October 21, 1998): 1537–1544.

²² Anthony W. Norman and Gerald Litwack, *Hormones* (Academic Press, Inc., 1987), 508.

and help prevent conception while breastfeeding the child. Up to 1989, there have been conflicting reports from the scientific laboratories of prolactin's manner of acting in the male. Some studies have shown that its increase causes an augmentation of the blood serum levels of LH, and some studies have shown an inhibition of LH stimulation effects. "Hyper-prolactinemia is associated in the human male with a decrease in libido and potency and in some cases with hypogonadism ... Some of these effects on libido are not mediated through alternations in testicular functions but through a direct action on the brain ... The overall physiological role of prolactin in male reproduction is poorly understood at present" (Degroot, *Endocrinology*, 1989, p. 397). Amounts of natural prolactin vary widely with the time of day and with various emotional and physical states.

11. Inhibin

Inhibin, sometimes called folliculostatin, is a peptide hormone that is stimulated by FSH and acts as a self-regulator to this hormone in a negative feedback loop. It also has a short-acting depressing effect on LH secretion and functions as a growth regulator for gonadal tissue. Inhibin also modulates the blood level testosterone, allowing an increase in times of excitement and a decrease at certain other times. In the adult male, it is produced in the Sertoli cells of the testicles, and in the female, it is produced in the ovarian follicle cells.

12. Testolactone

Testolactone is an inhibitor of the enzyme aromatase that converts androgens to estrogens. Serum estradiol levels fall upon administration of the drug, and skeletal maturation is slowed.²³

13. Spironolactone

Spironolactone is an aldosterone antagonist that has potent anti-androgenic properties, which inhibit the binding of androgens to their receptors in the target organs. The clinical experience with these last two drugs is not so extensive as those mentioned earlier.²⁴ Spironolactone, at doses of 200 mg/day, also inhibits testosterone biosynthesis and reduces androstemedione production.

14. Triptorelin

Decapeptyl-CR, Ferring, Malmo, Sweden, is an agonist analogue of gonadotropin-releasing hormone, which inhibits the pituitary-gonadal function, thereby decreasing serum testosterone to castrate levels after three to six months of treatment. Triptorelin must be administered by muscular injections monthly like most of the other anti-androgens, but the dosage is lower than most of the others (3.75 mg versus 200 mg for CPA and MPA). Most of the men had transient pain at the sites of injection of triptorelin. These analogues acutely increase pituitary-gonadal function, thereby in-

²³ Louis Gooren and Henriette Delamarre-van de Waal, "The Feasibility of Endocrine Interventions in Juvenile Transsexuals," *Journal of Psychology and Human Sexuality* 8, no. 4 (1996): 73.

²⁴ Gooren and Delamarre-van de Waal, "Feasibility of Endocrine Interventions," 73.

creasing serum testosterone concentrations for four to six weeks.²⁵ Triptorelin combined with supportive psychotherapy was used on thirty repeat sex offenders (twenty-five pedophiles, seven exhibitionists) for an average of three years in Israel, and none of them recidivated while they were on the treatment. The men's mean serum testosterone concentration fell from 545 ± 196 ng per deciliter before therapy to 23 ± 14 ng per deciliter after forty-two months of triptorelin. The main side effects were erectile failure, hot flashes, and decrease in bone mineral density in some men.²⁶

15. Gonadotrophin Hormone Releasing Hormone Analogue (GnRh-a)

This analogue was tested in six patients with severe paraphilias, and according to the *Journal Psychoneuroendocrinology* (vol. 21, 1996, pp. 411–419), five of them ended their deviant behavior and markedly decreased their sexual fantasies and activities. One patient withdrew at the end of the first year and relapsed within eight weeks. One patient withdrew after three years of treatment and relapsed within ten weeks. Another patient was continued in treatment with the anti-androgen and did not relapse in seven years of follow-up. The duration of anti-androgen treatment necessary to ensure a complete disappearance of the deviant sexual behavior remains uncertain but is at least four years.

16. Goserelin Acetate (Zoladex)

This is a synthetic decapeptide analogue of LHRH, which acts to inhibit pituitary gonadotropin secretion and serum levels of testosterone after two to four weeks of use. It was rarely used in treatment for sex offenders in the late 1990s, but was more commonly used by prostate cancer patients.

C. Anaphrodisiacs

For millennia men have sought out these agents, which can reduce or eliminate men's troublesome sexual ardor. One of the most pervasive beliefs about sex is that it weakens a man physically, mentally, morally, and spiritually. From ancient times, in many different cultures, down to the present day, we still find that millions of people regulate many of their activities because of this belief. It was believed that the warrior and the athlete must be abstinent for maximum effectiveness in their training. Their energy must be conserved to build their strength for the battle or the big football game. The scholar must purge sexual fantasies from his mind in order to devote his brain to his studies. The religious novice and exegete must expunge all sexuality. Celibacy is essential for those who would attain ecclesiastical rank in the Hindu, Buddhist, and Catholic religions. Not only do we believe that sex weakens a man, but we observe that it causes control problems for the authorities in many parts of the population. It is

²⁵ John M. W. Bradford, "Treatment of Men with Paraphilia," *The New England Journal of Medicine* 338, no. 7 (1998): 465.

²⁶ A. Rosler and E. Witztum, "Treatment of Men with Paraphilia with a Long-Acting Analogue of Gonadotropin-Releasing Hormone," *The New England Journal of Medicine* 338 (1998): 416–422.

the most troublesome deprivation among the inmates of our prisons, jails, and mental hospitals. It makes the soldier restless in his barracks and fortress. It bothers the sailor and marine greatly in his ship at sea or in a foreign land. It causes trouble to the isolated farm or ranch worker, the forester, the miner, and the remote oilrig roustabout. It worries zealous parents and guardians of children. All have a similar problem to the legal authorities that are in charge of our sex offender treatment programs; all would like to reduce the problems caused by sexual arousal. So we have an array of substances that have a reputation for reducing libido, which are called the anaphrodisiacs.

1. Saltpeter (Potassium Nitrate)

Saltpeter is probably the most often mentioned drug for this purpose, but there is no real evidence that it inhibits sexual interest or performance. It can increase urine flow, and in large doses it can be fatal.²⁷ It was used to cure and store meat in the days before efficient refrigeration became available. It was also used medicinally to reduce fever, with the faulty reasoning that it would also reduce the “heat” of sexual interest. Some in the army in 1939 believed that saltpeter was added to the food to keep the ranks calmed down, and it well may have through the placebo effect.

2. Ketoconazole

Janssen Pharmaceuticals’ brand name of ketoconazole is Nizoral. Ketoconazole is an imidazole derivative and a potent inhibitor of gonadal and adrenal steroid synthesis in vivo and in vitro.²⁸ This substance inhibits the synthesis of cholesterol and the enzyme system’s actions. Doses from 200 to 1,000 mg per day reduce excess corticosteroid secretion in patients with Cushing’s syndrome with relatively few side effects. Testosterone levels are impaired with doses of 800 mg per day and abolished by 1,600 mg per day. Nizoral also decreases ACTH-induced corticosteroid serum levels. It is normally prescribed at the 200-mg-per-day dosage level for the systemic fungal infections such as candidiasis, oral thrush, and blastomycosis (Physicians’ Desk Reference).

3. Gossypol

Gossypol is a derivative of cottonseed oil, which has been widely used by men in pill form in China for birth control purposes. It checks sperm synthesis but does not disrupt hormone production. This preparation has not been authorized for use in the United States because of several questions about health hazards, reversibility, and possible genetic defects.

4. Nitrofurantoin

Norwich Eaton Pharmaceuticals’ brand names of nitrofurantoin are Furadantin and Macrodantin. They are specifically indicated for the treatment of urinary tract infections and infections caused by of *E. coli* and enterococci, but they have been reported to also decrease sexual activity. Severe adverse reactions include pulmonary, hepatitis, nausea, and anorexia, and deaths have been reported.

5. Diethylstilbestrol (DES)

²⁷ Milton Diamond, *Sexwatching* (New York: Gallery Books, 1984), 80.

²⁸ Leslie J. Degroot, *Endocrinology* (Philadelphia: W. B. Sanders, Co., 1989), 1667, 1565.

DES is a synthetic estrogen substance “capable of producing all the pharmacologic and therapeutic responses attributed to natural estrogens. DES may be administered orally (in the form of Enseals—registered trademark—enteric-release tablets by Lilly, and tablets)” (Physicians’ Desk Reference). It is normally used in dosages of 1 to 3 mg per day for the control of inoperable progressing cancer of the prostate. The production of testosterone was more completely suppressed with dosages of 5 mg per day, but the mortality rate from cardiovascular diseases, fluid retention, blood clots, and strokes was increased at this level. There is evidence that high testosterone levels act as promotional factors in the transformation of latent carcinoma to clinical carcinoma in the prostate. Both DES and flutamide have produced substantial regression of prostate cancer in patients who were not treated by any other means. DES has been used for hypopituitarism in women, but it has been linked with reports of subsequent vaginal and cervical adenocarcinomas in daughters of mothers who used DES therapy. Other undesirable side effects of DES are gynecomastia and stomach upsets, ranging from mild nausea to vomiting.

In the 1940s, physicians gave DES to pregnant women because it was believed to prevent miscarriage, but in 1953, a study revealed that it did not reduce the number of miscarriages and actually increased it. Doctors continued to prescribe DES until another study linked its use to several women’s development of cancer of the vagina and cervix in 1971. Subsequently, hundreds of cases of the cancers have been attributed to DES exposure. DES has no longer been prescribed since 1998.²⁹

6. Megestrol Acetate

Bristol Meyers Oncology Division “Megace” and DES was used experimentally to produce the medical castration of males by Geller in 1981. It is supplied in 20 mg and 40 mg tablets and prescribed at levels of 40 to 320 mg/day for endometrial cancer in women and at levels of about 150 mg/day for breast cancer. It is a progestational agent and functions in a manner analogous to medroxyprogesterone acetate as described above. M. Laurence Liebermann has listed over 200 generic or brand-name drugs in his book *The Sexual Pharmacy* that have an adverse impact on sexual performance. Some of these, such as vitamin D and tetracycline, are used daily by millions of people.

7. Methyldopa

Merck Sharp & Dohme’s trade name for methyldopa is Aldomet, and it is supplied in 125, 250, and 500 mg tablets for oral suspension and in 250 mg/5 ml concentrations of injectable sterile forms. It is an effective anti-hypertensive agent, normally used for the control of high blood pressure. It functions by reducing the tissue concentrations of the neurotransmitters, principally serotonin, dopamine, epinephrine, and norepinephrine. With the reduction of the neurotransmitters in the hypothalamus, there is a concurrent reduction of stimulus to the pituitary and adrenal glands, so there is a reduction of the production of LH and the androgenic hormones. Methyldopa has been observed to increase prolactin concentrations in blood serum. Its observed effects are “probably due

²⁹ J. Travis, “Modus Operandi of an Infamous Drug,” *Science News* 155 (February 20, 1999): 124.

to its metabolism to alpha-methylnorepeniphrine, which then lowers arterial pressure by stimulation of central inhibitory alpha-adrenergic receptors.”³⁰ Sedation may occur during initial dosages, with mild depression, nightmares, impotence, and reduction of libido following continued use. Many other neuroactive drugs have been added to the list of those which stimulate prolactin in the decade of the 1980s. Some of these are:

Domperidone, metoclopramide (Reglan, etc.), haloperidol (Haldol etc.), sulpride, and pimozide (Orap) act by blocking the intracellular dopamine receptors. Reserpine stimulates prolactin by inhibiting storage and reuptake of amines by granules. Carbidopa and benserazide inhibit L-amino acid decarboxylase and synthesis of biogenic amines. Tryptophan increases serotonin formation. Fenfluramine (Pondimin) inhibits serotonin reuptake. Cimetidine (Tagamet) and ranitidine (Zantac) blocks the histamine H2-receptors (p. 464) and increase prolactin.

D. Opiates

Opiates—opium, morphine, heroin, dilaudid, Demerol, etc.—have a long history of various types of ingestion for their pleasant, euphoric, and pain-deadening effects that are generally recognized. “Heroin delivers intense, pleasurable and satisfying sensations. When it is injected, the sensations are immediate and orgasmic, centering first in the pelvic-pubic region and radiating from there throughout the rest of the body. Continued use, however, gradually causes both the ability to feel pleasure and the capacity to function sexually to be diminished. Regular use causes the taking of the drug to replace sex.”³¹ “Opiates inhibit presynaptic release of dopamine and most hypothalamic neuropeptides, also the neurotransmitters in several other brain structures. Gonadotropic inhibition is observed after acute administration of morphine and chronic use of heroin.”³²

E. Barbiturates, Tranquilizers, and Alcohol

These are depressants whose long-term use reduces sexual functioning and interest. As Shakespeare said in *Macbeth* (act II, scene 2, lines 30–40), alcohol “provokes the desire, but it takes away the performance.” This is because alcohol has a “disinhibiting effect”—making any sexual inhibitions that a person may have lower so that the sexual desire could emerge from repression under its influence. Erection, orgasm, and pleasurable sensations are reduced, however. The effect of the tranquilizers and barbiturates

³⁰ Physicians’ Desk Reference (1996).

³¹ Hardin B. Jones and C. Helen, *Sensational Drugs* (New York: Cambridge University Press, 1977), 123–125.

³² Physicians’ Desk Reference (1996), 204, 209.

is to depress the mental processes. They dull the mind, impair coordination, and make the user sleepy, thus impairing sexual performance.³³

F. Anxiolytics

The anxiolytic agents are capable of reducing or eliminating anxiety. The exact mechanism of action of these pharmaceuticals is unknown at the time of this writing. Some of them have a sedative action such as the benzodiazepine anxiolytics, but others, such as BuSpar (buspirone hydrochloride), have a high affinity for serotonin receptors and a moderate affinity for the dopamine receptors and limbic function. The enhancement of the effects of serotonin metabolism, which this drug provides, allows the paraphiliac to control his deviant impulses as long as he takes his medicine on schedule. One case was reported by Pearson et al. (1992) in which the paraphiliac was able to control his behavior even after discontinuing the medication after two and a half years of the therapy.

Olanzapine (Zyprexa) and risperidone (Risperdal) are some of the other anti-anxiety medications that have been used with sex offenders. Zyprexa is a thienobenzodiazepine used to treat emotional and mood disorders. Risperdal is an anti-psychotic agent of the benzisoxazoleravative class acting as a selective monoaminergic agonist with high affinity for the serotonin, dopamine, adrenergic, and histaminergic receptors.

G. Serotonergic Drugs

Fedoroff reviewed the clinical literature on this class of medications, which affect the neurotransmitter serotonin, which is implicated in sexual activity. He found that fourteen out of seventeen papers reported that there was a decrease in “deviant” sexual interests and that eight out of twelve studies that reported on “normal” sexual interests showed an increase while on the serotonergic medications.³⁴ Thus, these drugs appear to offer the ideal solution to sex offending problems by decreasing the bad behavior and allowing normal sexual behavior to continue. The main drug involved was fluoxetine (in seven papers). Other drugs in this class, which were reported in the reviewed literature, were lithium (four papers), clomipramine (four papers), buspirone (three papers), and progesterone, imipramine, trazadone, desipramine, L-tryptophan, oxazepam, and fenpluramine with one paper each. I have already mentioned clomipramine and buspirone above.

In Fedoroff’s report, he commented on the anti-androgen medications all having serious side effects. “Among the most serious potential medical side-effects are tardive

³³ Jones and Helen, *Sensational Drugs*, 123–125.

³⁴ J. Paul Fedoroff, “Serotonergic Drug Treatment of Deviant Sexual Interests,” *Annals of Sex Research* 6, no. 2 (1993): 105–121.

dyskinesia (phenothiazine, APA, 1980); breast cancer and cardiovascular disease (estrogen and MPA, Graf and Eletreby, 1978; Symmers, 1968); and feminization (CPA, Laschet, 1973)."

In another review, Greenberg and Bradford³⁵ found that the selective serotonin reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs) fluoxetine (Prozac), fluvoxamine (Luvox), and sertraline (Zoloft) were all about equally effective in reducing the frequency and severity of paraphalic fantasies and urges. They pointed out that the SSRIs are particularly suitable for adolescent offenders who are reluctant to take the anti-androgen treatments, which reduce the nonparaphiliac as well as the paraphiliac sexual performance. "Unlike hormonal treatments, SSRIs can be safely prescribed for lengthy periods of time." They confirmed from their studies that the conventional sexual appetite appears to be preserved in most subjects taking the SSRIs.

1. Paxil (Paroxetine Hydrochloride)

Paxil is another SSRI frequently used with younger patients in the 20 mg/day dosage for the treatment of depression and suicidal ideation or suicide attempt. As with other serotonin reuptake inhibitors, an interaction between paroxetine and tryptophan may occur when they are co-administered. Concomitant use of Paxil with other SSRIs is not recommended. Another SSRI antidepressant, citalopram (Celexa), was added to the group in 1997. It is usually given in 20 mg/day pill form. It may take several weeks to show effects.

2. Luvox

Luvox had been prescribed for Eric Harris, eighteen, one of the two murderers who killed eleven and wounded twenty-three of their classmates on April 20, 1999, at Columbine High School in Littleton, Colorado. Although this antidepressant had been prescribed to keep his brain chemistry in balance, he was still capable of violent outbursts, slow-boil intimidation, and murderous rage. The marine corps had rejected Harris April 15 mainly because his Luvox prescription indicated a problem.

3. Nefazodonoe (Zenzone)

This is another antidepressant affecting the serotonin and norepinephrine minor neuronal uptake that has been used in treating sex offenders.

H. Anti-Convulsant Drugs

Nair and Miram³⁶ pointed out that although there is not much significant literature on the use of anti-convulsants for sexually deviant behavior, they have been shown to decrease aggression and impulsivity. They quote Blackwell (1997) and Kafka (1998)

³⁵ David M. Greenberg and John M. W. Bradford, "Treatment of the Paraphilic Disorders: A Review of the Role of Selective Serotonin Reuptake Inhibitors," *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 9, no. 4 (1997): 349-360.

³⁶ Mohan Nair, and Wesley Miram, "Medical Treatment of Sex Offenders," presentation at the ATSA (Association for the Treatment of Sex Abusers) Panel T-9.

that 14 to 25 percent of sex offenders show impulse control disorder, which may be amenable to the anti-convulsant's treatment. Some of the anti-convulsants that have been used for sex offenders are carbamazepine (Tegretol), gabapentin (Neurontin), lamotrigine (Lamictal), topiramate (Topamax), and valproic acid (Depakote).

I. Comments on Drugs

Lest the reader be overly impressed with the foregoing outline of the power and variety of psychoactive drugs, a word of warning is in order. These descriptions have been necessarily brief, and the side effects of most of these chemicals glossed over; indeed, some of the side effects are only hazily recognized, or even completely unknown. Laurie Dann, a slightly built, thirty-year-old woman, burst into an elementary school in Winnetka, Illinois, on May 20, 1988. She opened fire with two pistols on the children. One child was killed, and five were wounded. She then went to a home close by and wounded one of the occupants, then killed herself. Investigators into Dann's background found that she had been taking the experimental drug clomipramine (trade name Anafranil) for the relief of depression symptoms. It is also used to alleviate obsessive-compulsive disorders. The drug had been obtained from a Canadian pharmacy using a Chicago psychiatrist's prescription. It is known to produce confused states, disorientation, delusions, hallucinations, restlessness, anxiety, disturbance of accommodation, dry mouth, photosensitivity, edema of the face, African tongue, and increased libido. It is believed to increase the brain's level of the neurotransmitter serotonin. Depressed patients sometimes shift to mania or hypomania, and some of the same symptoms as lycanthropy are seen. As the local police chief said, "If it can happen here (in this quiet respectable Chicago suburb), it can happen anywhere. It should wake people up" to the dangers inherent in some of the psychoactive drugs.

Use of drugs, particularly the anti-androgens, as outlined above, to help sex offenders reform their evil ways is popularly known as "chemical castration" and "medical castration." The recidivism of sex offenders after treatment with chemical castration has been reported to vary between 0 and 15 percent, with the average being about 7.6 percent, but few long-term studies have been reported. One highly publicized case was that of Joseph Frank Smith, dubbed the "ski mask rapist," who was convicted of raping a woman in San Antonio, Texas, in 1983. Smith agreed to chemical castration and probation, and was featured on television's 60 Minutes program in 1984 as a success story for chemical castration. However, in 1998, Smith, forty-five, pleaded guilty to new sex crimes, and police investigated him in connection with up to seventy-five more.³⁷

Data on the finer control of glucocorticoid feedback in man is sparse. Administration of both the natural and synthetic steroids all invariably cause some adrenal gland atrophy (reference 214, p. 365). Taking some of the anti-androgens for as little as

³⁷ "Man Convicted of New Sex Crimes," Northwest Florida Daily News (November 28, 1998): A2.

three months can permanently damage these glands with resulting widely scattered effects on the mind and body, particularly with regard to the management of stress. Another significant side effect of these chemicals is significant bone loss, especially in the vertebrae and ribs. Rib fractures and compression deformities are common in patients with steroid-induced osteoporosis. Because of the known and unknown side effects of chemotherapy, it is obviously not a permanent solution to the sex offender's problem. No one can be expected to continue taking these medications for his entire life unless it happens to be a very short life expectancy. Professor Lee Ellis³⁸ has found an undesirable sexual inversion from heterosexual to homosexual behavior in animals and man resulting from many of these same chemicals.

Several of the mentioned drugs have later become implicated in dangerous side effects. A November 12, 1989, news release told how L-tryptophan was blamed for at least twenty-two of a reported thirty-one cases of the sometimes fatal disorder eosinophilia. This disease is characterized by high counts of a white blood cell called eosinophil. Symptoms may include sharp muscular pain, fatigue, fever, and rashes. "The drug with no ill effects has yet to be made," warn professionals.³⁹ George P. Larrick, former U.S. Commissioner of the Food and Drug Administration, warned that data on the damaging side effects of new drugs could only be learned by painful experience. "People die every year from drugs generally regarded as innocuous," he said. "The administration of potent drugs[by doctors] involves a calculated risk where the presumptive benefit is balanced against the possibility of toxic effects or individual idiosyncracies." Time magazine, December 12, 1993, quoted on page 70 Richard Seely, who ran a highly respected psychotherapy program for rapists in Minnesota, as saying that he considered Depo-Provera dangerous. He cited two men who became so depressed while taking it that they committed suicide. There is also the very real hazard of sexual and health problems caused by drug interactions when more than one drug is taken.

In addition to the drugs enumerated above, there is a long list of other drugs that have been implicated in loss of libido, impotence, and ejaculation problems.⁴⁰ Some of these are acetazolamide (Diamox, etc.), alprozolam (Xanax), amiloride (Midamor), amiodarone (Cordarone), amitriptyline (Elavil, etc.), amoxapine (Asendin), atenolol (Tenormin), baclofen (Lioresal), carbamazepine (Tegretol), chlorpromazine (Thorazine, etc.), chlorthalidone (Hygroton, etc.), clofibrate (Atromid-S), clonidine (Catapres, etc.), desipramine (Norpramin, etc.), diazepam (Valium, etc.), dichlorphenamide (Duranide, etc.), digoxin, disopyramide (Norpac, etc.), disulfiram (Antabuse, etc.), doxepin (Adapin, Sinequan), ethionamide (Trecator-SC), ethoxzolamide (Ethamide), guanabenz (Wytensin), guanadrel (Hylorrel), guanethidine (Iselin), guanfacine (Tenex), imipramine (Tofranil, etc.), indapamide (Lozol), interferon (Roferon-A), isocarboxazid (Marplan), lithium (Eskalith, etc.), maprotiline (Ludomil), mecamlamine (Inversine),

³⁸ Lee Ellis, "Neuronal Hormonal Functioning and Sexual Orientations: A Theory of Homosexuality-Heterosexuality," *Psychological Bulletin* 101, no. 2 (September 23, 1999): 247, 1987.

³⁹ Donald D. Schroeder, *The Plain Truth* (February 1990), 17.

⁴⁰ *The Medical Letter on Drugs and Therapeutics* 29 (July 17, 1987): 68-70.

mepenzolate bromide (Cantil), methantheline bromide (Banthine), methazolamide (Neptazane), metoprolol (Lopressor), metyrosine (Demser), mexiletine (Mexitil), norethandrolone, norethindrone (Norlutin, etc.), nortriptyline (Aventyl, Pamelor), phenytoin (Dilantin, etc.), pindolol (Visken), primidone (Mysoline, etc.), propantheline bromide (Pro-Banthine, etc.), propranolol (Inderal, etc.), protriptyline (Vivactil), spironolactone (Aldactone, etc.), thioridazine (Mellaril), timolol (Blocadren, Timolide, Timoptic), and verpamil (Calan, etc.). Several of these medications are taken for the control of hypertension, depression, psychoses, or cancer, and the patients are seldom informed of their effects on sexual dysfunction. A majority of the patients are elderly and attribute their loss of sexual function to the effects of aging when it is often due to their medications.

Some of the drugs that function to reduce impulsivity, irritability, aggression, and other indications of what is referred to in the DSM-IV as “antisocial personality disorder” are: quetiapine, fluoxetine, paroxetine, gabapentin, nefazodone, and trazodone. These drugs have been reported to be quite effective when taken in heavy dosages on a regular schedule, but can be quite expensive with bad side effects in some, but not all, cases.

Yet another approach to testosterone reduction has been developed with Gn-RH inhibiting factors and LHH agonists in recent years. Prentky⁴¹ mentions these in his review of anti-androgen interventions. Gonadotropin-releasing hormone (Gn-RH) inhibits the release of FSH and LH necessary for testosterone production, as does the luteinizing hormone-releasing hormone (LHRH) agonist. These treatments may someday prove logical alternatives to the other anti-androgens, especially in those cases that have become refractive to other treatments.

Serum testosterone may actually increase by as much as 50 percent above baseline when therapy with an LHRH agonist is first initiated. This “flare” effect can last for the first few days to weeks after these drugs are first administered in some individuals. Leuprolide acetate (Lupron), goserelin acetate (Zoladex), buserelin (Suprefact), flutamide (Eulexin), bicalutamide (Casodex), and nilutamide (Nilandron) are the main LHRH agonists that were in use up to 1999. Since testosterone is stimulated in this “flare” phenomenon, caution is advised for men who have prostate cancer because of worsening disease symptoms such as bone pain, dysuria, hematuria, and weakness.⁴²

Many professionals caution about the harmful side effects of psychoactive drugs. An organization called the “Citizens Commission on Human Rights” was formed in 1969 by the Church of Scientology in Los Angeles to “investigate and expose the harmful practices in the field of mental health and psychiatric abuse.” This commission opposes all psychiatric drugs and takes a role in lawsuits against the manufacturers. Recently, the highly addictive properties of the drug Ritalin (methylphenidate hydrochloride),

⁴¹ Prentky, “Arousal Reduction in Sexual Offenders,” 342.

⁴² Agency for Health Care Policy Research, “Relative Effectiveness and Cost-Effectiveness of Androgen Suppression in the Treatment of Advanced Prostate Cancer,” Evidence Report/Technology Assessment 4 (May 1999): 25.

which is taken by nearly one million hyperactive or attention-deficit disorder children, came to public attention because of the suicide of two of these children.⁴³ In another study published in the *New England Journal of Medicine* in January 1991, nearly one in twenty-five hospital patients suffer injuries at the hands of a doctor.⁴⁴

Another disturbing and dangerous factor concerning the use of psychoactive drugs is that they are often prescribed by incompletely trained persons. Often, doctors who are authorized to prescribe drugs are not completely trained in the particular side effects and results of combinations of medications. Psychiatrists with full medical-school training and an “MD” after their name once had the exclusive right to prescribe mind-altering medications, but for the past several years, psychologists have been chipping away at the psychiatrists’ domain.⁴⁵ An experiment to see if novice prescribers can do the job safely was begun in the fall of 1990 at the Walter Reed Army Medical Center in Washington, DC, by a pair of psychologists. Dentists and podiatrists have always prescribed some medications. And other non-doctors, including pharmacists, physicians’ assistants, and nurses have been granted limited privileges in thirty-four states.

J. Androgens

The androgenic hormones that have been isolated thus far are: testosterone, 11 ketotestosterone, 11 B-hydroxyandrostenedione, methyl testosterone, androsterone, androstenedione, androstane, dehydroepiandrosterone, and 5 alpha dihydrotestosterone. Some writers include the gonadotropins—luteinizing hormone (LH), follicle stimulating hormone (FSH), and inhibin—because they have important sexual functions in the male as well as the female. An androgen is any substance that conduces to masculinization, and the anabolic steroids are synthetic derivatives that have androgenic and anabolic effects. An alphabetical list of some of the common ones with their use and effects is included in Table 4. Anabolic effects are the constructive metabolism of building muscles and tissues, reducing fatigue, and increasing alertness. Deepening of the voice, coarsening of facial hair growth, increased aggressiveness, hostile behavior, and wide mood swings are some of the androgenic effects.

Along with the foregoing treatments for sex offenders in the sense that they are something that is done to them, we must recognize that there are substances and lifestyles that should be avoided to reduce the likelihood of their committing sex offenses. Knowledge of these factors and concomitant avoidance of predisposing elements could be said to prevent these crimes. Prevention is a far better modality than treatment. It is much cheaper, easier, more constructive, moral, and right ... a higher type of approach to the problems of crime and disease caused by deviant sexuality than

⁴³ Northwest Florida Daily News (December 12, 1990).

⁴⁴ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (February 7, 1991).

⁴⁵ Time (December 17, 1990).

is later treatment after a crime is committed. Sex offenders must avoid the anabolic steroids.

There is no doubt that women like manly men. It is a well-known fact that a majority of young women greatly prefer and admire muscular men. They actively seek out the marines, the Green Berets, the soldiers, and the sailors. They make themselves available to the athlete and the muscle builder. They cruise the beaches in skimpy bathing suits, displaying themselves to the slim-hipped, broad-shouldered, tanned, muscular men. That's the way it is, and that's the way it has been for a long time, and that's the way it's likely to be in the future. Men learn that they can get what they most want by being strong, macho males. That's the way you get a woman. It is no wonder that many men take the anabolic steroids as a relatively quick and easy way to build their musculature. These steroids not only build muscles, but they make men more aggressive, pushier, and more assertive; women tend to admire this forcefulness and comply with the male desires more readily. Testosterone and the other androgens accomplish it. Without these hormones, in fact, there is no heavy muscle mass, great strength, animal vigor, and aggression. These traits are all directly proportional to the amount of androgens in the bloodstream and brain of the man. Several other features that make men attractive to women are a direct function of these androgens: the beard, the chest hair, the size of the penis and testicles, and other visible signs of virility. Lest we oversimplify, it should be mentioned that other variables must be equal for a fair comparison. Some of these other variables are: genetic inheritance; state of health; absence of diseases, abnormalities, or injuries; types of food; amount of work; and physical exercise, lifestyle, environment, temperature, fresh air, etc. No wonder there is a brisk business in these steroids—legal and illegal.

Attractiveness to women is but one facet of the results of the high-circulating androgens in the bloodstream of the male. The most masculine men have long been noted by foreign criminologists to be the highest in crimes of violence. Let's face it: These hormones mold the men in body and mind, putting them into certain recognizable casts in ways that predispose them to the sex crimes. Testosterone is the principle hormone of rape, lust murder, and sadism. Has it not been noticed that the physiology of most rapists is similar? Most of them are macho, good-looking, aggressive, alert men. These mesomorph body types are higher in testosterone than the thin ectomorph or fat endomorph. The *Weekly World News*, August 8, 1989,⁴⁶⁴⁷ told of a forty-year-old woman who fell violently in love with the newspaper photograph of a convicted rapist. The infamous Ted Bundy attracted many women, one of whom married him in prison after he had been found guilty of lust murder. They are attractive to women yet dangerous. This tendency has been well documented.

⁴⁶ Rosemary Daniell, *Sleeping with Soldiers* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Wilson, 1984).

⁴⁷ Sheila Isenberg, *Women Who Love Men Who Kill* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991).

Our body contains a marvelous chemical factory called the endocrine system, which constantly churns away, taking our intake of food, water, and air and turning them into dreams and work, normally in a balanced symphony of accomplishment.

I can recall how the American officials and media complained that the Russians were being unfair in the 1970 and 1980 Olympics for using steroids to build themselves up. For years, it had been a source of great national pride that the Russian women were stronger and better athletes than others in world competition, and that they also had the strongest weightlifters in Russia. Gradually it came out they were taking some mysterious new chemicals that helped build their muscles and body weight. A great hue and cry went out about the unfairness of it all, and our doctors pontificated about the horrendous mental and physical side effects of all sorts, and they set about perfecting test procedures for the steroids.

In August 1983, at the Pan American Games in Caracas, Venezuela, eleven athletes were either stripped of medals they had won or were reprimanded for the unfair practice of consuming anabolic steroids. Another twelve American athletes suddenly dropped out of competition and returned to the United States before they could be tested (news item, August 25, 1983). Introduced for the first time during these games was a highly sensitive new test that was capable of detecting the presence of these steroids in the urine as much as a year or more after injection. The athletes, mostly weightlifters and hammer throwers, had used various commercially available compounds under trade names such as Durabolin, Winstrol, Anavar, and Pregnyl.

Ten of the 8,465 competitors in the 1988 Seoul Olympics were booted for testing for drugs, and the International Olympics Committee made a major effort to test athletes for steroids and other performance-enhancing drugs in the 2000 Olympics in Sydney, Australia.

In December 1986, two-time all-American football player Brian Bosworth of Oklahoma was declared ineligible to play in the Orange Bowl after testing positive for steroids. The 6' 2" 240-pounder had stopped taking the drug Nandrolone—a man-made derivative of the male hormone—the previous March. This was no great surprise to these who were close to the game of football. Some of them estimated that if all of the NFL linemen were to stop taking steroids, 75 percent of these bruisers would suddenly shed anywhere from fifty to 100 pounds of their weight.

The Miami Herald published a story on December 21, 1986, of a recent graduate of South Plantation High School turning himself into a walking advertisement for muscle-building steroids, beefing up from 128 to 206 pounds in a single year. He developed a \$300-a-week business dealing the drugs to other students who wanted to look more masculine. "Before you were a little stick, and now you're giant and you're looking at all the other little sticks around school," said one senior who used the drug to add twenty-five pounds. Another user said, "You feel like you're the baddest person around. It's like you could take on the world." Doctors warned that steroids can have serious side effects: heart disease, liver dysfunction, tumors, cancer of the prostate, testicular atrophy, gynecomastia, reproductive disorders, severe acne, premature baldness, and violent

mood swings that make kids feel arrogant and aggressive. Thiessen⁴⁸ reports that 2 million U.S. athletes are hyper-aggressive from taking steroids, as well as an estimated 6.6 percent of senior high school boys (some 500,000 across the United States). This promises to become a major problem, and taking illegal steroids, not prescribed by a doctor, has been made a federal crime punishable by fine or imprisonment.

Doctor George Zahorian III went on trial June 24, 1991, for ten counts of distributing steroids to wrestlers on “diverse occasions.” The World Wrestling Federation (WWF) said it was victimized by the reports that claimed some of its most famous wrestlers like Hulk Hogan, Rowdy Roddy Piper, Rick Martel, and Brian Blair had been identified as the takers of the steroids. Basil DeVito, senior vice president of the WWF, said, “We stand by our philosophy of wholesome family entertainment and the positive example we set for the youth of America.” DeVito also said that the federation adopted a policy in 1987 prohibiting the use of any controlled substances in connection with any of its professional activities. Vince McMahon, head of the WWF, admitted he had taken steroids himself when they were still legal.⁴⁹ Lyle Alzado is another famous, former football player who used steroids. In mid-1991, he was a shadow of his former self, a man fighting a rare form of brain cancer, believed to have been caused by taking the steroids. He died in May 1992. These hormones affect virtually every cell in the body but primarily impact the liver, kidneys, skin, testes, and neuroendocrine and cardiovascular systems. Other athletes using steroids have died of dehydration, overheating, and heart or liver failure.⁵⁰ Androgenic steroids have potentially serious adverse effects on the cardiovascular system, prostate, lipid metabolism, and insulin sensitivity.⁵¹

Anabolic steroids are among the most widely abused drugs in the United States. The U.S. News & World Report magazine of June 1, 1992, carried a feature article (“Pumped Up”) that reported that over half of the estimated 500,000 teenagers who used anabolic steroids started before age sixteen. Fifty-seven percent of them said they were influenced by the dozen or so muscle magazines that reach a readership of at least 7 million. According to the U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration, black market sales of steroids topped \$400 million. The article stated side effects as follows: “severe acne, early balding, yellowing of the skin and eyes, development of female-type breasts, and shrinking of the testicles. (In young boys, steroids can have the opposite effect of painfully enlarging the sex organs.) Teenagers also risk stunting their growth, since steroids can cause bone growth plates to seal. One 13-year-old who had taken steroids for two years stopped growing at 5 feet.” Among the most commonly used steroids are Dianabol (“D-Ball”), Anavar, and Winstrol-V taken in dosages that routinely (typically

⁴⁸ Del Thiessen, *Crime in Biological, Social & Moral Contexts* (Praeger, 1900), 154.

⁴⁹ “Lords of the Ring,” *U.S. News & World Report* (May 17, 1999): 58.

⁵⁰ *The Lancet* 346, no. 9019 (1996): 41.

⁵¹ S. Bhasin, T. Sgerge, M. Berman, et al., “The Effects of Supra-physiological Doses of Testosterone on Muscle Size and Strength in Normal Men,” *The New England Journal of Medicine* 335, no. 1 (July 4, 1996): 6.

four to six weeks apart) flood their bodies with 100 times the testosterone they produce naturally. This article went on to report that:

“Juicers” often enjoy a feeling of invincibility and euphoria. But along with the “pump” can come irritability and a sudden urge to fight. So common are these uncontrolled bursts of anger that they have a name in the steroid culture of “roids rage.” The aggression can grow to pathological proportions; in a study by Harvard researchers, one-eighth of steroid users suffered from “bodybuilder’s psychosis,” displaying such signs of mental illness as delusions and paranoia. So many steroid abusers are ending up behind bars for violent vandalism, assault, and even murder that defense attorneys in several states now call on steroid experts to testify about the drugs’ effects.

A newspaper report⁵² of the use of steroids as the possible cause of one of the most sensational murders of 1997 read as follows, “Five vials of injectable testosterone—a steroid used illegally by athletes—were found inside the gym bag of suspected serial killer Andrew Cunanan left behind at the first murder scene.” The Star Tribune, in a story for Sunday’s edition, said the testosterone was a possible trigger for the kind of explosive rage police said appeared to have prompted the killing of Jeff Trail, the first slaying in a nationwide rampage. Police say Cunanan, twenty-seven-year-old gigolo, wrapped up his killing spree by gunning down Gianni Versace July 15, on the steps of the designer’s oceanfront mansion in Miami Beach ... Police said the condition of Trail’s body and the amount of blood spattered in the Minneapolis apartment where he was found indicate an attack of explosive rage. Trail, an acquaintance of Cunanan’s, was bludgeoned to death with a hammer on April 27, 1997 ... Studies show that steroid use can lead to over-aggressiveness and violent behavior. Cunanan’s close friends said he had long boasted of selling illegal drugs ... including testosterone. He also mentioned “smuggling a production from Mexico;” the newspaper said that almost all illegal testosterone is smuggled from Mexico.

Psychology Today for September/October 1993, p. 10, reported on the first placebo-controlled study of steroids’ effect by Dr. David R. Rubinow of the National Institute of Mental Health. The steroids did “provoke anger, distractibility, violent feelings, insomnia, confusion, forgetfulness, and headaches in the men who took them.”

When steroids bind to receptors in the brain, including those areas of the hypothalamus, amygdala, and cerebral cortex, they trigger the production of proteins that can stimulate electrical activity in brain-cell membranes. This in turn may cause subtle changes in mood and behavior, though researchers are still not exactly sure how.

The Lancet⁵³ carried a report of still another danger from taking steroids over a protracted period of time. Two twenty-six-year-old bodybuilders had been taking steroids

⁵² “Report: Steroid Found May be Clue to Killing Rampage,” Northwest Florida Daily News (January 4, 1998): B6.

⁵³ “Anabolic Steroid Abuse and Renal-Cell Carcinoma,” The Lancet 346, no. 8985 (1995): 1306, 1307.

for several years and had come down with cancer. The report also mentioned the increase of prostatic cancers in steroid takers. DecaDurabolin (nandrolone decanoate), Sustanon (mixed testosterone esters), and Primobolan (methenolone) were some of the anabolic steroids they had taken. The cases suggested a direct cancer-inducing effect of anabolic steroid abuse on the kidney and adrenal glands.

Popular Science, July 1996, published an article, "The Dope of Doping" (p. 66), that told of the Smith Kline Beecham Clinical Laboratories' improved steroid testing using a gas chromatography/mass spectrometry methodology. Athletes allege this test to be the reason for a reduction in the use of steroids, but many coaches, sports scientists, and observers believe that many of them have switched to variants that this technology does not recognize.

Another study⁵⁴ of steroid-using athletes in Göteborg, Sweden, confirmed the earlier studies that anabolic-androgenic steroid use is associated with increased aggressiveness and sexuality. Men involved in this study had used over twenty-five brands of the steroids, but the most common ones were Sustanon and Primoteston for intramuscular injection, supplemented with 5 mg of methandienon tablets for oral use. The reported amount of these hormones taken ranged between 175 and 1300 mg/wk.

The American Health Magazine, April 1988, carried an article titled "Body Wreckers: Steroids Devour 'Good' Cholesterol," which told of an experiment by Dr. Susan Kleiner demonstrating that the steroids taken by bodybuilders lowered the HDL (the cholesterol which removes the deposits from artery walls) to dangerously low levels. The July 2, 1988, NBC evening news on television mentioned that two to three million Americans are using anabolic steroids to help build muscles—virtually everyone who is seriously involved in bodybuilding.

On December 15, 1988, the McNeil-Lehrer report of PBS television reported that the American Medical Association had found that one in fifteen American college-age men had taken steroids and that their main purpose was not athletic prowess as much as it was to improve their appearance. Two-thirds of these people have experienced bouts of rage, called "roids rage" by athletes. I have tried to buy some of these steroids at the drugstore so that I could experiment on my own, but the pharmacist informed me that a prescription was required. He further told me I probably could not get a prescription for them because of new laws restricting their usage.

The use of steroids among boys continued to decline in response to new laws restricting their availability until it finally bottomed out in 1996. Then a study by Penn State researchers, published in the December 1997 Archives of Pediatric Medicine, indicated as many as 175,000 high school girls had used steroids. Some had taken the illegal drugs to become leaner; others used them to build more muscle so they could qualify for the increasing number of scholarships or professional careers opening for female athletes. Three national surveys given to students in ten states showed that 2.4

⁵⁴ N. Galligani, A. Renck, and S. Hansen, "Personality Profile of Men Using Anabolic Androgen Steroids," *Hormones and Behavior* 30, no. 2 (1996): 170–175.

percent of girls in ninth to twelfth grades had used steroids at least once. Twice as many boys reported using steroids.⁵⁵

Steroid use again became a major news item in 1998, when Mark McGwire beat Roger Maris's single-season homerun record. Sportswriters and fans alike found themselves squirming over the fact that the gifted Cardinals' slugger was an unabashed consumer of androstenedione (also called andro for short), a steroid the body converts to testosterone. Andro is legal in Major League Baseball, professional basketball, and hockey, but banned in the National Football League, the Olympics, and the NCAA. And, since 1994, when the Dietary Supplement Health and Education Act made hundreds of previously restricted substances available over the counter, hormones such as androstenedione and other supplements such as amino acid creatine have become as easy to buy as candy bars. Androstenedione is transformed by an enzyme into testosterone, which promotes muscle growth by helping stockpile nitrogen, a key component of muscle fiber.⁵⁶

An article in the November 3, 2003 Newsweek magazine (p. 60) told about a surprising resurgence of the use of steroids by athletes. This time it was much more scientific with a new compound, tetrahydrogestrinone (THG), which is similar to other banned steroids but altered to make it undetectable with existing tests.

A careful study published in the Journal of the American Medical Association, June 2, 1999, and echoed in the magazines Time and U.S. News & World Report, June 14, 1999, modified the claim that andro increased testosterone by showing it was dose related, increasing blood testosterone levels appreciably only in women and old men who were low in this hormone. Androstenedione has only weak anabolic-androgenic activity in comparison with testosterone. A significant lowering of the serum HDL-C concentration (the "good" cholesterol, about 12 percent) was observed with andro administration in two groups of men. One group received 100 mg and another group received 300 mg per day for eight weeks; estrone serum levels increased about 65 percent in the group that received the 300 mg andro, increasing the risk of gynecomastia significantly. The data showed that andro might result in increased risk of heart attack, stroke, pancreatic cancer, and prostate cancer in men. Still another major article on steroids, published in the February 15, 1999, Newsweek, quoted the White House drug czar as saying 52 million American children are involved in steroid doping.

Still another article in the August 2001 Journal of Interpersonal Violence (pp. 808-832) reported a lifetime prevalence in the United States of the use of anabolic-androgenic steroids between 4 and 10 percent in males. This study also quoted several studies suggesting the use of these steroids is addictive.

Doctors Bagatell and Bremner summarized the scientific literature up to 1995 with nearly a hundred references in a comprehensive article on the effects of the andro-

⁵⁵ "More High School Girls Using Steroids," Pensacola News Journal (December 15, 1997): A4.

⁵⁶ "McGwire Hits the Pills," U.S. News & World Report (September 7, 1998): 53. Also in Time (September 7, 1998): 87; and U.S. News & World Report (October 5, 1998): 54.

gens in men.⁵⁷ Their data showed the androgens have a key role in stimulating and maintaining sexual function in men, and the administration of methyltestosterone increases hostility, violent feelings, and irritability in normal men. Androgens increase nitrogen retention, lean body mass, and body weight. Androgens increase the synthesis of clotting factors, hepatic triglyceride, lipase, sialic acid, alpha-antitrypsin, and haptoglobin production in the liver. The administration of androgens decreases plasma concentrations of high-density lipoprotein (HDL, the “good” cholesterol) and increases low-density lipoprotein (LDL, the “bad” cholesterol), thereby increasing the chances of heart attack and stroke. Androgens stimulate the production of erythropoietin in the kidneys, thereby increasing hemoglobin concentrations. Most of the androgens have to be injected by needle into the muscle because of the extensive metabolism in the normal digestive system, which destroys the androgenic effectiveness. Implantable pellets can last up to four months, and testosterone patches can be used but frequently cause skin problems at the site of application. Higher androgen levels increase the danger of prostate hypertrophy and cancer. Men taking androgens for improving physical performance usually take them in large doses up to 100 times that which is required for replacement therapy. Some of the undesired side effects depend on the type and dosage. Sleep apnea occasionally develops or worsens during androgen-replacement therapy. Erythrocytosis may also occur. Peliosis hepatis (hemorrhagic liver cysts) can occur during treatment with alkylated androgens. In some patients, the lesions progress to liver failure, and patients with Franconi’s anemia seem to be at increased risk for hepatic tumors.⁵⁸ In spite of the multitudes of studies showing the dangers of taking androgenic steroids, the market continues to flourish.

Added evidence that the androgens powerfully control the brain and mind comes from observations of withdrawal symptoms when the drugs are suddenly stopped. “The most commonly reported withdrawal symptoms of steroid addiction are depressive in nature, including depressed mood, fatigue, restlessness, anorexia, insomnia, and decreasing libido. In Pope and Katz’ survey of 41 anabolic steroid users, 12% developed major depression within three months of withdrawal. Suicides during withdrawal from steroids have also been reported.”⁵⁹

The effects of these exogenous (artificial) androgens are very intriguing because they help us understand how the endogenous (produced naturally within the body) androgens work. Testosterone is the most plentiful of the endogenous androgens, and it is nearly depleted from the body by castration. For further information on the available steroids, I have listed those that appear in the Physicians’ Desk Reference⁶⁰ in tabular form along with a brief description of their effects. Strangely enough, some of the manufacturers published disclaimers of improvements in athletic ability in spite

⁵⁷ Carrie J. Bagatell and William J. Bremner, “Androgens in Men—Uses and Abuses,” *The New England Journal of Medicine* 334, no. 11 (March 14, 1996): 704–714.

⁵⁸ *GQ* (April 2000): 256.

⁵⁹ *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* (August 1991): 16.

⁶⁰ *Physicians’ Desk Reference*, 42nd ed. (Oradell, NJ: Medical Economics Co., Inc., 1988).

of the obvious musculature gain and weight they cause. The compounds of methyl testosterone are 90 percent excreted in the urine and 6 percent excreted in the feces when taken orally, so they must be injected directly into the bloodstream for full effectiveness. The frequent injections needed to maintain a high blood concentration of the hormone in a castrated man are likely to be discontinued after a time as a result of this painful, bothersome, and expensive process. The degree of masculinization that these steroids cause is variable depending on the amount of the drug given, the age of the recipient, and other variables.

Everyone knows that girls are just nicer than boys. We really knew it from an early age. Girls smell better, look nicer, their skin is softer, their hair is finer, they act better, are not so much trouble, do not break things so often, and are not as rough as boys are. We didn't know until lately that the reason girls act better than boys is because of their hormones. They just don't have so much testosterone and the other androgens in their bodies. Professor Lee Ellis of Minot State College⁶¹ has shown many correlations between crime and delinquency and the androgens. Crime is highest in the males during the time the androgens are highest—in adolescence and early adulthood. Crime and the androgens are highest in the African race and lowest among Asians, with the Caucasian race about midway. Many components of criminality are associated with the androgen levels: assertive sexuality, impulsivity, intraspecific aggression, generally increased activity levels, risk taking, sensation seeking, greater tolerance for pain, loose social and sexual bonding, territoriality, and resistance to avoidance learning.^{62,63} Professor Ellis has also shown the importance of the endogenous and exogenous androgens in the formation of sexual inversions such as homosexuality. In an era of increasing and spreading crime and violence in America, President George Bush proclaimed a need for a kinder and gentler nation. Reduction of the hormones of violence, the androgens, can do it.

K. Diet

"We are what we eat." Adele Davis, the famous nutritionist, was fond of saying it in her lectures and books. "To prescribe regimen for the good of many patients ..." is part of the Hippocratic oath that prospective physicians took about 375 BC. Regimen referred to a systematic plan of diet, medication, sanitation, exercise, and rest to improve and maintain health or to control a particular ailment. We have known for a long, long time that what we eat and drink has a very important impact on

⁶¹ Lee Ellis, *Androgens and Criminality* Presentation at American Society of Criminology; *Neurohormonal Bases of Varying Tendencies to Learn Delinquent and Criminal Behavior*, 1987; *Neurohormonal Functioning and Sexual Orientation*, *Psychological Bulletin*, 101(2), 1987.

⁶² G. N. Conacher and D. G. Werkman, "Violent Crime Possibly Associated with Anabolic Steroid Use," *American Journal of Psychiatry* 146 (1989): 679.

⁶³ H. G. Pope, Jr. and D. L. Katz, "Homicide and Near-Homicide by Anabolic Steroid Users," *Journal Clinical Psychiatry* 51 (1990): 28–31.

the chemistry of our body and brain. We are still discovering very important details of exactly how this comes about and how our food intake interacts with our genetic heritage, our religious beliefs, our rearing, the sensory cues around us, the weather, how well we slept last night, and a host of other factors at any given moment in time. How we are all different and how individuals change over time is also important, but if we focus on certain aspects of our diet for a while, we can make a good case to show that the type and amount of food ingested can have an effect in the treatment of sex offenders and perhaps criminals in general. "If you eat fish, you will live longer; if you eat oysters, you will love longer." Oysters are very rich in cholesterol, an essential precursor in the biosynthetic pathway of androgen production. No doubt there is some element of truth to the old saying. Our bodies are chemical factories whether we like the idea or not, and the type and amounts of food that we eat are the raw material for our chemistry.

Diet has been found to have much to do with the mating behavior, aggression, and androgen levels in various creatures besides man. The pinion jay is dependent for its reproduction on the availability of green pinecones. Feeding on such pinecones in the fall induces testicular recrudescence.⁶⁴ In hamsters and at least three species of voles (a rat-like animal), the timing of the breeding season and steroid production is related to the availability of green food such as grass, alfalfa, and wheat. General reproductive behavior of feral housemice is seasonal, but the proximate cause of this behavior is the availability of adequate amounts of food. Several types of food have also been confirmed as inhibitors of reproduction in animals. The skunk cabbage and *Salsola tuberculata* bush have caused failure of labor due to damaged pituitary development in the fetus of some animals. In Australia, it has been found that sheep grazing on subterranean clover became sterile due to the estrogenic compounds present in the clover.⁶⁵ Similar effects of decreased steroid production in rats and chickens have been experimentally induced by selective malnutrition and starvation.

University of Baltimore professor, Diana Fishbein, demonstrated in her 1979 master's thesis and 1994 article⁶⁶ that refined carbohydrate consumption may be related to hypoglycemia in some cases and, in turn, is associated with perceptual and behavioral disorders. In another study, 90 percent of convicted murderers who had been diagnosed as paranoid schizophrenics were hypoglycemic or had vitamin deficiencies. Ninety-five percent of alcoholics tested in an experiment by Dr. R. Meyers also were hypoglycemic, and the correlation of alcoholism and crime is well established. Some of the ways that hypoglycemia contributes to criminality is through poor learning, confused states, increased aggressiveness, anxiety, impaired brain functioning, and emotional trauma. The trauma contributes to the hypoglycemia and the hypoglycemia contributes to the

⁶⁴ Ligon (1974).

⁶⁵ Bennetts et al. (1945).

⁶⁶ Diana H. Fishbein and Susan E. Pease, "Diet, Nutrition, and Aggression," in *The Psychobiology of Aggression*, eds. Marc Hillbrand and Nathaniel J. Pallone (New York: The Haworth Press, Inc., 1994), 117-144.

trauma in a snowballing effect. The brain normally consumes some 65 percent of the total production of the body's glucose supply, whereas the muscles only consume about 16 percent. Hypoglycemia is usually food induced, but can be caused by some drugs or inherited. Foods low in nutrients and high in carbohydrates, sucrose in particular, are the most threatening. "When glucose is not supplied, the brain loses its food and some of the neural systems cease to function. The first to break down are those related to inhibition, therefore hyper aggression occurs. Motiveless assaults and murders and sexual offenses have been associated with hypoglycemia." Some of the drugs that have been known to cause hypoglycemia are: propranolol, Norpace (disopyromide), sulfamethoxazole, trimethopim (Bactrim, Septia), and pentamidine (Lomidine, quinine, and ethanol). Children with heredity fructose intolerance have developed hypoglycemia. The unripe akee fruit has been implicated with causing hypoglycemia in malnourished individuals. The duration of the disease varies from as short a period as one week to one case known to last for twenty-three years.

The Quolla Indians of Southern Peru are among the most violently aggressive people in the world with a very high assault and murder rate. Hypoglycemia due to diet (heavy sugar and carbohydrates), alcohol intake, stress, coca consumption, hypoxia, and extremes of temperature is ubiquitous in this population.⁶⁷ The "African Irish" from the north of Ireland, who are also famous as fighters in feuds and revolts, are also heavily carbohydrate people with potatoes and alcohol prominent in their diet. Alcohol aggravates hypoglycemia, and hypoglycemia makes one more susceptible to alcohol. Even a small amount of alcohol intake by a susceptible person with low blood glucose produces symptoms of drunkenness. Hypoglycemia has been induced in healthy individuals by three gin-and-tonic cocktails. The close association of alcohol and crime is well known. (Fifty-four percent of jail inmates convicted of violent crimes in 1983 had been drinking before their offense.) The poorer classes are high in alcohol intake, hypoglycemia, and crime. Ten thousand Americans per year die from alcoholic overdose; another 50,000 die from accidents involving alcohol.

In San Francisco in 1978, Dan White, a former city supervisor, shot and killed the mayor and another supervisor. White's lawyer included as part of his defense during the trial that White had eaten a lot of junk food shortly before the murders. One of these foods was a highly sugared breakfast cereal called "Twinkies;" the court proceeding became known as the "Twinkies Defense." There were a lot of uncontrolled studies, testimonials, and conjectures being circulated at that time indicating that sugar caused deviant behavior.⁶⁸ In the Twinkies Defense, it was alleged that white purified sugar, which most of us use in this country for a sweetener, caused Supervisor White to have a bad case of hypoglycemia, which caused him to be out of his head at the time of his crime.

⁶⁷ Ralph L. Bolton, *Aggressivity in the Quolla Indians* (1973).

⁶⁸ Elizabeth M. Whelan and Frederick J. Stare, "Sweet Truths About Sugar" in *20 Questions for the Writer* by Jacqueline Berke (Orlando, FL: Harcourt Brace Jatanovich Inc., 1985).

Some of the presentations at the March 1979 Annual Meeting of the Academy of Criminal Justice Sciences in Cincinnati, Ohio, mentioned the linkages between hypoglycemia, diet, and criminality. Doctor Barron of the Barron Clinic for Children with Learning Disabilities told how all of the patients referred to him had hypoglycemia, and many of them were hyperactive as well as learning disabled. Most of them had binged on sugar, and many were allergic to milk. He has had over 400 cases with these problems and has cured 80 percent of them by administering a high-protein diet that cut out sugar. Doctor Hillsheimer, who had lived with deranged children twenty-four hours a day from 1969 to 1974, found that 99 percent of them had a subnormal glucose tolerance curve. Most of them had not been breastfed as babies and had mal-absorption stomach problems. He found that love, behavior therapy, and psychoanalysis were not enough to correct their derangement, and they were unable to learn from punishment.

In spite of a considerable array of scientific evidence that what we eat has a very great impact on destructive and criminal behavior, the information is very little used by our criminal justice and mental health systems. Very few jails, prisons, reformatories, or mental hospitals provide the diet most needed by their inmates. The cost and ease of availability of the food is usually what determines what they are fed rather than consideration of what kinds of food the different inmates need. Except for rare special studies, inmates are almost never tested for hypoglycemia to determine if they need special high-protein, low-sugar diets. Public and private individual therapists are even less likely to prescribe special diets for their clients. Even medical doctors often omit prescribing special diets to their patients unless obviously essential to correct an illness.

Some of our religions have institutionalized certain dietary taboos, which seem to have had beneficial effects for multitudes of believers over very long periods of time. Many individuals who have observed these diets are our most energetic and productive citizens. A devout Hindu, the Indian prime minister, Morarji Desai, related on the June 4, 1978, 60 Minutes TV program how he lived only on milk and fruits and drank his own urine as a curative measure when he was not feeling well. He had been married at age fifteen to an eleven-year-old girl and fathered four children. At age thirty-two, he had adopted the celibate lifestyle of his sect. He was a bright and energetic eighty-two-year-old at the time of the TV interview. He customarily awoke at 4 am, performed yoga, and meditated before receiving the first of his daily stream of visitors at 6 am.

For a number of reasons, we will always—at least for the foreseeable future—in our own culture hear more about the mentalistic causes of deviant behavior than about the biological. Our leadership is oriented that way. Centuries of conditioning have made us like that. We want to believe that way. Our political leaders want us to believe that way because they are afraid that belief in the innate physiological causes for criminal behavior will radically undermine the vast law-and-order edifices that they rely on for control of the populace. Somatic causes might give the individual freedom from responsibility for his improper behavior. Anarchy might become excusable if the individual learns that he is relatively helpless in controlling the secret biological urgings from within his own body.

We see that our law enforcement agencies at the working level are largely ineffectual in controlling the sex crimes because their academic guidance and philosophical background are somehow flawed. The criminal justice system looks toward the science of criminology for guidance and explanations of criminal behavior. Criminology, academically, is the slave of sociology. Sociology, in turn, is subject to psychology for its understandings; psychology looks to psychiatry, and psychiatry often turns to philosophy for the necessary explanations of human behavior. Psychiatry has often been wrong or incomplete in attributing merely learned behavior and resultant mental gyrations as the root causes. Freud, the father of psychiatry, was a medical doctor who knew that there was an underlying sexual appetite that drove most of our behavior. His failure to deal with aggression and anger was a major discrepancy in his theories.⁶⁹ He was unable to fathom the biology involved, in spite of the evidence available in the inheritance of traits and in the results of castration. Almost all of the psychoanalysts since Freud have persisted in downplaying the contributions of biology in favor of their theories of dynamic psychology and behaviorism. Freud may be excused because there wasn't much known about the hormones in his day, but I cannot understand why psychiatrists today still ignore this important cause of our sexual behavior and fail to provide the needed scientific guidance to our legal system.

Rodman Starke, the American Heart Association's senior vice president for scientific affairs, said on November 1, 1989, that in the decade of the 1990s "we may learn that what you eat is more important than just what it does to your cholesterol; we are beginning to see glimmers of evidence that some dietary substances may effect atherosclerosis risk independently of any impact on cholesterol." Phil Donahue's television show of November 7, 1989, showed that the types of food we eat have a big influence on our sexual drive and hence the resulting sex-motivated behavior. A psychiatrist who was present in the audience was critical of the ideas presented for "over-simplifying the physiology involved."

Still another example of the association of diet and behavior comes down to us in the case of the famous "Beefeaters." These were specially selected Yeomen of the Guard from the personal bodyguard of the king and queen of Great Britain. King Henry VII first organized them as such in 1485. The Yeomen Warders of the Tower of London were nicknamed the "Beefeaters" many years ago. This term had its origins in Tudor times (c. 1250–1490) when the most honored servants were permitted to eat their masters' beef in large quantities. Today, appointment to the Yeomen of the Guard is from the enlisted men of the regular army, navy, marines, and air corps, as a special honor and recognition of outstanding bravery.

On June 16, 1992, John Dulin of Destin, Florida, told the Prostate Cancer Support Group of the Panhandle of the diet regimen his doctor had prescribed for his prostate cancer. Sixty percent of the diet consisted of raw fruits and vegetables; also included in the diet were no meats, no fried foods, no alcohol, lots of carrot juice, 164 capsules

⁶⁹ Willard Gaylin, *The Rage Within* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1984), 81.

and pills per day, and two coffee enemas a day. Doctor Kelly of New York had analyzed Dulin's hair samples to determine what he needed to combat the cancer. Dr. Nicholas Gonzoles also spoke to the group verifying what Mr. Dulin had said.

L. Electroconvulsive Therapy

Electric convulsive therapy (ECT), electric shock therapy, or electroconvulsive therapy, is a treatment for mental disorders, primarily depression, in which convulsions and loss of consciousness are induced by application of a low-voltage, alternating current to the brain via scalp electrodes for a fraction of a second; a muscle relaxant, generally succinylcholine, is used to prevent injury during the seizure. The coma lasts about five minutes and is followed by an acute confused state lasting about an hour; some memory impairment may be present for several weeks after treatment ... In the original convulsive therapy, the convulsions were induced pharmacologically, at first by pentylenetetrazol (Metrazol) and later by flurothyl (Indoklon). It was formerly called shock therapy.⁷⁰

Historically, men have long known that we learn and remember by means of some kinds of impulses in the brain: "When the mind wills to recall something, nerve impulses are inclined toward different parts of the brain until they come upon that part where the traces are left of the thing which it wishes to remember. These traces are nothing else than the circumstances that the synapses of the brain through which the nerve impulses have already taken their course on presentation of the object have thereby acquired a greater facility than the rest to be opened again the same way by the nerve impulses which come to them; so that these nerve impulses coming upon the synapses enter therein more readily than into the others."⁷¹ John Walsh in 1774 and Galvani in 1791 studied the electrical nature of the functioning of these nerve impulses in electric eels, and by 1870, Fritsch and Hitzig had demonstrated specific muscle contractions as functions of stimulation of certain points in the brain by wire electrodes. Einthoven invented the electrocardiograph about 1903 for recording the electric current set up by the heart muscle, and Hans Berger invented the electroencephalograph in 1929 for recording the electrical activity of the brain. Bini and Cerletti first introduced electroconvulsive therapy in 1934 and 1938 for behavior change purposes. In 1949, Dr. George N. Thompson reported in the *Journal of Mental and Nervous Disorders* the results of six cases of treatment of sexual psychopaths with various levels and frequencies of electroshocks. Rapists, homosexual pedophiliacs, and homosexuals were treated—all without noticeable effect on recidivism or other benefits. During the 1950s,

⁷⁰ Dorland's Illustrated Medical Dictionary, 27th ed. (W. B. Saunders, 1988), 1708.

⁷¹ René Descartes, *The Treatise on the Passions* (1650).

ECT was hailed as one of the most important events in psychiatry “in the past two decades.” Since this time, it has bobbed in and out of favor sporadically.⁷²

Originally, two meshes of electrodes on a rubber sponge were attached to the scalp, one on each temple, and a 100-175-volt, 50-60-cycle alternating current or direct current pulse was applied, which caused a 100 to 1,600 milliampere current to flow through the brain for twenty-five to ninety seconds. The immediate result was a grand mal type of convulsion of the whole body, which often broke teeth and bones of the neck and spine. These fractures sometimes resulted even when the patient was tied down with physical restraints. As administered in psychiatric facilities in recent years, ECT is usually given in the following manner.⁷³ Atropine is given thirty minutes beforehand to dry up secretions; a rubber mouthpiece is inserted to ensure a good airway; oxygen and a short-acting anesthesia are given. This reduces the strength of the convulsion when the electricity is applied. The average course of the treatment is six to fifteen shocks over a period of two to five days. For sustained effects, ECT requires continuation treatment for up to six months. Modern ECT differs from traditional ECT in the use of efficient, brief pulse currents, energy dosing, ... augmenting medicines, and continuation ETC.⁷⁴ Most often, the costs in psychiatric facilities approach \$20,000, but some 15 to 20 percent are given on an outpatient basis and are less expensive.

Another technique uses only one electrode on the side of the head so that the current passing through the brain is reduced and diffused. Convulsions and other bad side effects of the treatment are much reduced with this method.

ECT has been found to be most effective for the depression psychoses with fewer attempted suicides (1 percent) than with the antidepressant medication therapy (7 percent), and shows more “marked improvements” (43 percent) than with medications (12 percent).⁷⁵ ECT is also used for schizophrenia and obsessive-compulsive neuroses with somewhat reduced effectiveness. It is estimated that a total of 100,000 to 250,000 people receive this type of treatment every year in the United States. There is, however, still considerable opposition to the use of this treatment by people who see it as comparable to “kicking a Swiss Watch.”⁷⁶ The Review of Psychiatry said ECT was the most controversial treatment used by the profession. Its many bad side effects include: acute confused state after ECT, memory loss and impairment, brain damage (neuronal death, hemorrhage, gliosis, edema, and atrophy), subsequent spontaneous seizures, bone fractures, cardiovascular complications, endocrinological disturbances, and death (0.03 percent reported).

⁷² Joe L. Martinez, Jr. and Raymond P. Kesner, *Learning and Memory: A Biological View* (Orlando, FL: Academic Press, Inc., 1986).

⁷³ George Winokur and Paula Clayton, *The Medical Basis of Psychiatry* (Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders Co., 1986), 77–78.

⁷⁴ Max Fink, “ECT and Managed Care,” *Journal Watch Psychiatry* 4, no. 9 (1998): 76.

⁷⁵ Winokur and Clayton, *Medical Basis of Psychiatry*, 77–78.

⁷⁶ Allen J. Francis and Robert E. Hales, *Review of Psychiatry* vol. 7, sec. IV (1988): 431, 505.

The Italian Ministry of Health updated its electroconvulsive therapy guidelines on February 15, 1999, by restricting its use to certain disorders, such as major depression, and only when drug treatments are contraindicated, ineffective, or precluded by their side effects. ECT is now banned as a means of achieving “rapid remission of symptoms” in psychiatric disease and expressly discouraged for schizophrenia. Also, the patient’s written informed consent is now mandatory.⁷⁷

Penny Daniels on the TV program *Inside Report*, April 27, 1990, told the story of Christopher Wilder, who had raped and killed an estimated fifteen girls and young women. Wilder had been under therapy, including electroshock, for years when he abducted Ricky, a nineteen-year-old college sophomore, from a Tallahassee mall, took her to a motel, tied her up, raped her, and tortured her by attaching an electric cord to her finger and toes and plugging it into the wall outlet. He told her that he believed she could die from these shocks and made her do what he wanted. He asked her how it felt when he applied the electricity. We will never know for certain whether this particular torture was imposed on this woman as a result of his own electroconvulsive therapy because Wilder was killed in a shootout with police before he could be interviewed, but it is very likely. Another television program on February 28, 2003, on CNN, called *World of Abnormal Psychology*, called ECT “one of the best” treatments for depression.

In December 1995, an article in *Science*⁷⁸ mentioned that a potential alternative to ECT had been developed. It was called transcranial magnetic stimulation (TMS) and involved holding a metal coil against a patient’s left temple and sending a series of short electromagnetic pulses into the brain. A team headed by psychiatrist Mark George at the Medical University of South Carolina in Charleston reported that daily doses of TMS for a week to six patients produced significant improvement in one and “remission” in another. Another study at the University of Valencia, Spain, involved seventeen badly depressed patients, and TMS alleviated the symptoms in eleven of them. Researchers surmise that TMS is changing the chemistry in deep brain structures, just as ECT apparently does, but that because magnetism, unlike electricity, easily passes through body tissues, it can do the job without the need to trigger a seizure. Some doctors, however, believe that it is the seizure due to the rapid firing of the neurons in the brain, rather than the electricity, that is therapeutic.

ECT has a long had a stigma attached to it in spite of its excellent success rate. One patient said, “They think I’m a freak, like Frankenstein, so I’ve learned to keep it a secret.”⁷⁹ The 1975 movie *One Flew Over the Cuckoo’s Nest* portrayed a patient subjected to ECT while being held down by six men in white coats while he convulsed violently. This probably made a lasting impression on the public. “More than 80 percent

⁷⁷ “Electroconvulsive Therapy is Restricted in Italy,” *The Lancet* 353 (March 20, 1999): 993.

⁷⁸ “Substitute for Shock Therapy,” *Science* 270 (December 1 1995): 1445.

⁷⁹ “Taking the Shock Out of Electroshock—It’s a Lifesaving Treatment, but Stigma Remains,” *Time* (January 24, 2000): 46.

of patients report permanent memory loss, which typically encompassed years of life and learning, and can be disabling.”⁸⁰

M. Psychosurgery

The term psychosurgery has been variously defined. Many of these definitions have been brought out in the famous Detroit psychosurgery case (*Kaimowitz v. Department of Health, Wayne County, Michigan Circuit Court*, July 10, 1973). Doctor (PhD and JD) Shuman has recorded some of these in his book⁸¹ as follows.

Psychosurgery can best be defined as a surgical removal or destruction of brain tissue to disconnect one part of the brain from another, with the intent of altering the behavior, even though there may be no direct evidence of structural disease or damage to the brain ... destruction of normal brain tissue for the control of emotions or behavior; or the destruction of abnormal brain tissue for the control of emotions or behavior, where the abnormal tissue has not been shown to be the cause of the emotions or behavior in question ... Therefore, temporal lobectomy, an established procedure for relief of clearly diagnosed epilepsy, is not involved, nor are accepted neurological surgical procedures, for example, operations for Parkinsonism or operations for the removal of tumors or the relief of stroke.

“Psychosurgery will be used to mean any procedure that destroys brain tissue for the primary purpose of modifying behavior.”

“Psychosurgery may be defined as brain surgery that has its primary purpose the alteration of thoughts, social behavior patterns, personality characteristics, emotional reactions, or some similar aspects of subjective experience in human beings.” This is the closest to an “official definition” that I could find since it was the one proposed by the director of the National Institute of Mental Health.

Psychosurgery means brain surgery on (1) normal brain tissue of an individual, who does not suffer from any physical disease, for the purpose of changing or controlling the behavior or emotions of any individual, or (2) diseased brain tissue of an individual, if the sole object of the performance of such surgery is to control, change, or affect any behavioral or emotional disturbance of such individual. Such a term does not include brain surgery designed to cure or ameliorate the effects of epilepsy and electric shock treatments.

⁸⁰ “Shocking Results,” *U.S. News & World Report* (February 28, 2000): 6.

⁸¹ Samuel I. Shuman, *Psychosurgery and the Medical Control of Violence: Autonomy and Deviance* (Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1977).

Lobotomy (bilateral prefrontal lobotomy) was the original type of psychosurgery, first reported by Moniz in 1936. This operation consisted of severing the brain tissue and nerves between the prefrontal lobes of the brain and the thalamus and hypothalamus. Several different techniques were used: The “standard” method involved cutting a hole in the side of the skull through which to insert the cutting tools; the “orbital undercutting” method involved drilling a hole in the frontal area of the skull to insert the tools; and the “transorbital” lobotomy involved the insertion of a needle-like tool through the eye cavity, thereby eliminating the need to drill through the skull. This latter technique, sometimes called the “ice pick” method, was later modified to use electrical cauterization of the brain tissue rather than lesioning.⁸² This operation had the desirable effect of dramatically reducing patient agitation and violence but had a number of bad side effects such as loss of initiative, bland emotional expression, epilepsy, insensitivity in social situations, and a 2 to 4 percent fatality rate. Moniz received the Nobel Prize in medicine for his discovery in 1949, and many others picked up the scalpel and followed his procedures. By 1951, over 18,000 American depressed, violent schizophrenics and alcoholics had been lobotomized. Walter Freeman is reported to have performed as many as twenty-five of the ice-pick lobotomies in one day with a total of some 3,500 to his credit. The operation was quite popular in the 1950s and 1960s with about 1,300 being performed in 1965.⁸³

The incidence of the operation declined after the Ken Kesey novel *One Flew Over the Cuckoo’s Nest* attacked the irresponsible use of lobotomies. They dropped from 400 operations a year in 1971 to less than 200 in 1980 as critics became more vociferous with claims that the operation was “partially killing” the patient. Probably well over 50,000 of these operations have been performed, more than 200 times the number of castrations in the same period of time in America—this, in spite of the fact that orchiectomy is a quicker, cheaper, less invasive means and is more effective. Lobotomies are still being done as a “last resort” measure after psychotherapy, chemotherapy, or electroconvulsive therapy have not brought the desired results. The procedure is most frequently referred to today as “leukotomy,” or modified leukotomy, particularly in Europe.

The word psychosurgery is seldom mentioned today in order to divorce the operation from the crude probing of the past and its bad reputation. More technical words like cingulotomy, limbic leucotomy, and stereotactic surgery are being used.⁸⁴ About 700 cingulotomies have been performed at Massachusetts General Hospital since the 1960s. Chief Surgeon G. Ross Cosgrove put the improvement rate as high as 60 to 70 percent for depression and somewhat lower for obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD). But psychiatrist Michael Jenike, who has analyzed numerous outcome studies, is highly skeptical of those numbers. He puts the improvement rate closer to 35 percent.

⁸² *Abnormal Psychology: Current Perspectives* (Communications Research Machines, Inc., 1972), 340–341.

⁸³ Anthony Smith, *The Mind* (New York: Viking Press, 1984), 310–311.

⁸⁴ “Psychosurgery Redux,” *U.S. News & World Report* (November 3, 1997): 63.

Another type of psychosurgery is the amygdalectomy (or amygdalotomy)—the destruction or partial destruction of the amygdala (Corpus Amygdalodeum, a small, almond-shaped complex of nuclei in the tip of the temporal lobe of the brain), a part of the limbic system. A correlation had been found between abnormal electroencephalographic (EEG) recordings in both surface and, more precisely, in-depth probe recordings of the amygdala and spontaneous, uncontrollable aggression. Partial destruction of the amygdala reportedly eliminated the episodic aggressive outbursts without serious damage to cognitive or personality functions.⁸⁵ Thousands of depth-probe EEGs had been made and at least 500 amygdalotomies had been performed with satisfactory results by 1972.⁸⁶ Still another type of surgery, although definitely not fitting under the description of “psychosurgery,” is cosmetic and plastic surgery, which has been resorted to in a few cases to alter sex-offending behavior.

N. Other Treatments

Several other types of treatment have been used over the years to modify the offending behavior of “sexual psychopaths,” as they are frequently classified by the legal system. Among them are:

1. Ultrasound

The Ultrasound treatment consists of a radio frequency energy from emittant devices placed close to the man’s scrotum for varying lengths of time. This treatment is said to be painless and result in a lowering of the sperm count for up to two years. It has had little or no effect on hormonal production or the concomitant libido, however.

2. X-ray

In this treatment, x-rays are employed in a similar manner to ultrasound and to other bodily organs. Harlahti (1951) is reported to have recommended “the use of x-ray treatment to climacterize chronically unstable women” as it “is just as effective for pacifying as lobotomy and far less radical and harmful.” X-rays carry a risk of genetic damage and cancer. The effects of gonadal irradiation is dependent on age and x-ray dose; doses over 800 rads will permanently sterilize the patient if over the age of forty.⁸⁷

3. Adrenalectomy

Adrenalectomy, or suprarenalectomy, is the excision of one or both adrenal glands. This operation is effective in eliminating the androgenic hormones and their effects from women, but it also eliminates the source of adrenaline and many other needed hormones for the management of stress. In men, it only reduces these hormones marginally because their main source is in the testes.

4. Social Work

⁸⁵ Smith, *The Mind*, 11.

⁸⁶ *Ibid.*, 20, 105.

⁸⁷ A. J. Friedman, “Hypogonadism,” in *Encyclopedia of Reproduction*, vol. 2 (Academic Press, 1988), 743.

Defined as the provision of social services (psychiatric, medical, educational, job placement, etc.), social work came to the forefront as a means of controlling deviance in the 1960s' "Great Society" legislation of President Lyndon Johnson and during the "Camelot" era of President John F. Kennedy. These great efforts were put forward to improve the condition of the underclasses: the poor, the ill, the underfed, the racially disadvantaged, and others who seemed to have the greatest propensity for doing crime. Thirty years later, crime seems to remain on an ever-increasing spiral in frequency and seriousness. We are obviously on the wrong track as far as solutions to crime are concerned. It's all very well to try to improve the condition of those who sink to the bottom of our social hierarchy, but it should not be done under the guise of preventing crime, particularly the sex crimes.

5. Acupuncture

Acupuncture, a 3,000-year-old Chinese practice, has recently been applied to the treatment of drug addicts. Proponents claim that by inserting up to five small needles in each ear, the neurotransmitter endorphin is stimulated, and patients are allowed to relax their craving for drugs. There is a strong correlation between taking illegal drugs and sex offenses.⁸⁸

6. Animal-Facilitated Sex Offender Treatment

The combination of sex offender treatment and animal-facilitated therapy may well provoke amused skepticism, but Coleman⁸⁹ claimed this treatment offered a "powerful strategy in ultimately preventing sexual abuse." She pointed out that animal-facilitated therapy is conducted within a framework of cognitive-behavioral and relapse prevention sex offender programs, and "it is not recommended as a substitute for proven techniques and approaches, but is offered as a means to increase their effectiveness." Dogs were the main animal used, but also cats and birds were also used in living in the treatment milieu. In some cases, horses, raccoons, possums, foxes, and snakes have been used. The clinician must always verify the client is not allergic to, phobic of, or dislike the animals utilized.

7. Other Measures

Other measures employed in sex offender treatment programs are: The offender is made to apologize in writing, on videotape, or in person to the victim; he is required to pay for any treatment required by the victims as a consequence of his actions; he is required sometimes to make restitution to the community in the form of a donation to the local child protection team or rape crisis center; and an informed network is created among friends, relatives, job associates, probation officers, and mental health professionals to better supervise the offender while he is on parole or probation.

On May 17, 1996, President Clinton signed "Megan's Law" into effect, which requires the states to notify communities when a convicted sex offender is released from prison

⁸⁸ Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (December 15, 1990).

⁸⁹ Emily Coleman, "Animal-Facilitated Sex Offender Treatment," in *The Sex Offender New Insights, Treatment, Innovations and Legal Developments*, vol. II, eds. Barbara Schwartz and Henry Cellini (Kingston, NJ: Civic Research Institute Inc., 1997), ch. 21.

and moves into a neighborhood. The law was named for seven-year-old Megan Kanka of New Jersey, who had been raped and murdered in 1994 by a recently released pedophile who had moved into the house across the street. The president said, "Today, America circles the wagons around our children. Today, America warns, if you dare to prey on our children, the law will follow you wherever you go, state to state, town to town." The bill had passed the U.S. House of Representatives earlier in May, 418 to zero, thus indicating once again that sex crimes are a matter of major concern to a large share of the population. By September 2000, eleven states provided easy access to the names, addresses, and pictures of registered sex offenders on the sex offender Web site. At least 320,000 were registered in fifty states.

After a few years of use, Megan's community notification law was found to have a number of adverse aspects. It suggested to society that sex offenders cannot be controlled and told the sex offenders that they could not control their behavior. The public announcement of a sex offender newly released from prison and moving into a specific location has had the results of making it difficult for the sex offender to find a job, shaming his family, and making it difficult for him to reintegrate into society. Public notification of the offenders' names and addresses also require considerable time and expense for the criminal justice systems' already overloaded probation and parole supervisors and agents. (See National Institute of Justice Research in Brief, December 2000, Sex Offender Community Notification: Assessing the impact in Wisconsin.)

A survey of 133 mental health professionals who work with sex offenders regarding the implications of public notification found that over 80 percent do not believe the number of children sexually abused each year will be affected. Seventy percent of those surveyed also believe that listing the names of sex offenders on the Web will create a false sense of security for parents, and over 60 percent believed that sex offenders who are listed on these sites will become targets for vigilantism.⁹⁰

⁹⁰ A. Malesky and J. Keim, "Mental Health Professionals' Perspectives on Sex Offender Registry Web Sites," *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 13, no. 1 (2001): 83.

XVII. Castration

The removal of the testicles is known medically as orchidectomy, gonadectomy, or orchiectomy. Emasculation, asexualization, unmanning, gelding, eunuchizing, or neutering are some of the many synonyms for the term castration. In ancient times, the penis was usually removed at the same time as the testes, but today, and as used in this writing, the word castration means merely the removal or disabling of the testicles. I have reserved this separate section to tell of this treatment because it has been found frequently to be the most effective of all treatments to date. It is also most effective in preventing recidivism when the sex offender uses it voluntarily and has made an informed decision on its use.

There is evidence that castration has been used down through the ages since before recorded history (around 4000 BC) for many different purposes such as punishment, piety, profit, pleasure, and prevention of disease. These are covered in some detail in my separate book *A Brief History of Castration* (1995). More details on the castration treatment are provided in my 2003 book *Castration: The Advantages and the Disadvantages*, so I will only mention some of the highlights and recently discovered information on it here.

I have studied the castration treatment for twenty-six years and believe that it is the oldest, cheapest, quickest, and most efficient way to stop some of our worst crimes and diseases. It cured my prostate cancer in 1993, so I know what I am saying here from personal experience. It could stop the spread of the AIDS plague if the HIV-infected promiscuous men were castrated. Similarly, the perpetrators of any of the sex offenses named above would stop their crimes if they were castrated. The data in my book shows that the average castration recidivism rate is a very low 2.4 percent. The cost of the surgery has been between \$600 and \$2,000, and it only takes about fifteen minutes. One doctor in Germany could do it in eight minutes flat. The advantages of this quickness is particularly dramatic in the case of the Roman Catholic priest, who can have the surgery without anyone else knowing about it and continue his important religious work. Recent studies have shown a large 37 to 57 percent of clergy have admitted inappropriate sexual contacts. Full disclosure of their sex offenses is needed for most other treatments, and these other treatments last for years. Castration avoids this painful and destructive confession and allows the preacher to continue his important work and stay out of prison.

Many other important advantages of castration are discussed in my books, such as the whopping increase in life expectancy of an average of 13.5 years, stopping lust, stopping aggression, improving honesty, averting acne, precluding baldness, reducing

stress, and curbing addictions. Like most treatments, it is not for everyone and is not likely to be effective for men having epilepsy or brain lesions. It may even be contraindicated for those having diabetes or Parkinson's disease. Castration is one of those treatments that can be given before the sex urge gets a man into trouble. Today, we know of many of the predisposing factors that cause the sex offenses, such as genetics, testosterone levels, milieu, family behavior, early childhood behavior, and temptations. We can take a simple saliva test of testosterone levels and, when they are excessive, use the castration treatment if all conditions are right for the treatment. It WILL PREVENT sex crimes BEFORE they happen.

At the present time, late 2003, it appears that testosterone is winning out over religion. At least 300 priests have died of AIDS, hundreds of millions of dollars have been paid to victims of priestly sexual abuse, and active homosexuals have been given the high position of a church bishop. It is time we return to the use of the most powerful of all the treatments for the sex crimes: CASTRATION. At least eight states have passed legislation for its use in recent years; several offenders have received the treatment, and many more have requested castration. More information has been made available on this treatment, and organizations of eunuchs have surfaced in the past few years, so perhaps we can be saved before we go down the tubes to oblivion that our powerful sex urge predisposes us to.

Table 4—Anabolic Steroids

<u>COMMON OR COMMERCIAL NAME</u>	<u>MEDICAL OR GENERIC NAME</u>	<u>USE</u>	<u>CONTRAINDICATIONS</u>
Anavar	Oxandrolone 2.5 mg tablets. A synthetic derivative of testosterone	To promote weight gain following trauma. Relief of bone pain in osteoporosis. To offset protein catabolism associated with prolonged administration of corticosteroids.	Infertility, prostate hypertrophy, edema, congestive heart failure, too frequent erections, phallic/clitoral enlargement, hirsutism
AndroGel	Testosterone supplement	Increased libido, muscle, topical ointment	Prostate cancer. High cost—\$180/month

Note: By the end of 1997, eight androgens had been named and sixty-one brand names had been assigned to the list of androgens (H. Winter Griffith. Complete Guide to Prescription and Nonprescription Drugs. New York: Putnam/Berkley Group, Inc., 1998, pp. 865-866).

Android	Methyltestosterone $C_{28}H_{38}O_2$, synthetic androgen	Natural testosterone replacement, hypogonadism (long-acting results)	Same as above. Also virilism, acne, hoarseness, menstrual irregularity, baldness, oligospermia, increased libido, anxiety, depression
Androl-50	Oxymetholone (hydroxymethylene)	Treat anemia; increase red blood cells	Carcinoma of prostate or breast during pregnancy due to fetus masculinization
Android F	Fluoxymesterone tablets, $C_{28}H_{38}FO_3$	Same, plus stimulate puberty	Same, plus nausea, bleeding problems. Increased frequency of erections
Adrenosterone	The common name given to the natural androgenic hormone secreted by the adrenal gland		
Androstane	$C_{19}H_{32}$. The precursor of the androgenic hormones (endogenous).		
Androsterone	$C_{21}H_{30}O_2$ is a natural steroid found in urine and is considered a product of testosterone metabolism. It is the male hormone that contributes to the deepening of the voice, growth of genital and axillary hair, and development of sweat glands.		
Androstenedione	Androstenedione ("andro")	Improve athletic sports	Prostate cancer, hypertrophy, or prostatitis
Deca-Durabolin	Methandrostenolone decanoate	Long-acting anabolic agent for management of the anemia of renal insufficiency—increase hemoglobin	

Delatestryl	Testosterone enanthate injection	Hypogonadism	Prostate and breast cancer
Dianabol	Methandrostenolone (Note: A 17-alpha-methyl testosterone derivative for oral use)		
Depo-Testosterone	Testosterone cypionate	For intramuscular injection	
Durabolin	Injectable nandrolone phenpropionate	To control metastatic breast cancer (short-acting results)	
Estratest	Esterfield estrogen and methyltestosterone	Androgen-estrogen therapy	Carcinogenesis, liver damage, edema, and virilism
Halotestin	Flouxymesterone tablets	Same as Android F above. May cause allergic reactions (including bronchial asthma)	
Maxibolin	Ethylestrenol (19 times more effective than methyltestosterone and 6.2 times more effective than norethandrolone)	Promotes body-tissue building. Stimulates appetite and well-being. Combats depression and weakness	
Mestoranum	Mesterolone (Note: A methyltestosterone derivative for oral use)		Same, plus hypercholesterolemia effects, testicular atrophy, and retention of water, potassium, salt, and phosphates
Metandren (also oreton and android)	Methyltestosterone USP	For eunuchism impotence, androgen deficiency. Same as Android above. With the 10 mg tablet, the serum concentration reaches 30 ng/ml—about twice normal—in 1 ½ hours	Priapism, excessive sexual stimulation
Miraforte		Designed to release testosterone	

Nandrolone Decanoate	This is the anabolic steroid taken in 1986 that resulted in All-American football star Brian Bosworth being banned from the Orange Bowl game; 50, 100, and 200 mg/ml dosages		
Pregnyl	Chorionic gonadotropin for injection, USP	Stimulates production of gonadal hormones by stimulating the interstitial cells	Precocious puberty, prostatic carcinoma, irritability symptoms
Premarin	Conjugated estrogen tablets	Postmenopausal women—reduces hot flashes and other symptoms	Cancer of uterus and breasts
Teslac	Testolactone tablets, USP	Palliative treatment of disseminated breast cancer in women, but not in men	Similar to Durabolin above, plus anorexia, alopecia, and parasthesia. Breast cancer in men
Testosterone	Propionate Inj., USP.	A testosterone ester for injection	
Testred	Methyltestosterone capsules, USP, 10 mg	Replacement therapy for absence of endogenous testosterone	Aggravates cancer of the breast or prostate
Virilon	Methyltestosterone Macro-beads		
Virilon IM	Testosterone Cypionate, injection sterile solution 200 mg/ml	For intramuscular use only (150-200 mg every 2 weeks)	
Winstrol	Stanozolol tablets, USP	Used for protein anabolic effect in aplastic anemia conditions	Same as above. Plus increased sensitivity to anti-coagulants, hypercalcemia, altered glucose tolerance, habituation, and may accelerate epiphyseal maturation. Testicular atrophy, oligospermia, impotence, gynecomastia, epididymitis, and bladder irritability.

VOLUME III – Commentary

I. A Survey of the Literature

We can find indications that man has always been a wanting creature from the earliest dawning of our prehistory. It has been his nature to seek fulfillment of his wants, and as soon as the more basic ones were satisfied, he would develop new wants and seek to fulfill them as well. He has had a never-ending series of wants. The sex drive, in endless varieties and shades thereof, has always been one of these primary “wants.” Ever since Adam was beguiled by Eve to eat of the tree of knowledge, man’s sex drive has gotten him into all sorts of trouble. The earliest chroniclers have written in various quaint and archaic ways in the different civilizations of what we now refer to as the “sex crimes” and their treatments. I have limited my selection here to reduce the bulkiness of these references. George Mair published *The Sex Book Digest* in 1982 when he first learned of the great bulk of books on sexual subjects. He had found over 4,000 such books listed in the Library of Congress, 800 of which had been written in the past ten years. I have selected the following as representative or significant writers and persons of notable contribution to my knowledge on the subject.

A. Hammurabi

Hammurabi (1817–1750 BC) was the king of Babylon who set down the most complete code of laws up to his time. There were earlier lawmakers, such as Uru-ia-gina of Lagash, who left inscriptions concerning the sex crimes from about 2370 BC; however, the code of Hammurabi has come to be looked upon as the precursor of later codes of law. Down through history, whoever had an impact on the formation of laws perforce had an impact on what was definable as a sex offender, how he was to be treated, and the public attitude toward his crime. I shall not long dwell on the morass of lawgivers, however. The ruling principle in Hammurabi’s day was that of *lex talionis*, or the law of retaliation. Hammurabi’s code was about midway in severity between the brutal corporal punishment excesses of the Assyrians and the most lenient of the Hittite laws. For adultery, both parties were liable to drowning, but if the wronged husband pardoned his wife, the king might do likewise for her paramour. Incest was punished by death or exile, depending on the nature of the individual incident. Seduction was punished by fines. Fathers had unlimited control over their children until marriage. Daughters could be given freely in marriage, as concubines, or as religious votaries.

B. Moses

Moses (sometime between 1652 and 1451 BC), the founder of the religious community of Israel, received the Ten Commandments from God in smoke and thunder on Mt. Sinai engraved on two stone tablets (Exodus 20:2–17 and Deuteronomy 5:6–21). He is also credited with writing the Pentateuch I (first five books of the Old Testament), embodying the Law of Moses and called the Torah. The study and interpretation of these laws is collected in the Talmud, which also contains much case law and governs much of our moral values down to the present day in the Judeo-Christian culture. Most of our laws concerning what is a sex crime down through the ages have their roots in the Bible.

C. Dionysus

Dionysus, also called Dionysos and Bacchus, was a legendary figure and deified as the Greek god of fruitfulness and wine. In his cults, dating back to before 1200 BC, his worshipers sought to become possessed by him through wild dancing and drinking wine. His followers included the spirits of fertility such as the satyrs and fauns who were depicted in Greek art as having the lower extremities of a goat or horse. They were often pictured with erect phalli pursuing nymphs.

D. Juvenal

Juvenal (Decimus Junius Juvenalis—AD 60 to some time after 128) was a Roman poet who wrote five books of satires containing attacks against the female sex and passive male homosexuals. He illustrated his satires with portraits of a variety of female horrors from Messalina onward. One contains a dialogue in which a catamite complains of the troubles of his profession. He apparently hated most everything he saw, particularly the vice, cruelty, and decadence of his age. Juvenal had a great influence on writers of the middle ages.

E. Suetonius Tranquillus, Gaius

Tranquillus (70–after AD 122), Roman biographer and historian, was best known for his *Lives of the Caesars* from Julius Caesar to Domitian, which provided a vivid picture of the decadent leaders of the day. His books were full of scandalous gossip on the habits of the emperors and provided the principle source of information on these matters down to the modern age when other sources were found that were able to refute some of his garish details. The infamous Marquis de Sade in the sixteenth century was reputed to be a reader of Suetonius and Juvenal.

F. Rishi Vatsyayana

Vatsyayana (date uncertain, AD 100 to 600) is regarded in India as the greatest authority on sex of the ancient times, when most of the peoples of the Western world were steeped in the ignorance of the Dark Ages and lived little better than animals. He gathered and wrote down the rules governing the art and science of sex in the Kama Sutra (sacred love book of the Hindus), which has had a very deep influence on the sexual behavior of millions of people, both inside and outside India. Prostitution, mores, and practices of the ancients are discussed in a quaint and delicate fashion in this book.

G. Don Juan

Juan is a fictional Spanish character derived from folklore and first given literary personality in the tragic drama *The Rake of Seville*, attributed to Tirso de Molina in AD 1630. The name is generally regarded as the symbol of libertarianism, and the character has been used dozens of times down through history in novels, plays, poems, and operas. Byron's *Don Juan*, Shaw's *Man and Superman*, Dumas' *Don Juan de Marana*, and Mozart's *Don Giovanni* are among the most famous.

H. S.A.D. Tissot

Tissot (mid-eighteenth century) was the French author of *Onania: a Treatise on the Diseases Produced by Onanism* (1760), in which he projected his personal problems and ignorance on the viciousness of "self abuse." He attributed consumption, epileptic seizures, gonorrhea, and insanity to the loss of semen through masturbation. He introduced the totally unscientific idea that the loss of one drop of seminal fluid causes more bodily damage than the loss of forty drops of blood. Traces of this grotesquely wrong notion are to be found up to this very day—even among some older medical personnel.

I. Giacomo Girolama Casanova

Casanova (1725–1798) was the prince of Italian adventurers. His notorious *Story of My Life* is his best-known work; it made his name, Casanova, a synonym for philanderers. In penning his lengthy memoirs in his declining years, he did not intend to write an erotic journal; his scandalous, bawdy boudoir exploits were recorded simply as incidents in his life, along with other non-erotic adventures, yet he is known as one of the greatest lovers of all time.

J. Cesare Bonesana

Marchese di Beccaria (1738–1794) was an Italian criminologist whose 1764 book *Dei delitti e delle pene* (On Crimes and Punishments) was the most influential volume on the reform of criminal justice ever produced. Beccaria was the founder of what is now known as the classical school of criminology, which accepts the Christian doctrine of free will: A man can exercise free will and choose between good and evil alternatives. His explanation of crime included the notion that a man was essentially hedonistic, desiring to maximize his pleasure and minimize his pain. A man committed a crime because the pleasure it produced was greater than the pain that might be subsequently expected. On the sex crimes, he noted they:

... derive their force and direction from two causes. The variable laws of men, and that very strong attraction that draws one sex toward the other. This attraction is similar in many respects to the force of gravity which moves the universe; for this, like the other, diminishes with distance; as one regulates all the movements of the bodies of the other, while its period lasts, regulates most of those of the spirit.

K. Compt Donatien Alphonse Francois de Sade

The Marquis de Sade (1740–1814), prolific French author mentioned above in the section on the most heinous crimes, was influenced by the ancient Roman writers Suetonius, Lucretios, and Petronius and, in turn, influenced succeeding generations of writers.

L. Leopold von Sacher-Masoch

Sacher-Masoch was an Austrian novelist whose writings were centered on the sexual pleasure derived from pain, suffering, or humiliation. He was a doctor of law at the age of twenty. His first love was an older woman who insulted and victimized him at every turn and left him for an adventurer. After several similar affairs, he married an extremely ugly woman who punished him often and finally deserted him.

M. Jeremy Bentham

Bentham (1748–1832), English philosopher and theoretical jurist, published his great work, *An Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation*, in 1789. In it he expanded Beccaria's principles of pleasure-and-pain behavior motivation, and deduced the principle that punishment ought to be admitted "so far as it promises to exclude some greater evil."

N. Cesare Lombroso

Lombroso (1836–1909) was an Italian criminologist who held that the criminal population exhibits a higher percentage of physical and mental anomalies than non-criminals, and that these are due partly to generation of or reversion to a primitive evolutionary stage. He contended that criminals could be identified by these “stigmata,” or physical characteristics. Dr. Charles Goring disproved the particular anthropological measurements of these stigmata in 1901, and Lombroso’s positivistic school of criminology fell into disrepute in English-speaking countries. It is still the basis of important criminological theories in many Latin countries, however. Lombroso also believed that criminals inherit a tendency to crime, and only through severe social intervention can they be restrained from criminal behavior.

O. Freiherr (Baron) Richard Von Krafft-Ebing

Von Krafft-Ebing (1840–1902) wrote a powerful and terrifying masterpiece called *Psychopathia Sexualis* in 1886, which was one of the main vehicles for spreading the doctrine that extra-legal sexuality, in addition to being a sin and punishable by the criminal courts, is a loathsome disease. Most of the book concerns sadism, masochism, fetishism, and homosexuality, and depicts case histories so weird and monstrous that he (and most of his subsequent translators) wrote the most degraded acts in Latin so that only doctors and other learned people could read them. It is most unfortunate that this book, filled as it is with erroneous theories and damaging nonsense (childhood masturbation can lead to lust murder ...), still finds a wide distribution. Freud used it as a source of data when he wrote his famous *Three Contributions to the Theory of Sex* in 1905, and as recently as 1965, two new editions were published in the United States. Some physicians still keep a copy on their bookshelves and occasionally refer to it (according to Brecher, *The Sex Researchers*, 1969).

P. Sigmund Freud

Freud (1856–1939), Viennese physician and scientist, is the father of psychoanalysis, psychiatry, and much of what we know as psychology. Although many of his theories and practices have been supplanted today, he is, without a doubt, one of the greatest the world has seen in influencing our understanding of why people behave as they do. He wrote twenty-five books, lectured, and wrote about ten letters a day during his most productive years. Freud believed that sex was the central factor of personality. His *Three Essays on Sexuality* are a “classic of his psychogenesis, the epigrammatic ground plan of personality development” (Rudolph Ekstein in Arthur Burton’s *Operational Theories of Personality*, 1974, p. 24).

Freud fathered the psychoanalytic view of crime in which the personality consists of the element Id, the realistic Ego, and the moralistic Superego. The Id seeks immediate gratification and is concerned with seeking to maximize pleasure and minimize pain with no concern for reality ... Id is the source of the libido. It is the biological and instinctual part of the human self. The Ego is formed as a result of the learning process. Because the biological demands of the Id are frequently in conflict with the rational, coherent executive force in the personality. Where the Id follows the pleasure principle, the Ego follows the reality principle and adjusts the individual's behavior to meet the demands of reality. The Superego is the part of the self that represents the values and ideals of society. It is the largely unconscious moral part of the self that is concerned with what is ideal rather than real. It acts to inhibit the sexual or aggressive impulses of the Id; it pressures the Ego to substitute moral goals for impulse gratification, and urges the Ego to choose a socially approved ideal for thought and behavior ... Although Freud abandoned his earlier biological training in neurology he continued to believe that the ultimate key to understanding human behavior would be found in biology. He viewed the instincts and resulting personality structure as biologically based. Freud's emphasis on sexuality offended the Victorian morality of his time, and recognition was not accorded him until shortly before his death. But the importance of his theories was not to be denied—they spread throughout the world and became the single greatest influence not only on psychological and psychiatric thinking, but on all of Western thought.¹

Some of our foremost criminologists feel that Freud's psychogenic school's explanation of criminal behavior should be located midway between the theories of the criminal biologists and the sociologists. As Walter Reckless stated in his *The Crime Problem* in 1973, "How far such explanations can be justifiably used, beyond the obvious cases of symptomatic behavior and faulty ego development, is not at all clear" (p. 688).

Q. Henry Havelock Ellis

Ellis (1895–1939) was a British physician, essayist, and editor whose major work was *Studies in the Psychology of Sex*, published in seven volumes between 1897 and 1928. This work was written in a very charming style and dealt so frankly with sexual behavior that it was legally available only to medical professionals up to 1935. Nevertheless, the books helped to break the conspiracy of religious and secular leadership that stifled scientific discussions of sexual problems of that period. Freud adopted several terms Ellis had coined and consulted him in correspondence. Ellis also quoted Freud in his *Studies*. His books were based on most of what had been written on the subject of sex since the ancient Greeks and on Ellis' clients' case reports. He was among the first of the yea-sayers, pointing out the statistical normality of much of the sexual behavior that was felt to be abnormal in Victorian England, such as masturbation, extramarital

¹ *Abnormal Psychology* (CRM Books, 1972), 15, 42, 43.

copulation, and the presence of sexual desire in women as well as men. His books have been quoted by many writers of the sex offenses, and I quote him as well: “The chief parts in the drama of sex, alike in its psychic as on its physical sides, are thus supposed to be played by two mysterious protagonists, the hormones, or internal secretions, of the testes and of the ovary. Even the part played by the brain is now often regarded as chemical.”²

R. Grigory Efimovitch Rasputin

Rasputin (1871–1916), although not an author of note, has had much written of his life, which sheds some light on an obscure aspect of sex and crime—the linkage of religiosity and sex, or religious eroticism as it is sometimes called. This was later exemplified in the Father Divine and Jim Jones escapades.

S. Theodore Hendrik van de Velde

Hendrik (1873–1937) was a Dutch gynecologist who wrote one of the most popular how-to sex manuals of all time. *Ideal Marriage* was first published in 1926 and had many limitations and shortcomings, but it sold nearly 2 million copies in some 100 printings and can still be found on the shelves in a few bookstores.

T. Dr. F. E. Daniel

Dr. Daniel, author of “Castration of Sexual Perverts” (*Texas Medical Journal*, Austin, Texas, for August 1893, reprinted in the April 10, 1912 edition), wrote:

The aim of jurisprudence should be, in addition to the repression of crime, a removal of the causes that lead to it, the reform, rather than the extermination of the vicious. So with the sexual sins; the offender should be rendered incapable of the repetition of the offense, and the propagation of his kind should be inhibited in the interest of civilization and the wellbeing of future generations. Hanging, electrocution, or burning at the stake does not fulfill these ends. In lieu thereof, and as a measure calculated to fulfill all the ends and aims of criminal jurisprudence, castration is proposed. (pp. 371–381)

² *Psychology of Sex* Volume III, *Analysis of the Sexual Impulse*, 1924, p. 16.

U. Dr. Magnus Hirschfield

Hirschfeld (1868–1947) was the German pioneer in psychosexual diseases and founder of the Institute of Sexual Science in Berlin. He was also president of the World League for Sexual Reform and the author of more than 200 titles. Among the better known books he wrote are: *Sexual Anomalies and Perversions: Physical and Psychological Development, Diagnosis and Treatment*, *Sexual Knowledge, Men and Women—The World Journey of a Sexologist*, *Natural Laws of Love*, and *Sexual Pathology: A Study of the Derangements of the Sexual Instinct*, which was his magnum opus.

V. Dr. Alfred C. Kinsey

Kinsey, founder of the Institute for Sex Research at Indiana University, opened the eyes of the modern world to the actual statistics on the prevalence of sex offenses. His books, published with the cooperation of others—*Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*, 1948; *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*, 1958; and *Sex Offenders: An Analysis of Types*, 1965—are landmarks on our road to knowledge of human sexuality. Kinsey's great work is still being carried forward by the institute he founded and several of his colleagues: Wardell Pomeroy, Paul Gebhard, John Gagnon, Clyde Martin, and Cornelia Christenson, to name but a few.

W. Dr. Benjamin Karpman

Karpman's monumental *The Sexual Offender and His Offenses: Etiology, Pathology, Psychodynamics and Treatment*, 1954, is quoted extensively throughout this book.

X. Johan Bremer

Bremer's *Asexualization: A Follow-up Study of 244 Cases*, 1959, is probably the best study in English available on the results of legal castration of sex offenders as a medical treatment.

Y. Dr. George K. Sturup

Sturup wrote *Treating the Untreatable – Chronic Criminals at Herstedvester*, 1968, and *Treatment of Sexual Offenders in Herstedvester, Denmark – the Rapists*, 1968.

Z. Menachem Amir

Amir's *Patterns in Forcible Rape* (1971) is a well-known textbook on this subject. He teaches at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem, Israel, and wrote for my *History of Castration* book and checked the Essenes information for me.

AA. Shere Hite

Hite wrote *The Hite Report: A National Study of Female Sexuality*, 1976, and *The Hite Report on Male Sexuality*, 1978.

BB. A. Nicholas Groth

Groth wrote *Men Who Rape: The Psychology of the Offender*, 1979 (New York: Plenum Press).

CC. William B. Masters and Virginia E. Johnson

Masters and Johnson wrote *Human Sexual Response*, 1966; *Human Sexual Inadequacy*, 1970; *Homosexuality* in 1979; and *On Sex and Human Loving*, 1986. Masters and Johnson carried the study of sexuality a step further by the study and measurement of sexual conduct in a laboratory setting.

DD. Reay Tannahill

Tannahill wrote *Sex in History*, 1980.

EE. Nigel Davies

Davies wrote *The Rampant God: Eros Throughout the World*, 1984.

FF. Michel Foucault

Foucault (1927–1984) wrote *The History of Sexuality* in three volumes, 1976: volume I: *Genealogy of Worlds*, 1985; volume II: *The Use of Pleasure*, 1986; and volume III: *The Care of Self*, 1986.

GG. Dr. John Money

Money wrote *Love and Love Sickness*, 1981; *Destroying Angel*, 1985; *Venuses Penuses*, 1986; *Gay, Straight, and In-Between*, 1988; and *Vandalized Lovemaps*, 1988; also over forty articles and reports.

As we were careful to point out on the very first page of this book, we have not only had a great dearth of accurate information concerning our sexual nature, but much of what we do “know” is wrong. Perhaps the Biblical legend of the Tree of Life (Genesis 3:22–24) is an allegorical reference to our sexual knowledge, and we were never intended to know exactly what makes us behave in this realm as we do. It is certain that much of the information contained in the foregoing references concerning the sexual aberrations so painstakingly studied, set down in these books, published, circulated, read, discussed, and acted upon has been patently wrong. It makes one wonder whether much of what is “known,” even up to the present moment by our foremost “experts,” may also be wrong.

II. The Law

Before we leave our general considerations of the sex offenses as crimes, we should take note of some further implications of the laws that have been established to define and control the sex crimes. We must depend on the law, in the final analysis, to codify, systematize, and regulate any destructive, dangerous, or offending behavior. The law can do us a commendable job of clarifying exactly what acts should be regulated when the harm is readily apparent, such as is the case with murder, robbery, theft, burglary, or assault; but when the harm is not so readily apparent, as with some of the sex offenses, the law and its enforcement becomes an almost hopeless task. Nonetheless, we have been trying mightily for millennia to sort these behaviors out, but it has been a very confusing and rapidly shifting panorama to behold. The foregoing Volume I on concubinage is an example of but one of the dozens of sex offenses that has had a wildly varying career at various times and places. Unfortunately, what we have today in the United States is a great disarray in the laws concerning sexual behavior. Much of this unfortunate confusion can be accounted for by ignorance and the sexual guilt with which we have been laden down through history.

Throughout history, humankind has sought to find a balance between its hormonal drive and the appropriate control of this drive. A balance between sexual expression and social control of the expression has yet to be achieved. All methods to date have been flawed.¹ In this country, we inherited a Puritan ethic, which deepened and became more restrictive from about AD 1,000 up to the 1920s. Around 1050, secular legislation became more under the ecclesiastical courts down to the time of the Reformation. Finally, the Catholic Church split again, and the Church of England formed with one individual at the head of both church and state. During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, there was no distinction between church and state in the administration of the laws in Puritan America. The laws that were set up served the goals set forth in the Bible. The interpretations of the church elders made sin a crime as well as a source of religious guilt. Abuses were met with severe penalties. The Jamestown Laws of 1607, for example, dictated the death penalty for sodomy, bestiality, and adultery. The sex laws still on the books in about half of the states even today are the legacy of our Puritan forefathers.

In America, much of our overly rigid legislation relating to sexual matters owes its beginning to zealots like Anthony Comstock (1844–1915), a professional moralist from New York, who secured the passage of the Obscenity Act, March 3, 1873, which made

¹ Harmatz and Novak, *Human Sexuality*, 27, 28.

it a crime to send birth control information or devices through the mail. Several states, sixteen at the time of this writing, have statutes making voluntary coition between unmarried adults a criminal act. Some of these same states also have licensed and state-supported services for unwed mothers, who undeniably have violated the statutes. It was not until 1965 that the last of the state laws prohibiting the use of birth control devices was struck down by the U.S. Supreme Court in *Griswold v. Connecticut*. In 1969, Denmark abolished all laws forbidding the sale of pornography.

I sometimes think of the more innocuous of the sex crimes as I do some of the other bodily functions. I see a parallel between a fairly general attitude that people have concerning our eating, drinking, sleeping, and elimination, and sexual activities. They often react with extreme disgust to other people in the performance of these natural and necessary functions. As kids, all of us were probably yelled at by our parents for slurping our soup or stuffing food in our mouths. Many of us have generated some degree of ire in our spouse for his or her sleeping habits: snoring, tossing, putting covers over our head, sleeping too much, and so forth. Many cities and towns have passed ordinances, rules, and laws against sleeping on park benches, at bus stations, in restaurants, etc. Railroad companies had the waiting-room seats in their stations designed with armrests positioned so a person could not stretch out and sleep on them. Flatulence, urination, spitting, and defecation are almost universally proscribed by laws, at least in public. Where it has been impractical to formulate and enforce written laws, customs and manners have been adopted, which often have the force of laws, to control these bodily functions. Some people feel that there should be laws regulating all behavior. They do as much as they can to impose sanctions by ostracizing the slurpers and snorers, and they hide the toilets as far away as possible. "There ought to be a law" is heard whenever people are disgusted with the fulfillment of bodily needs even though the alternative restraints might cause painful or fatal diverticula or diseases. Public sex or even the display of sexual organs is more amenable to being restricted by laws ... you can be arrested and fined or sent to jail for public nudity or private fornication in seventeen states and for adultery in twenty-seven states. What is it that makes people so judgmental of other people's acts when they perform the same acts themselves? Not all cultures and nationalities show such extremes of revulsion at such essential functions as we do in America. I well and fondly recall how welcome the public restrooms were in Paris, France.

The laws regulating morality and sexual offenses have been very ambivalent, changing, tenuous, and unevenly enforced. Individual needs in this regard are so widely different that it's hard to codify and regulate them. The law tends to either be couched in vague language so it can be made to apply widely, or, conversely, futile attempts are made to describe such variation in such detail that it becomes too bulky. In either case, it becomes a problem in enforcement for the police. The U.S. Supreme Court wisely refused to establish a definition of pornography for the whole nation, but left it up to the individual states and municipalities. There is considerable regionality to viewpoints on sexual matters. San Francisco and New York, for example, are well known for

their permissiveness concerning homosexual activities. Prostitution is legal in Nevada, illegal in most of the country, and still flourishes with varying degrees of openness in other parts. The police in some jurisdictions boast very large and diligent “vice squads,” whereas other communities have open bordellos known to most everyone.

A brief history of prostitution will serve to exemplify the rapidly changing nature of laws concerning sexual activities. The “World’s Oldest Profession” is mentioned in the most ancient records, extending back about 5,000 years. It was often performed in the temples of various gods under the customs and regulations that were applicable in the various regions of the Middle East. Hammurabi (c. 1750 BC) was probably the first to formulate written laws concerning prostitution throughout a country. The Egyptians reversed the practice of intercourse in temples. The Greeks legislated it back into the temples for a time. Then, under the regulations of Solon in Athens—for the purpose of preserving public order and decency—the prostitutes were moved out into special houses, which were state monopolies. Prostitution is mentioned very frequently (at least fifteen times) throughout the Bible from the very earliest times. It was not prohibited by Mosaic law, but was restricted to foreign women so that the purity of the Jewish religion and race could be maintained. Under the Roman legal system, the regulation of prostitution was especially thorough: Prostitutes were required to register with the police, had to wear distinctive dresses and dye their hair yellow, and were subject to various liabilities and taxes. The taxes were abolished in the fifth century, and Justinian removed prostitutes’ civil liabilities in the sixth century. The twelfth and thirteenth centuries saw the introduction of regular “red light” districts in most of the major cities of the world, with three classes of houses of prostitution regulated by a Board of Revenue in China. In England, the “stews,” as they were called, were regulated by the 1,161 acts of Parliament. These bordellos were closed in 1506, but reopened shortly after, and then closed again in 1546. An English statute making a second conviction for fornication punishable by death was enacted about 1650, but the Restoration repealed this. The Disorderly Houses Act of 1751 aimed to close all the English brothels. The Contagious Diseases Prevention Acts of 1864, 1866, and 1869 introduced a measure of state inspection and regulation of prostitutes. These acts were suspended in 1883 and repealed in 1886, largely due to a crusading woman, Josephine Elizabeth Butler. She mainly objected to the governmental acceptance of prostitution, which these regulatory acts implied. In the United States, the federal Mann Act (White Slave Traffic Act of 1910) prohibits transporting women across state lines for immoral purposes. A major drive to “clean up” Chicago in 1929 had the effect of driving prostitution underground, where it became controlled by racketeers who further exploited both the prostitute and her customer. In Argentina, the government found that their closing of the brothels in 1937 led to an increase in venereal disease, sexual perversions, and crime, so they authorized their reopening in 1954. In France, state regulation of their “Maisons de Tolerance” was ended in 1946, but further laws were enacted in 1948 that returned the prostitutes to the requirement for physical examinations.

The laws concerning homosexuality are another example of the rapidly changing role of the law in regulating sexuality. The French had gone on burning homosexuals long after they had given up burning witches—until as late as 1725. The Napoleonic Code eased the laws gradually so that by the 1860s homosexuality, if not commonplace, was at least tolerated (Reay Tannahill, 1980). The early English law on homosexuality was somewhat ambivalent up to 1828 when an act was passed restating the principle that “every person convicted of the abominable crime of buggery, committed either with mankind or with an animal, shall suffer death as a felon.” The death penalty was reduced to ten years to life in prison in 1861. Parliament completed the task of reducing 200 capital crimes in England at that time down to four. In 1967, the English decriminalized homosexuality entirely between consenting adults in private (except for the police and military personnel). In America today, homosexual acts by consenting individuals in private is a crime in most states, but there are millions of such acts performed for every one conviction. Ninety-five percent of adult American men have experienced orgasm in some illegal manner (Ellis, 1961; Beigel, 1965; and Kinsey, 1953). Police sometimes have to resort to extremes of illegal entrapment in order to enforce some of our laws on the control of sexual behavior.

The Bible is the basis of much of our law. The Ten Commandments, engraved in stone and handed to Moses in thunder and lightning on Mount Sinai as told in Exodus, expanded in Leviticus, and praised in the Psalms (particularly the 176 verses of Psalm 119), are considered by many to be inerrant. These laws have been rewritten, expanded, and explained thousands of times down through history. The Jewish rabbis, for example, listed some 1,521 ways in which one of the Ten Commandments could be broken (Commandment number four: “Remember the Sabbath to keep it holy”). Religious and secular laws have been closely intertwined for millennia defining and enforcing what is right and what is wrong concerning sexual matters. Human prejudices and preconceptions of the early fathers and their successors have sometimes become the law and the yardstick for measuring our morality. Much that has thus been passed down to us has been found to be scientifically inaccurate or no longer applicable. Adherence to some of the old myths has produced a great deal of guilt and misery, but they still remain an important factor in social control. The sexual revolution of the 1970s and 1980s has brought many changes, but we are likely to see continued major struggles on these matters for many more generations before consensus on moral values is achieved and the laws revised accordingly. We can begin to see some possibility today, with the rapid communication and computer technologies, that whole populations can be quickly polled and a consensus determined, but it is doubtful that our archaic law-making process will be able to keep pace.

The laws and morals are not identical. The problem of enforcing legislation that is closely related to people’s moral codes is fraught with difficulties: As soon as the law enters the sphere of morals, both its interpretation and its execution may be called into question as unjust or immoral by some members of the community. Adhering to rigid sex standards is not widely observed by the human male; his great variability compli-

cates any program for regulating sexuality. With sex, there would seem to be no final solution since the problems are variable for each individual and for each generation.

People in the United States show a remarkable variation of emotions concerning the various sex acts; these have been dutifully reflected in the sex offense laws. Shock, revulsion, shame, guilt, and titillation are all apparent to a greater or lesser degree. In the older states, where the laws were first enacted in the old Puritan days, it is easy to understand why such dire punishments were imposed—religious zeal and moral ardor being what it was then. It is not easy to understand why such laws should remain so long on the statute books. In many cases, they still retain their outmoded old language, which has lost much of its meaning to today's society. It seems that no one is willing to face the public stigma that might result from an enlightened move to change or eliminate this old excess baggage.

The sex offender laws and the diligence with which these laws have been prosecuted have undergone great changes in the past decade because of the women's movement and the influx of a tough new breed of female politicians, prosecutors, police, investigators, and judges. They empathize with the victims on an emotional level and carry a white-hot, avenging anger into their work against the offenders—the men simply do not care as much as these women. In Seattle, the Special Assault Unit, which deals with crimes against women and children, is known as "The Women's Vengeance Brigade" because of their zealous ardor (Parade, February 26, 1989). Across the country, women now outnumber men in many phases of the prosecution of child molesters and rapists. Their zeal has resulted in filling our prisons and treatment programs with a greater number of rapists and pedophiles, with longer sentences than ever before.

The law in all its aspects, but particularly in enforcement and corrections, fails to recognize how the human body works. To every young man there comes a first time when he is impelled to do something sexual. If he is a normal, healthy male, he is forced by unconscious but powerful whisperings of his biological drive into some sexual activity. His environment (immediate surroundings, milieu, friends, diet, acquaintances, family, ethnic group, belief structure, religion, education, season, weather, etc.) at the moment determines the opportunity for the experience and the exact parameters of the particular sexual activity that will result. This first experience, whatever it may be, is the initial learning experience, which powerfully imprints itself on all subsequent sexual behavior. The conscious mind may not later recall all of the details of that experience, but the subconscious mind never forgets them. They are all in permanent storage. "As the twig is bent, so grows the tree." If pleasure resulted from this experience, it will tend to be repeated. Should it, by chance, have been a deviant sexual act of some sort that gave him his first kicks, then he is probably doomed to repeat that type of behavior henceforth. If we did not believe that early sexual behavior imprints us with the blueprint of later behavior, then we would not be justified in imposing the heavy legal penalties that the sex crimes carry. Rape has called for the death penalty and child molestation calls for life in prison sentences because we believe that the victim's life is seriously degraded.

Testosterone avalanches. It is like a snow-slide down a steep mountainside, growing larger and more destructive as it progresses, sweeping everything before it. That is why it often seems to “blow a person’s mind” when he sees his sex object. Sight triggers it most reliably for most men. Eighty percent of what we learn comes through the sight channel. Hearing, smell, taste, and touch all collect their cues for the remaining twenty percent. If a beautiful woman were to snuggle against a man and kiss him, the sight of her would bombard his brain—her smell, her voice, her touch, and her taste all adding their fuel to the skyrocket of his experience. His pineal, pituitary, adrenal, and sex glands would flood his brain and bloodstream with communicating hormones. His mind would be bombarded with their urging to do something for fulfillment. Action of the imprinted sort must follow. Testosterone also enables. It produces the larger muscles and the aggression that enable the man to achieve the fulfillment. People have proven this by the results of their taking artificial testosterone preparations, or steroids, as they are called. Conversely, castration has been observed to lower testosterone and produce a softening of the muscles and reduction of aggression.

Law enforcement at the working level in contact with the public is misled and often ineffectual in controlling aberrant sexual behavior because its academic guidance and philosophical background are flawed. The criminal justice system looks toward the science of criminology for guidance and explanations of criminal behavior. Criminology, at the academic level, is the slave of sociology in this country. Sociology, in turn, is subject to psychology for understandings. Psychology, in turn, looks to psychiatry for the necessary explanations of human behavior. Psychiatry has often been wrong or incomplete in attributing merely environmental conditions, learning, and mental gyrations as the root causes. Freud, the father of psychiatry, well knew that the sexual appetite drove our behavior, but his failure to deal with anger and aggression was a major discrepancy in his theories.² He was unable to fathom the biology involved in spite of the clear indications of the inheritance of traits and the evidence from the results of the castration of animals, which was available to him. Almost all of the psychoanalysts since Freud have persisted in ignoring the contributions of biology in favor of their mentalistic theories of behaviorism and dynamic psychology. Freud may be excused because there just was not much known about the hormones in his day, but I cannot understand why psychiatrists today continue to ignore biology and fail to provide the needed scientific guidance to our legal system.

² Gaylin, *Rage Within*

III. The Cruel and Unusual Punishment Question

The best way to research the meaning intended by the writers of the Constitution with regard to the prohibition of cruel and unusual punishments is to examine the punishments that preceded the time of the writing. This way, we may learn what was the intent of the words at the time they were written. A direct line of antecedents can be traced to these particular words in the Eighth Amendment: "Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted." The earliest direct antecedent was the 1215 Magna Carta statement that: "Amercements for serious offenses shall not be so heavy as to deprive anyone of his livelihood." Another antecedent was written into the English Bill of Rights in 1689: "Excessive Baile ought not to be required nor excessive fines imposed nor cruel and unusual punishment inflicted." George Mason used almost the same words later when he composed the Virginia Declaration of Rights in 1776, and still later by James Madison when he wrote the Eighth Amendment of 1791. Madison had been a graduate student at Princeton and had received his instruction under John Witherspoon, a Scotch preacher who had been very familiar with the atrocious punishment practiced in Great Britain at the time. The incident that first triggered the "cruel and unusual" phrase is believed to be that of the anti-Catholic informer, Titus Gates, in 1685. Gates had been pilloried at the Royal Palace, paraded through London where he was almost torn to bits by the mob, pilloried again, whipped from Aldgate to Newgate, and then again whipped all the way to Tyburn. Somehow, he managed to survive.

This and the other cruel kinds of torture were the main reason for the establishment of the prohibition against cruel and unusual punishment (*Encyclopedia Britannica*). Torture had often been imposed since the earliest recorded history, but it had become more and more excruciating during the Inquisition, with the elaborate refinement made possible by new inventions, scientific discoveries, and manufacturing skills. Inquisitor General Thomas de Torquemada published his Instructions in 1483, laying down the detailed rules for the "ordinary" and "extraordinary" procedures for torture to obtain confessions. The "extraordinary" procedures became steadily less extraordinary in the following three centuries. The rack, a device that stretched the victim's limbs and body, was one of these procedures, which was introduced at the Tower of London about 1450. The fass, a cradle with spikes on the inside, in which the prisoner was rocked, and the kranz, a headband that was slowly tightened, were among the elaborate refinements employed in Germany. The bishop of Rochester's cook was publicly boiled to death

in 1531 after a poisoning charge had been made against her. The scavenger's daughter, a device that crushed the body, came into use about 1550. Giles Corey of Salem, Massachusetts, was executed in 1692 by the horrible penalty of being pressed to death under heavy weights when he refused to plead guilty to witchcraft. Branding with hot irons and flogging with a whip made of nine knotted lines (the "cat-o-nine tails") were common in the period preceding the writing of the Eighth Amendment. The pillory, stocks, ducking stool, and brank were also in general use. The brank was like a birdcage placed over the offender's head, containing a plate of iron with sharp spikes extending into the subject's mouth. Some of the other tortures were: strappado, estrapade, auto-de-fe ("which consisted of roasting, in great pomp the bodies of Jews or heretics for the salvation of their souls and the edification of the lookers-on" —Voltaire), scourging, truncheoning, galleys, gauntlet, keelhauling, tar and feathering, dismemberment, screw, boot, iron heel, Procrustean bed, railroading, and so on. The crimes of heresy, witchcraft, and sex offending provoked the most horrible of the tortures. The Church justified these unusually cruel reprisals as a means of saving the unfortunate sinner from the ways of the devil and his soul from hell.¹

Besides torture, the other reasons for the imposition of the "cruel and unusual" prohibition were the manner of execution and the conditions of the prisons in those days. In England, a man could be executed for well over 200 different crimes, including posing as a gypsy, avoiding taxes, forgery, infanticide, stealing a loaf of bread, and "steeling an heiress." The most notorious of the capital punishment statutes was the Waltham Black Act, which had been enacted in 1723 to repress some minor agrarian uprisings during which rural laborers, moving at night with blackened faces, had poached game and burned shacks and hayricks. The act provided that a man could be hanged for burning a pile of straw or for appearing on the high road with a sooty face.²

The common punishment for heresy, witchcraft, and sorcery was being burned at the stake. Other methods of execution at that time were: being pulled apart by horses, dismemberment, garroting, poisoning, shooting, crucifixion, impalement, drawing and quartering, the guillotine, and the block. Thousands of legal cases in the United States have been tried in our courts to settle the questions of whether the methods of death and the reasonableness of the death penalty are appropriate. A few of the most important will be mentioned here to illustrate the point. The 1878 *Wilkerson v. Utah* case examined Utah's practice of publicly shooting remediated murderers. In this case, the U.S. Supreme Court decided that shooting was not an unusual form of execution as a form of frontier justice, but would likely change in the future. They also noted that torture was an unnecessarily cruel practice and was forbidden by the Constitution. The 1890 *Kemmler* case challenged the introduction of the newly invented electric chair on the same grounds, and the Court ruled unanimously that electrocution was

¹ H. Allen and C. Simonsen, *Corrections in America* (Beverly Hills, CA: Glencoe Press, 1975), 8, 10.

² R. Hughes, *The Fatal Shore: The Epic of Australia's Founding* (New York: Alfred Knopf, 1987), 29.

not unconstitutional just because it was unusual. In the 1892 *O’Neil v. Vermont* case, Justice Stephen Field wrote the dissenting opinion that: “The cruel and unusual designation is usually applied to punishments which inflict torture, such as the rack, the thumbscrew, the iron boot, the stretching of limbs and the like, which are attended with acute pain and suffering ... The inhibition is directly against all punishments which by their excessive length or severity are greatly disproportionate to the offense charged ...” In the 1972 *Furman v. Georgia* case, the Court ruled five to four that the use of capital punishment as then practiced was unconstitutionally cruel and unusual because 80 percent of those executed for rape between 1930 and 1967 were members of the black race and they occurred in the southern part of the country. A moratorium was placed on the death penalty for four years as a result of the *Furman* case until all of the states rewrote their death penalty statutes to comply with the Supreme Court guidelines.

Imprisonment was also an excessively cruel punishment as it was administered in the period before the writing of the Constitution. The jails of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries were far different than those we know today. They were filthy, dismal cells where one simply rotted away. They were not intended to rehabilitate the inmates; they were places of isolation, discipline, and punishment. About half of them in England were privately operated for profit. The jailers were small businessmen—malignant landlords—who made their living by extorting money from the prisoners. As an example, a prisoner, on entering the bishop of Ely’s lockup, was chained down to the floor with a spiked collar riveted around his neck until he disgorged a fee for “easement of irons.” Any jailer could load any prisoner with as many fetters as he pleased and charge for their removal one at a time. The “trade in chains,” though often denounced as a national disgrace, survived well into the 1790s.³ Another reason prison was an excessively cruel punishment in those days is that it was imposed for very minor infractions, such as the inability to promptly pay a debt. The jails were mostly old and little changed since the Middle Ages. Newgate Prison in London was typical; it had been built originally in the twelfth century. It was a period that is vaguely reminiscent of our present time with high crime rates and insufficient jails to hold the numbers of prisoners. The solution to the prison overcrowding condition in Georgian, England, besides hanging, was the equally cruel practice of deportation, sometimes called “banishment” or “transportations.” Beginning about 1611, and continuing to 1775 when the American colonies rebelled, some 40,000 English prisoners were transported to the New World to provide slave labor for the plantations.

Another way to research out the prior meanings of the phrase cruel and unusual is to examine the wisdom of the ancients on the subject of punishment. Here we find that the historical panorama on the subject down through the ages of man is dominated by the philosophy of retributive vengeance. This is the principle that underlies almost all of the punishments of the world down to the present time. The various expressions of

³ Hughes, *Fatal Shore*, 37.

vengeance against the offender, however, have been changing under the influence of new ideas that metered fines, prison terms, education, work, or rehabilitation may change criminal behavior. Lex talionis, the law of retribution, established the principle that the punishment should exactly equal the offense. As stated by the laws of Hammurabi (2067–2025 BC):

If a noble has destroyed the eye of an aristocrat, his eye shall be destroyed.
If he has destroyed the eye or broken the bone of a commoner, he shall pay one mine of silver. If a son has struck his father, they shall cut off his hand.

Similar words were written about 400 BC and incorporated into our Bible, the Torah, and the Koran: “If any harm follows, then you shall give life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burn for burn, wound for wound, stripe for stripe” (Exodus 21:23–25). The same general notion is repeated in another biblical quotation:

When a man causes a disfigurement in his neighbor, as he has done it shall be done to him, fracture for fracture, eye for eye, tooth for tooth; as he has disfigured a man, he shall be disfigured. He who kills a beast shall make it good; and he who kills a man shall be put to death. You shall have one law for the sojourner and for the native; for I am the Lord your God. (Leviticus 24:19–22)

For thousands of years under these laws, thieves have had their hand cut off and rapists their penis.

Polybius (208–126 BC): “Since the masses of the people are inconsistent, full of unruly desires, passionate, and reckless of consequences, they must be filled with fears to keep them in order. The ancients did well, therefore, to invent gods, and the belief in punishment after death.” Xystus I (pope from AD 116 to 125): “Human punishment is execrable even when just.” Voltaire (1694–1778): “Let punishment of criminals be useful. A hanged man is good for nothing, and a man condemned to public works will serve the country, and is a living lesson.” Beccaria (1764): “There are three sources of the moral and political principles which govern mankind, namely, revelation, natural law, and social conventions ... There are, then, three distinct kinds of virtue and vice—the religious, the natural, and the political.” Thomas Fuller (1732): “Cruelty is a tyrant, that is always attended with fear.” William Blake (1789):

All Penal Laws court Transgression and therefore are Cruelty and Murder.
The laws of the Jews were the basest and most oppressive of human codes, and being like all other codes given under pretense of divine command were what Christ pronounced them, the Abomination that maketh desolation, i.e., State Religion which is the source of all Cruelty.

Still another method of researching the meaning of the “cruel and unusual punishment” wording is to review the case law on the subject. One of the guiding principles in the law is *stare decisis* (Latin, meaning “to abide by,” or “adhere to” decided cases). The policy of our courts is to stand by precedent and not disturb settled points. Theoretically, the law will fall into disarray with judges feuding against one another and lawyers not knowing how to advise their clients unless consistency is maintained. A great multitude of cases have been fought through the courts of the land under the Eighth Amendment. It is a very popular defense, often the first recourse of criminals after sentencing. Some of the more important cases concerning the death penalty have already been mentioned. In spite of *stare decisis*, there still seems to be a tendency to swing with the times and the liberal or conservative character of the judges. Indeed, a person is led to believe that the founding fathers who originally wrote the cruel and unusual words would be completely amazed if they could read some of these later judgments that have been handed down. There is even the contention that “the fact ... that the Court, or individual justices, may have in the past expressed an opinion that the death penalty is constitutional is not now binding on us” (Justice Marshall in the *Furman v. Georgia* case). Marshall went even further: “... The most important principle in analyzing ‘cruel and unusual’ punishment questions is one that is reiterated again and again in the prior opinions of the Court. I.e., the cruel and unusual language ‘must draw its meaning from the evolving standards of decency that mark the progress of a maturing society.’” On the one hand, great emphasis is given the need for stability in the meaning of any words in the law—an accepted doctrine under *stare decisis*. On the other hand, we are being asked to change penalties with the evolving standards of decency and flexible morality. The following tabulation of representative cases decided under the Eighth Amendment will serve to illustrate.

IV. Cruel and Unusual Case Law Questions from West Florida's Digest (2d 1986)

A sentence of three years in the penitentiary for unlawfully concealing one gallon of moonshine whiskey on which the state tax had not been paid was invalid as "cruel and unusual punishment" (Bowling v. State, 10 So. 2d 130 1942).

Generally, a sentence that is within the statutory limits is not invalid as "cruel and unusual punishment" (Brown v. State, 13 So. 2d 458 1943).

The act penalizing the removal or concealment of legally manufactured liquor on which no tax has been paid with intent to defraud the state of the revenue is not violative of the cruel and unusual punishment, on the ground that the fine and imprisonment may be imposed for failure to pay a tax (Wright v. State 87 SON 2d 104 1956).

Sentenced to fifteen years in state prison for manslaughter was not excessive or cruel and unusual punishment (Emmett v. State, 89 So. 2d 659 1956).

The Florida Statute, which imposed death for the crime of rape, is not cruel and unusual punishment (Crag v. State, 16 L. Ed. 2d 301 1965).

Sentencing the defendant who was found guilty of the crime of breaking and entering an apartment dwelling and being armed with a pistol with intent to commit a grand larceny to life imprisonment did not violate cruel and unusual punishment provisions, notwithstanding the fact that the sentence was for a first offense (Reilly v. State, 212 So. 2d 796, 24 L. Ed. 2d 690 1968).

Several five-year sentences, to be served concurrently, for unlawful sale of registered securities did not constitute cruel and unusual punishment (Godfrey v. State, 300 So. 2d 325 1973).

The Eighth Amendment is intended to be applied only to punishment invoked as a sanction for criminal conduct (Ingram v. Wright, 525 F. 2d 909, 51 L. Ed. 2d 711, 430 US 651).

The scope of the Eighth Amendment is not static and must draw its meaning from evolving standards of decency (Ingram v. Wright).

Corporal punishment per se cannot be ruled a violation of the Eighth Amendment (Ingram v. Wright).

Whether punishment is cruel and unusual in a constitutional sense depends to a significant degree on circumstances surrounding a particular punishment (*Ingram v. Wright*, 1974).

Mandatory three-year sentence before a parole is not cruel and unusual punishment for aggravated assault with a firearm (*Sowell v. State*, 371 So. 2d 10).

Evidence in a civil rights suit established that the conditions which existed in the Duval County Jail were so extreme as to constitute the infliction of cruel and unusual punishment in violation of the Constitution (*Miller v. Carson*, 566 F. 2d 106 1975).

Use of tents to house some of the inmates entering the state prison system was a sensible, practical solution to an extremely critical facilities problem and did not constitute cruel and unusual punishment (*Costello v. Wainwright*, 525 F. 2d 1239, 430 US 325 1975).

Imposition of the death penalty is not per se cruel and unusual punishment (*Proffitt v. Florida*, 429 US 875, 50 L. Ed. 2d 158 1976).

Imposition and execution of a sentence of death upon the defendant, who had been convicted of murder in the first degree, would not constitute cruel and unusual punishment (*Hargrave v. State*, 366 So. 2d 1, 444 US 985 1978).

The death penalty statute did not constitute cruel and unusual punishment (*Thompson v. State*, 389 So. 2d 197 1980; *Washington v. State*, 362 So. 2d 658 1978; *Riley v. State*, 413 So. 2d 1173, 459 US 981 1982; *Ferguson v. State*, 417 So. 2d 639; *Washington v. Wainwright*, 737 F. 2d 719; and *Thomas v. State*, 456 So. 2d 454 1984).

Electrocution was not cruel and unusual punishment in violation of Eighth Amendment (*Sullivan v. Dugger*, 721 So. 2d 719 1983).

The statute providing no less than twenty-five years of imprisonment before parole on a capital felony is not cruel and unjust punishment (*Godwin v. State*, 369 So. 2d 575).

Death penalty statute does impose cruel and unusual punishment and is not unconstitutional (*Halliwell v. State*, 323 So. 2d 557; *Chambers v. State*, 339 So. 2d; and *Raulerson v. State*, 358 So. 2d 826).

Overcrowding, unsanitary conditions; nonhygienic toilet facilities; lack of light and fresh air; inadequate medical care; inadequate staff necessary to ensure inmate safety; and lack of recreational and educational opportunities present in the Escambia County Jail were so extreme as to constitute infliction of cruel and unusual punishment in violation of the Eighth Amendment (*Mitchell v. Untreiner (sheriff)*, 421 F. Supp. 886 1976).

A life sentence with a minimum of twenty-five years imprisonment prior to eligibility for parole on the conviction of sexual battery upon an eight-year-old boy did not amount to cruel and unusual punishment (*Banks v. State*, 342 So. 2d 469, 1976).

It was not cruel or unusual punishment for the defendant, convicted of sexual battery of a person eleven years old or younger, to be sentenced to life imprisonment without eligibility for parole until twenty-five years had been served (*Harrison v. State*, 360 So. 2d 421, 1978).

The Supreme Court overturned the imposition of the death sentence for the sexual battery on two girls, ages nine and eleven, in view of the lack of showing of extraordinary cruelty beyond that which is necessarily attendant upon the rape of a child, and directed the imposition of two separate life sentences (*Shue v. State*, 366 So. 2d 387 and 386 So. 2d 1256 1978).

The cruel and unusual punishment amendment does not apply to the paddling of children as a means of maintaining discipline in public schools (*Ingram v. Wright*).

The cruel and unusual punishment clause was designed to protect those convicted of crime and circumscribes the criminal process in three ways: It limits the kinds of punishment that can be imposed; it proscribes punishment grossly disproportionate to the severity of the crime; and it imposes substantive limits on what can be made criminal (*Ingram v. Wright*).

The Eighth Amendment bans sanctions against an individual when his “crime” is that of having an illness (*Gammill v. Wainwright*, 357 So. 2d 714 1978).

Florida’s death penalty statute was not applied in a discriminatory fashion against defendants convicted of murdering whites, as opposed to blacks, in violation of the Eighth and Fourteenth Amendments (*Spinkellink v. Wainwright*, 441 US 937, 60 L. Ed. 2d 667 1978).

The convicted defendant’s bare allegations that the death penalty was applied in a racially discriminatory manner did not constitute sufficient preliminary factual basis to state cognizable claim that his death sentence violated his Eighth Amendment rights (*Sullivan v. State*, 441 So. 2d 609 1983).

The Supreme Court refused to reconsider its prior rejection of a claim that the death penalty is applied in Florida in an arbitrary and discriminatory manner on the basis of race and geography in violation of the Eighth Amendment (*Ford v. Wainwright*, 451 So. 2d 471 1983).

The conditions of confinement of pretrial detainees and others in the county jail were such as to violate the prisoners’ rights under the Eighth Amendment (*Miller v. Carson*, 563 F. 2d 741 1977).

The general poor physical conditions in the segregation unit at the state prison during the prisoner’s confinement with temperatures in the 30s and 40s and the length of detention being uncertain constituted a violation of the Eighth Amendment (*Parker v. Cook*, 464 F. Supp. 350 1979).

Imposing thirteen consecutive, three-year mandatory sentences against the defendant for the armed robbery of thirteen separate victims at a single location did not constitute cruel and unusual punishment (*Palmer v. State*, 416 So. 2d 878).

Given the defendant’s prior criminal record and viciousness of the crimes of violence committed, sentencing to prison for his natural life was not so disproportionate as to constitute cruel and unusual punishment (*Williams v. State*, 441 So. 2d 1157).

The Eighth Amendment does not permit the imposition of the death penalty on a defendant who only aids and abets a felony in the course of which a murder is committed by others (*Enmund v. Florida*, 439 So. 2d 1383 1982).

The obscenity statute with one year in jail and a \$1,000 fine is not cruel and unusual punishment (Johnson v. State, 371 So. 2d 10 1978).

The Eighth Amendment does not give a defendant an absolute right to bail (U.S. v. Fernandez, 737 F. 2d 912 1984).

Enhanced civil fines of \$25 or of \$50 for speeding were not so excessive as to be cruel or unusual (State v. Jackson, 417 So. 2d 1097).

NOTE: Each state has written the cruel and unusual provisions of the Eighth Amendment into its own constitution, and then implementing statutes are written to spell out their meanings. Florida's Constitution, 1986 revision, uses the following wording in its Declaration of Rights:

Excessive fines, cruel or unusual punishment, attainder, forfeiture of estate, indefinite imprisonment, and unreasonable detention of witnesses are forbidden.

One of the many implementing statutes in Florida Statute 951.07: "The flogging or whipping of prisoners in this state is prohibited, but the Department of Corrections may make and enforce suitable rules and regulations to govern such prisoners by solitary confinement, restriction of privileges, or other humane and reasonable punishment."

To complete this study of the applicable case law, it will be necessary to include California and Nebraska cases between 1907 and 1975. To do this, it would be necessary to go to those state capitols and review the records of those cases that came up under the castration laws. These cases should also be in the Library of Congress in Washington, DC. A partial record could also possibly be in some of the other state capitol law libraries.

V. Denial

“The single merit of a diseased mind is its inability to recognize its own deficiency.”¹ Denial has been defined as a “defense mechanism, operating unconsciously, used to resolve emotional conflict and allay anxiety by disavowing thoughts, feelings, wishes, needs, or external reality factors that are consciously intolerable.”²

Denial is not a river in Egypt, but a river of refusal to admit the truth of a statement, charge, or imputation. The typical sex offender and sex offender therapist often prevent themselves from overcoming their respective shortcomings by denial. The sex offender usually denies the seriousness of his crime(s), while the therapist denies the effectiveness of the castration treatment (orchiectomy) for sex offenders. Much has been written about the sex offender’s denial (see attached references), yet very little has been published about the therapist’s denial of the castration option.

The sex offender’s denial is easily understood because of all the study that has been devoted to it. However, it is difficult to comprehend why therapists, psychologists, doctors, and prison administrators—who supposedly want to help rehabilitate sex offenders—continue to deny, or refuse to accept, that castration is much more effective than counseling in reducing the sex offender’s crimes.

The dimensions of denial as a phenomenon of the study of sexuality in general, and the study of the sex crimes in particular, are very broad and very, very deep. This should be recognized and appreciated at an early stage in our inquiries if we are to be able to reach beyond the superficial layers of beliefs and impressions down into the truths of the subject. Much of what we had “known” about sex for hundreds of years was proven false by the monumental Kinsey studies beginning in 1948, Masters and Johnson, and many other books right down to the present day. Denial is the natural, first, and best strategy for coping with any threatening culpability, whether it is failing to stop at a stop sign or more serious crimes right down to murder.

Saint Peter three times denied he even knew Christ before dawn of the day following the day in which Christ was arrested (Luke 22:56–60). Our Constitution protects our right to use denial by the provisions of the Fifth Amendment. The shades of denial are numerous, the strategies unlimited: actual amnesia, refutation, disclamation, recantation, rejection, projection, demurring, belying, discrediting, minimizing, disowning, justifying, and many others—a rainbow coalition of obfuscation.

¹ Smith, *The Mind*, 238.

² American Psychiatric Association, *A Psychiatric Glossary*, 3rd ed. (Washington, DC: 1969), 28.

A large share of what we know of the causation of crime is mostly self-reported—filtered through the mind of the offender—and it is colored by denial. This is especially true of the sex crimes. Furthermore, the natural inclination to deny culpability is deepened by our poor understanding of our sexuality. We often do not really understand the true causes of our own deviant sexual behavior. We are not equipped to conceptualize and verbalize our inner secret whisperings that often make us perpetrate some pretty weird and despicable behavior. Even those few who are especially trained to make observations of sexual behavior often find that denial is an understandable and acceptable strategy for dealing with it. Catastrophic, horrible things happen to sex offenders who do admit to sex crimes: The opinions of “significant others” of them are shattered forever; civil suits against them bring complete financial ruin; and prison sentences are increased.

When incarcerated, Texas pedophile, Larry Don McQuay, admitted to molesting more children than he had been convicted of, and his sentence was “legally” extended an additional twenty years in prison. McQuay, in requesting the castration treatment, was influential in getting a new law enacted to cover the use of this treatment in Texas. Judge Michael T. McSpadden, State Senator Teel Bivins, and State Representative Pete Gallego were also very influential in its passage. In spite of considerable publicity and the law’s official enactment, prison administrators told McQuay that he had to first complete the prison’s Sex Offender Treatment Program (SOTP) before he could have the castration treatment. He was then transferred to another prison where they did not have the SOTP. What is going on here? In spite of the fact that castration is three to four times more effective in stopping sex offender recidivism than the “talking cures,” many of those who request it are still denied castration. An average of 2.44 percent of castrated sex offenders recidivated, while those treated by other methods averaged at least 9.6 percent recidivism or more.

Barbaree³ found that 54 percent of incarcerated rapists and 56 percent of incarcerated child molesters denied they had committed a punishable sex offense. When minimizing the seriousness of the offenses was included as a form of denial, the number of deniers increased to approximately 98 percent of all offenders. When offenders confess to additional sex crimes, they usually receive additional punishment; yet, when they are truly repentant to the extent they request castration, they are frequently denied this treatment. Such denials have happened in most of the seven states besides Texas that have recently passed castration legislation. In California, at least six men asked for it, but only one has received it. In Illinois, at least two have requested the surgery, but only one underwent the knife, and that was at his expense. The sex offenders received the treatment in Florida, but only one castration was court ordered. Very little information on the use of the castration treatment in the remaining states is available.

³ H. E. Barbaree, “Denial and Minimization Among Sex Offenders: Assessment and Treatment Outcome,” *Forum on Corrections Research* 3 (1991): 3–33.

Both alcoholics and sex offenders frequently seem to suffer from a disorder of denial; sufferers delude themselves into believing that they do not have the affliction. Sex offenders have a tendency to deny alcoholism unless it seems useful as an excuse to explain away the sexual offense. It is well known that alcoholism and sexual deviation reinforce each other in destructive acting out ... Just as the original stigma attached to alcoholism made secrecy and anonymity a necessary part of the Alcoholics Anonymous organization, similarly, the public revulsion, disgust, and disgrace accompanying sex offenses is not conducive to open recognition and treatment. Just as alcoholism became understood as a treatable and preventable disorder, with the stigma lessening, so might the situation for sex offenders change.⁴

Denial rewards the offender far more than confession in our criminal justice system. Dr. A. Nicholas Groth, a clinical psychologist who has interviewed more than 3,000 sex offenders, observed in a 1987 lecture in Tampa, Florida, that:

We have not created very much of a climate where we can say to a person, "If you have this kind of a problem, tell us and we will help you." Instead we have created more of a climate of "we will help you to the nearest prison." So we do not expect the sex offender to come forward with a complete admission. We hear partial admissions at best such as: "I guess some of this did happen, but I was so drunk I don't remember it." "I was high on pot." "I was tired and I got into the wrong bed." "She looked older than her alleged three years." Reciprocity just doesn't work in the prison environment; manipulation works much better. No matter how much a sex offender admits in prison, there is always more. What he tells you is just the tip of the iceberg. There may be one offense on the record, but the offender has actually fondled children for years that are not on the record. Denial is part of the territory, and there is really nothing unusual in the fact that the sex offender denies his sexual culpability. Most of the rest of us also deny. When the traffic cop pulls you over and asks, "Did you know you were doing 65 miles per hour?" We are not inclined to say, "Of course I know it. You better fix your radar; I was really doing 75." We will deny it. We will not tell the truth, but deny as best we can. We know that in this threatening situation that the truth will get us into hot water. With the sex offender, it is not just a ticket he will be getting. Much more is at stake: his reputation, freedom, job, marriage, career are all on the lines. Why wouldn't a sex offender deny? The reality of the criminal justice system is that he will likely get less of a sentence if he hires the best lawyer he can afford and denies any criminal guilt all the way down through the process.

⁴ F. L. Nichols and D. Haines, "Difficulties of Dual Denial in the Treatment of Sex Offenders with Alcoholism," *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology* 23 (1979): 214-220.

Denial skews and limits our knowledge in all of our sexual problems from potty training to the AIDS epidemic. The sophisticated offender has learned that denial is his most reliable means of coping with the law. The unsophisticated and poorly educated offender simply feels more comfortable attributing his behavior to easily understood emotions like fear or anger. Knowledge of sex has been severely repressed in our culture, and the resulting ignorance has led to intolerance and abhorrence of sexuality at every level of society. It is little wonder that many sex offenders are very poorly aware of their own drives and emotions. Medical evidence concerning the AIDS epidemic has repeatedly been denied. African nations still deny their own numbers of AIDS victims in spite of the obvious large numbers of people dying and dead of the disease. Black doctors and administrators repeatedly deny clear epidemiological evidence of the contribution of the black race to the plague. Even in a deadly serious matter such as this, affecting millions of lives ... Anything with a sexual etiology is embarrassing and shameful to us, and we just do not want to admit it. "The brain is not so much an organ of rationality as it is an organ for rationalization. It will try to find excuses."⁵

Strangely and paradoxically, it is often the most upright, religious, healthy, handsome, athletic, and broad-shouldered men who are the most dishonest about their deviant sexuality—the very people who make up a large percentage of the worst types of sex offenders. The least suspected, cleanest-looking types are often the ones who turn out to be the most dangerous offenders, perpetrators of the most heinous crimes. We have difficulty coping with this paradox. We tend to want to believe their denial stories. Ted Bundy is a well-known example: a conservative political worker, law student, athlete—lust murderer of more than thirty women—brilliant and eloquent. He was able to talk himself out of several crimes and escape from confinement. He was believed so devoutly, even after weeks of careful presentation of his guilt in the courtroom, that several women came to his aid, and one of them even married him while he was in prison. Our sexuality is often a separate part of our personality and behavior.

Cruel or kind, lazy or hardworking, honest or dishonest, achiever or bum—character traits do not reveal our sexual orientation. The prostitute, for example, is often the most honest of women. She admits that she uses her sexuality for profit. Most other women use their sexuality for their advancement and profit, but will not admit it. "... The lie of character is built up because the child needs to adjust to the world ... to his own existential dilemmas ... Character defenses are automatic and unconscious. The problem is that the child becomes dependent on them and comes to be encased in his own character armor, unable to freely see beyond his own prison or into himself, into the defense he is using."⁶ "If man is the more normal, healthy and happy, the more he

⁵ Arnold M. Ludwig, *The Alcoholic's Mind* (Oxford University Press), as quoted in the Pensacola[Florida] News Journal (March 15, 1988).

⁶ Ernest Becker, *The Denial of Death* (New York: Free Press, 1973), 73.

can ... successfully repress, displace, deny, rationalize, dramatize himself and deceive others, then it follows that the suffering of the neurotic comes ... from painful truth.”⁷

Women are some of the most powerful writers on the subject of the sex offenses, and they are beginning to outnumber men in sex research in this country. Women tend to be the most believable in these matters because they represent the primary victim population; yet they appear to have the greatest tendency to believe the non-sexual attributions of the causes of the sex crimes. They are hormonally unsuited to recognize the nature and the power of the sex urge in men. Women tend to function more on an emotional base than a logical one: They believe their instincts, their knowing heart, and their gut feelings more than their rational brain. This is especially true when they are dealing with the good-looking, macho type of male sex offender. Men, on the other hand, are far from immune from similar biases when they are dealing with female offenders. The history of the criminal justice system has shown that female offenders received relatively light sentences from the predominately male courts of the past.

The more serious of the sex crimes are usually very secret events, hidden away from the observation of impartial observers. Nearly everything that we know of them is filtered through the minds of the participants, who have made their observations in an emotion-charged atmosphere full of fear, excitement, and apprehension. Ninety-five percent of what we know of them derives from the verbal reports of the participants. *Rashoman* was the title of a famous Japanese movie, which portrayed an attack by a bandit on a man and his wife in three different ways, as seen by each of the participants. Each version of the attack had a different hero and villain. The bandit's version showed him to be brave and considerate and adored by the wife. The husband's version showed him to be bravely and gallantly defending his wife, but failing only by the merest chance of ill fortune. The wife's version showed her to be virtuous and modest but overwhelmed by the strength and cunning of the bandit. Every version of emotion-laden sex crimes will be colored by the viewpoint of the observer.

Denial is a heavy veil over the sexual realities of any sex crime from the victim's viewpoint as well as the offender's. The words they use to describe the experience will be certain to cover up any aspects of the crime that their own value system finds reprehensible. Jessica Hahn repeatedly asserted that she was “no bimbo” in 1987 when her story of the adultery with televangelist Jim Bakker was emblazoned on TV screens and magazines and even after she posed nude for the November 1987 *Playboy* magazine. The victim is one of the few witnesses to these crimes who should be capable of giving us an insight into the causation, but they are often as confused as anyone else. In rape cases, the victim is usually concerned for her life as the foremost and first consideration. To her, the aggression of the rapist is far more blatant than his sexuality. She understands the threat of injury and death most readily; she is less able to understand the drive that causes it. She can usually not understand why such a

⁷ Otto Rank, *Will Therapy and Truth and Reality* (New York: Knopf, 1936), page 151 of the one volume edition of 1945.

thing happened to her. It is all the more mysterious and threatening since she cannot understand it. She is likely to ask: "What did I do to cause this?" and "What made him behave like that?"

Ignorance also functions in other ways to produce denial. We are really quite ignorant of the complexities of deviant sexuality. Our failure to understand the exact nature and workings of this phenomenon makes us fearful, suspicious, and superstitious. With these shortcomings, we tend to attribute other than the correct cause to some of our aberrant sexual behavior. We can deal fairly readily with this. We can all relate to anger, hate, jealousy, and violence because we know about those emotions. We are so wildly different in our sexuality that we cannot comprehend those who are furthest removed from our own type.

Our religious training has greatly deepened our revulsion of sex, resulting in deepening the tendency to use denial in sexual matters. Biblical examples of sin and evil frequently chose sexual words. Denial was such a comfortable and natural thing that it became necessary for the churches to insist more and more on the idea of confessing our sins as a means of absolving guilt. The Inquisition demonstrated that the confessing of sins was better than the horrid tortures and burnings at the stake, but I question that there were many benefits short of torture. The "good die young." I am forced to ask, "Benefits to whom?" There is no doubt that the churches with their hierarchies of clergy and lay leadership do benefit from confessions of the errant membership. Psychiatrists and psychologists benefit financially and feel better, but does confession benefit the repentant individual? It is said that confession is good for the soul, but this is hard to prove since the soul is so intangible. Public confession of our sexual misdeeds is more often devastating to the physical and mental well-being of the perpetrator of the sex offenses ... the bearer of "The Scarlet Letter."

Official denial and refutation of the sexual motivation of many of our violent crimes contributes to the lack of accurate statistical data. It is far simpler and more comfortable for officials and functionaries in the criminal justice system, or mental health establishment, to attribute conventional factors other than sexuality to the records of the causes of many crimes. Officialdom and their bureaucratic hierarchies prefer to deal with conventional terminology, which is less emotion-laden or embarrassing than the sexual terms. There is less hassle and titillation of the press involved, and these people just do not enjoy or have time for hassles. Bureaucratic organizations reward standard usages and are likely to punish mavericks who try to attribute the sexual ones. Embarrassment is a factor that affects them very deeply. Our courts rely heavily on the respect of the populace. They have to be very careful not to use sexual language. The decorum of the court dictates a freedom from the embarrassment that our culture clothes sexuality with. It is simply avoided if at all possible. "Felony murder" appears on the record—and is truthful—but the actual motivation may have been lust murder, rape murder, necrophilia, or sadism rather than assault or robbery as "felony" usually infers.

Some of the best techniques for overcoming denial in order to get at the truth of a matter are the lie detector (polygraph), truth serum (sodium Pentothal), hypnotism, pupillometry, and the penile plethysmograph. Even these, however, are of doubtful reliability in the case of some of the most serious sex crimes. The criminals themselves cannot recognize themselves as committing some of these beastly acts. It must have been someone else, some kind of a beast or monster, a Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde, a split personality—possibly a true case of multiple personality, each separate and distinct from the other. What I call the “avalanching effect” of the sex and aggression hormones can contribute to a type of “truthful” denial. The sex hormones enable aggression, and aggression stimulates the sex hormone production, which in turn increases the violence of the aggression. The cumulative effect often drives a man to such extremes that he becomes “another person” or a “monster.” He becomes a werewolf tearing the flesh of his victim or a vampire drinking her blood. The phenomenon is reminiscent of the “stolen goods” syndrome, in which even children experience heightened excitement by stealing items though the items may be something that they really do not need. The neighbor’s apples tasted better when stolen than the ones in their own backyard. A man may be bored to death with sex with his wife and seek the added stimulation of stolen affairs. Some men need the excitement of danger, struggle, violence, or actual pain, fear, and anger in a more pathological manner for their maximum sexual orgasm.

Sex offender psychotherapist Robert Freeman-Longo points out in his *Who am I and Why am I in Treatment?* workbook for sex offenders (Orwell, VT: Safer Society Press, 1988) that denial is but one of five defense mechanisms that are an integral part of the deviant crime cycle. They are denial, rationalization, intellectualization, minimization, and religiosity. Denial is simply refusing to admit the truth and is very common among sex offenders. Rationalizing is making excuses to justify deviant behavior. Intellectualization is explaining away reality with theories and abstraction. Minimization is intentionally downplaying and understating the truth of the situation. Religiosity uses religion inappropriately to avoid dealing with real life problems.

Even after the sex criminal is convicted, found to be guilty of a deviant act, he will often deny responsibility: “The devil made me do it,” or “I just could not help myself.” Sexuality is such a powerful motivator that the offender can often get away with shifting the responsibility to the victim: “She led me on; she tempted me beyond my power to resist ...” Many sex offenders get away with blaming their upbringing, their parents, or their environment, or they sometimes can plead mental illness, unable to avert the sex crime because of their “sickness.” A technique that the individual himself can employ in coming to grips with his own denial of sexuality is to assess his dreams and hormonal activity during sleep by means of a penile plethysmography or a do-it-yourself substitute. Postage stamps can be stuck around the flaccid penis at bedtime and examined upon awakening. Broken stamp perforations will tell if there has been penile tumescence during sleep.

Dr. John Money has introduced the psychological term fugue into the study of the paraphilia, which sheds further illumination on the nature of the denial phenomenon.

He defines it as “an altered state of consciousness in which what is happening now is unrelated to, or dissociated from, what had happened then, in the preceding phase of existence; as for example in the alternating manifestations of dual or multiple personality” (from Latin fuga, “a flight”).⁸ DSM-III-R lists psychogenic fugue under their dissociative disorders, while other books define fugue as a hysteria, or liken it to sleep-walking.

... A full-fledged paraphilia has nothing optional or elective about it. It is a usurper that takes over completely. Its injunctions are compulsory and must be obeyed, no matter what else they might interfere with. They may interfere during any waking hour, and as dreams or nightmares during sleeping hours as well. They defy voluntary attempts at control, for the paraphiliac attack, as aforesaid, brings on an altered state of consciousness as in a trance of fugue.⁹

“It is akin to the Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde phenomenon of dual personality” (p. 184). “There are some patients in whom recurrent paraphiliac fugue states are separated by intervals of return to a mental state that other people judge not to be normal, but strange ... Reiteration of the sequence of fugue state followed by non-fugue state followed by fugue state, and so on, indefinitely, constitutes a manifestation of cyclicity in which the cycles are not necessarily of regular onset and duration. Rhythmicity, periodicity, and pulsatility and widespread as biological regulatory mechanisms in both health and pathology.¹⁰ Webster’s defines fugue as a pathological disturbance of consciousness during which the patient performs acts of which he appears to be conscious, but of which on recovery he has no recollection. It is also a polyphonic musical composition in which one or two themes are imitated by successively entering voices and are contrapuntally developed. Toccata and Fugue is reported to be J. S. Bach’s most popular composition.

Similar physical reactions were reported by Purvis (1992) in different terms: “Orgasm has been associated with a unique state of consciousness, a loss of contact with immediate external reality. Kinsey noted that, ‘At orgasm some individuals may remain unconscious for a matter of seconds or even for some minutes.’” Earlier writers have also noted various sorts of amnesia associated with the sex act and with deviant sexuality. Karpman wrote, “A sex-substituting criminal may have a dream state of relaxation following a crime. As there is guilt, it is not remembered” (p. 133).¹¹

The attack takes place in a state of daydream; the exhibitionist merely executes the scenes of his dreams. Consciousness is imperfect: He denies

⁸ Money, Gay, Straight, and In-Between, 201.

⁹ Ibid., 143.

¹⁰ J. Money, *Vandalized Lovemaps* (1989), 204.

¹¹ Karpman, *Sexual Offender and His Offenses*, 133–185.

forethought and premeditation. He is in a dream of a trance-like, happy state ... a dream-like state or amnesia (p. 185).¹²

Denial is legal. Time and again, the Fifth Amendment to the United States Constitution, which reads that any person "... shall not be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself," has been invoked for every imaginable crime. In the landmark Montana sex offender case of 1991, *State v. Imlav*, the court stated that the defendant "could not be punished for asserting his constitutional right against self-incrimination" after he was terminated from his treatment program for failure to admit his guilt.

Sex offender therapists become quite jaded hearing the sex offender's excuses, lies, and attempts at placing responsibility for his crimes elsewhere. It is one of their the basic tenets from clinical psychology and psychiatry that you cannot treat a client unless he wants to change and part of this is admitting that he is responsible. Maletzky (1996) showed that sex offenders who admitted their crimes were more successful with treatment than those who denied.¹³ This is one of the major quandaries in treating sex offenders today, as evidenced by several articles in the *Journal of the Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers*, volume 8, number 1.

Most clinicians state that "breaking through" denial is necessary for successful treatment of sex offenders, but there is little empirical support for this claim. These professionals usually want to know as many details about the convicted sex offender's past history as they can, so they can shape their treatment to combat those specific problems. All too frequently, they put so much emphasis on having the offender tell them all his crimes, besides those for which he was found guilty of in a court of law, that other possible therapeutic possibilities are neglected.¹⁴ Some treatment providers insist that sex offenders must admit to all their offenses in order to receive treatment, even to the point of denying treatment for what they do admit to.

Happel and Auffrey¹⁵ gave further justification for excluding offenders who deny—to limit the time and money spent on those "who were unwilling to admit their deviance." Denial is a natural method of self-protection, yet it continues to be routine practice to eject denying sex offenders from treatment programs, thereby increasing their likelihood of recidivating. This coerced, self-incrimination goes on in spite of the sex offender's constitutional right under the Fifth Amendment to not be compelled to be a witness against himself.

The cognitive-behavioral sex offender treatments in use today are often intrusive and aversive. They are expensive and time consuming. Therapists and their clients

¹² Ibid.

¹³ B. Maletzky, Editorial, *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 6, no. 1 (1996): 1–5.

¹⁴ W. F. Northey, "The Politics of Denial—A Postmodern Critique," *The Sex Offender Theoretical Advances, Treating Special Populations and Legal Developments III*, no. 32 (1999): 1–9.

¹⁵ R. M. Happel and J. J. Auffrey, "Sex Offender Assessment: Interrupting the Dance of Denial," *American Journal of Forensic Psychology* 13, no. 2 (1995): 5–22

both have major stresses and problems with denial. Deniers can slow and severely disrupt otherwise effective treatment groups. Castration, as a treatment, is almost always successful, regardless of whether the offender denies his offenses or not, and it works through this obstacle almost automatically when properly employed. Therapists, psychologists, doctors, and prison officials mostly blame sex offender denial for the high recidivism rate of sex offenses, claiming that although the offender wanted to stop, he could not help otherwise. However, their denial of the effectiveness of castration is also keeping the recidivism rate up. If they truly want to help rehabilitate sex offenders, they will open their minds to castration as a supplement to their talking treatments.

Denial References

Barbaree, H. E. "Denial and Minimization Among Sex Offenders: Assessment and Treatment Outcome." *Forum on Corrections Research* 3 (1991): 3–33.

Burditt, T. "Treating Sex Offenders Who Deny Their Guilt: The Application of Motivation Interviewing to the Denier's Pilot Study." Paper presented at the Annual Research and Treatment Conference of the Association of the Treatment of Sexual Abusers, New Orleans, LA, October 1995.

Happel, R. M., and J. J. Auffrey. "Sex Offender Assessment: Interrupting the Dance of Denial." *American Journal of Forensic Psychology* 13, no. 2 (1995): 5–22.

Haywood, T. W., and L. S. Grossman. "Denial of Deviant Sexual Arousal and Psychopathology in Child Molesters." *Behavior Therapy* 25 (1994): 327–340.

Hoke, S., C. Sykes, and M. Winn, "Strategic/systemic Interventions Targeting Denial in Incestuous Families." *Journal of Strategic and Systemic Therapies* 8 (1989): 44–51.

Lund, C. A. "Predictors of Sexual Recidivism: Did Meta-analysis Clarify the Role and Relevance of Denial?" *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 12 (2000): 275–287.

Maletzky, B. M., and B. McFarland, "Treatment Results in Offenders Who Deny Their Crimes." Manuscript submitted for publication in *Sex Offender, New Insights, Treatment Innovations and Legal Developments*, 1995.

Marshall, W. L. "Treatment Effects on Denial and Minimization in Incarcerated Sex Offenders," *Behavior Research and Therapy* 32, no. 5 (1994): 559–564.

Murphy, J. J., and D. J. Berry. "Treating Sex Offenders Who Deny Their Guilt: A Six-month Adapted Version of the Denier's Pilot Study." Paper presented at the Annual Research and Treatment Conference of the Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers, New Orleans, LA, October 1995.

Northey, W. F. "The Politics of Denial: A Postmodern Critique," in *The Sex Offender Theoretical Advances, Treating Special Populations and Legal Developments*, volume III, 32 (1999): 1–9.

O'Donohue, W., and E. Letourneau, "A Brief Group Treatment for the Modification of Denial in Child Sex Abusers: Outcome and Follow-up." *Child Abuse and Neglect* 17 (1993): 299–304.

Schlink, A. M., and T. Shaw, "Treating Sexual Offenders Who Deny Their Guilt: A Pilot Study." *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 8, no. 1 (1996): 17–23.

Sefarbi, R. "Admitters and Deniers Among Adolescent Sex Offenders and Their Families: A Preliminary Study." *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* 60, no. 3 (1990): 460–465.

Steen, C. "Treating Sexual Offenders Who Deny Their Guilt." Paper presented at the Annual Research and Treatment Conference of the Association for the Treatment of Sexual Abusers, Portland, OR, October 1992.

Trepper, T., and M. J. Barrett, "Treatment of Denial in Families Where There is Child Sex Abuse," in *Case Studies in Child and Family Welfare*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth, 57–67.

Winn, M. "The Strategic and Systemic Management of Denial in the Cognitive-Behavioral Treatment of Sexual Offenders." *Sexual Abuse: A Journal of Research and Treatment* 8, no. 1 (1996): 25–36.

Footnotes

About the Author

The author was born November 7, 1918 in Lynn, Massachusetts where he grew up, graduated from high school and several additional classes. He enlisted in the Army during the great depression and served more than 26 years. After a decorated military career that took him around the globe he retired as a Lieutenant Colonel in 1965.

He ran for sheriff in 1970 then went back to college graduating from Alabama's Troy State University with a Master's Degree in Criminal Justice in 1976. He went on to further studies in criminology at Florida State University.

He has lectured 10 times, been on TV 3 times, radio 3 times, written 11 articles, 4 pamphlets and 2 books...mostly on the castration treatment.

Back Cover

This book succeeds in listing more sex-motivated problems and more of the attempts to solve them than any other single volume presently available.

Mr Cheney has studied these problems and their solutions for about 27 years and has written two other books on what he sees as the best solution: A Brief History of Castration and Castration the Advantages and the Disadvantages. He has had the surgery himself and it cured his prostate cancer so he knows about it from personal experience as well as from years of study.

The Ted K Archive

Victor T. Cheney
The Sex Offenses and their Treatments
The Problem—The Solution—Commentary
2004

Author House
An attempt at marshaling psychology studies in the defense of Christian
Fundamentalist beliefs. More specifically, the belief that evil is literally rooted in
specific areas of the body, which can be cut off to become pure again.

www.thetedkarchive.com